This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

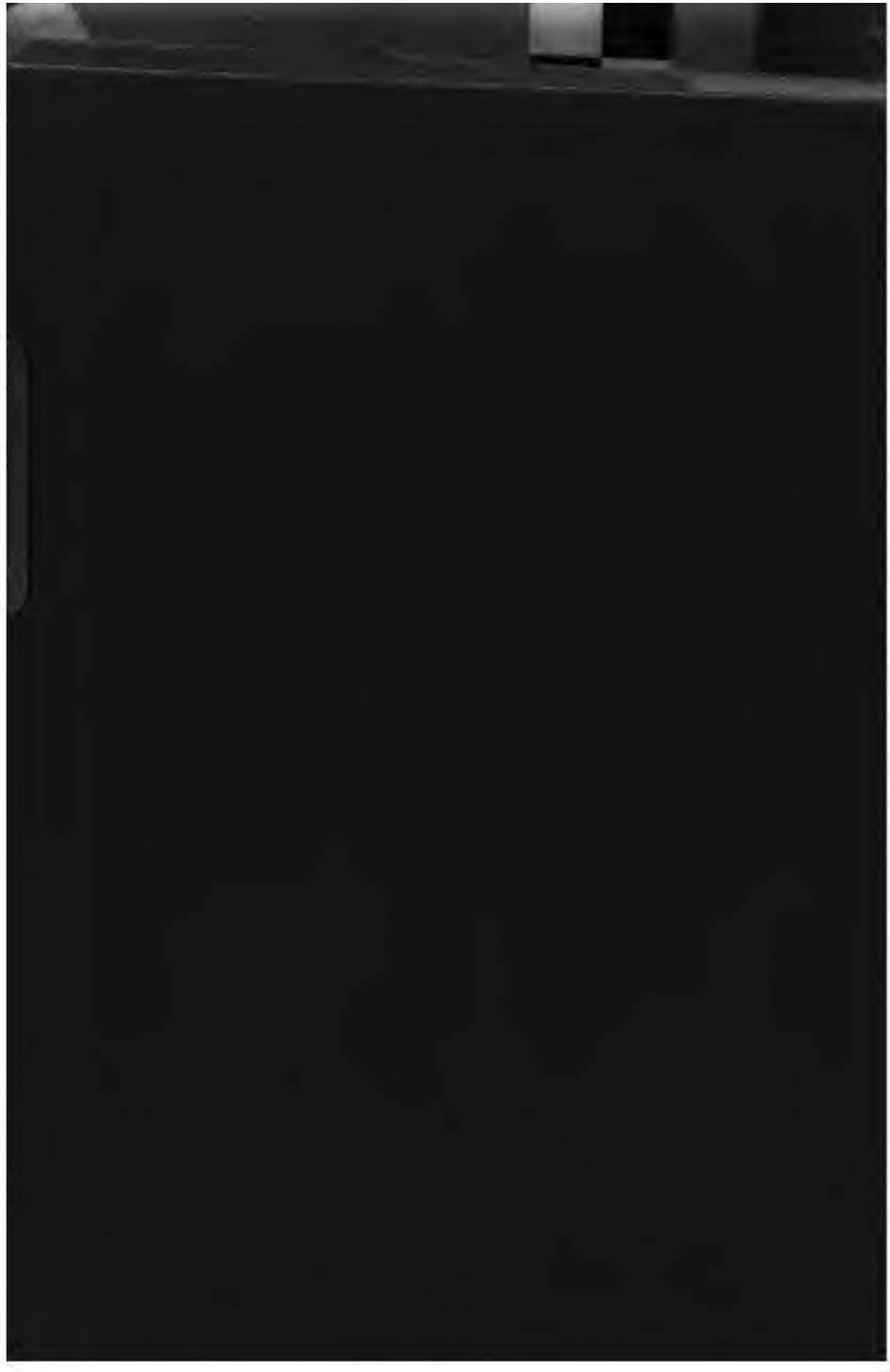
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



940.4
F929
b

THE TUDOR TRANSLATIONS

EDITED BY

W. E. HENLEY

XXXII

THE CHRONICLE OF
FROISSART

TRANSLATED OUT OF FRENCH BY

SIR JOHN BOURCHIER
LORD BERNERS

ANNIS 1523–25

With an Introduction by

WILLIAM PATON KER

VOLUME VI

LONDON
Published by DAVID NUTT
At the Sign of the Phœnix
LONG ACRE
1903

Edinburgh : Printed by T. and A. Constable

HERE AFTER FOLOWETH THE TABLE OF THIS PRESENT VOLUME

[THIRD AND FOURTH BOOKS]

CAP.		PAGE
clxxv.	Of the dethe of the yonge erle Loyes of Chastellon, sonne to therle Guye of Bloys	1
clxxvi.	Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascone of Foize, and howe the erle of Chastellon came to his enherytaunce . .	2
clxxvii.	Howe the treatie of peace renewed at Towers in Thourayne, bytwene the Frenche kynge and the duke of Bretayne; and of the maryage of the doughter of Fraunce to the sonne of Bretayne; and of Johan of Bretayne, erle of Ponthieur, and the doughter of the duke of Bretayne . .	17
clxxviii.	Howe the erle of Bloyes and Mary of Namure his wyfe solde the countie of Bloyes and all their landes to the duke of Thourayn, the Frenche kynges brother . . .	28
clxxix.	Howe sir Roger of Spaygne and sir Espaygne du Lyon spedde with the Frenche kynge and his counsayle for the vycount of Chastellons busynesse; and howe he was set in possessyon in the countie of Foize, and of the money that he payde	33
clxxx.	Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence of the Frenche kynge and his counsayle, and of the kyng of Englandes uncles, on the treatie of peace . . .	34
clxxxi.	Howe sir Peter of Craon, throughe yvell wyll, by subtile crafte, beate downe sir Olyver of Clysson, wherwith the kynge and his counsayle were sore displeased . .	44
clxxxii.	Howe in great dilygence the Provost of Parys pursued sir Peter of Craon	51
clxxxiii.	Of the great armye and voyage that the Frenche kyng purposed to make into Bretaygne agaynst the duke, bycause he susteyned sir Peter of Craonne; and howe in that voyage the kyng fell sicke, wherby the voyage brake . . .	56

86392

THE TABLE

CAP.		PAGE
clxxxiiii.	Howe the duke of Thourayne, brother to the Frenche kynge, resigned the duchy of Thouraygne into the kinges handes, and howe by exchaunge the kynge gave hym the duchy of Orlyaunce, and so ever after he was called the duke of Orlyaunce	59
clxxxv.	Howe the dukes of Burgoyn and of Berrey, uncles to the Frenche kynge, had the governaunce of the realme; and howe they chased and toke suche as governed the kyng before	73
clxxxvi.	Howe sir Olyver of Clysson, constable of Fraunce, departed out of Parys, after the answere that the duke of Burgoyne had made hym, and went to Mount le Heury, and fro thens into Bretayne	80
clxxxvii.	Howe the treuse whiche was accorded bytwene Englande and Fraunce for thre yeres was renewed	92
clxxxviii.	Of the adventure of a daunce that was made at Parys in lykenesse of wodhouses, wherein the Frenche kynge was in paryll of dethe	96
clxxxix.	Howe pope Bonyface and the cardynals of Rome sent a Frere, a wyse clerke, to the Frenche kynge	100
cxc.	Howe the mariage was treated of the lorde Philyppe of Arthoyes, erle of Ewe, and the lady Mary of Berry, wydowe, doughter to the duke of Berrey; and howe he was admytted constable of Fraunce	103
cxci.	Of the forme of the peace made bytwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande by meanes of the four dukes, uncles to bothe kynges	110
cxcii.	Of the dethe of pope Clement at Avignon, and of the electyon of pope Benedict	121
cxciii.	Of a clerke named maister Johan of Warennes . .	124
cxciiii.	Howe the kynge of England gave to the duke of Lancastre and to his heyres for ever the duche of Acquitayne; and howe the kynge prepared to go into Irelande, and the duke into Acquitayne	125
cxcv.	Of the dethe of quene Anne of Englande, wyfe to kynge Richarde, doughter to the kynge of Boesme and emperour of Almayne	127

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

cxcvi. Howe sir John Froissart arryved in Englande, and of the gyfte of a boke that he gave to the kyng 129

cxcvii. Of the refuce of them of Acquitayne made to the duke of Lancastre; and howe they sente into Englande to the kynge and his counsayle, shewyng hym the wyll of the hole countrey of Acquitayne 135

cxcviii. The devyse and of the conquest that kynge Richarde had made in Irelande; and howe he brought to his obeysaunce foure kynges of that countrey 147

cxcix. Of the ambassade that the kynge of Englande sent into Fraunce to treate of the maryage bytwene the lady Isabell, the Frenche kynges eldest doughter, and hymselfe; and of the lovynge aunswere they hadde 157

cc. Of a squyer named Robert the Hermyt, howe he was sent to the treaties of the peace holden at Balyngham; and howe he was after sente into Englande to kynge Richarde and his uncles 161

cci. Of the delyveraunce of the lorde de la River and sir John le Mercier; and howe they were putte out of prisone . 169

ccii. Of the peace that was had bytwene the duke of Bretaygne and syr Olyver of Clysson 170

cciii. Howe the kynge of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the Great Turke; and howe Johan of Burgoyne eldest sonne to the duke of Burgoyne was chiefe and heed of the armye that went thyder 177

cciiii. Howe the erle of Ostrevaunt enterprised to go into Fryse . 184

ccv. Of the judgement made in the Parlyament for the quene of Naples agaynste sir Peter of Craon 187

ccvi. Of the conclusyon of the maryage taken at Parys, bytwene the kynge of Englande and Isabell doughter to the Frenche kynge; and howe the duke of Lancastre remaryed 189

ccvii. Howe the Great Turke desyred the Soudan and many other kynges, Sarasyns, to ayde hym with men of warre to resyst agaynst the Christen men; and howe many valyaunt Sarazyns came to hym out of farre countreis . . . 205

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

ccviii. Howe the lorde of Coucy and other lordes of the Christen men about a xv. hundred speares disconfyted a fyve thousande Turkes durynge the siege before Nicopoly . . . 206

ccix. Howe the peace bytwene Englande and Fraunce contynewed; and of the maryage of the kyng of Englande with the doughter of Fraunce 209

ccx. Howe the erle of Heynaulte and the erle of Ostrevaunt his sonne, made a great armye of men of armes, knightes and squyers, to go into Fryse 213

ccxi. Of the armye that the Frenche kyng sent into Fryse in the ayde of his cosyns, and the lorde Valeran, erle of saynt Poule, and the lorde Charles de la Brethe were capitayns 216

ccxii. Howe the maryage of the kynge of Englande to the doughter of Fraunce was ordred; and howe the Frenche kyng delyvered his doughter to the kynge of Englande in his tent, bytwene Arde and Calais 224

ccxiii. Howe the siege before Nicopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy; and how the Frenchemen were disconfyted; and howe the Hungaryons fledde 230

ccxiiii. Of the povertie and misery that the Christen knyghtes of Fraunce and other nacions endured in the commynge home to their countreis 241

ccxv. Howe the trewe tydynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house 242

ccxvi. Howe the duchesse of Orlyaunce, daughter to the duke of Myllayne, was hadde in suspecte of the Frenche kynges syckenesse 252

ccxvii. Howe the duke of Burgoyn and the duches his wyfe tooke great dilygence to fynde the meanes to redeme out of prisone the erle of Nevers their sonne, and the other prisoners beyng in Turkey 254

ccxviii. Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought out the meanes howe to distroy kynge Richarde of Englande, his nephewe 257

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

ccxix. Howe the duke of Gloucestre was taken by the erle marshall, by the commaundement of the kynge 273

ccxx. Howe the lordes of Fraunce retourned by see to Venyce; and of the ysles they founde by the waye 284

ccxxi. Howe after the retourne of the lordes of Fraunce, the Frenche kynge entended what he myght, to sette a concorde and peace in the churche 293

ccxxii. Of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre and of the erle of Arundell; and howe the kynges uncles and the Londoners tooke the mater 296

ccxxiii. Of the great assemble that was made in the citye of Reynes, as well by the Emperoure as of the realme of Fraunce on the state of Holy Churche 303

ccxxiiii. Howe the erle marshall in Englande apealed by guage of utteraunce therle of Derby, sonne to the duke of Lancastre, in the presence of the kynge and his counsayle 306

ccxxv. Howe kyng Richarde gave sentence wherby he banysshed out of Englande the erle of Derby for ten yere, and therle marshall for ever 316

ccxxvi. Howe the erle of Derby departed fro London to go into Fraunce, and the erle marshall went into Flaunders, and so into Lombardy 318

ccxxvii. Howe the lorde Guyllyam, erle of Ostrevaunt, sent to his cosyn, the erle of Derby, certayne messangers; and howe the erle came to Parys, and howe he was receyved . 320

ccxxviii. Howe the treatie that had been at Reynes bytwene the Frenche kynge and the kyng of Almaygne, concerning the unyte of the Churche was folowed; and howe the byshoppe of Cambrey was sent by the sayd kynges to Rome and to Avignon, to them that wrote themselfe popes, to thentent that they shuld depose themselfe fro their papalytees, and submytte them to the order of these two kynges 322

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

ccxxix. Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme with the Unyversyte of Parys, to take counsayle howe they shulde order pope Benedic at Avignon 324

ccxxx. Of the answere of the duke of Lancastre to the knyght sent to hym fro his sonne, therle of Derby; and howe the duke of Lancastre dyed 335

ccxxxi. Howe the dethe of the duke of Lancastre was knowen in Fraunce; the kynge of Englande wrote in maner of joye to the Frenche kynge therof, and wrote nothyng therof to therle of Derby, who was the dukes son . . . 337

ccxxxii. Of the treatie of a maryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berreys doughter; and howe kyng Richarde of Englande dyde lette it, by the erle of Salisbury 341

ccxxxiii. Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go into the marchesse of Irelande 347

ccxxxiiii. Howe the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury was sente into Fraunce to therle of Derby, fro the Londoners and other counsayls of Englande, to have hym to retourne into Englande 353

ccxxxv. Howe the erle of Derby tooke leave of the Frenche kyng, and went to his cosyn the duke of Bretayne . . . 356

ccxxxvi. Howe the erle of Derby arryved in Englande; and howe he was receyved of the Londoners 359

ccxxxvii. Howe tidynges came to kynge Richarde of the commyng of therle of Derby with great puissaunce 363

ccxxxviii. Howe kyng Richarde yelded hymselfe to the erle of Derby to go to London 365

ccxxxix. Of the state of quene Isabell of Englande, and howe she had all newe persones apoynted to wayte upon her; and howe kynge Rycharde was sette in the towre of London . 370

ccxl. Howe kyng Richarde of Englande resined the crowne and the realme into the handes of the erle of Derby, duke of Lancastre 376

THE TABLE

CAP.		PAGE
ccxli.	Of the coronacyon of kynge Henry duke of Lancastre, by the consent of the realme, and the maner of the feest .	379
ccxlii.	Howe newes of the takyng of kyng Rycharde was knowen in Fraunce by the comynge thyder of the lady Coucy; and howe the Frenche kynge was displeased . . .	383
ccxliii.	Howe certayne lordes in Englande rose up with an army to have delyvered kyng Rycharde, and to have dystroyed kyng Henry; and howe they were slayne . .	390
ccxliiii.	Howe the Frenche kyng reysed up an armye to sende upon the fronters of Englande	395
ccxlv.	Of the dethe of kynge Rycharde of Englande; and howe the treuse bytwene Englande and Fraunce was renewed, and also of the deposycion of pope Benedic at Avignon .	397
INDEX	. . . . .	403

THE CRONYCLE OF FROISSART

CAP. CLXXV

Of the dethe of the yonge erle Loyes of Chastelone, sonne to the erle Guy of Bloys.

IT hath been shewed here before in this hystory, whane I spake of the alyaunce and maryage of Lois of Chatellon, sonne to the erle of Bloys, maryed to the lady Marye, doughter to duke Johan of Berrey; and at the confyrmacyon of this maryage the duke of Berrey provyded greatly for his doughter, for she was assigned for her dowry in the countie of Bloys the somme of syxe thousande pounde money corante in Fraunce, to be payed in florayns: if the foresayd Loys of Bloys dyed before his wyfe, than all the countie of Blois to be bounde to pay these foresayd syxe thousande frankes. And so it fortuned that about the feest of saint Johan the Baptyste, in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande, thre hundred, fourscore and aleven, this yonge Loys of Bloys, sonne to the erle Guy, departed fro his father fro the castell of Moltyz[1] in Bloys to go into Haynalt to se his mother and wyfe. And whan he came to Beaumonte in Haynalt he fell sycke of a fever, by reason that he had rydden great journeys, and the season was hoote, and he was but yvell kepte, and but tendre of age, as of xiiii. yeres, by whiche syckenes he dyed without helpe, for the physycions coulde nat put away his hote fever. Ye maye well knowe that the father and mother were ryght soroufull whan they knewe of the dethe of thier sonne and heyre; in lykewyse so was his wyfe, the yonge lady of Berrey, who loved hym entierly, and thought herselfe hyghly maryed; specyally the trouble of the father was right gret, for he ymagyned that

[1] *Montils.*

CAP. CLXXV Of the dethe of the yonge erle Loyes of Chastelone.

the duke of Berrey was ryght covetouse, and feared leste he wolde entre into the countie of Bloys, and put him out for the dowry of his doughter. Thus the duke of Berreys two doughters were bothe wydowes in one yere; the eldest, called Boesme,[1] was countesse of Savoy, and her husbande the yonge erle of Savoy, called Ame, dyed the same yere ryght marveylously, of whose deth there came great busynesse: and it was layde to sir Othe of Grauntsome, in suche wyse that he was fayne to flye out of Savoy and out of Fraunce and Almayne, and so wente and dwelte in the realme of Englande.

[1] *Bonne.*

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz, and howe the erle of Chastellon came to thenherytaunce.

THE same seasone also dyed the noble and gentle erle of Foiz ryght marveylously: I shal shewe you by what incydente. Truely of all sportes this erle loved huntynge with houndes and greyhoundes, and of them he was well provyded, for alwayes he had at his commaundement mo than xvi. hundred. The erle as than was at Barrey,[2] in the marches of Orthays, and wente dayly a huntynge into the woodes of Salvaterra, the way to Panpylona in Naverre; and the same daye that he dyed he had hunted and kylled a beare, and by that tyme it was high noone. Than the erle demaunded of them that were aboute hym where his dyner was provyded. It was shewed him at the hospytall of Ryon, a two lytell myles fro Ortays; and so thyder he rode to dyner, and so alyghted there and went into his chambre, the whiche was strawed with grene herbes, and the walles sette full of grene bowes, to make the chambre more fresah, for the ayre without was marveylously hote as in the moneth of May. Whan he felte that fresshe ayre, he sayd: A this fresshnesse dothe me moche good, for the daye hath been very hoote: and so sate downe in a chayre. Than he talked and devysed with syr Espayne du Lyon of

[2] *Bdarn.*

his houndes, whiche had ronne best; and as he thus devysed, there came into the chambre sir Jenbayne[1] his bastarde sonne, and sir Peter of Cabestan, and the tables were redy covered in the same chambre. Than water was brought forthe to wasshe, and Coiandon[2] of Spaygne toke a sylver bason and sir Tybaulte toke the towel. Than the erle rose and put out his handes to wasshe, and as sone as the colde water fell on his fyngars he waxed pale in the face, and sodainly his herte fayled hym, and so fell downe, and in the fallynge sayd, Ah, I am but deed; God have mercy on me. He never spake worde after; howebeit, he dyed nat so soone, but laye in great payne. The knyghtes that were about hym were sore abasshed, and so was his sonne. They tooke hym in their armes, and layde hym on a bedde and covered hym, trustynge that he was but in a traunce. The ii. knyghtes that had gyven hym water, to the entent that it shulde nat be sayde that they had enpoysoned hym, toke the bason and the ewer, and sayde: Sirs, here in your presence beholde here this water, the whiche we toke assaye of and yet wyll do; and there they dranke therof, so that every man was content with them. They put into the erles mouthe drinke and spyces, and other thynges comfortable, but all that aveyled nothyng, for in lesse than halfe an houre he was deed, and yelded up his brethe swetely. God of his pytie have mercy on him. All such as were there were greatly troubled and abasshed; than they closed the chambre doore, to the entent that his dethe shulde nat be so sodaynly knowen abrode. The knightes behelde sir Jenbayne his sonne, who wepte pituously and wrang his handes. And the knightes that were with hym sayde, Sir Jenbayne, ye have nowe loste youre father; we knowe well he loved you entierly: leave your sorowe, and leape on your horse and ryde to Orthayes. Take you possessyon of the castell and of your fathers treasoure that is within it, or ever the dethe of your father be knowen abrode. Sir Jenbayne enclyned to those wordes, and sayd, Sirs, I thanke you of your good counsaile, the whiche I shall deserve; but thane lette me have some token that is on my father, or elles I shall nat be suffred to entre into the castell. That is trewe, sir, quod they; take some token fro your father. Than he toke a rynge fro his

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

[1] *Yvain.*
[2] *Ernaudon.*

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Darum of Foix.

fathers finger, and a knyfe that he bare alwayes about hym. These tokens the porter of the castell knewe well: if he hadde nat brought them, he shulde nat have entred in there.

Thus sir Jenbayne of Foix departed from the hospytall of Ryone, and thre with hym, and rode in haste to the castell of Orthayes. He rode throughe the towne, no man mystrusted hym, and so came to the castell and called the porter, who aunswered and sayd: Sir, what wolde you have? Where is my lorde your father? He is at the hospytall of Ryon, quod the knyght, and hath sent me for certayne thynges that is in his chambre, and than I must returne agayne to him; and to the entent that thou shuldest beleve me, beholde here his rynge and knyfe. The porter opyned a wyndowe and sawe the tokyns, which he knewe well; than the porter opyned the wicket and he entred in, and his varlettes dyd set up his horses. As soone as he was entred, he sayde to the porter, Close agayne the gate; than he toke the porter and sayd, Delyver me the kayes, or els thou arte but deed. The porter was abasshed, and sayde, Sir, why say ye thus? Bycause, quod he, my father is deed, and I wyll have the possessyon of his treasour, or any other come here. The porter obeyed, for he durst do none otherwise, and he loved sir Jenbayne as well as another. The knyght knewe ryght well where the treasour laye, whiche was in a stronge towre, wherto belonged thre stronge dores, surely bolted and barred, and dyvers kayes parteynyng to them, whiche kayes he coulde nat fynde redely, for they were in a cofer of stele, and locked with a lytell kaye of stele, whiche kaye the erle ever bare on hym whersoever he wente, in a lytell purse aboute his necke, whiche, after sir Jenbayne was departed fro the hospytall, was founde by the knightes that were about the deed corse: than they marveyled what kaye it shulde be that the erle bare so prively about hymselfe. Than therles chapelayne, called sir Nicholas of Escail, who knewe all the erles secretes, for the erle loved hym well, and ever whan he went in to his treasorie house he had his chapelayne with him, sayde, as soone as he sawe the kaye, Ah, sir Jenbayne hath but lost his payne, for this is the kaye of a lytell cofer, wherin are

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foix.

all the kayes of the towre and cofer, wher all the erles treasour lyeth. Than the knyghtes sayde, Sir Nicholas, Go and ryde you to Orthayes, and beare hym the kaye. Sirs, quod he, sythe ye gyve me the counsayle, I shall do it, for it were better he had his fathers treasoure than another; and also I knowe well his father loved hym entierly. Than he tooke his horse and tooke the kaye and rode to the castell of Orthayes. And all that season sir Jenbayne was sertchynge all aboute for the kayes, and coulde nat fynde them, nor wyst nat howe to get the towre dore opyn, it was so stronge, nor also he hadde no instrumentes to breke it opyn withall. And in this meane season the men of the towne hadde soone knowledge, by varlettes or women that came fro the hospytall, howe therle shulde be deed. These were harde tidynges to them, for the erle was welbeloved with all his people. They of the towne assembled toguyder in the markette place, and sayde one to another, suche as hadde sene sir Jenbayn passe through the towne alone: We have sene sir Jenbayne passe through the towne alone towardes the castell, and it semed by his countynaunce he was nat content: surely there is somethyng amysse, for he was nat wonte to come home before his father. Thus as they were communynge toguyder, there came into the towne the erles chapelayne. Thane the men of the towne came aboute hym, and demaunded newes of therle their lorde; It hath been shewed us that he is deed; is it so or nat? Nay, quod the preest, he is not deed, but he is sore sicke, and I am come home before to cause thynges to be dressed for hym, and than I muste retourne agayne to hym. And so therwith he passed forth to the castell, and dyde so moche that he entred: of whose commyng sir Yvan had great joye, for without the kaye that he brought he coulde nat have entred into the towre where as the treasour was. Than the men of the towne hadde great suspecte of the erles dethe, and sayde: It is nere hande nyght, and as yet we here nothynge of our lorde, nor of none of his offycers, and sir Yvan and his chapelayne are entred into the castell suspeciously: let us watche the castell this night, and to morowe we shall here other tidynges: lette us sende secretely to the hospitall, than shall we knowe howe the mater gothe;

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

also we knowe well the moost parte of the erles treasour is within the castell, and if it be stollen awaye by crafte we shal be blamed for it; ignoraunce shall nat excuse us. They all thought it was best for them so to do. Thane the men of the towne drewe about the castell, and kepte the gates of the towne surely, that none shulde entre nor issue without lycence. Thus they watched all nyght, and in the mornyng they had parfyte knowledge of the dethe of their lorde. Than every man, woman, and chylde cryed out and wepte pituously, for the erle was welbeloved. Than the watchmen doubled and encreased in harnesse aboute the castell.

Whan sir Yvan of Foize sawe the maner of the men of the towne, and sawe well howe he was parceyved, and that they knew the certayntie of the dethe of his father, than he sayde to sir Nycholas: Sir, I have fayled of myne entent; I se well I can nat departe hens without lycence: the men of the towne have knowledge of my fathers dethe, and they assemble in great nombre before the castell: it behoveth me to humble myselfe to them, for force can nat aveyle me. Sir, ye saye trouthe, quod the preest; ye shall wyn more by swete and fayre wordes than by rude and frowarde dealynge: go your waye and speke with them. Than sir Yvan went into a towre nere to the gate, and opyned a wyndowe over the bridge, in the whiche towre he was brought up in, tyll he maryed the lady Jane of Boloyne,[1] who afterwarde was duchesse of Berrey, as ye shall here after in this hystorie. Sir Yvan opyned the wyndowe, and spake to them that were the princypals of the towne, who came on the bridge nere to the windowe, to here what he wolde saye. Than he spake aloude and sayde: O ye good people of Orthays, I knowe well the cause of your assembly; it is nat without a great occasion; howbeit, I requyre you as derely as ye loved my lorde and father, that ye be nat displeased with me, thoughe I have advaunsed myselfe to entre into this castell first, or any other shude entre, and to take possession therof, and of suche goodes as be within it, for I wyll do nothyng but good. Ye knowe well, my lorde my father loved me as well and entierly as his owne sonne, and wolde fayne have founde the wayes to have made me his enhery-

[1] *en celle tour fut nourrie et gardée tant qu'elle se maria, madame Jehan de Boulongne.*

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

tour; and nowe it hath pleased God to call hym to his mercy, without accomplysshyng of any thynge of myne advauncement; and nowe he hath lefte me amonge you, where I have been brought up, and lefte nowe as a poore knyght, bastarde sonne to the erle of Foize, without I have your ayde and helpe. Wherfore, sirs, I require you in Goddes behalfe to have pytie on me, wherin ye shall do greate almesse; and I shall open the castell and suffre you to entre; I wyll nat kepe it agaynst you. Than they aunswered and sayde: Sir Yvan, ye have spoken so nobly that it ought to suffyce; and, sir, we saye that we wyll abide with you, and our entent is to kepe this castell and goodes with you. And if the vicount of Chastellon,[1] your cosyn, who is next enherytoure to this countrey of Byerne, as nexte parente to your father, come hyder to challenge his herytage and movables, or he have it he shall knowe well howe we shall defende you and your right, fro hym and fro your brother sir Gracyen.[2] But we suppose, that whane the Frenche kynge was laste at Tholous and my lorde youre father with hym, that some order was takenne, as touchyng your fathers enherytaunce; and this can sir Roger of Spaygne your cosyn tell; no man better than he. We shall write to him, and shewe hym of the dethe of the erle your father, and desyre hym to come hyder to helpe and counsayle us in all thynges concernynge the landes of Bierne and of Foiz, and also for the movables, and for thentierment of my lorde youre father; and this we promyse you faythfully to upholde. With this aunswere sir Yvan was well contente, and thanne opyned the gate of the castell of Orthayes, and suche entred as wolde: and the same day the erles body was brought thyder. At the metyng of the corse men and women wepte pituously, in the remembraunce of his noblenesse and puyssaunt estate, his wytte and prudence, his prowesse and largesse, and the great prosperyte that he lyved in; for there was nouther Frenche nor Englysshe that durste dysplease hym. Moost parte of the people sayd: Nowe our neyghbours wyll make us war; where as we were wont to lyve in peace and fredome, nowe shall we be in bondage, in misery, and subjeccyon; nowe there is none to ayde us. Ah, Gascone,[3] Gascone, fayre

[1] *Chastelbon.*

[2] *et vous y garderons, aux parchons faire, et à messire Gratien vostre frère, vostre droit très-grandement.*

[3] *Gaston.*

CAP. CLXXVI

'the layne the of the e Gascon Foiz.

sone, why dyde ye ever so dysplease your father, that it coste you your lyfe? If ye had ben lefte with us, it shulde nowe have ben to us a great conforte, but we lost you to yong, and your father hath taryed to short a season with us. He was but threscore and thre yeres of age; he myght have lyved, for any age, many a yere lengar: it was no great age for suche a prince, havynge every thyng at his ease and wysshe. Ah, thou lande of Bierne, destytute and without conforte of any noble herytour, what shall become of thee? Thou shalte never have agayne suche another as was this gentyll erle of Foiz. With suche lamentacions and wepynges the body of this noble erle was borne throughe the towne of Orthayes by eight noble knyghtes. The first, the vycounte of Brunyquell, and agaynst hym the lorde of Compayne;[1] the thirde, sir Roger of Spaygne, and agaynst hym sir Raymonde of Laysne: the fyfthe, sir Raymonde de la Mote, agaynst hym the lorde of Besache; the seventhe, sir Menaúlt of Noualles,[2] and agaynst hym Rycharde of saynt George. And behynde was sir Yvan his bastarde sonne, the lorde of Corase, the lorde of Barantyne,[3] the lorde of Baruge, the lorde of Quere,[4] and mo than threscore other knyghtes of Byerne, who were soone come to the hospytall of Ryone whan they knewe of the erles dethe. Thus he was caryed with open vysage to the freers in Orthayes, and there he was embaumed and layde in leed, and so lefte under good kepynge unto the day of entierment. And nyght and daye withoute cease there was brinnynge aboute his body four and twentie torches, borne by eight and fourtie yomen: foure and twentie in the nyght, and foure and twentie in the daye.

aupenne.

'availles.

'alencin.

udo.

The dethe of this noble erle of Foiz was anone knowen in dyvers countreis, and mo were rather sorie of his dethe than gladde, for he had in his dayes given suche gyftes so liberally that it coulde nat be eschewed; wherfore he was beloved of every man that knewe hym. Pope Clement, whan he knewe of his dethe, was right soroufull for hym, bicause he had taken great payne in fortherynge of the maryage of his cosyn Jane of Boloygne, who was duchesse of Berrey. The same season there was at Avignon the bysshop of Palmes,[5] who durst nat come at his benifyce for

anięrs.

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

a displeasure that the erle of Foize had to hym, and yet he was of his lynage. The cause was, the bysshoppe wolde have exalted his jurisdiction and abated therles; for all that therle made hym bysshop. Than the Pope sente for the bysshoppe to come to his palais: and whan he was come the Pope sayde: Sir bysshoppe of Palmes, your peace is made; the erle of Foiz is deed. Of those tidynges the bysshoppe was glad, and within a shorte season after, he departed fro Avignon, and wente to his bysshoprike into the countrey of Foize. Tidynges of the dethe of this erle was anone come into Fraunce to the kynge and to his counsayle. The Frenche kyng and his brother and the duke of Burbone were sorie of his dethe, bycause of his noblenesse. Than the counsayle saide to the kyng: Sir, the countie of Foiz is yours by right successyon, seyng the erle of Foiz is deed without heyre of his body laufully begotten; no man canne debate with you therin; also they of the countie thynke the same. And, sir, there is one thyng that helpeth gretlye your tytell; ye have lende thereon fyftie thousande frankes. Sir, sende and take possessyon of your guage, and kepe it as youre owne enherytaunce, for they of the same countrey desyre to be under youre hande. It is a fayre countre, and shall come to you to good purpose, for it marcheth nere to the realme of Arragone, and also to Chattelone.[1] And paradventure hereafter ye may happe to have warre with the kyng of Arragone: than the countie of Foiz shal be a good fronter, for therin be many fayre and stronge castelles to kepe in men of warre and to make good garysons. The kyng herde well those wordes, and anone enclyned to their counsayle, and sayde: Sirs, lette se, whome shall we sende on this message. Thane it was determyned to sende the lorde de la Ryver, bycause he was knowen in that countrey, and with hym the bysshoppe of Noyon. These two lordes prepared themselfe to go on this legacyon; and whane they departed they rode at leysar by small journeys, and toke their waye by Avignon.

[1] *Catalonia.*

In this meane season worde was sente to the vicount of Chastellon, beyng in the realme of Arragon, of the dethe of his cosyn the erle of Foiz. Than he rode tyll he came into Bierne streyght to Orthays. They of the towne made hym

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

good chere; howebeit, they toke him nat as than for their lorde, and saide: howe all the countrey was nat assembled, and that first they must assemble toguyder the prelates, lordes, and men of the good townes, and to counsayle toguyder what they shulde do, sayeng: That is a good countrey that holdeth of hymselfe, and the lordes that dwelleth therin, and hath herytages to be free. Thane it was advysed for the best; first, to make the entierment of the erle Gascone of Foiz at Orthays, and to sende for all the nobles of Bierne and of Foize, suche as wolde come, and than to take counsayle whom they shulde accepte for their lorde. Than all barones and prelates and heedes of good townes of Bierne and of Foiz were sent for: they of Bierne came thyder, but they of Foiz refused to come there, and sayde they wolde kepe their countrey. For they herde saye the Frenche kyng wolde sende thyder to chalenge the countre of Foiz. Howebeit, the bysshop of Palmes was desyred to come to Orthais, bycause of lynage, and so he came thyder in good array, as to hym apparteyned.

The day of the obsequy of the gentyll erle, Gaston of Foiz, last erle of that name, done in the freres in the towne of Orthays, the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and a xi. on a Monday, there was moche people of the countrey of Bierne and of other places, bothe lordes, knightes, and other prelates. There were four[1] bisshoppes; the bysshop of Palmes, who sayd the masse, and the bysshoppes of Ayre, of Auron, and of Tenues in Bierne.[2] There was a goodly herse and well ordred. And duryng the masse tyme there was holden before the aulter by four knightes, foure baners, with the armes of Foiz and of Bierne. The first helde sir Raymon of Newcastell; the seconde, sir Espaygne du Lyon; the thirde, sir Peter Deguier;[3] the fourthe, sir Menaulte of Noualles. Sir Roger of Spaygne offred the sworde, bytwene the Bourge of Campaigne and Pier of Arnaulte of Bierne, capitayne of Lourde. The shelde bare the vicount of Bruniquell bytwene sir Johan of Newcastell and John of Chanteron. The helme offred the lorde of Valentyne of Bierne, bytwene Arnalton of Rostem and Arnalton of saynt Colombe. The horse was offred by the lorde of Corase, bytwene Arnalton

[1] *trois.*

[2] *tous trois des tenures de Berne.*

[3] *de Quéo.*

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

of Spayne and Raymonet of Campaygne.[1] This entierment was honorably done, accordyng to the usage of the countre; and there were the two bastarde sonnes of the erle of Foiz, sir Yvan and sir Gracien, and the vicount of Chastellon, and all the barons of Bierne and some of Foiz. But assone as the servyce was done, they of Foiz departed and rode the same daye to dyner to Herytell,[2] two myles fro Orthais. And the next day betymes the bysshoppe of Palmes departed; he wolde nat be at the generall parlyament whiche was the same daye amonge them of Bierne. Thus the erle was buryed in the freers before the hyghe aulter: so there is no more mencion made of hym; God have mercy upon his soule.

[1] *Caupenne.*
[2] *Arthez.*

Nowe let us speke of the order that was taken at Orthais.

As it was enformed me, it was said to the vycount of Chatellon, Sir, we knowe well that as next of blode ye ought to succede in the herytage, as well of Bierne as of Foiz; but as nowe we can nat receyve you as oure lorde, for therby we myght bring the lande of Bierne into great trouble, warre, and daunger: for as we do understande, the Frenche kynge, who is our good neighbour, dothe sende hyder of his counsayle, we knowe nat for what entent, tyll we here them speke. We knowe well, and so do you, that our lorde the erle, whome God pardone, was this last yere at Tholous with the Frenche kyng, and had secrete communycacion toguyder, the whiche firste hath nede to be declared; for if he have gyven and released to the Frenche kynge Foiz and Bierne, the kyng than with puissaunce wyll have and optayne it. Wherfore, or we do any thing, we wyll know the artycles, for we of Byern be in other case and of other condycion than they of Foiz. We be all fre without homage or servytude, and the countie of Foiz is holden of the Frenche kynge. And also the people of Foiz, their hertes be so Frenche, that lightly they wyll receyve the Frenche kynge to their lorde and soveraygne, for they have sayde, sithe the erle was deed, he hath none herytour of his body laufully gotten. Wherfore the countie of Foize they saye shulde parteyne to the ordynaunce of the Frenche kyng. But, sir, we shall kepe our holde, and we wyll serve no lorde but suche as we ought to do, wheder it be the French kyng

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

or you; but, sir, we wyll counsaile you to worke wysely in this busynesse, by treatie or otherwyse. Than the vycount said: Sirs, by what meanes wyll ye counsayle me to worke, for I have promised to worke by your advyse in every thyng accordyng to reason. Sir, quod they, we wyll advyse you to desyre sir Roger of Spaygne, your cosyn, to kepe you company, at your cost and charge, and go into the countie of Foiz and treate with the prelates and noble men, and with theym of the good townes, that they wolde receyve you to their lorde, or elles to sytte styll and dissymule the mater tyll ye have apeased the French kyng, and taken with hym some composicion, by meanes of golde and silver, that ye might have the enheritaunce in rest and peace. If ye do thus, than do ye wisely; and if ye maye be herde with them that be sente fro the Frenche kynge into the countie of Foize, thoughe it cost you a hundred thousande or two hundred thousande frankes, ye shall fynde ynoughe to paye it with all, for the erle that is deed hath lefte ynoughe behynde hym. Howebeit, sir, in any wyse we wyll that his two bastarde sonnes have parte largely of his goodes. Than the lorde answered and sayde: Sirs, I am content as ye wyll; and here is my cosyn, sir Roger of Spaygne; and in all youre presences, I desyre hym to ryde with me in this journey. Than sir Roger answered and said: Sir, I am content to ryde with you to be as meane bytwene bothe parties. But if the Frenche kyng my soverayne lorde or his ambassadours desyre me to be of their counsayle, or els commaunde me nat to medell, than I must nedes leave you. The vycount was content, and saide: Cosyn, I trust they wyll nat agaynst your will take you fro me; and if I may have you nere me, I thynke to make a good ende of all my busynesse.

Than, as I was enformed, the vycount of Chastellon made a request before them all to borowe fyve or vi. thousande frankes to performe his journey. Also the two bastardes made their request that they might have parte of their fathers richesse. Than the counsayle toke advise togider, and at last acorded that the vicount shulde have fyve thousande frankes, and the two bastardes of Foiz eche of them two thousande frankes; and incontynent the tresourers were commaunded to delyver the money. All offycers that

were in the erles dayes were suffred to occupy styll without any chaungyng; and than kepers were sette to kepe the castell of Orthais and the richesse that was within it. The vicount at his first commynge to Orthais gave pardon to all the prisoners within the castell, wherof there were a great nombre. For the erle of Foiz was a cruell man, and wolde spare no man, but to punysshe at his pleasure, though he were never so great a personage. He had ones in prisone the said vycount of Chastellon, in the botome of a dongion, eight monethes, for all that he was his cosyn germayne. And whane he delyvered him, he sette hym to raunsome at xl. thousande frankes, whiche was truly payde. And also as longe as he lyved he loved hym never after, so that the vicount durst never come in his sight; for if the erle had lyved two yeres lengar, the vicount shulde never have had any parte of the heritage of Foiz or of Bierne.

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

Thus this counsayle at Orthays brake up, and every man departed and lefte the vycount to prepare for his journey, who made hym redy as soone as he might, and desyred certayne knightes and squiers to go with hym. Thus he departed fro Orthais with a two hundred horse, and rode to Morlens,[1] a good towne on the fronter, bytwene Byerne and Bygore, a four myles fro Pau and a sixe myle fro Tarbe; and the seconde day he rode to saynt Gaudens, another good towne at the entre of the countie of Foiz on the ryver of Garone; and there tidynges came to hym howe the bysshoppe of Noyon, and sir Buryaulx de la Ryver, and other of the Frenche kynges counsayle, were come to Tholous. Than the vycount tooke counsayle of sir Roger of Spayne what was best for him to do. Sir Roger answered and sayd: Sithe we have herde tidynges of them, let us tary here and se what they wyll do; I thynke they wyll sende shortely to us. And so there they taryed, for indede they coulde go no further into the countie of Foiz, for all the good townes, castelles, and passages were closed agaynst them; as Calumuche,[2] Casteres, Mountesqueu, Carthas,[3] Ortyngas, Fossat, the cytie of Palmes and the castell, Montaunt, and all the castels on the fronter of Aragon. They of the countie of Foiz sayd that no straunger with any puissaunce shulde entre into no castell nor towne of their countrey tyll

[1] *Morlaas.*
[2] *Palaminich.*
[3] *Carla.*

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

the mater were determyned. And as they of the countrey shewed themselfe they were better mynded to be Frenche, and to be governed by a seneschall, as the countrie and cytie of Tholous was, and Carcasson and Beauvoyre, rather than to be under any other ruler. Howebeit, the mater went otherwyse, as ye shall here; for whan the Frenche kynges commyssaries were come to Tholous, they demaunded newes of the archebysshoppe, and of the seneschall of Foiz and of Bierne, and of other, suche as had ben at Orthays at the buryeng of the erle of Foiz. There they were enformed in what case the countre stode in. Than they toke advyse togyder, and determyned to sende for sir Roger of Spaygne, bycause he was the Frenche kynges man by faythe and homage, and his offycer, as seneschall of Carcassone. They sent a credable persone with a letter to hym. The messanger rode to saynt Gaudens, a xii. myle fro thens; than he delyvered to sir Roger of Spaygne his letter. Sir Roger toke and reed it, and sayd to the squyer: Sir, ye shall tary here all this day, and to morowe ye shall departe; I thynke ye shall nat go without company. Than sir Roger and the vycount counsayled toguyder. Than it was thought for the beste that sir Roger of Spayne shulde ryde to Tholous, and speke there with the bysshop of Noyon and with the lorde de la Ryver, to knowe what they wolde say. The next day sir Roger of Spayne and the messanger rode forthe togyder, and came the same nyght to Tholouse: syr Roger toke up his lodgyng, and the messanger went to his maysters. Than the commyssioners said, To morowe we shall here tydynges, seynge sir Roger is come. The next day after masse syr Roger drewe to the bysshop and to the lorde de la Ryver, and made good chere eche to other, bycause they were all of aquayntaunce, and there communed the cause of their commynge. Than the kinges commyssyoners shewed forth the kinges procuracions, and howe they were set and stablysshed to take possessyon and season of the countie of Foiz. And whan syr Roger had well herde them at length, he replyed with swete wordes, and sayde: Lordes, I am nat so nere of the kinges counsayle as ye be; and if I were, savynge your correction, I wolde counsayle the kyng that he shulde take agayn his money and somwhat more. Trewe it is he

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

hath lente money on the herytage of Foize, to be reysed after the dethe of the erle, yet let the kynge leave the ryght of the enherytaunce to the nexte enherytoure of the blode: this shall be for the kynges profyte, honour, and salvacyon; and in this that I saye, I shall laye dyvers reasons, if ye wyll here it. There is one thynge whiche is clere: the erle of Foiz layde his lande to pledge by fraude, for as for golde and sylver he had ynough: for that he dyd was for nothynge but to dysheryte the vicount of Chastellon wrongfully, bycause he hated hym without cause. Also as touchyng the kynges profyte, I ensure you the kepyng of the lande of Foize shulde coste the kynge more than the rentes or revenues cometh unto. And thyrdly, the kyng shall lese therby the homage and servyce of suche a man as is able to do him good servyce: this ought to be well regarded. Also it shulde be a great charge to the kynges consyence to dysheryte any persone without a reasonable cause: for if the herytage of Foiz shuld have ben bought and solde, fyrste all suche as claymeth any ryght therin shulde have ben agreed withall and satyfyed, whiche was nat so. Wherfore, my lordes, these reasons well consydred, seynge ye be great wyse men and counsaylours to the kynge, take good hede what ye do, or ye pronounce any thynge that shulde tourne to the kinges sclaunder or hurte to his conscyence; if ye do otherwyse it were great synne, and as yet there is tyme suffycyente to fynde remedy. My cosyn the vicount of Chastellon hathe sente me hyther to you to shewe you this mater, and ryght effectuously desyreth you, and so do I in his name, to take regarde in this behalfe: it is nat good nor convenyent, a man to take every thynge by force that he maye take. Whan he had sayde, than the bysshoppe and the lorde de la Ryver loked on eche other; at laste the bysshop sayde: Syr Rodger, we se and knowe well that all that ye have sayd is for good entente; but our commyssyon stretcheth nat so farre to quyte the bargayne that was bytwene the kyng and therle of Foize; howebeit, for the love of you, and to bringe the matter somwhat to good purpose, and that all partyes myght be content, we shall put this mater in suffraunce, and ye shall take the payne to ryde with us into Fraunce to the kynge and to his counsayle, and

CAP. CLXXVI

Of the sodayne dethe of the erle Gascon of Foiz.

than shewe there your reasons as ye shall thinke best; and if by your meanes ye can cause the vycount of Chastellon to enjoy the herytage of Foiz, who is enherytoure therto, as ye saye, we shall be ryght gladde therof, for we wyll dysheryte no person. Syrs, quod syr Roger, I am well contente with your sayenge; if it please you to abyde here a season, your costes shall be borne of the good that is in the castell of Orthays.

The thyrde day sir Roger of Spayne tooke leave of the kynges commyssyoners, and sayde: Syrs, I thynke to bringe this mater to a good purpose, I must be fayne to make a journey into Fraunce; if I tary longe, I pray you be nat myscontent, for it shall nat be in my faulte, and I shall sende you daily messangers and letters. Thus they departed: they taryed at Tholous, and sir Roger rode to saynt Gaudens to the vycount of Chastellon, and shewed him all the mater. The vycount was joyfull of those tydynges, and sayd: Fayre cosyn syr Roger, all my trust is in you; the mater toucheth me nere; it is for thenherytaunce wherof I beare the armes; I can nat tell whome to sende into Fraunce but all onely you, to shewe my tytle to the kynge and to his counsayle; wherfore, sir, for the love of me, and for that I deserve to you in tyme to come, take on you the charge of this voyage. Syr Roger sayd: Syr, for the love of you and of your lynage I shall do it. Than sir Roger prepared for his journey to ryde into Fraunce, and so toke the way to Rodes, and the shorter way, for as than truce was bytwene Fraunce and Englande: or els the way that he toke had nat been sure for hym, for on the fronters of Rouuergue, Quercy, and Lymosyn, there were many fortresses that made warre for the Englysshemen.

Nowe I wyll leave for a season spekynge of syr Roger of Spayne, and speke of the Frenche kynge and of the duke of Bretayne.

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn, bytwene the Frenche kynge and the duke of Bretayne: and of the mariage of the doughter of Fraunce, to the sonne of Bretayne, and of Johan of Bretayne, erle of Pointhieur, and the doughter of the duke of Bretaygne.

YE have herde here before in dyvers places in this hystory, howe the duke of Bretayne and syr Olyver of Clysson, as than constable of Fraunce, hated mortally eche other: and besyde the hatred that the duke had to syr Olyver, he had great envy that he was so great with the kinge, and so secrete of his counsayle, and gladly he wolde have troubled him, but he doughted the kynges displeasure; and oftentymes the duke repented hym that he had nat slayne hym whan he had hym in prisone in the castell of Ermyn, for he thought if he had slayne hym than, he shulde never have had more trouble by hym. The yvell wyll that he had to hym caused hym to be harde mynded to be obedyente to the crowne of Fraunce; howebeit, he knewe well he dyd yvell, therfore he suffred all thynge to passe at adventure, and helde in his love the Englysshemen, and provyded suffycyently his townes and fortresses with artyllery and vytayles, and sent prively into Englande for men of armes and archers, and dyd set them in his garysons, and made to be beleved that he loked to have warre, but his men knewe nat with whome; howebeit, all that ever he dyd was knowen in Fraunce, and many spake largely against him. He knew well that certayne lordes of Fraunce were nat contente with hym, but he dyd set lytell therby, but so passed on his tyme. He had great affyaunce in his cosyne the duchesse of Burgoyne, as it was reason, for he had of her a specyall supporte and ayde: for the lady bycause of lygnage loved hym, and bycause that the erle of Flaunders her father, who was cosyn germayne to the duke, had alwayes loved and comforted hym in all his trybulacyons. This lady

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

of Burgoyne was a good lady, so that the duke her husbande wolde not gladly displease her, and good cause why, for the duke by her helde great herytages, and had by her fayre chyldren. All the realme of Fraunce was bounde to love her; and she had nat ben, great dyscensions had moved bytwene the parties, for natwithstandynge that the duke of Bretayne had ben at Paris with the French kyng, and made to hym homage, yet I can nat well say if it was with good herte or no: for as sone as the duke was retourned into Bretaygne, there apered in hym but small amendemente. He had sworne obeysaunce and to be obedyent to the Pope at Avignon, but he was nat, for rather he dispysed hym in his wordes. Nor also he wolde suffre no man to be promoted in his countrey by that Popes bulles, but helde hymselfe newter in dyvers thynges, and wolde gyve the benefyces hymselfe. No clerke coulde atteygne to any promocyon of any benefyce in his countrey, without he had ben well pleased therwith. Also any commaundementes that came out of the parlyament chambre of Parys, he sette nothynge therby. The prelates and bysshoppes of Bretayne lost great parte of their jurisdictions by this duke, so that great complayntes therof was made in the parlyament of Parys, but they hadde small remedy. And whan he was sent for to come to Parys, or els to sende thyder some able personages to make aunswere to suche matters as shulde be aledged agaynste hym, and whan any of the kynges offycers came into Bretaygne to somon hym to apere, thanne he wolde nat be spoken withall, but ever made sondry scuces. And whan the kinges officers dyd departe againe thens, than he wolde say: I wyll go to Parys to se what ryght I shall have there: it is nat yet thre yeres sence I was there, to se what ryght I shulde have, but I coulde se nor here of no ryght there mynystred; the lordes of the parlyament tourne every thynge as they lyst; they reken me very yonge and ignorante to be ledde as they lyst, but I wolde they knewe that if all my men of the duchy of Bretaygne were all of one accorde, and obedyent to my pleasure, as they ought to be, I wolde gyve the realme of Fraunce so moche to do, that I wolde bringe theym that be unreasonable to reason: and suche as hath done trewly shulde be rewarded acordyngly, and suche as

CAP. CLXXVII

have deserved to have justyce shulde have as they have deserved, and suche as wolde have right, shulde have it. Thus many complayntes were made oftentymes to the kynge, and suche as were of his secrete counsayle said: This duke is ryght presumptuous and proude, sythe he wyll be brought to no reason, and if he shulde be thus suffred in his lewde opinyon, it shulde greatly enfeble the noblenesse of this realme, for by hym other lordes shall take ensample to do yvell, and therby the jurysdictyon of the realme lytell and lytell shall be loste. Than it was devysed to withstande, and to fynde remedy for suche inconvenyentes, and to sende swetely to hym to come to Towrs, in Thourayne, and there to mete with the French kyng, and with the duke of Berrey, and the duke of Burgoyne, the bysshop of Charters, the bysshoppe of Dothune.[1] These four were specially named, bycause the duke loved them best above all other lordes of Fraunce, excepte the erle of Estampes, and the lorde Coucy.

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

[1] *Autun.*

Thus there was sente into Bretayne to the duke the erle of Estampes and mayster Ive of Noyent.[2] They toke great payne and traveyle to move the duke to mete with the Frenche kyng at Towrs. They spake so fayre with fresshe coloured wordes, armed with reason, that the duke agreed to go to Towrs, but further he sayd in no wyse he wolde go, and also that he shulde nat se hys enemy syr Olyver of Clysson in no wyse. All this was acorded and agreed, or he wolde come to Towrs. These ambassadours retourned into Fraunce, and shewed the kynge and his counsayle howe they had spedde. They were contente therwith, sythe they coulde brynge hym to none other purpose. The kynge and his counsayle made them redy to go to Towrs, and to tary there a two or thre monethes, for they thought their treatie with the duke of Bretayne shulde nat sone be acomplisshed. Thus the Frenche kinge, the duke of Thourayne his brother, the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne, and Johan of Burgoyne his sonne, the duke of Burbon, the lorde Coucy, the erle of Marche, the erle of saynte Poll, and other of the counsaile of Fraunce, came to Towrs, in Thourayn. Also thyder came the constable of Fraunce, and Johan of Bretayne his sonne in lawe, and their counsayles, for they hadde maters there to do. And a fyftene dayes after, thyder came the duke of

[2] *Eurient.*

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

Bretayne; or he came it was sayd he wolde nat come, for he had thre tymes sent to excuse hymselfe, sayenge, he was sycke and coude nat ryde; howbeit, finally he came, and was lodged at his ease. There was syr Roger of Spaygne to have ben aunswered, but the kynge and the counsayle had so moche to do with the duke of Bretayns maters, that they coulde entende to nothyng els. This syr Roger was there more than two monethes or he coulde be aunswered, but daily he was answered that he shulde be herde, but it was longe fyrste. Also the same tyme there fell another let, for thyder came fro kyng Rycharde of Englande, syr Johan Clapam,[1] one of the kynges counsayle and of his chaumbre, and Rycharde Choall,[2] clerke and doctour of lawe, to speke with the Frenche kynge and his counsayle, for the same matter that syr Thomas Percy and the lorde Clyfforde had ben at Parys for with the kynge. Whan the Englysshemen were come to Towrs, all other treaties were closed up and entended to their delyveraunce. It was shewed me that they brought letters of credence to the kynge, and to the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne. They were herde: their credence was, that the kynge of Englande and his uncles wolde knowe if the Frenche kynge and his counsayle were in wyll and mynde to kepe their metyng at Amyence, to treate for a peace to be had bytwene the two kynges, their alyes and confederates. The Frenche kynge, who, as he shewed, desyred nothynge so moche as peace, and answered and said that he was redy to accomplysshe all promesses, sayenge that as soone as he had delyvered the duke of Bretayne, and were departed fro Towrs, he wolde entende to nothynge els tyll he were come to Amyence, and there to abyde for the Englysshe ambassadours, and there to make them as good chere as he coude. Herewith the Englysshe ambassadours were well content, and were a fyve dayes at Towrs with the kynge, and than tooke their leave of the kynge, and of the other lordes. The kynge gave them great gyftes, and their costes there payed for, and so departed. And all that season they sawe nat the duke of Bretayne, nor spake nat with hym, for the duke wolde nat, leste the Frenchemen shulde have any suspecte in hym. Thus the Englysshmen retourned to Calays, and so

[1] *Clanvowe.*
[2] *Rohale.*

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

to Dover, and to London, and founde the kynge and his counsayle at Westmynster, and there shewed what they had done, herde, and sene. The answere that they brought pleased well the kynge and his counsayle, and ordeyned for their journey to go to Amyence.

Nowe let us somwhat speke of the messangers that were sente to the Frenche kynge, fro the vycount of Chastellon, out of Foize and Bierne.

Sir Roger of Spayne, and sir Espaygne du Lyon, who were sent into Fraunce fro the vicounte of Chastellon, they toke on theym great payne and traveyle to pursewe their cause, for certayne clerkes and knightes of the kinges counsayle advysed the kynge to take the countie of Foiz, and to attrybute it to the crowne of Fraunce, sythe they of the countrey wolde agree therto. The kynge enclyned well therto, but the duke of Burgoyne, who was sage and ymagynatyve, wolde nat agree therto, but sayd alwayes: Let the kynge take agayn his money, and somwhat more. Howebeit, as it was shewed me the duke of Burgoyne coulde nat be herde, but the duke of Berrey toke the busynesse on him, by meanes as I shall shewe you. Ye have herde here before what fell bytwene hym and the olde Gaston erle of Foize, whan the duke sente into Bierne to the erle suche notable persones, as was the erle of Sanxere, the vicount Dassey,[1] the lorde de la Ryver, and syr Wyllyam of Tremoyle, to treate for the maryage of the lady Jahan of Boloyne, whome the erle of Foize had in kepinge: and at that tyme the erle was well content with the maryage that the duke of Berrey shulde have her, so that he wolde pay thyrty thousande frankes for the kepyng and bringynge up of the lady; and the duke payed the said some, and so had the lady to his wyfe. The duke of Berrey remembred the matter than, and sente for syr Roger of Spayne, and for syr Espayne du Lyon, to come speke with hym in his chambre: and so secretly he sayde to them: Syrs, if ye wyll come to a good conclusyon in your sute, ye shall attayne therto by my meanes; but fyrst I wyll have agayne the thyrty thousande frankes whiche I payed to the olde erle of Foiz whan I had my wyfe: I have alwayes ymagyned that if I myght over lyve the erle of

[1] *Acy.*

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

Foiz, to have the money agayne. Whan these two knyghtes herde the duke say so, they regarded eche other and spake never a worde. Than the duke sayd agayne: Syrs, to say trouthe I have taken your wordes fro you; speke togyther and advyse you well; without this treatie ye shall nat attayne to your purpose, for my brother of Burgoyne wyll do as I wyll have hym: he hath the governaunce of the countrey of Picardy, and I of Languedocke: agaynste my wyll no man wyll speke. The vycount of Chastellon shall fynde good ynough, for the erle that is deed had more rychesse than the kynge hath in his treasour. Than syr Roger of Spayne sayde: Sir, though we wolde agre to your demaunde, yet we have nat here with us the treasure to contente you withall. Ah, syr Roger, quod the duke, that shall nat let nor hyndre the mater: and ye promyse the dette on your faythe and writynge, I wyll beleve you, and if it were in a greater mater than that is. Syr, quod the knyght, I thanke you, we shall speke togyder, and tomorowe gyve you an answere. It pleaseth me well, quod the duke. They departed fro the duke and went to their lodgynge, and toke counsayle togyther whether they shulde retourne agayne home without agrement, or els acorde to the dukes demaunde: so that the heritage might clerely remayne and abyde with the vycount of Chastellon. The nexte daye they retourned to the duke and offered hym all his demaunde. And so there syr Roger of Spayne, and syr Espaygne du Lyon, became dettours to the duke of Berrey for xxx. thousande frankes, on the condicion that he shulde be meane that the kynge shulde take agayne the somme of money that he had lente to the erle of Foize, and that the vicount of Chastellon might peasably enjoy the herytage. Well, quod the duke, lette me alone, I shall do it, I truste. After that day the duke of Berrey, who desyred to have these xxx. thousande frankes, was so good an advocate for the vycount of Chastellon, that he concluded his busynesse at his owne wyll. The kynge and his counsayle put all the mater to his pleasure, and so these two knyghtes had letters sealed of the confyrmacyon of the countie of Foiz, to be the trewe enherytaunce of the vicount of Chastellon,

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

with letters therof adressed to the bysshop of Noyon, and to the lorde de la Ryver, beynge at Tholouse. The tenour of the letters as I was enfourmed by suche credyble persones as went on the same legacyon, was as foloweth:

Charles, by the grace of God kynge of Fraunce: we sende and commende us to the ryght reverende bysshoppe of Noyon, and to our knight and chambrelayne the lorde de la Ryver. We wyll that ye suffre the vycount of Chastellon, enherytour of Foiz and of Bierne, to enjoy and possede his heritage of the countie of Foiz, with the purtenaunces, so that ye take into your possessyon the somme of lx. thousande frankes at one payment: and the money payed, than our seneschall of Tholouse to make a sure quytaunce of the receyte therof. Also at another paymente I wyll ye receyve twenty thousande frankes for your costes and charges in goynge and retournyng, and that money payed, than make quytaunce therof under the seale of offyce of Tholouse. Also we wyll that syr Yvan and syr Gracyen of Foiz, bastarde sonnes to the erle Gaston of Foiz, have parte and reasonable assignement bothe in landes and goodes of that was their fathers, by the advyse and dyscrecyon of syr Roger of Spayne, and of the vicount of Brunyquell, syr Raynolde of Newcastell, and the lorde of Corase, to whome we shall write that they maye so aquyte them to dyscharge our conscyence, for we made suche promyse to the erle their father. And if there be any faute in these four lordes, or any rebellyon in the vycount, than we disanull all this sayde treatie, and wyll that it stande as voyde. In wytnesse herof to these letters we have sette to our seale, in our cytie of Towrs, the xii.[1] yere of oure reygne, the twenty day of the moneth of Decembre.

[1] *xxii.* P.

These letters made and sealed and delyvered, the knyghtes of Foiz retourned fro Towrs, their leave taken. This season syr Loys of Sanxere, marshall of Fraunce, lay in the marches of Carcassone, as soveraygne governour there, instytuted by the kynge. The bysshoppe of Noyon, and the lorde de la Ryver, sent for hym to Tholouse, and whan he was come thyder they sayde to hym: Syr marshall, the vycount of Chastellon reputeth hymselfe to be enherytour of the county of Foiz, and we have sent into Fraunce to the kynge to

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

knowe what he and his counsayle wyll saye in that mater, wherfore be ye redy with menne of armes on the fronters of Foiz; and as soone as syr Roger of Spayne, and syr Espayne, be returned, or that we have other message fro the kynge, that they agree nat on any peace, and that the king wyll have the lande of Foiz, than entre you incontynent and take possessyon acordynge to the right and puyssaunce that the kynge hathe gyven us in that quarell. Thus the marshall was redy provyded, and every day loked for aunswere fro the kynge.

Nowe we wyll leave speakyng of this mater, and shewe somwhat of the duke of Bretayne.

Ye have herde here before what treatie was at Towrs, in Thourayn, bytwene the Frenche kyng and the duke of Bretaygne, the whiche duke dyde put the kynge and his counsayle to moche payne, for he wolde fall to no reason. It was sayde the kynge demaunded of hym and he refused: in lykewyse he demaunded, and the kynge refused. Moche treatie there was, but no conclusion taken. The duke he was redy to serve the kynge and to do hym homage, as farre forthe as he was bounde to do. Thanne the kynges counsayle sayd to hym: Sythe ye knowledge yourselfe to be the kinges liegman, why wyll ye nat than obey to reason? Why syrs, quod he, wherin am I rebell? Than they layde to him dyvers poyntes. Fyrste, in the belevynge on the Pope at Avygnon, whome they sayde the kynge toke for the trewe Pope: Ye dyffer therfro and dyssymule the mater, for ye wyll obey none of his commaundementes, but gyve all the benefyces yourselfe in Bretaygne, and suche as brynge any bulles fro the Pope, ye wyll nat knowe theym; this is agaynste the magesty royall, and great synne to your conscyence and soule. Than the duke aunswered and sayde: As for my conscyence there is no man ought to speke therof nor judge it but all onely God, who is soveraygne judge in all suche causes, and sythe ye argue and oppose me in that mater, I shall aunswere you: As for these popes who are indyfferent, there is no sure declarasion made of them; and the season that the first tydynges came of the chosynge of pope Urbane, I was in the towne of Gaunt, with my cosyn the erle of Flaunders. And there

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

he receyved letters sealed with the Popes seale, as than called Robert of Quesne[1] cardynall, and in his letter he certifyed to the erle my cosyn, that by the grace of God and by the devyne inspyratyon he was chosen Pope, and hadde to name Urbane; howe than canne this be undone agayne; me thynke it were harde to do. I wyll nat argue agaynst the kinges majeste, for I am his cosyn and lyege man, and shall well and trewly serve hym whansoever I be requyred, as farre forthe as I am bounde to do; but I wyll speke agaynst them that counsayle nat the kynge well. Why syr, quod they: shewe us who they be that do nat counsayle the kynge as they ought to do, and we shall fynde remedy for them. Syrs, quod he, ye knowe them better than I do, for ye company with them oftener than I do: but as touchynge the benefyces of my countrey, I am nat so haute nor so cruell agaynst suche as desyre them, but that I suffre the clerkes of my countrey to enjoy them by the bulles of pope Clement. But suche clerkes as be nat of the same countrey I refuse them, and the cause why I shall shewe you. They wolde beare away the rychesse of my countrey out therof, and deserve it nat, whiche is agaynst ryght and consyence, wherfore I can nat agree therto. And whereas ye saye that I am rebell and hawte agaynst the kynges offycers, whanne they come into my countrey, that is nat so, nor wyll nat be. Ye ought to knowe, and if ye do nat, lerne it, the fee of the duchy of Bretayne is of so noble a condycion, that soveraygnely there ought none to enterprise any mater there, but al onely their owne naturall lorde; that is to say, the duke of Bretayne holdeth his court open to here all ryghtes, and his offycers to execute all ryghtes in the lande of Bretaygne, and to do acordynge to their offyce. And if I have any offycer that do the contrary to ryght, that outher straunger or other have cause to complayne, I punysshe them and shall do, that other shall take ensample by them. Moreover I say that some of the kynges counsayle do so that they ought to be reproved, for they do as moche as they maye do, to norysshe warre and hatred bytwene the kyng and me: the cause why is clere ynough. They suffre my cosyn John of Bloys to do two thynges agaynst me unreasonable. The fyrste is, he writeth

[1] *Geneva.*

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

hymselfe Johan of Bretayne: by reason of that name it semeth he entendeth to attaygne to the herytage of Bretaygne, of the whiche he is without, and shall be, for I have chyldren, sonne and doughter, that shall succede after me. Secondely, he beareth the ermyns whiche are the armes of Bretaygne, but of trouthe to do me dyspleasure withall; sir Olyver Clysson mayntayneth him in that opinyon, and as longe as he is in that case I wyll agre to no treatie with the kynge. As for warre I wyll make none to the kyng, bycause he is my naturall lorde, but if by yvell informacyon the kyng make me warre, I shall defende me, and he shall fynde me in myne owne countre. All this I wyll that the kyng knowe.

Thus the treatie bytwene the kynge, and the duke of Bretayne, contynued rygorously, for the duke was lorde and mayster of his counsayle, but the Frenche kynge was nat so of his, but was ruled by syr Olyver Clisson, and the Begue of Vyllains, syr Johan Mercyer, and by syr Willyam of Montague. The duke of Burgoyne, who had clere understandyng of every thynge, suffred the duke of Bretaygnes reasons and defences to be layde in place, and covertly he susteyned them, and had the duke of Berrey of his opynyon: for he hated inwardly them of the kynges privy chambre, bycause they had dystroyed his treasourer Betysache shamfully, by justyce at Besyers, as ye have herde here before, but he suffred it, for he sawe no tyme to be revenged. In this dyfference the duke of Bretaygne taryed at Towrs thre monethes, that their treatie coulde come to no good conclusyon, and were at the poynte to have departed, and the kynge was in wyll that as soone as he was retourned into Fraunce, to make a great assemble, to make warre the next somer after into Bretayne agaynst the duke, and suche of his acorde, and to leave all other busines: but the dukes of Berrey, and of Burgoyne, the lorde Coucy, therle of saint Poll, sir Guy of Tremoile, the chanceller of Fraunce, and dyvers other prelates and high barons of Fraunce, suche as were there, ymagined to withstande this rigorous rebellions, and spake togider, and said to the kyng: Sir, we that be the soverayn lordes and piers of your realme, and be nere of your lygnage, we shulde have

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

a treatie this next Lent for a peace to be had at Amience with thenglysshmen; wherfore sir, ye had nede to make haste, and leave this yvell wyll bytwene you and the duke of Bretayne, for if the duke departe hens without any agrement made bytwene you, thenglysshmen wyll be the harder in all their treaties, for they wyll thynke them to be ayded and comforted by the duke of Bretayne, and by his countrey, for the duke hath thenglisshmen at his hande whan he wyll; and if we have warre at ones, bothe with the Englysshmen and Bretons, as we have had or this, they wyll put us to great payne. These lordes dyde so moche with the kyng and his counsayle, that at last they founde a meane bytwene the kyng and the duke: I shall shewe you what it was: and surely without the same meanes had ben founde, they shulde have come to no conclusion of good acorde. So it was, the Frenche kyng had a doughter, and the duke of Bretaine had a sonne; there was a maryage made bytwene this sonne and this doughter. In lykewise John of Bretayne had a sonne by the doughter of sir Olyver of Clysson, and the duke of Bretayne had a doughter, and it was thought to make sure peace, that the mariage bytwene them two were necessary. These maryages were agreed and concluded; howbeit, for all these alyaunces, yet John of Bretayne shulde leave the armes of Bretayne, and beare them of Chastellon: and bycause he was extracte by his mother syde of a duke of Bretayne, for his mother was doughter to a duke of Bretaygne, therfore he was alowed to bere in his armes a border of ermyne, with thre labels goules, on the heed of a schochyn of ermyns. Thus he bare these devises, and every thynge was apesed. So the duke of Bretayne gate the love of the kyng and of his uncles, and dyned with the kyng: and so John of Bretayne was erle of Ponthieurs,[1] and thus shewed great love togyder by meanes of these mariages; howebeit, the duke in no wyse wolde se nor speke with sir Olyver of Clysson, he had suche displeasure to hym; howebeit, sir Olyver made lyght therof, for he hated the duke also with all his puissaunce. These mariages thus acorded, and the lordes sworne and bounde to fulfyll them, whan the chyldren shulde be somwhat of more age: than these lordes determyned to departe fro

[1] *et là fut Jehan de Bretaigne conte de Penthèvre.*

CAP. CLXXVII

How the treatie of peace was renewed at Towers, in Thourayn.

Tourse, and to drawe to Parys, for the tyme aproched that they shulde be at Amyence personally; the Frenche kyng, his brother, his uncles, and his counsayle, to mete there with the kyng of Englande, his uncles and counsayle, who shulde be there. So the duke of Bretayne toke leave of the Frenche kyng, and of his brother and uncles, and of suche other as he loved best, and so departed fro Tourse, and went into his owne countre; and in lykewise so dyd all other lordes. The duke of Berrey, the duke of Burgoyne, and the lorde Coucy taryed there styll, I shall shewe you why.

CAP. CLXXVIII

Howe therle of Bloys, and Mary of Namure his wyfe, solde the countie of Bloys and all their landes to the duke of Thourayne, the Frenche kynges brother.

YE have herde here before in this hystorie howe Loys of Bloys, sonne to therle Guy of Bloys, died whan he was yonge, in the towne of Beaumont in Heynalt; wherby the lady Mary doughter to the duke of Berrey was a widowe, and therby she lost her welthe of this worlde, for the chylde was a gret enheritour, and if he had lyved he had ben a gret lorde. I speke of it bycause it shulde be knowen in tyme to come, thenheritaunce to whome it went out of the right lyne, and by what maner. Therle of Blois, and Mary of Namure his wyfe, were nat in the case to engendre children togider, for by great drinkyng and moche eatynge of swete and delycate meates, they were overgrowen with fatnesse, so that the erle coude nat ryde, but was alwayes caried in a lytter fro one place to another, or whan he wolde go a huntyng or haukyng, whiche sporte was gretly used with the lordes of Fraunce.[1] The same season, whyle the Frenche kynge was at Tourse, the duke of Thourayne had an ymaginacion whiche he brought to effect, as I shall shewe you. The duke of Thourayne knewe well he had moche rychesse lying by hym, paradventure a myllion of floreyns, whiche he had by reason of his mariage with the

[1] *et tout ce savoient bien les seigneurs de France.*

lady Valentyna of Myllayne, doughter to the erle of Vertus. He wyst nat howe to enploy these florens: than he remembred howe the erle Guy of Bloys had great herytages, and that after his dethe they were likely to go to dyvers persones. The erldome of Bloys shulde retourne to Johan of Bretayne, for he was the erles cosyn germayne, and the landes of Heynault shulde go to the duke of Julyers, and to the duke of Lancastre, except Chimay, whiche shulde go to them of Conflans by homage, and the countie of Soissons, whiche parteyned to therle of Bloys, and was aunciently alyed[1] to hym, the lorde of Coucy was enherytour therof, by reason of his delyveraunce out of prisone in England. Also the landes of Drages and Monny[2] shulde retourne to other heyres; and the landes of Holande, and Zelande, shulde retourne to the erls of Heynaulte. Thus these fayre herytages shulde be sparcled abrode; and this knewe well the lordes of Fraunce, wherfore the duke of Thourayn, who had money lyeng by hym, thought to bye these landes, if he might have any resonable bargayne. Than he thought to entreate the kyng to move therle of Blois in this mater, and specially at the lest to bye the countie of Bloys, whiche was a fayre and a noble countrey, and well fyttinge for hym: for the countie of Bloyes marched on the duchy of Thouraygne, and to the countie of Bloys parteyned many goodly fees. This duke of Thourayne rested styll on his purpose, and seased nat tyll he spake with the kynge his brother, and the duke of Burbone, and with the lorde of Coucy, bycause he was great with the erle of Blois, and had to wyfe the doughter of his cosyn germayne the duke of Loreyne. The duke of Thourayne and the other lordes of his affynite kept this mater secretely fro the duke of Berrey; I shall shewe you why. The lady Mary his doughter was endowed in all the countie of Bloys to the somme of vi. M. frankes by yere; and the duke of Berrey trusted by reason of his doughters dowrie, that the countie of Bloys shulde be his after the erles dethe; this duke of Berrey was a marveylous covytous prince. The duke of Burgoyne in lykewise trusted the landes of Hollande, Zelande, and Heynalte, to be his, bycause that Margarete his eldest doughter was maried to Wylliam, sonne to therle

CAP. CLXXVIII

Howe therle of Bloys and his wyfe solde the countie of Bloys and all their landes to the duke of Thourayne.

[1] *aliénée.*

[2] *Dargies et Nouvion.*

CAP. CLXXVIII

Howe therle of Bloys and his wyfe solde the countie of Bloys and all their landes to the duke of Thourayne.

of Heynalte: wherby he thought outher by bieng, or by some other incident, that those landes shulde returne to his sonne erle of Ostrevant, otherwyse called John of Burgoyne, who as than had maried Margarete, eldest doughter to therle of Heynalte. Thus the kyng and these said lordes purposed that at their departyng fro Tourse, in Thourayn, to ryde by Blois to se their cosyn therle Guy of Bloys, who was an eight myle fro Tourse, in a castell of his owne called the Castell Morant, and there to treate of this marchandise with hym and with his wyfe, the lady Mary of Namure, who was a covytous lady. So it was, there was a valiant knight and of great prudence, bayly of Blois, called sir Raynolde of Sens, who had parfyte informacion of all this busynes, by what meanes I knowe nat. Whan he knewe if he had gret pyte therof, for love of therle his lorde, for he thought by reason of his sale of his landes, he shuld be dishonored for ever, and disherite the true rightfull heyres, whiche shulde be damnacion to his soule. He thought to lette this mater if he coude, and so rode fro Blois, and spake with therle, and said: Sir, the Frenche kynge, and the duke of Thourayn, the duke of Burbon, and the lorde Coucy, cometh hyder to you. That is true, quod therle, why speke you that? Sir, quod he, I say it bycause ye shal be requyred to sell your enheritance, wherfore ye have nede to take good advise therin. Of those wordes therle had great marveyle, and said: I can nat let men to speke and make requestes, but or I make any suche bargayne to sell myne enherytaunce, or to disheryte myne heyres to my shame and rebuke, I shall rather sell or ley to pledge all the plate I have. Well sir, quod the knight, remembre well the mater whan tyme is, for this that I have shewed you is without dout. Bayly, quod the erle, I am nat so yong nor folysshe to enclyne to any suche treaties. Thus the bayly departed fro therle and rode againe to Blois, for he wolde nat be sene there at the kynges commynge. Whan the kyng and these said lordes came to the castell, the erle made them good chere, as it was reason. The erle and the countesse were right joyfull that the kyng wolde visyte them in their owne castell. Than the kynge to drawe the erle to his love, and to bring him to his entent, sayd: Fayre cosyn,

CAP. CLXXVIII

Howe therle of Bloys and his wyfe solde the countie of Bloys and all their landes to the duke of Thourayne.

I se well ye be a lorde of our realme garnysshed with honour and larges, and have ben at great cost: and to ayde you, and somwhat to recompence you, we wyll you gyve an ayde, that shall be well worthe to you twentie thousande frankes in the countie of Blois. Therle thanked the kyng of his gyfte, but he had never profite therof, for he had never nothyng. Than the kynge began to treate the erle to sell the countie of Bloyes to the duke of Thourayn. The kynge and the duke of Burbone spake fyrst, and founde therle very colde and farre of in that mater. Than the lordes drewe to the countesse of Bloyes, and shewed her so many colored reasons, and she hers, that after her husbandes dethe, she was lyke to be but a poore lady. Wherfore they said it were moche better for her to be a ryche lady and a puissaunt of golde and sylver, and jewelles, than to be poore; sayeng, howe she was lykely to overlyve her husbande, therfore they desyred her to counsayle her husbande to make this marchaundyse. The countesse, who was a covytous lady, and for love to have the floreyns, she enclyned to their desyres; and she dyd so moche with the helpe of other, as the ayde of a varlet of the erles chambre, called Sohier, borne at Malygnes, sonne to a weyver of clothes, but he was so great with the erle of Bloyes, that all thynge was done by hym, and without hym nothyng done; and the erle had gyven him in fees and herytages more than fyve hundred frankes by yere. Beholde and consydre what myschefe great lordes be brought unto by meane of servauntes. This Sohier had nother wytte nor reason to be greatly alowed, but it was al onely the folysshe love that his maister hadde to hym. In lykewise the duke of Berrey the same season had one with hym, called Jaques Thybaulte, who was of no reputacion, yet the duke at dyvers tymes had gyven hym the somme of two hundred thousande frankes, and yet all was but loste. This Sohier coulde nor can nat excuse hymselfe, but that if he had lysted he myght well have broken that marchandise, that therle his mayster made. But to please the kynge, the duke of Thourayne, the duke of Burbone, the lorde of Coucy, and the countesse, who was agreed therto by covitousnes of the florens, he rowned so in his maisters eare, that the erle wente from his

promyse that he had made to his barly. And so there the reverc̃ion of the countie of Bloys after his discease was solde for the somme of two hundred thousande frankes, and the duke of Thouraygne to delyver to the lady of Dunoyes for her dowrie, whiche was assygned to her, sixe thousande frankes. And furthermore he shulde have made another sale of all his landes in Hevnaulte, and the duke of Thouraygne to have payde for that two hundred thousande frankes. Howebeit, therin the erle of Bloys reserved to knowe the erle of Hevnaultes pleasure therin, who was his naturall lorde, to whom he owed faythe and homage for those landes; howebeit, the kyng and the duke of Thouraygne toke that charge on them, and to discharge the erle whatsoever shulde fall after. Thus or they departed, thay bounde the erle by promyse and by writynges sealed, as they might well and easely do, for he had there none of his counsayle save Sohier, who never was at scole, nor knewe no letter on the boke. Made after this maner went this marchandise. And I have written this mater as justely as I coude, to thentent that herafter in tyme to come, by reason of writyng, the trouthe shulde be knowen. For the erle [illegible] his lorde and mayster, as he that was [illegible] more by his wyfe and varlet [illegible] this yvell bargayne. And [illegible] and surely made by the [illegible] and their counsayle, than the [illegible] returned into Fraunce. Great [illegible] in dyvers countreis.

CAP. CLXXIX

Howe sir Roger of Spaygne, and sir Espaygne du Lyon, spedde with the Frenche kyng and his counsayle, for the vicount of Chastelons busynese: and howe he was sette in possession of the countie of Foiz: and of the money that he payde.

NOWE let us somwhat speke of sir Roger of Spaygne, and of sir Espaygne du Lyon, and shewe how they spedde, after they were retourned fro Tourse to go to Tholous to the bysshop of Noyon and to the lorde de la Ryver. So longe they journeyed that they came thyder; they were welcome, for their commynge was sore desyred. There they shewed their letters, and howe they had spedde. By semblaunt the bysshoppe and the lorde de la Ryver were joyouse of that the herytaunce shulde abyde with the vycount of Chastellon, on suche condycions as is before written. Than sir Roger and his companyon thought to take some more payne, as to ryde to the vycount of Chastellon, and to the counsayls of Foize and of Bierne, to se that every thyng be sette in good order. Than they departed fro Tholous, and rode to saynt Gracyens. The vicount was nat there, but he was at the entre of Berne, in a fayre castell called Pau, and there they founde hym, who was joyfull of their commynge. And whan he knewe that the Frenche kyng had gyven up his tytell of the byeng of the countie of Foiz, he was gladder than he was before. As for the money that he shulde paye, he wyst well ynoughe where to have it, and moche more.

CAP. CLXXX

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence, of the Frenche kynge and his counsayle, and of the kynge of Englandes uncles, on the treatie of peace.

I THYNKE I have sufficiently treated of the busynesse of Bierne, and of Foiz, for if I shulde reherse all thynges, it wolde requyre long writyng: therfore I wyll leave spekyng therof, and treate of other maters. Thus all thynges concluded, the vicount of Chatellon was erle of Foiz, and lorde of Berne, in lyke maner as the olde erle helde it, and all suche as ought so to do made homage to hym. And he departed largely with sir Yvan, and sir Gracien, tholde erles bastarde sonnes, in suche wyse that they were content; and payde to the Frenche kyng all suche money as was promised to be payde. This mater was nat sone done: somer was first well onwarde, and the bisshop of Noyon and the lorde de la Ryver taryed styll at Thoulous tyll every thyng was set in good order, accordyng as they were charged. Nowe let us speke of thassemble of the lordes of Fraunce and of Englande, in the good cyte of Amyence, on the treatie of a peace or of a truce, as than beyng the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.lxxx. and xi. in the myddes of Lent. Great provision was made ther for these lordes or they came thider; first, for the Frenche kyng and for his estate, and for his thre uncles, and also for other great lordes of Fraunce, every man after his degre, for it was said that kyng Richard of Englande shulde be there: wherfore many desyred to se him, such as had never sene him before. Howbeit, he came nat there, yet he came to Dover, to thentent to have passed the see, and his thre uncles with hym, that is to say, the dukes of Lancastre, Yorke, and Glocestre. And whan they came to Dover, they tooke advyse whyder it were mete for the kyng to passe the see or nat. All thynges consydred, the counsayle of Englande was of opinyon that the kyng shuld byde at Dover, and the duke of Glocester with him; and the duke

CAP. CLXXX

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence.

of Lancastre, the duke of Yorke, therle of Huntyngton, therle of Derby, sir Thomas Percy, the bysshops of Durham and London, and other of the kynges counsaile, to passe over: so they came to Calais: and whan the day aproched that they shulde mete at Amyence, they departed fro Calys mo than xii. C. horse; it was a goodly syght to se them ryde in good order. The Frenche kyng had ordayned, that after thenglisshmen came out of Calis, both goyng, abyding, and returnyng, all their costes and charges were borne of the Frenche kynges charge, as mete, drinke, lodgyng, and horse mete. With the duke of Lancastre, and the duke of Yorke, there came their cosyn, doughter to their suster, and to the lorde Coucy, who was a faire yong lady, called the lady of Yrelande, for she was wedded to the duke of Yrelande. This lady came to Amyens to se the lorde her father, the lorde Coucy, for she had nat sene hym moche before, wherfore she hadde great desyre to se hym: she came lyke a noble widowe, havyng but small joye in her corage.

The Frenche kyng had ordayned to make the Englysshemen as moche honour as coude be devysed: and so the foure dukes, that is to saye, the duke of Thourayn, the Frenche kynges brother, and the dukes of Burbon, of Berrey, and of Burgoyne, lepte on their horses and rode out of the towne to mete with the Englisshmen, acompanyed with many other great lordes. Fyrst mette with them the duke Loys of Thourayn, well acompanyed, and honorably he receyved his cosyns of Englande, and there communed a certayne space with them. Than he toke his leave and departed agayne with all his company, and so rode streight to the cytie to the kynge his brother. And the other thre dukes, the kynges uncles, Berrey, Burbone, and Burgoyne, mette with the Englysshe dukes in the felde, and made great chere and honorable eche to other, that joye it was to se. Than the gentyll erle Dolphyn of Auvergne, who had ben as an hostager in Englande, and moche in the duke of Lancasters company, and loved hym very well, he came and humbly saluted the duke of Lancaster. Whan the duke sawe him, he enbrased hym in great token of love, and spake toguyder a lytell. Than the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne came to them: and the duke of Burbon, the lorde Coucy, and therle

CAP. CLXXX

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence.

of saynt Poule came to the duke of Yorke, the erle of Huntyngton, and to sir Thomas Percye, and so rode talkyng togyder with amorous wordes, tyll they aproched the cytie of Amyence. Than the duke of Lancastre rode bytwene the duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyne: thus they rode all thre in a front, makyng honour eche to other, tyll they came to the bysshoppes palais, where the kynge and the duke of Thourayne was. There they alighted, and the two dukes ledde the duke of Lancastre up the steres, and the other dukes and lordes folowed. Than the Frenche lordes came into the kynges presence, and made their reverence, and lefte the Englysshe dukes standyng alone. Than a lytell they enclined themselfe to the kyng: than the kyng came to them and toke them by the handes, and lyfte them up, and spake swetely to them, and they to hym, and other lordes of Fraunce fell in talkynge with the other lordes of Englande; and whan they had communed a season, they toke their leave of the kyng, his brother, and uncles, and departed, and were conveyed to their lodgynges by the constable of Fraunce, the lorde Coucy, the erle of saynt Poule, sir Johan of Vyenne, and other lordes of the realme of Fraunce. Than they toke their leaves, and departed agayne to the kyng: and the lady of Irelande, doughter to the lorde Coucy, was lodged in her fathers lodging, and all her company.

It was ordayned by the Frenche kyng and his counsayle, before thenglysshe lordes came to the cytie of Amyence, whiche ordynaunce was publysshed and proclamed openlye, to thentent that no persone shulde be ignorant therof, but every man to beware of brekyng of any artycle in the proclamacion, on payne of lesyng of their heedes: First, that no maner of person make any riot, or gyve any riotous wordes to any Englysshman; and also that no knight nor squier speke or make any chalenge of armes to any Englysshman, on payne of the kynges highe displeasure, and they to company with them with swete wordes and goodly behavour, in the towne, lodgynges, or felde; nor that the Frenche pages make any debate nor riotte in any place on payne of dethe; and whatsoever any Englysshman demaundeth, to suffre them pesably to have it; and that no host nor vitayler

demaunde any money, outher for meate or drinke, nor for other suche commen charges. Also it was ordayned that no knight nor squyer of Fraunce shuld go by night tyme without torche or torches, and that the Englysshmen shulde go at their pleasure without any controlement; and that if any Frenchman mete any Englysshman in the night in any strete, that they shulde swetely and gently convey him or them to their lodgyng, or to their company. Also it was ordayned that in four places of the cyte four watches to be set, of a thousande men in every watche, and that if any fyre happe to fall in the nyght by any incydence, the watche in no wyse to remove for no maner of cause: but at the sownynge of a bell, all other people to drawe to quenche the fyre. Also it was ordayned that no French knight nor squier for no maner of cause shulde presume to speke to the king, without the kyng fyrst dyde call hym. Nor also that the knightes nor squyers of Fraunce shulde talke nor commune toguyder, as long as any of the Englysshemen were present, but to fynde communynge and pastyme with theym. Also it was ordayned, that all hostes, and their servauntes, in any wyse, shulde nat convey or hyde any bowes or arrowes, or any other thynge parteyninge to the Englysshemen, without makynge of large amendes, without it were gyven them by the Englysshmen of their curtesy; than to take it, or els nat. All these thynges were determyned by delyberacyon of good counsayle, to do the Englysshemen the more honoure, for they trusted of a good conclusyon of peace. Nighe every day, a fyftene dayes toguyder, these lordes were in counsayle, and brought nothyng to conclusyon, for their demaundes were greatly different. The Frenchemen demaunded to have Calais rased and beaten downe, in suche wyse that no persone shulde dwell there after. The Englysshemen wolde in no wyse agree to that treatie, for it ought to be beleved, that Calais was the towne of the worlde that the commons of Englande loved best; for as longe as they be lordes of Calays, they sayde, they bare the kayes of Fraunce under their gyrdell. Thoughe the lordes departed every daye unagreed, yet they departed asonder right amiably, for every daye they poynted to mete agayne the nexte day, bothe parties trustyng at last to conclude on some

CAP. CLXXX

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence.

CAP. CLXXX

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence.

good poynt. The Frenche kyng made thenglysshemen in that space thre notable dyners at his palais. In lykewise so dyde the duke of Thourayne, the duke of Berrey, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Burbone, the lorde of Coucy, and the erle of saynt Poule; eche of these made the Englysshemen a great dyner. And for every thing that the Englysshmen toke in the towne was payd for, and clerkes apoynted by the kynge and his counsayle to write every thyng, and every man apoynted for their money to the chambre of accomptes. It ought to be knowen that Johan duke of Lancastre, and his brother the duke of Yorke, for all that they were come thyder on trust of peace, yet they had charge of the kyng of Englande and of his counsayle, that whatsoever treatie they made, in no wise they shulde nouther gyve nor take any maner of thynge.

Many were of the opynion that the commynaltie of Englande rather enclyned to warre than to peace: for in the tyme of good kyng Edwarde the Thirde, and of his sonne the prince of Wales, they had so many fayre and highe vyctories on the Frenchemen, and so great conquestes, with so moche money for raunsomes, sellyng and patesynge of townes and countreis, that they were become marveylous riche. For many suche as were no gentylmen of byrthe, by reason of their hardynesse and valyaunt adventures, wan and conquered so moche golde and sylver that they became noble, and rose to great honour. And so such as folowed after wolde folowe the same lyfe; howbeit, after the dayes of the sayd kyng Edwarde, and the prince his sonne, by the wysdome and highe enterprice of sir Bertram of Clesquy, and by the ayde of other good knyghtes of Fraunce, the Englysshmen were than agayne sore put backe. The duke of Gloucestre, sonne to the sayde kynge Edwarde, and uncle as than to kyng Richarde, than beyng at Amyence, and dyvers other lordes, knightes, and squyers, were of the same opynion that the commons were of in Englande, and enclyned rather to the warre than to peace, to the entent therby to susteyne their estate. By the occasion therof the peace was the harder to drive; yet the kynge and the duke of Lancastre wolde fayne have hadde peace, for by their meanes that metynge at Amyence was apoynted; howbeit,

CAP. CLXXX

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence.

they wolde nat displease the commens of Englande. The Englysshemen wolde gladlye have hadde a peace, so they myght be restored agayne to al suche landes as was agreed on at the treaty before Charters, and that the Frenchemen shulde paye fourtene hundred thousande frankes, whiche was unpayed whan the warre began to renewe.

In this season thus great communycacion there was at the cytie of Amyence on treatie of peace, and the lordes that were there on bothe parties toke great payne in the cause. It myght well be marveyled why this peace toke none effecte, for specialy the duke of Burgoyne dyd what he coude for the Frenche partie, and the duke of Lancastre for the Englysshe partie, savyng the charge that he had, whiche he durst nat passe. Whan these lordes sawe that they coulde come to no good conclusyon, than the Frenchemen somwhat to apease and to please the Englysshmen, and the rather therby to fall to some reason, it was offred to them to enjoy styll peasably all that ever they were as than in possessyon of in Acquytayne, and nyne dyoces to be quite delyvered without any resorte, so that Calays myght be beaten downe; and also they offred to paye in thre yere after, the somme of xiiii. hundred thousande frankes. Than the duke of Lancastre and the Englyssh counsayle answered and sayd: Syrs, we have taried here a longe season, and have concluded nothyng, nor we canne nat conclude tyll we be retourned into Englande, and than we shall shewe all your desyres and offers to the kyng our soverayne lorde, and to the thre estates of the realme. And of one thinge be you sure, that as moch dyligence as I and my brother of Yorke can do, shall be doone to bringe your desyre to passe, except the beatyng downe of Calays; we dare nat speke therof, for if we dyd, we shulde ryn in the indygnacyon and hatred of the most parte of all the realme of Englande, and yet were we better to speke no worde therof. These wordes somwhat contented the French kynge and his counsayle, and desyred them, that whan they were returned into Englande to do their dyligente in the mater; and they said they wolde do what they coude for the Frenche party, sayeng howe the warre had endured over longe, and many yvell inconvenyentes hath ensued therby

CAP. CLXXX

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence.

in the worlde. Than it was considered bytwene the parties, bycause the truce fayled the next mydsomer after, bytwene Englande and Fraunce, to contynue it lengar the space of an hole yere, bothe by lande and by see bytwene them, their alyes, and adherentes; and therto the lordes of Englande were agreed. Than the Frenche kynges counsayle desyred to sende two French knightes to go with them into Englande, and at their retourne to bringe worde what case they shulde fynde the realme of Englande in. The duke of Lancastre, and the duke of Yorke, were contente therwith. It was shewed me, and also the apparaunce was great, howe that the Frenche kynge desyred greatly to have peace, for as than great brute ranne through France and other places, howe that Lamorabaquyn[1] was entred with great puissaunce of Turkes into the realme of Hungry. Syr Boucyquaut thelder, marshall of Fraunce, brought those newes, and syr Johan of Charon,[2] who were newely retourned fro the partyes of Grece and Turkey; wherfore the Frenche kynge in his youthe had great affectyon to go in voyage, and to go and se the sayd Lamorabaquyn, and to recover the realme of Armony, whiche the Turkes had wonne fro the kynge Lyon of Armony, who was the same tyme at Amyence: and he shewed the cause of his comynge thyder to the duke of Lancastre and to the duke of Yorke. They knewe hym well, for they had sene him before in the realme of Englande; he was in Englande to treate for the peace whan the Frenche kynge was at Sluse. And consyderynge the kynge of Armonyes busynesse at the ende of their parlyamente, the Frenche kynge sayde to the duke of Lancastre: Fayre nephewe, if peace maye be had bytwene us and the kynge of Englande, we might than make a voyage into Turkey, comfortyng the kynge of Hungry and the emperour of Constantynople, whome Lamorabaquyn dothe moche trouble: and let us recover the realme of Armony, whiche the Turkes kepe. We here saye that Lamorabaquyn is a valyaunt man and of great enterprise, and agaynst suche persones as are contrary to our beleve, and daily dothe trouble and greve us we ought to enclyne ourselfe to defende our Crysten faythe; wherfore, fayre nephewe, helpe you to provyde for this voyage in the realme of Englande. The duke of

[1] *Amurath.*

[2] *Carouges.*

Lancastre promysed to do his devoyre in that behalfe: thus they toke leave eche of other. CAP. CLXXX

This counsayle at Amyence endured a fyftene dayes; than the Englysshemen departed, and had with them in writyng the conclusion of their treatie, to shewe to the kynge of Englande and his counsayle. Than the duchesse of Irelande departed fro Amyence, and toke leave of her father the lorde of Coucy, and retourned with the Englysshe lordes. And fro that tyme that they departed fro Calais tyll they came thyder agayne they spent nothyng without they lyst, for the French kynge made every thynge to be payed, bothe for themselfe and for their horses. The duke of Burgoyne than retourned into Arthoys to the cytie of Arras, and there he founde the duchesse his wyfe, who had vysited the countrey of Flaunders. The duke of Thourayne, the duke of Berrey, and the duke of Burbone taryed with the kynge, and the kinge purposed to go to Beavoys and to Gysors, to sporte hym there in the waye to Parys. With the duke of Lancastre and the duke of Yorke certayne knightes of Fraunce wente into Englande, as syr Johan of Castell Morante and sir Taupyns of Cantmell, to bringe aunswere agayne out of Englande; and sir Raynolde du Roy, the lorde of Moncaurell, and the lorde of the Olde Towne,[11] conveyed them to Calays, and than toke their leave; and the Englysshmen passed over the see to Dover, and there founde the kynge and the duke of Glocestre taryeng for them. Whan the kyng sawe them, he had great comunynge with them of the state of the parlyamente of Amyence. The kynge was well content with that his uncles had done; but than the duke of Glocestre, who was alwayes harde agaynst the treatie of peace, sayd: howe there coulde no good conclusyon be taken in this treatye tyll the mater were brought to Westmynster to a general counsayle of all the thre astates of the realme, and than to folowe their advyses and none otherwyse. The duke of Glocesters wordes were well herde; no manne wolde saye agaynst hym, for he was greatly in the love of the realme. Than it was shewed to the knightes of Fraunce that they muste go with them to London, otherwyse they coulde have none answere. The two knightes obeyed, as it was reason. Than the kynge toke

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence.

[11] *Vicfville.*

CAP. CLXXX

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence.

his way and the lordes with him to London. Whan the kynge came to Dartforde, he tooke his waye to Eltham, and refresshed him there with the quene, and than came to Shene, and wente agaynst saynte Georges feest to Wyndsore, and there the knyghtes of Fraunce were aunswered. But or I shewe you their aunswere, I wyll somewhat speke of the Frenche kynge.

After that this assemble and counsayle had been at Amyence, the Frenche kynge, for lacke of good gydyng, fell sycke of the fever, wherfore he was counsayled to chaunge the ayre. So he was layde in a lytter, and caryed to Beauvoys, and there taryed in the bysshops palays tyll he was hole and recovered; his brother the duke of Thourayne with him, and his uncles the dukes of Berrey and Burbone; there he helde his Easter. And after, whan the kynge was stronge and myght well ryde, he rode to Gysors, the entryng into Normandy, to have there the sporte of huntynge, for theraboute were many fayre wodes. The kyng beynge there, sir Bernarde of Armynake, who was brother to Johan of Armynake, came to the kynge in good array, and the Dolphyn of Auvergne in his company, whome he founde at Parys in his waye. There the erle of Armynake and the erle of Rodays made their reliefe and homage to the kynge, acordinge to the custome, as other lordes of Fraunce made their relyefe for suche landes as they helde in fee of the kynge. And whan every thyng was writen and regestred, they toke their leave and retourned to Paris togyther, and fro thence to their countreys, to Auvergne and to Languedoc. And about the feest of Ascensyon tyde the Frenche kynge retourned to Parys in good helthe, and lodged at his house of saynte Poll, the whiche was ordeyned for hym; and thyder was come the Frenche quene and the duches of Thourayne.

Nowe let us speke of syr Johan of Castell Morante, and of syr Taupyn of Cantmell, who were in Englande taryenge for an answere of the kyng and his counsayle. They were at Wyndesore at saynte Georges feest, where was the kynge, his uncles, and other great lordes of Englande. There these lordes counsayled togyther on suche promyse as they had made to the Frenche kyng and his counsayle at Amyence,

CAP. CLXXX

Of the great assemble that was made at Amyence.

and determyned to delyver the two Frenche knyghtes that dayly called on them for an aunswere. Than these knyghtes were sente for on a day, and it was sayde to them thus: Syrs, be contente, for, all thinges consydred, ye canne have of us no full answere at this tyme, for it wolde be harde as nowe to assemble togyther the thre estates of the realme untyll the feest of Mychelmas, at whiche tyme they muste nedes be at the parlyamente at Westmynster: and to excuse you we shall write letters for the same purpose, at whiche season if you or any other for the partie of Fraunce wyll traveyle so farre as to come thyder, they shall have a reasonable answere, suche as generally the hole counsayle of the thre astates shall agre unto. Whan the Frenche knyghtes sawe what aunswere they had, and coulde have none other, they aunswered and sayd: Syr, we are contente with that ye have sayd; lette us have our letters, and we shall retourne. Than their letters were delyvered to them, and so toke their leave of the kynge and of other lordes, and so came fro Wyndesore to London, and made them redy to departe. The kyng of Englande caused all their costes and charges to be payed for, and conveyed to Dover, and there taryed a fyve dayes for lacke of wynde, and on the sixte day they departed and aryved at Boloyne; and whanne their horses were unshypped they rode to Amyence by small journeys and so to Paris, and there they founde the kynge and his lordes: it was aboute the feest of Penthecost. Their letters were redde, wherby they understode the ordynaunce of the Englysshmen. As it was shewed to me, the kynge nor his counsayle toke lytell regarde to the mater, for within a season after they had moche ado in other places.

CAP. CLXXXI

Howe syr Peter of Craon, through yvell wyll, by subtyle crafte, beate downe syr Olyver of Clysson, wherwith the kynge and his counsayle were sore displeased.

YE have well herde here before how sir Peter of Craon, who was a knyght of great lygnage, but he was farre out of the Frenche kynges grace and the duke of Thourayns: if he dyd so moche to cause them to be displeased with him, he dyd yvell. Ye have herde also howe he was gone into Bretayne to the duke, who shewed hym that the yvell wyll that the kynge bare hym was by the meanes of syr Olyver of Clysson. It may well be that he was so enfourmed, in that he hadde so great hate to the constable sir Olyver of Clysson, for he studyed ever after howe to dystroy hym. Thus whyle syr Peter of Craon was with the duke of Bretaygne they wolde often tymes comune togyder, and devise howe they myght bringe syr Olyver of Clysson to dethe, for they sayd that and he were ones deed, there was none that wolde greatly revenge his dethe. The duke repented hym that he had nat slayne hym whan he had hym in prisone, and wolde as than that it had coste hym a hundred thousande frankes that he had hym agayne at his wyll. Whan syr Peter of Craon sawe that the duke had suche hatred to syr Olyver of Clysson, he purposed a marveylous ymaginacion in himselfe, for by apparaunce men shulde gyve judgement. This knyght thought howesoever it were that he wolde slee the constable, and thought to entende to nothynge els tyll he had slayne hym with his owne handes, or caused hym to be slayne, and afterwarde entreat for peace. He douted nothyng John of Blois, nor the sonne of the vicounte of Rohan, who had wedded two of the constables doughters; he thought to do well ynough with theym as longe as the duke was on his parte. For he sawe well the strengthe and puyssaunce of Bloys was greatly feblysshed, for the erle Guy of Bloys had solde the herytage

CAP. CLXXXI

Howe syr Peter of Craon beate downe syr Olyver of Clysson.

of Bloys to the duke of Thourayn, whiche shulde have ronne by successyon to therle of Pointhyeur Johan of Bloys, wherby he thought that the duke of Thourayne shewed hym but small love nor alyaunce of lynage to bye away his enherytaunce. Wherfore this syr Peter thought if syr Olyver of Clysson were deed sone to apease the kynges yvell wyll and the duke of Thourayns, and therby sone to overcome the lorde de la Ryver and syr Johan Mercyer, Montagu, the Begue of Villayns, and syr Johan of Bulle, and other of the kynges chambre, suche as susteyned the constable: for he knewe well that the duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyne loved them nothynge inwardely, whatsoever they shewed outwardly. Thus sir Peter of Craon perceyvered styll in his opynyon, and devysed in his imagynacion by the entysyng of the dyvell, who never slepeth, but waketh and enbraseth their hartes to do yvell that enclyneth to his exortacion. Thus the dyvell dayly layde the mater before this knightes eyen, or he put the mater to execusyon; but if he had justly ymagyned the doutes and parelles and myschevousnesse that myght fall by his yvell dede, reasone and wyse atemperaunce shulde have caused hym to have done otherwyse. But it is often tymes said, that the great desyre that a man hath to have the execusyon of that thynge or it be fallen, often tymes quencheth reason and wysdome: therfore often tymes vyces are maysters and vertues vyolate and corrupted. And for bycause that specially this syr Peter of Craon had so great affection to the dystructyon of the constable, therfore he lyghtly enclyned to the temptacion to do outrage and folly, and thought that if he myght slee the constable and returne agayne safely into Bretayne, that no man wolde seke hym there. If they dyd, he trusted that the duke wolde excuse hym; and that if the worste fell, that the Frenche kynge came thyder with a great puyssaunce, than in a nyght to entre into a shyppe, and so to go to Burdeaux, to Bayon, or into Englande, and there he thought well he shulde nat be pursewed. For he knewe well that the Englysshemen hated the constable, bycause of the crueltyes that he had doone and consented to be done sythe he was tourned Frenche; howebeit, before that, he had done many notable servyces

CAP. CLXXXI

to the Englysshemen, as it hath ben rehersed here before in this hystory.

Howe syr Peter of Craon beate downe syr Olyver of Clysson.

Sir Peter of Craon, for to accomplyssh his desyre, had longe studyed in his mynde howe to brynge his purpose to passe, and kepte his purpose close and secrete. I knowe nat if he shewed it to the duke of Bretayne or nat: some thought yes, bycause after the dede done by hym and his company, he toke the next way he coude into Bretayne, and tooke for his savegarde the duke of Bretaygne. And also before the dede done he solde his castelles and herytage that he had in Anjou to the duke of Bretaygne, and renyed his homage to the Frenche kynge, and sayd howe he wolde go over the see. Of all these maters I passe brevely; but I shall declare the dede, for I syr Johan Froysart, auctour of this hystory, whan this unhappy dede was doone by syr Peter of Craon agaynste syr Olyver of Clysson, I was the same tyme at Paris: wherfore I ought to be well enfourmed of the mater, acordyng to the enquery that I made therin to knowe the trouthe. The same tyme this syr Peter had in the towne of Parys a fayre house standynge in the churche yarde of saynt Johans, as dyvers other lordes had in the cytie for their pleasure: in this house there was a keper. Syr Peter of Craon had sente of his servauntes to Parys, and they provyded largely in the house with wyne, corne, flesshe, salte, and other provysyons; also he had writen to the keper that he shulde bye certayne armure, as cotes of stele, gauntletes, stoles,[1] and other harnesse for xl. men; and that doone, to sende hym worde therof, to thentente that he wolde sende for them, and secretly all this to be done. The keper, who thought none yvell and to obey his maysters commaundement, bought all this marchaundyse. And all this season he was in a castell of his owne in Anjou, called Sable; and he sent one weke thre or four servauntes to his house in Paris, and so wekely, tyll he had there a xl. and shewed them nothynge for what cause he sent them thyder; but he charged them to kepe themselfe close in his howse in any wyse, and whatsoever they lacked the keper of his house shulde provyde for it. And on a daye I shall shewe you the cause why I sende you thyder before, and ye shall have good wages. They dyd as he commaunded them, and came prively to Parys, and entred

[1] *coifettes d'achier.*

CAP. CLXXXI

Howe syr Peter of Craon beate downe syr Olyver of Clysson.

into the house by nyght and in the mornynges, for as than the gates of Parys nyght and daye stode open. There assembled in that house so many togyther, that they were a xl. companyons hardy men and outragyous; howebeit, there were some that if they hadde knowen wherfore they came thyder they wolde nat have come there, yet they kepte themselfe secrete. Than at the feest of Pentecost syr Peter of Craon came to Paris secretly, and entred into his howse, dysguysed lyke a servaunt. Than he called for the porter that kepte the gate, and sayd: I commaunde the, on payne of thy lyfe, let no man, woman, nor chylde entre into this house, nor none to go out without my commaundement. The porter obeyed, as it was reason, and so dyd the keper; and he commaunded the kepers wyfe and her chyldren to kepe her chambre, and nat to issue out therof; wherin he dyd wysely, for if the woman and chyldren had gone abrode in the streates, the comynge thyther of syr Peter Craon had been knowen, for chyldren and women naturally are harde to kepe counsayle of that thynge a man wolde have kepte secrete. Thus syr Peter and his company were secretly in his howse tyll the day of the holy sacramente; and every day syr Peter had abrode his spyes that brought him worde of the state of syr Olyver Clysson; and tyll that daye he coulde fynde no tyme to execute his enterprise, wherwith he was sore displeased in hymselfe. The said day the Frenche kynge kepte a feest with open courte with all the lordes that were there; also the quene and the duches of Thourayne were there in great joye and solace. The same day after dyner the yonge lusty knyghtes were armed and justed valyauntly in the presence of the kynge and of the quene and other ladyes and damosels, and contynued tyll it was nere nyght: and by the judgement of the ladyes and harauldes the price was gyven to syr Gillyam of Flaunders, erle of Namure. And the kynge made all the lordes and ladyes a great supper, and after supper daunced tyll it was one of the clock after mydnyght; than every man departed to their lodgynges, some to one place and some to another, without feare or doute of any thyng. Syr Olyver of Clisson, who as than was constable of Fraunce, departed fro the kynges place last of all other, and had

CAP. CLXXXI

Howe syr Peter of Craon beate downe syr Olyver of Clysson.

taken his leave of the kynge, and than went through the duke of Thourayns chambre, and sayde to hym: Syr, wyll ye tary here all nyght, or els go to your lodgyng of Poullayne. This Poullayn was the dukes treasourer, and dwelte a lytell besyde the sygne of the Lyon of sylver. Than the duke sayde: Constable, I can nat tell as yet whether I do tary here or els go thyder: go ye your waye to your lodgynge, for it is tyme. Than syr Olyver toke his leave of the duke, and sayd: Syr, God sende you good nyght: and so departed, and in the streate he founde his servauntes and his horse, an eyght persones, and two torches: than he rode forthe to entre into the hygh streate of saynt Kateryns.

Sir Peter of Craon had the same night layde good spyall on syr Olyver of Clisson, and knewe well that he was bydden behynde his company with the kynge, and that his horse taryed at the kynges gate for hym. Than he mounted on his horse and all his company, well armed covertly, and there past nat sixe of his company that knew his entent. And whan he came into saynte Katheryns streate there he taryed, and abode prively for the constables commyng. And as sone as the constable was issued out of the streate of saynt Powle, and came into the hyghe streate, and his torches besyde hym, and came rydynge, talkyng with a squyer of his, sayenge: To morowe I must have at dyner with me the duke of Thourayne, the lorde Coucy, syr Johan of Vyen, syr Charles Dangers, the barone of Vrey,[1] and dyvers other, wherfore speke to my stewarde that they lacke nothynge; and sayeng of those wordes, syr Peter Craon and his company came on hym, and at the first they strake out the torches. And whan the constable herde the russhynge of the horses behynde hym, he thought it had been the duke of Thourayne that had folowed and sported with hym, and sayde: Ah, syr, it is yvell doone; but I pardon you; ye are yonge, and full of play and sporte. With those wordes syr Peter of Craon drewe out his sworde and said: Slee the constable, slee hym, for he shall dye. What arte thou, quod Clysson, that spekest those wordes? I am Peter of Craon, thyne enemye: thou hast so often tymes dyspleased me, that nowe thou shalte make amendes: and therwith strake at the constable; and syr Peters men drewe oute their

[1] *Ivry.*

CAP. CLXXXI

Howe syr Peter of Craon beate downe syr Olyver of Clysson.

swordes and strake at the constable, who had no wepon but a shorte knyfe of two foote of length, and defended hymselfe as well as he myght, and his men were without armure, and sone put abrode fro their mayster. Than syr Peters men sayd, Shall we slee them all? Yea, quod sir Peter, all suche as make any defence. Their defence was but small, for they were but eight persones, and without armure. Sir Peter demaunded nothynge but the dethe of the constable. Some that were there, whan they knewe it was the constable, they gave him but faynte strokes, for a thynge doone by trayson is doone cowardly, without any hardynesse. The constable defended hymselfe valyauntly with that wepyn that he had; howebeit, his defence hadde vayled hym but lytell, and the great grace of God had nat ben. Styll he sate on his horse tyll he had a full stroke on the heed, with whiche stroke he fell fro his horse ryght agaynst a bakers dore, who was up and busy to bake breed, and had left his dore halfe open, whiche was happy for the constable; for as he fell fro his horse he fell agaynste the dore, and the dore opened, and he fell in at the dore, and they that were a horsebacke coulde nat entre after hym, the dore was to lowe and to lytell. God shewed great grace to the constable, for if he had fallen in the streate as he dyde in at the dore, or if the dore had been shytte he had ben slayn without remedy; but they that were a horsebacke durste nat alyght: and also they thought, and so dyd syr Peter, that on the stroke that he had on the heed, that at laste it shulde be his dethes wounde. Than syr Peter sayd: Go we hence; we have done ynough; for if he be nat deed, he wyll dye on the stroke that he hathe on the heed, for it was a great stroke. Therwith they departed, and rode awaye a good pace to the gate of saynte Anthony, and rode out therat, for as than the gate was open, and had ben ten yere, sythe the Frenche kynge retourned fro the batayle of Rosebeque, and that the sayd constable put downe the malles of Parys, and punysshed them for their rebellyons.

Thus syr Olyver of Clysson was lefte in this case, as a man halfe deed and more, in the bakers house, who was sore abasshed whan he knewe it was the constable: as for his men had lytell hurte, for syr Peter and his men loked for

CAP. CLXXXI

Howe syr Peter of Craon beate downe syr Olyver of Clysson.

nothynge but to have slayne the constable. Than syr Olyvers men assembled togyther, and entred into the bakers house, and there founde their mayster, sore hurte on the heed, and the blode rennynge downe by his vysage, wherwith they were sore abasshed, and good cause why: there they made great complayntes; fyrste they feared he had ben deed. Anone tydinges hereof came to the kynges lodgynge, and it was sayde to the kyng, as he was goynge to his bedde: Ah, syr, we canne nat hyde fro you the great myschiefe that is nowe sodenly fallen in Parys. What myschefe is that? quod the kynge. Syr, quod they, your constable syr Olyver of Clisson is slayne. Slayne, quod the kynge; and howe so, and who hath done that deed? Syr, quod they, we canne nat tell; but this myschefe is fallen on hym here by in the streate of saynt Kateryn. Well, quod the kynge, light up your torches; I wyll go and se hym. Torches anone were lyghted up. The kynge put on a cloke and his slyppers on his fete. Than suche as kept watche the same nyght went forthe with the kynge, and suche as were abed and herde of these tydynges rose up in hast and folowed the kyng, who was gone forthe with a small company: for the kynge taryed for no manne, but wente forthe with theym of his chambre, with torches before him and behynde him, and had no mo chamberlayns with hym but sir Gaultier Martell and syr John of Lygnac. Thus the king came to the bakers house and entred, and certayne torches taryed without. Than the kynge founde his constable nere deed, as it was shewed him, but nat fully deed, and his men had taken of all his geare to se his woundes, howe he was hurte. And the fyrst worde that the kynge sayd was: Constable, howe is it with you? Dere syr, quod he, ryght febly. Who hath brought you in this case? quod the kyng. Syr, quod he, Peter of Craon and his company traytoursly, and without defence. Constable, quod the kynge, there was never dede so derely bought as this shall be. Than physycions and surgeons were sent for on all partes, and whan they came, the kyng sayd to his owne surgyons: Syrs, looke what case my constable is in, and shewe me the trouthe, for I am sory of his hurte. Than they serched his woundes in every parte. Than the kynge demaunded of

them and sayd: Syrs, howe saye you, is he in any parell of dethe? They all answered and sayd: Syr, surely there is no jeoperdy of dethe in hym, but that within these xv. dayes he shall be able to ryde. With that aunswere the kynge was ryght joyous, and sayd: Thanked be God these be good tydynges; and than said: Constable, be of good chere and care nothynge, for there was never trespas sorer punysshed than this shall be upon the traytours that have done this dede, for I take this mater as myne owne. The constable, with a feble voyce, answered: Sir, God rewarde your grace for your noble vysytacyon. Than the kyng toke his leave, and departed and retourned to his lodgynge, and incontynent sente for the provost of Paris, and by that tyme that he came it was clere day lyght. Than the kyng commaunded hym and sayd: Provost, get you men togyther well horsed, and pursewe that traytour syr Peter of Craon, who thus traytorously hath hurte nygh to the dethe our constable: ye can nat do to us a more acceptable servyce thanne to pursewe and take hym and bring hym to us. Than the provost answered and sayd: Syr, I shall do all that lyeth in my puyssaunce to do: syr, canne your grace knowe whiche waye he is gone? Enquyre, quod the kynge, and do your dylygence.

CAP. CLXXXI

Howe syr Peter of Craon beate downe syr Olyver of Clysson.

CAP. CLXXXII

Howe in great dylygence the provost of Parys pursewed syr Peter of Craon.

AS at that tyme the four soverayne gates of the cytie were ever kepte opyn nyght and day, whiche ordynaunce was made ever sythe the batayle of Rosebeque, where the Frenche kynge disconfited the Flemynges, and that the Parisyence wolde have rebelled, and that the malettes were laide downe, to the entent to kepe under the Parisyence; and by the counsayle of sir Olyver of Clysson all the chaynes in the streates were layde downe, and the gates taken of their hokes. In this case the cytie was in a ten yere, so that every man myght entre night or daye into Parys who so lyst. Lo, it maye be

CAP. CLXXXII

Howe in great dylygence the provost of Parys pursewed syr Peter of Craon.

well consydred what fortune is. The constable gadred the rodde wherwith hymselfe was beaten: for if the gates of Parys had ben closed and the chaynes lyfte up, sir Peter of Craon durst never have done that he dyde, for if he had, he coude nat have gone out of the towne as he dyde: but bycause he knewe well he might issue out at all houres, that made him execute his yvell purpose. Whan he departed fro the constable, he thought surely he had ben slayne; howebeit, he was nat, wherwith he was sore displeased. Whan he issued out of Parys it was about one of the clocke after mydnight, and passed by the gate saynt Anthony. And some sayd he passed the ryver of Seyne at the bridge of Charenton, and than toke the waye to Charters; and some sayde he issued out of Parys at the gate of saynte Honour, under Mount Marter, and passed the ryver of Seyne at Ponthieur. Wheresoever he passed, he was by eight of the clocke at Charters; and suche as were well horsed with hym all folowed hym nat, but brake asondre for lesse suspeciousnesse and for feare of pursute. And whan this sir Peter of Craon came first to Parys, he had lefte at Charters, with one of the chanons there, who had ben a servaunt of his beforetyme, a twentie fresshe horses. It had ben better for the chanon he had never knowen hym; howebeit, of his purpose nor of the executynge therof he knewe nothyng therin. Whan sir Peter was retourned to Charters, he dranke and chaunged his horses and dyde of his harnesse, and toke the waye to Mayne, and rode so fast that he came to a castell of his owne, called Sable, and there rested hymselfe, and sayde he wolde go no further tyll he herde tidynges of sir Olyver of Clysson, and howe the mater went. Ye maye be sure that the same Fryday, after the dede was done, great brute ran all about the cytie of that dede, and many blamed greatly sir Peter of Craon. The lorde of Coucy, as soone as he knewe therof, in the mornynge lepte on his horse, with eyght persones with hym, and rode to the constables lodgyng to visyte hym, for they loved entierlye togyder, and called eche other brother in armes: his visytacion dyd the constable gret good. In lyke maner other lordes acordyng to their tourne came and visyted hym, and

CAP. CLXXXII

Howe in great dylygence the provost of Parys pursewed syr Peter of Craon.

specially the duke of Thourayne, who was sore displeased for that dede; and the kynge and he sayd bothe, howe that sir Peter of Craon had done that dede in dispyte of theym, and howe it was a thyng prepensed by false traytours to put the realme to trouble. The duke of Berrey, who as thane was at Parys, dissymuled the mater, and made no great busynesse in the cause. And I, sir Johan Froissarte, auctour of this cronycle, as I was credably enformed of this adventure, there had ben nothyng done if the duke of Berrey had lyste. For if he had wolde, he myght well have broken that enterprise; I shall shewe you the reason howe.

The same Thursday, Corpus Christy day, there came to the duke of Berrey a clerke, secretorie to sir Peter of Craon, and sayde to hym in secrete maner: Sir, I wyll shewe you a thyng in secretnesse, whiche is lykely to come to a poore conclusyon; and, sir, ye are more lykelye to remedye it than any other. What mater is that? quod the duke. Sir, quod he, I shall shewe you; but I wolde nat be named the bringer oute therof. Spare nat, quod the duke, I shall beare out the mater well ynoughe. Well, sir, quod the clerke, I doubte me greatlye that sir Peter of Craon wyll slee or cause to be murthered the constable sir Olyver of Clysson; for he hath assembled toguyder into his house, within the churche yarde of saynte Johanes, a great noumbre of menne, and hath kepte them there covertly eversyth the feest of Whitsontyde. And, sir, if they shulde do that dede, the kynge wyll be sore dyspleased, and bringe the realme into great trouble; therfore, sir, I shewe it to you, for, sir, I am abasshed therof myselfe, though I be sir Peters servaunt, and have made servyce to hym, yet I dare nat consente to this outrage; and, sir, and ye provyde nat for the mater, there is none can do it; and, sir, for Goddessake take hede to this that I have shewed you; and, sir, to eschewe that maye falle, I dare nat retourne to hym. The duke herde hym well, and said: Abyde here with me this nyght, and to morowe be tymes I shall enforme the kyng therof: it is nowe far forthe dayes, I wyll nat trouble the kynge therwith; but to morowe without faute we shall provyde for the mater, sithe that sir

CAP. CLXXXII

Howe in great dylygence the provost of Parys pursewed syr Peter of Craon.

Peter of Craon is in the towne: I knewe nat therof before. Thus the duke drave of the matter, and in the meane tyme this myschiefe felle. Than the provost, with mo thane threscore horses, issued oute of the cytie at the gate of saynt Honour, and folowed the tracke of sir Peter of Craon, and came to Ponthieur, to passe the ryver of Seyne, and demaunded of the kepar of the bridge if any horses passed that waye that mornynge. And he sayd yes, howe that there passed about a twelve horse, But I sawe no knyght nor persone that I knewe. What waye toke they? quod the provost. Sir, quod he, the waye towardes Wannes. Ah, quod the provost, it maye well be; I thynke they wyll ryde to Chierbourge. Thane the provoste tooke that waye and lefte the waye to Charters, and therby he loste the juste pursute of sir Peter of Craon: and whanne he had rydden tyll noone, than he mette with a knyght of the countrey, who had been a huntyng of the hare, and he shewed hym howe that he sawe the same mornynge about a fyftene men a horsebacke, traversyng the feldes, and, as he thought, toke the waye to Charters. Than the provost and his company entred into the waye to Charters, and so rode tyll it was nere hande nyght, and than came to Charters: and there it was shewed hym howe sir Peter of Craon hadde been there with the chanon aboute eyght of the clocke, and there unarmed hym and toke fresshe horses. Than the provost sawe well he had lost his payne, and shulde do, to folowe hym any further, sayeng, seyng that he was so farre past. Than the Saturdaye he retourned to Parys, bycause the certentie whiche waye sir Peter of Craon toke was nat knowen at Parys. Therfore the kynge and the duke of Thourayne, who had a great affection to have sir Peter of Craon taken, sente sir John of Barrois with a threscore horse out of Parys to sertche for hym; and they issued out at the gate saynt Anthony, and passed the ryvers of Marne and Seyne at the bridge of Charenton, and rode all about the countrey and came towardes Estampes, and finally at dyner they came to Charters, and there herde sure tidynges. And whane the Barrois knewe that sir Peter of Craon was gone, and sawe that he shulde but traveyle in vayne to folowe any further, than he

CAP. CLXXXII

Howe in great dylygence the provost of Parys pursewed syr Peter of Craon.

retourned agayne the Sondaye to Parys, and shewed the kyng what he had done, and in lykewise so had the provost done. The Saturday there was founde in a vyllage as they went a sertchyng, two squyers and a page, parteynyng to sir Peter of Craon. They were taken and brought to Parys and sette in prisone, and on the Mondaye beheeded. First they were brought to the place where the dede was done, and there eche of them had their right hande striken of, and than to the halles and there beheeded and hanged on the gybet. And the Wednisday after, the kepar of sir Peter of Craons house in Paris was executed and beheeded. Many men said he had wrong; but bycause he shewed nat the commynge of sir Peter into Parys he was put to dethe. In lykewise the chanon at Charters, with whom sir Peter dyde refresse hym and chaunged his horse, he was accused and taken and put in the bysshoppes prisone, and toke fro hym all that he had, and deprived hym of all his benefyces, and was condempned to perpetuall prisone, to lyve with breed and water; all the excusacyons that he coude make avayled hym nothyng. He was reputed in the towne of Charters to be a noble wyse man. Sir Peter of Craon beyng in his castell of Sable, was sore displeased whan he knewe that sir Olyver of Clysson was nat deed, nor had no hurte, but that within sixe wekes he shulde be hole: than he consydred that he was nat in good suretie in that castell, and feared to be enclosed in suche wyse that he shulde nat issue whan he wolde. Thane he tooke a certayne with hym and issued out secretly, and rode so longe that he came into Bretaygne, and there founde the duke, who receyved hym and knewe all the mater, and howe the constable was nat deed. Than he sayde: Ah, sir Peter of Craon, ye are unhappy that coude nat slee the constable whan ye had hym under youre handes. Sir, quod sir Peter, the devyll was on it; I thynke all the devylles in hell dyde helde hym out of my handes and out of my companyons; I am sure there was stryken at hym mo thanne threscore strokes, with swordes and javelyns: and whane he fell fro his horse, indede I thought surely he had bene deed; and so he had been, and it had nat ben his fortune to fall in at a bakers dore, the whiche stode halfe opyn, for

CAP. CLXXXII

if he had fallen in the strete he hadde never rysen alyve. Well, quod the duke, as nowe it wyll be none otherwyse; I am sure I shall here shortely some newes fro the Frenche kyng, and I thynke I shall have warre with hym, as ye have. Kepe you prively with me, the mater shall nat thus rest; and sithe I have promysed to ayde and susteyne you, I wyll kepe promyse.

Howe in great dylygence the provost of Parys pursewed syr Peter of Craon.

CAP. CLXXXIII

Of the great army and viage that the Frenche kynge purposed to make into Bretayne agaynst the duke, bycause he susteyned sir Peter of Craon; and howe in that viage the kynge fell sicke, wherby the viage brake.

TIDYNGES came to the Frenche kynge as he laye at Parys that the duke of Bretayne hadde receyved sir Peter of Craon. Than the kyng was counsayled by suche as were of his privye counsayle that he shulde incontynent sende into Bretaygne to the duke, commaundynge hym on his faythe and homage that he ought to the crowne of Fraunce, to take the traytour sir Peter of Craon, and to sende hym to Parys. These letters were written, sealed, and delyvered to a squier; and he rode so long that he came into Bretayne, and founde the duke at his castell of Ermyne, and there delyvered his letters. The duke toke and redd them. Than he said to the messanger, that he wolde write agayne to the kyng, and so dyd in excusyng of hymselfe, sayeng: that as of sir Peter of Craon he knewe nothynge, nor where he was, nor wolde nat knowe, nor it apperteyned nat to hym to knowe; nor as for the hatered nor warre that was bytwene sir Olyver of Clysson and sir Peter of Craon, he toke no regarde therto, for it touched him nothynge; and therfore in those maters he prayed the kyng to holde hym excused. This letter was sealed and delyvered to the kynges messanger, and so he retourned agayne to Parys, and there founde the kyng and his counsayle, who were sore desyrous to here tidinges out of

Bretaygne. Than the messanger delyvered his letters to the kynge, who toke and reed them. Than the kynge sayd to his brother and to his counsayle: This excusacion of the dukes is nat suffycient: it semeth well the duke of Bretayne hath caused all this busynes: this dispyte and outrage is so great, that it ought nat to be suffred, for it toucheth gretlye myne honoure. The same season the duke of Berrey was at Parys, and often tymes the kynge wolde speke to hym of this trespasse; and the duke sayd: Sir, surely he hath done a great outrage: if he myght be founde, it were reasone he made amendes. Fayre uncle, quod the kynge, he is in Bretaygne with the duke; we wyll go and seke hym there, and ye shall go with us. The duke dissymuled the mater, and sayd: Sir, as it shall please you; but ye must have also my brother of Burgoyne with you. We wyll have hym with us, quod the kyng, for without hym we wyll make no voyage: we wyll go into Bretayne with suche an armye, able to resyst all our ennemyes: we maye se nowe openly that this duke loveth nor setteth by us but lytell; he is proude and presumptuous, and we shall entende to nothynge tyll we have brought hym to reasone. Thus the Frenche kyng devised with the duke of Berrey, and manysshed greatly the duke of Bretayne and his assysters. The duke of Berrey acorded to all his sayeng, but he dissymuled, for he thought the contrary.

CAP. CLXXXIII

Of the great army and viage that the Frenche kynge purposed to make into Bretayne agaynst the duke.

The Frenche kyng hadde great affection to be revenged of the dispyte that was done to his constable; wherfore he prepared hymselfe to go into Bretayne, and fyrst to go into Anjou to distroye and beate downe sir Peter of Craons castelles, for all that the duke of Bretayne sayd he had bought them; yet the kyng and his counsayle sayd it was no poynt of the dukes heritage, but that the duke sayde so to excuse and to susteyne sir Peter of Craon; wherfore personally he was in the kynges indignacyon. Yet in the same season a treatie of maryage was had bytwene the duke of Bretaygnes sonne and the kynges doughter.

In the meane season whyle this voyage was thus ordred, and great brute therof spoken throughe all Fraunce, there retourned to Paris the bysshoppe of Noyon and the lorde de la Ryver fro Foize and Bierne, and there shewed the kyng

CAP. CLXXXIII

Of the great army and viage that the Frenche kynge purposed to make into Bretayne agaynst the duke.

and his counsayle howe they had spedde. They were well herde; but the voyage into Bretayne busyed so the kyng and his counsayle, that they had no leysar to entende to any other mater. And the kynge wolde gladly that the constable had ben hole, that he might be able to ryde. And or the kyng went fro Parys he commaunded to be beaten downe sir Peter of Craons house, that stode in the churche yarde of saynt Johans, and than the kynge dyde gyve the grounde to make a churche yarde of to burye in deed bodyes. The Frenche kyng made his provisyon in the waye to Anjou, to Mayne, to Bretayne, and into Thourayne on the ryver of Loyre, to the entent to go into Bretayne; none durst speke the contrary.

Renome was throughout all Paris and it was well knowen that sir Olyver of Clisson, constable of Fraunce, whan he laye thus sicke of his hurtes, made his testament, to the entente that his heyres shulde knowe the trouthe of every thyng that he had, and where it was. His heyres were two doughters: the one was maryed to Johan of Bretayne, erle of Ponthieur; it was he that sir Olyver had quytte out of prisone in Englande, and payde for hym sixscore thousande frankes to the duke of Irelande, as it hath ben shewed here before in this hystorie: and his seconde doughter was, or shulde be, vicountes of Rohan by reason of her husbande. The somme of the testament mounted to the somme of sevyntene hundred thousande frankes, besyde his herytage. Every man that herde therof had great marveyle howe he shulde gather toguider suche richesse, and specially the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne and their counsayls had great marveyle therof, and spake largely and sayd: What the devyll, howe maye it be that the constable hath gadered togider so many floreyns and suche movable goodes? the kyng hymselfe hath nat so moche. It maye well be beleved and knowen that he hath nat won all this by no just meanes. Thus the mater passed; but suche as loved hym nat, thought neverlesse. Thus all suche as the kynge had written unto prepared themselfe to go with hym into Bretaygne. This voiage pleased nothynge the duke of Burgoyn: he sayd this was a warre without reason, and that the conclusion therof coulde take no good ende: nor the realme of Fraunce,

nor the duchy of Bretayne, nor the lordes, knightes, and squyers in them, had nothynge to do with the warre bytwene sir Olyver of Clysson and sir Peter of Craon. What nede they, quod he, to take payne or traveyle to make warre in their quarelles? We shulde rather suffre them and their owne men to greve and make warre eche upon other. The duke of Berrey was of the same opinyon; but they coude nat be herde nor beleved, for the kyng was counsayled contrary to their opinyons, by suche as the kyng loved better than them. These dukes coude nat tell howe to breke that enterprice; and whan they sawe none other remedy, they obeyed, but that was slouthfully; howebeit, by the promocyon of the duke of Burgoyne, the erle of Ostrevaunt was written unto by the kynge to go with hym in this journey with thre hundred speares. The erle, who loved dedes of armes, provyded hym to go with the kynge; and whane he was redy, and had assembled toguyder his company to his great cost and charge, than he was countermaunded agayne, and that in no wyse he shulde styrre.

CAP. CLXXXIII

Of the great army and viage that the Frenche kynge purposed to make into Bretayne agaynst the duke.

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn, brother to the kyng, resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes; and howe by exchaunge the kynge gave hym the duchy of Orlyaunce, and so ever after he was called duke of Orlyaunce.

IN the same season that the kyng was thus nighe redy to departe out of Parys, to shewe that he toke that busynesse as to hymselfe, there was an exchaunge made of landes gretly to the profyte of the duke of Thourayne: for he resygned into the kynges handes the duchy of Thourayne, and the kyng gave hym the duchy of Orliaunce, in lyke maner as aunciently duke Philyp of Orlyaunce helde it, whiche was four tymes better in value than the other was. So thus fro hensforthe in this hystorie I shall name hym that was duke of Thourayne, duke of Orlyaunce.

CAP. CLXXXIIII

How the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

Whan sir Olyver of Clysson was all hole, and that he might ryde, the Frenche kyng was right joyfull, and said howe he wolde tary no lengar; and so on an evenyng he toke his leave of the quene Isabell his wyfe, and of the newe duchesse of Orlyaunce, and of all other ladyes and damoselles, and so dyde the duke of Orlyaunce in lykewise. Than they departed and rode to supper to Montague, and the duke of Burbone, the erle of Namure, and the lorde of Coucy with hym. There the kyng laye and dyned there, and after dyner they departed and laye all night at saynt Germayns, and there laye a sevyn dayes. And as than the kyng was somwhat diseased, and his phisicions wolde have had hym to have rested hymselfe: but the kyng was so wyllyng in his journey, that he sayde howe he was moche better at his ease than he was in dede, whiche he dyde to gyve corage to his men to set forwarde: for as than his two uncles, the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne, were behynde, and shewed well by their maner that the same journey greved them, nor they wolde nat have gone by their good wylles; howebeit, they hadde made their assemble, and to save their honour they obeyed and folowed.

Whan the Frenche kyng hadde rested hym a fyftene dayes at saynt Germayns, and that his armye was assembled, than he departed and passed the ryver of Seyne, and toke the waye to Charters, and so to Annens,[1] a good towne and a castell parteyning to the lorde de la Ryver, as herytage of his wyves. With the kynge was his brother the duke of Orlyaunce and the duke of Burbone. The lorde de la Ryver receyved the kynge honorably, and there taryed thre dayes, and than rode to Charters, where as Montague[2] was bysshoppe. The kynge was lodged in the bysshoppes palais, and the two dukes. And the seconde daye after, thyder came the duke of Berrey and the erle of Marche in his company. And the fourth daye thider came the duke of Burgoyne, wherof the kynge was ryght joyfull. And people came dayly, and the kyng sayd he wolde nat retourne to Parys tyll he hadde brought the duke of Bretayne to reason, who so often tymes had put hym to payne and trouble. The kynges counsayle hadde so sette hym on that warre, that the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne wolde gladly have

[1] *Auneau.*

[2] *le frère de Montagu.*

modered the mater, but they coulde nat be herde, wherwith they were sore displeased, and so were suche as were of their counsayls. And they said eche to other, that surely the mater coude nat long endure in that state, for it is full lykely that the kynge and the realme shall have some busynesse to do, sithe the kyng refuseth the counsaile of his uncles, and leaneth to other at his pleasure, who be nothyng lyke to them. Whan the kyng had taried at Charters a sevyn dayes, than he departed and toke the waye to Mans, and his men folowed, some fro farre partes, as out of Arthois, Beauvoys, Vermandois, and Picardy. And some said one to another: Ah, this duke of Bretayne maketh us to have moche to do, and putteth us to great payne and traveyle; he hath ben alwayes harde and highe herted agaynst the crowne of Fraunce, nor he never loved nor honored it; and his cosyn the erle of Flaunders and the duchesse of Burgone, who have alwayes borne hym and as yet do, had nat ben, he had ben distroyed long ago, for ever syth the lorde Clysson tourned Frenche, he never loved him. Surelye by all likelyhode he is culpable of this dede, for he hath alwayes susteyned syr Peter of Craon agaynst the kyng and agaynst the constable. Than other sayde: Lette the kyng alone, for as at this tyme he hath the mater so at his hert, that he wyll bring the duke to reason, or he retourne. That is trewe, quod other, if there be no trayson; but we feare that all suche as go with the kyng be nat enemies to the duke, as it may be well sene, if we durst speke it, by some tokens; for there be some that nyght and daye do what they can to counsayle the kynge to breke his voyage, whiche so troubleth the kyng that he can scant gette hymselfe any helthe or recovery of his laste sickenesse. Thus knightes and squiers devised among themselfe as they rode in their countreys. Styll the kyng aproched to the cytie of Mans, and there the kynge lodged in the castell and his lordes in the cytie, and his men of warre abrode in the countrey. There the kyng taried a thre wickes, for he was sore vexed with the fever, and his phisicions sayde to his brother and to his uncles: My lordes, we ensure you ye do yvell to traveyle the kyng, for he is in no good state to ryde; rest were farre better for hym, for sythe he came

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

fro the cytie of Amyens he hath nat ben in so good helthe as he was before. They shewed this to the kynge, but he had so great affection to go in this journey, that he wolde nother beleve them nor yet his phisycions, but sayde, howe he founde more ease in travelyng than in restyng; Therfore whosoever counsayle me the contrary shall nat please me, nor he loveth me nat. Other answere they coulde nat have of the kyng. Every day the kyng wolde sytte in the myddes of his counsayle tyll it was none, to thentent that none shulde laye any lette of his journey. Thus the kyng being at Mans, and somwhat to acomplysshe the desyers of his uncles, he sent four notable knightes to the duke of Bretayne, as sir Raynolde du Roy, the lorde of Garensiers,[1] the lorde of Castell Morant, and sir Taupyne of Cantemell, chateleyne of Gysors. And they were charged to shewe the duke, howe the kyng and his counsaile reputed that he dyde great offence to susteyne the kynges enemy and the realmes; and to make amendes, that he shulde sende sir Peter of Craon to Mans to the kyng, wherby meanes shulde be founde that he shulde take no dommage nor his countrey for all the kynges voyage. Thus they departed fro Mans with a xl. speres, and passed through the cyte of Angiers, and at last came before the cytie of Nauntes, and entred, and there founde the duke, who made them good chere, and on a daye made them a dyner. And than they dyde their message, and declared the kynges entent and his counsayls. Wherunto the duke answered wisely and sagely, and said: howe it shulde be harde for hym to delyver sir Peter of Craon; and sayd, as God myght helpe hym in all his busynesse, he knewe nat where he was; wherfore he desyred them in that case to holde hym excused; but he sayde, he had well herde of hym a yere past, that he loved nat sir Olyver of Clysson, but wolde make hym mortall warre to his power, whatsoever ende came therof; And at that tyme I demaunded of hym if he had gyven sir Olyver knowledge therof; and he sayd he had utterly defyed and wolde slee hym if he coude, outher by daye or by nyght, wheresoever he coude fynde hym. Of his dedes I knowe no further; wherfore I have marveyle that the kynge wyll make warre agaynst me for his cause; for as to the covy-

[1] *Varensiers* P.

nauntes of maryage bytwene our chyldren, by the grace of God, shall nat be broken on my parte: wherfore I have done nothynge to hym nor to his counsaile, that he shulde make warre agaynst me. This was the aunswere that the duke made to the Frenche kynges messangers. And so whan they hadde taryed a daye at Nauntes, than they toke their leave and departed, and retourned to Mans to the kyng, who thought longe tyll he herde their aunswere: and as ye have herde before, they declared it to the kyng and his counsayle. The dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne were well content with the answere, and sayd it was reasonable: but the kyng by reason of suche enformacion as he had, sayde the contrary; and said, sithe he was so forewarde in his journey, he wolde nat returne agayne into Fraunce, nor to Parys, tyll he had brought the duke of Bretayne to reason. Gladly the two dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne wolde have modered that voiage, but they might nat be herde, for the kyng had taken suche displeasure with the duke of Bretayn, bicause he susteyned sir Peter of Craon, that no excusacion coulde be taken. The same tyme a brute ranne in Fraunce, that the quene of Aragon, my lady Yolant of Bare, cosyn germayne to the Frenche kynge, had in prison in the cytie of Barcylona, a knyght that no man knewe his name: men supposed it had ben syr Peter of Craon. This quene had writen right amyably to the kynge, sygnyfyenge hym that the fyfte day of the moneth of July, a knyght in good estate and aray came to Barcylona, to have past the see, and had hyred for his money a shyppe, as he sayd, to have sayled into Napoles; And bycause we kepe our passages that no straunger shall passe without he be knowen what he is, and this knyght wyll nat shewe his name, therfore we kepe hym in prisone; and by the abasshment that we se in him, we thynke surely it be the same person ye wolde so fayne have. Therfore we write to you therof, that ye shulde sende some person hyther, suche as knoweth sir Peter of Craon, to se if it be he or nat: for whatsoever he be, he shall nat be delyvered tyll we have aunswere fro you; and I wolde that these tydynges might be agreable to you and to your counsayle, as knoweth the Holy Goost, who preserve you. Writen at Parpygnan, the nynth day of July,

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

CAP. CLXXXIIII

by Yolante of Bare, quene of Aragon and of Majolles, and lady Sardyne and Sardane. And on the superscrypcion, To the redouted kynge of Fraunce.

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

These tydynges somewhat modered dyvers mennes hartes, so that they were nere at the poynte to have broken their voyage. Howebeit, suche as were sir Olyver of Clyssons frendes sayde, that those tydynges were but fayned tales, made and devysed to breke the kynges voyage, sayenge, that sir Peter of Craon was in none other prisone, but with the duke of Bretayne, who hath susteyned hym and dothe. Of the quene of Aragons lettre the kynge made but lyght, sayenge it was but trayson and fables. Than the duke of Burgoyne sayd: Syr, yet at leste to apease my nese the quene of Aragon, and for the delyveraunce of the knight that is there in prisone, who peradventure is nothynge gylty of this trespas, sende unto her that she may be contente with you and with us. I am content therwith, quod the kynge, to please you: but I beleve surely the traytour syr Peter of Craon is in none other Barcylona nor prisone, but aboute the duke of Bretayne: and by my faythe that I owe to saint Denyce, he shall ones make acompt therof. There coulde no man turne the kynge fro the opinyon but that syr Peter of Craon was with the duke of Bretaygne. The duke of Bretayne, who was well enfourmed of all this busynesse, thought hymselfe nat well assured, for he sawe well the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne coulde nat bring their purpose aboute, for syr Olyver of Clyssons frendes led the kynge as they lyste. Than the duke provyded for to kepe his townes and garysons; howebeit, he durst kepe no towne except Wannes, Campell,[1] Doll, Camper, Lermyn, Corantyne,[2] and Susement.[3] And he wrote to suche knyghtes and squyers as he thought shulde ayde him, but they all dissymuled with hym, bycause they knewe that the French kyng was so sore displeased with hym; and also they thought it was nat a thynge covenable for the duke to susteyne syr Peter of Craon agaynst the constable of Fraunce as he dyd. The duke in a maner repented hym that he had done so moche; howebeit, his corage and herte was so hygh that he dysdayned to speke it, but sayde if the kynge came into Bretayne, as it

[1] *Quimperld.*
[2] *Quimper-Corentin.*
[3] *Sucinio.*

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

semed he wolde do, at the begynnynge he wolde let hym alone; And thanne shall I se who be my frendes or foos, I wyll nat be to hasty to make him warre, and whan he weneth to be at most rest, than wyll I awake hym, if I can nat be agreed with hym by love. Thus the duke devysed somtyme with his counsayle, and thought surely he shulde have warre; howebeit, he had nat, for the maters tourned otherwyse to his great advauntage; therfore it is an olde proverbe: He is nat poore that is happy. This duke was fortunate, by reason of a pytuous incydence that fell sodaynly on the Frenche kynge, for otherwyse the duke was nat lykely to have scaped all daungers, and to have lyved in peace as he dyd.

Whan the Frenche kynge had taryed the space of thre wekes in the cytie of Mans, and the knyghtes retourned that he had sent into Bretayne, than he sayd, syth he had herde the dukes aunswere, he wolde no lenger tary there, for he sayd the taryenge there greatly displeased him, and wolde passe forthe into Bretaygne to se his enemys, that was the duke of Bretaygne, who susteyd the traytour syr Peter of Craon. The entencyon of the kynge was, that if any knyghtes and squyers came agaynst hym, or that he founde any townes closed, he wolde put downe the duke for ever, and set a governour in the countrey tyll the dukes chyldren were of lawfull age, and than rendre to them the herytage, and the duke never to have any parte therof. This opinyon the king helde styll, and no man coude put hym therfro. And thus on a fayre daye aboute ten of the clocke the kynge departed fro the cytie of Mans, and had commaunded his marshalles the nyght before to cause all his armye bothe before and behynde to dysloge and to drawe to Angers, and sayde that he wolde nat retourne tyll he had ben in Bretayne and dystroyed the traytours that had put hym to so moche payne and trouble. The marshalles dyd the kinges commaundement. The day that the king departed was marveylous hoote, for the sonne as than naturally was in his cheife force; and to the entent to declare the trouth of every thyng, the same season that the kynge lay at Mans, he was sore traveyled with dayly syttynge in counsayle, and also he was nat perfytely hole nor had nat ben all that

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

season. He was feble in his brayne and heed, and dyd eate or drinke but lytell, and nygh dayly was in a hoote fever, so that he was gretly anoyed and payned: and also for the dyspleasure that he had for the constables hurte, he was full of malencoly, and his spirytes sore troubled and traveyled: and that his physicions spyed well, and so dyd his uncles, but they coulde nat remedy it, for no man durste counsayle hym to breke his voyage into Bretaygne. And as it was enfourmed me, as he rode forwarde in the forest of Mans, a great sygnifycacyon fell to hym, by the whiche if he had doone well, he shulde have called his counsayle aboute hym, and well advysed hymselfe or he had gone any further. Sodaynly there came to the kynge a poore man, bare heeded, bare legged, and bare footed, and on his body a poore whyte cote: he semed rather to be a foole than wyse, and boldely sodaynly he toke the brydell of the kynges horse in his handes, and stopped the horse, and sayd: Syr kyng, ryde no further forward for thou arte betrayed. Those wordes entred into the kynges heed, wherby he was worse dysposed in his helthe than he was before, so that his herte and his blode was moved. Than the kinges servauntes strake so the poore man that he lette the kynges horse go, and made no more of his wordes than of a fooles spekyng, whiche was foly, as dyvers men sayde. For at the leste they shulde have better examyned the man, and to have sene if he had ben a naturall foole or no, and to have knowen fro whence he came: but they dyde nat so, but lefte hym behynde, and he was never sene after to any mannes knowledge: but suche as were nere to the kynge herde hym speke these wordes. The kynge passed forthe, and aboute twelve of the clocke the kynge passed out of the forest, and came into a great playne all sandy: the sonne also was in his heyght and shone bright, whose rayes were marveylously hote, wherby the horses were sore chafed, and all suche persons as were armed were sore oppressed with heat. The knyghtes rode togyther by companyes, some here and some there, and the kynge rode somwhat aparte bycause of the duste: and the duke of Berrey, and the duke of Burgoyne, rode on his lefte hande talkynge togyther, an acre brede of lande of fro the kynge. Other lordes, as the erle of Marche, sir Jaques of Burbone,

CAP. CLXXXIIII

syr Charles de la Brethe, syr Phylyppe Darthoys, sir Henry and sir Phylip of Bare, syr Peter of Naver, and other knyghtes, rode by companyes. The duke of Burbon, the lorde Coucy, syr Charles Dangers, the baron Dyvry, and dyvers other, rode on before the kynge, and nat in his company, and they devised and talked togyther, and toke no hede of that fell sodaynly on the chefe personage of the company, whiche was on the kynges owne persone. Therfore the workes of God are marveylous, and his scourges are cruell and are to be douted of all creatures. There hath been sene in the Olde Testament, and also in the Newe, many fygures and examples therof. We rede howe Nabugodonosor, kynge of Assyryens, who reygned a season in suche tryumphant glory, that there was none lyke hym, and sodaynly in his greatest force and glory, the soverayne kynge our Lorde God kynge of Heven and of erthe, fourmer and ordeyner of all thynges, aparelled this sayd kynge in suche wyse that he lost his wytte and reygne, and was seven yere in that estate, and lyved by acornes and mast that fell fro the okes, and other wylde appels and frutes, and hadde tast but as a bore or a swyne; and after he had endured this penaunce God restored hym agayne to his memory and wytte; and than he sayde to Danyell the prophet, that there was none other God, but the God of Israell. Nowe the Father, the Sonne, and the Holy Goost, thre persones in one God, hath ben, is, and ever shall be as puissaunt to shewe his warkes as ever he was, wherfore no man shulde marveyle of any thyng that he dothe. Nowe to the purpose why I speke all these wordes. A great influence fro Heven fell the sayd daye upon the Frenche kynge, and as dyvers sayd, it was his owne faute. For acordynge to the dysposicyon of his body, and the state that he was in, and the warnyng that his physicyons dyd gyve hym, he shulde nat have rydden in suche a hoote day, at that houre, but rather in the mornynge and in the evenynge in the fresshe ayre: wherfore it was a shame to them that were nere aboute hym, to suffre or to counsayle hym to do as he dyd. Thus as the Frenche kynge rode upon a fayre playne in the heate of the sonne, whiche was as than of a marveylous heyght, and the kynge had on a jacke covered with blacke

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

CAP. CLXXXIIII

How the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

velvet, whiche sore chafed hym, and on his heed a syngle bonet of scarlet, and a chapelet of great perles, whiche the quene had gyven hym at his departure, and he had a page that rode behynde hym, bearynge on his heed a chapewe of Montaban, bright and clere shynynge agaynst the sonne. And behynde that page rode another bearing the kynges speare, paynted redde, and frynged with sylke, with a sharpe heed of stele; the lorde de la Ryver had brought a dosyn of them with hym fro Tholouse, and that was one of them: he had gyven the hole dosyn to the king, and the kynge had gyven thre of theym to his brother the duke of Orlyaunce, and thre to the duke of Burbon. And as they rode thus forth, the page that bare the speare, whether it were by neclygence, or that he fell aslepe, he lette the speare fall on the other pages heed that rode before hym, and the heed of the speare made a great classhe on the bright chapewe of stele. The kynge, who rode but afore them, with the noyse sodaynly started, and his herte trymbled, and into his imagynacion ranne the inpressyon of the wordes of the man that stopped his horse in the forest of Mans, and it ran into his thought, that his enemyes ranne after hym to slee and distroy him. And with that abusyon he fell out of his wytte by feblenesse of his heed, and dasshed his spores to his horse, and drewe out the sworde, and tourned to his pages, havynge no knowledge of any man, wenynge in hymselfe to be in a batayle inclosed with his enemyes, and lyfte up his sworde to stryke, he cared nat where, and cryed and sayd: On, on upon these traytours! Whan the pages sawe the kynge so inflamed with ire, they tooke good hede to themselfe, as it was tyme; they thought the kynge had ben dyspleased bycause the speare fell downe: thanne they stepte away fro the kynge. The duke of Orleaunce was nat as thane farre of fro the kynge. The kynge came to hym with his naked sworde in his hande; the kynge was as than in suche a fransey, and his herte so feble, that he nother knewe brother nor uncle. Whan the duke of Orlyaunce sawe the kynge commynge on hym with his sworde naked in his hande, he was abasshed, and wolde nat abyde hym; he wyste nat what he mente, he dasshed his spurres to his horse and rode awaye, and the kynge after hym. The duke

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

of Burgoyne, who rode a lytell waye of fro the kynge, whan he herde the russhyng of the horses, and herde the pages crye, he regarded that waye, and sawe howe the kynge with his naked sworde chased his brother the duke of Orlyaunce, he was sore abasshed and sayd: Out, harowe, what myschife is this, the kynge is nat in his ryght mynde, God helpe hym; flye away nephewe, flye away, for the kynge wolde slee you. The duke of Orlyance was nat well assured of himselfe, and fledde awaye as faste as his horse myght beare hym, and knyghtes and squyers folowed after, every man began to drawe thyder: such as were farre of, thought they had chased an hare or a wolfe, tyll at last they herde that the kynge was nat well in his mynde. The duke of Orlyance saved hymselfe. Than men of armes came all aboute the kynge, and suffred hym to wery hymselfe, and the more that he traveyled the febler he was: and whan he strake at any man, they wolde fall downe before the stroke. At this matter there was no hurte, but many overthrowen, for there was none that made any defence. Fynally, whan the kyng was well weryed, and his horse sore chafed with swete and great heate, a knyght of Normandy, one of the kynges chamberlaynes, whome the kynge loved very well, called Gyllyam Martell, he came behynde the kyng sodaynely and tooke hym in his armes, and helde hym styll. Than all other aproched, and toke the sworde out of his handes, and tooke hym downe fro his horse, and dyd of his jacke to refresshe hym. Than came his brother, and his thre uncles, but he had clene lost the knowledge of them, and rolled his eyen in his heed marveylously, and spake to no man. The lordes of his blode were sore abasshed, and wyste nat what to say or do. Than the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne sayde, It behoveth us to retourne to Mans, this voyage is doone for this tyme. They sayde nat as moche as they thought, but they shewed it ryght well after whan they came to Parys, to suche as they loved nat, as ye shall here after.

Reasonably to consydre all thinges acordynge to the trouthe, it was great pytie that the French kyng, who as at that tyme was reputed for the moste noble and puyssaunt kynge in all Crystendome, fell so sodaynly out of his mynde

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

without remedy, but as God wolde. Than the kynge was layde in a horse lyttoure, and so brought backe agayne to the cytie of Mans. Than the marshalles gave knowledge to all the armye that they shulde retourne, and howe that the voyage was broken as at that tyme: some had knowlege why, and some nat. The nyght that the kynge came to Mans, the physicyons had moche ado with hym, and the lordes of the blode royall had great trouble. Every man spake than in dyvers maners: some sayd that suche as hadde the rule aboute the kynge had poysoned hym, to brynge the realme of Fraunce into shame and trouble. These wordes multyplyed in suche wyse that the duke of Orlyance and his uncles, and other lordes of the blode royall noted them, and spake togyther and sayde: Howe saye you syrs, have ye nat herde these wordes, and howe menne do murmure in dyvers places upon theym that hath had the governaunce of the kynge. Some saythe he shulde be poysoned: lette us sertche howe this maye be knowen. Than some of them sayde howe it shulde be best knowen by the physycyons: they ought to knowe it, for they are acquaynted with his complexcyon. The physicyons were sent for and examyned. They answered howe the kyng of longe tyme had engendred the same malady: For we knewe well the wekenes of his brayne wolde sore trouble hym, and at laste shewe itselfe; we have sayde as moche before this tyme. Than the duke of Burgoyne sayde: Syrs, it is trewe, and therin ye dyd well acquyte yourselfe, but he wolde neyther beleve you nor us, his affectyon was so sore sette upon this voyage: it was devysed in an yvell tyme. This voyage hathe dyshonoured us all: it had been better that Clysson, and all those of his affynyte, had ben deed many a daye agone, rather than the kynge to have taken this malady. These tydynges shall sprede abrode in many places, and seyng that he is but a yonge man, the blame shall be layde in us that be his uncles, and of his blode; men wyll saye that we shulde otherwyse have counsayled hym. Thus we shall be laide in the faute without cause. But sirs, quod the duke, yesterday whan he wente to dyner, were ye with hym? The physicyons aunswered and sayd Yes. Dyd he eate his meate well, quod the duke. No

CAP. CLXXXIIII

How the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

certaynly, quod they, he dyd eate and drinke but lytle, but sate and mused. And who gave hym drinke last, quod the duke. Syr, quod they, we canne nat tell you that, for as soone as the table was taken up, we departed and made us redy to ryde, but his chamberlayns or butlers canne tell that best. Than Robert de Tulles,[1] a squyer of Pycardy, was sent for, and demaunded who gave the kynge drinke laste. Syrs, quod he, syr Robert[2] of Lygnac. Than he was sent for. Than he was enquyred where he had the wyne that the kynge dranke last of in his chambre whan he wente to his horse. Syr, quod he, here is Roberte of Tulles and I: we toke the saye in the presence of the kinge. That is trewe, quod Roberte of Tulles, ye nede nat doute therin, nor have no suspeciousnesse, for as yet there is of the same wyne in the flagons, wherof we wyll drinke and assaye before you. Than the duke of Berrey sayd, This nede nat, for surely the kynge is nat poysoned; his malady procedeth of yvell counsayle; it is no tyme to speke of this mater nowe, let all alone tyll another season.

[1] *Tanques.*
[2] *Helion.*

Thus after this maner these lordes departed eche fro other that nyght, and went to their lodgynge. Than the kynges uncles had ordeyned four knyghtes of honour to wayte aboute the kynge, as syr Raynolde du Roy, syr Raynolde of Toye,[3] the lorde Grauseers,[4] and sir Guyllyam of Marte.[5] And the kynges uncles sent commaundement to the lorde de la Ryver, and to syr John Mercyer, to Montagu, to the Begue[6] of Vyllayns, to syr Guyllyam of Bordes, and to syr Helyon of Lygnac, that they shulde in no wyse come aboute the kynge tyll he were in better estate. The nexte daye the kynges uncles came to se the kynge, and founde hym ryght feble. Than they demaunded what rest he had taken that nyght. They were answered, But small rest. That is poore newes, quod the duke of Burgoyn. And than to them came the duke of Orlyance, and so went all togyder to the kynge, and demaunded of hym howe he dyd. He gave none aunswere, and loked straungely on them, and had loste clene the knowledge of them. These lordes were sore abasshed, and comuned togyder and sayde: We have no more here to do, the kyng is in an herde case, we do him more trouble than ayde or

[3] *Trie.*
[4] *Garencieres.*
[5] *Martel.*
[6] *Begu* P.

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

good; lette us recommaunde hym to his chaumberlayns and physicyons, they canne best take hede to hym: lette us go study howe the realme maye be governed, or els thinges wyll go amysse. Than the duke of Burgoyne sayd to the duke of Berrey: Fayre brother, it is best we drawe to Parys, and ordayne to have the kynge easely brought thyder, for better we shall take hede on hym there than here in these partyes: and whan we be there let us assemble all the counsayle of Fraunce, and ordeyne who shall have the governaunce of the realme, the duke of Orlyaunce or we. That is well sayde, quod the duke of Berrey: it were good we studyed where were best to have the kynge to lye that he myght the soner recover his helth. Than it was devysed that he shulde be brought to the castell of Crayell, where is good ayre, and a fayre countrey on the ryver of Oyse. Whan this was ordeyned, than all the men of warre had leave to departe, and were commaunded by the marshalles every man to retourne peasably into his owne countrey, without doynge of any vyolence or domage to the countreys as they shulde passe through; and if any dyd, their lordes and capytayns to make amendes. And the kynges two uncles, and the chauncellour of Fraunce, sente anone soundry messangers to the good cyties and townes of Fraunce, that they shulde take good hede to kepe well their townes, consyderynge that the kynge was nat well dysposed in his helthe. Their commaundementes were fulfylled. The people of the realme of Fraunce were sore abasshed whan they knew howe the king was fallen sycke and in a fransey, and menne spake largely agaynste them that counsayled the kynge to go into Bretaygne. And some other sayde, howe the kynge was betrayed by them that bare the duke of Bretaygne, and syr Peter Craon, agaynst the kyng. Men coulde nat be lette, but that they wolde speke: the mater was so hygh that wordes ranne therof dyversely. Thus fynally the kyng was brought to Crayell, and there lefte, in the kepynge of his physicyons, and of the sayde four knyghtes. Than every man departed. And it was commaunded to hyde and to kepe secrete the kynges malady fro the knowlege of the quene for a seasone, for as than she was great with chylde; and all of her courte were

commaunded to kepe it secrete on payne of great punysshement. Thus the kynge was at Crayell, in the marches of Senlis and of Compyen, on the ryver of Oyse, and kept by the sayd knyghtes and physycions, who gave hym medicyns; but for all that he recovered but lytell helth.

CAP. CLXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Thourayn resigned the duchy of Thourayne into the kynges handes.

CAP. CLXXXV

Howe the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey, uncles to the kynge, had the governaunce of the realme: and howe they chased and toke suche as governed the kynge before.

IN this seasone there was in the realme of Fraunce a wyse and a sage physicyon; the brewte was, that there was none lyke hym, and he was well beloved with the lorde Coucy, he was natyve of his countrey. As at that tyme his abydyng was in the cyte of Laon: he was called mayster Guylliam of Harsley. Whan he knewe fyrste the kynges malady, and by what accydent he fell sycke, he sayd, as he that thought hymselfe to knowe the kynges complexyon, howe this maladye is fallen to the kynge through faute: his complexyon holdeth to moche of the moyster of the see.[1] These wordes were reported to the lorde Coucy, who was as than at Paris with the duke of Orlyance, and with the kinges uncles. For as than the counsayle of Fraunce, the noble men and prelates, were at Paris, to determyne who shulde have the governaunce of the realme as longe as the kyng shulde be in that malady, outher his brother the duke of Orlyance, or his two uncles, or one of them: upon this communycacion they were a xv. dayes or they agreed. Fynally it was concluded, bycause the duke of Orlyaunce was very yonge to take on hym so great a charge, that the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne shulde have the governaunce of the realme, and specyally the duke of Burgoyne: and that the duches of Burgoyne shulde be aboute the quene, and to be as seconde person. Thus as I have sayde before, the lorde of Coucy shewed to the kynges uncles the great wysdome and

[1] *il tient trop de la moisteur de la mère.*

CAP. CLXXXV

Howe the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey had the governaunce of the realme.

practyse of the sayd physycion, mayster Guyllyam Harseley. Whan the dukes herde that, they sente for hym, and so he came to Parys. And than the lorde of Coucy presented hym to the kynges uncles, and sayd: My lordes, beholde here is mayster Guyllyam Harseley, that I shewed you of. He is ryght welcome, quod the dukes; they receyved him and made him good chere, and ordeyned hym to go to Crayell to vysyte the kynge, and to abyde aboute hym tyll he hadde recovered his helthe. Than the sayd mayster at their commaundement went to Crayell to the kynge, and had the chiefe oversyght of mynystryng any thynge to the kyng. And he sawe well the kynges malady was curable, and sawe howe he had taken it by reasone of feblenesse of his herte and heed, and through faute: therfore he dyd his dylygence to recover his helthe.

The tydynges of the kynges malady spred farre abrode, but whosoever was sorye, ye maye well knowe the duke of Bretaygne, nor syr Peter of Craon, wepte never a deale, nor had no great sorowe. Also whan pope Bonyface of Rome, and his cardynals, knewe the trouthe, they were right joyfull, and drewe togyther in consistory, and sayde howe their greatest enemy the Frenche kynge was beaten with a cruell rodde, seyng God had taken fro hym his wytte; and sayde howe that influence was sente to hym fro Heven to chastyce hym withall, bycause he had so moche susteyned the Pope at Avignon: therfore this cruell plage was sent to hym to cause the hole realme to be better advysed, therfore they sayd their quarell was the stronger. And truely to have wysely consydred every thynge it was a great token to have caused the cardynalles at Avygnon to have been advysed, but they made but lytell force therof, nother to the honour of God, nor to the realme. For the Pope at Avignon and his cardynalles sayde: howe by reasone that the kynge was yonge, and wolde have his owne wyll, therby he is fallen into this malady through faute: for suche as have had the rule aboute hym, have nat doone their duetie, but have suffred hym to rynne on the bridell, and to ryde nyght and daye excessyvely in traveylynge of his body out of measure. Therfore suche as hath had the rule ought to be charged therwith, and none other, for it is through their

faulte: for if they had ordred hym in his youthe, and so contynued by a reasonable regement, and have folowed the counsayle of his uncles, this syckenesse had nat fallen to hym nowe. Also he hath broken his promesse against reason, for he promysed the yere passed and sware by the wordes of a kynge, that he wolde so ordayne to dystroy the antepape at Rome, and his cardynals, and to subdue the sysme of the churche, and to sette the maters that be in trouble in good estate, whiche is nothynge doone, but hathe doone contrary to his promesse, wherwith God is dyspleased, and to cause hym better to advyse himselfe, he hathe punysshed hym with this cruell rodde. And if he retourne to helthe, as he may well do, than it shall behove us to sende to him sufficyent legates, to shewe hym wysely the defaute and brekyng of his promesse, that he forgette it nat by reason of our neclygence.

CAP. CLXXXV

Howe the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey had the governaunce of the realme.

Thus the Pope and his Cardynalles at Avignon spake and communed toguyder, and layde the defaute of the kynges malady on the counsayle of Fraunce, and on suche as were about the kynge in his chambre. Of the same oppinyon were many other folkes in the realme of Fraunce. They that were about the kynge sente the kynges offrynge to a towne called Aresnecke,[1] in the countie of Heynaulte, bytwene Cambrey and Valencennes; in the whiche towne there was a churche, parteyninge to an abbey of saynt Waste in Arrasce, wherin there lyeth a saynt, called saint Acquayre, of whom there is a shrine of sylver, whiche pylgrimage is sought farre and nere for the malady of fransey. Thyder was sente a man of waxe, representynge the Frenche kynge, and was humbly offred to the saynt, that he myght be meane to God, to asswage the kynges malady, and to sende him helthe. In lykewise the kynges offrynge was sente to saynt Hermyer, in Romayes,[2] whiche saynt had meryte to heale the fransey. And in lykewise offrynges were sent into other places for the same entent. Whan the tidynges were come into Englande, the kynge and his counsayle were sore troubled therwith, and specially the duke of Lancastre: and he sayd to suche knyghtes and squyers as were aboute hym: Syrs, surely it is great pytie of the Frenche kynge, for he semed to be a man of

[1] *Haspres.*

[2] *Renaix.*

CAP. CLXXXV

Howe the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey had the governaunce of the realme.

great enterprice, and of great desyre to do well: he sayde to me at Amyence whan I departed fro hym: Fayre cosyn of Lancastre, I desyre you hertely to do your dylygence, that a ferme peace maye be made bytwene our nephue the kynge of Englande and us, and oure realmes, to the entent that we myght go togyder agaynst Lamorabaquyn, who hath conquered the realme of Armony, and dothe that he can to distroye Christendome; by our goyng thider our faithe shulde be exalted, and we are all bounde therto. And nowe by the Frenche kynges malady the mater is sore letted and hyndred, for he shall never be of the credence he was of before. All that herde the duke sayde it was trewe, and that it was lyke to be great trouble in Fraunce.

Thus all maner of people, bothe farre and nere, spake and devysed of the kynges maladye. And the kyng laye styll at Crayle, in the kepynge of the foresaid knyghtes, and of maister Guyllyam of Harsely; and no man spake with the kynge, nor entred into the castell, but suche as were ordayned therto. Somtyme the duke of Orlyaunce, and the duke of Burbone, came thyder to visyte the kynge. And the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne laye styll at Parys, and had done nothynge of newe; but they were in purpose shortely to do somwhat agaynst suche as they loved nat, bycause they hadde been alwayes harde to them before. And the duke of Berrey said to the duke of Burgoyne: Brother, le Ryver, Clysson, le Mercyer, and the Begue of Villayns, whan they were with the kynge in Languedocke, cruelly they punysshed to dethe my treasourer and good servaunt Betysache by envy: and for all that I coude do or saye, I coulde nat gette hym out of their handes, nor save his lyfe; therfore nowe let them beware of me, for I shall paye them agayn with the same money, forged in the same forge. In lykewise the duke of Burgoyne coude nat love them that governed the kyng, for ever whane he had any busynesse to do in the courte, they were ever agaynst hym. Also the same tyme the duchesse of Burgoyne, who was a cruell lady, was about the quene as chefe ruler, and non spake with the quene but by her meanes.

This lady hated mortally sir Olyver of Clyssone, for love of the duke of Bretayne, for he was nere of blode to her.

CAP. CLXXXV

Howe the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey had the governaunce of the realme.

And oftentymes she spake to the duke her husbande, sayeng howe he was greatlye to blame to beare so moche sir Olyver of Clisson, agaynst so myghtie a prince as the duke of Bretaygne. And the duke of Burgoyne, who was a colde, a sage, and an ymaginatyve prince, and dyde his busynesse alwayes at length, and wolde nat wyllyng bringe the realme of Fraunce into trouble, but alwayes wyllyng to kepe all parties in love and peace, as nere as he myght; and also as he that was never wyllyng to displease any of the great lordes, answered right sagely and wysely to his wyfe: Dame, quod he, it is good in all tymes somwhat to dissymule a mannes displeasure: true it is our cosyn of Bretayne is a great lorde, and hath seignorie and puissaunce ynough agaynst sir Olyver of Clysson; if I hadde taken his parte agaynst Clysson, it shulde greatly have weaked the realme of Fraunce, for sir Olyver of Clyssone saythe and sustayneth, that all the hate that he hath to the duke of Bretaygne, is to sustayne up the realme of Fraunce, wherin we have great parte; and also this is the common renome in Fraunce. Also, as yet, I have sene no artycle wherin I shulde take parte with my cosyn of Bretaygne agaynst sir Olyver of Clysson: therfore it hath behoved me to dissymule, or elles I coude nat have had the good wyll of the kyng, nor of the realme, wherto I am more bounde by faithe and servyce than to the duke of Bretaygne. Nowe it is so that the kyng is nat in good case, as ye knowe well, and all this is agaynst the lorde Clisson, and shal be; and to suche as have gyven counsayle agaynst us, my brother of Berrey and me, that the kynge shulde procede in his journey to Bretaygne, the rodde is gadered wherwith they shall be shortely beaten and corrected, as ye shall brevely here, if ye wyll take a lytell pacience. Dame, dame, there is no season but at last is payde; nor no fortune, but that somtyme tourneth; nor herte troubled, but somtyme agayne rejoyceth; nor none that is joyfull, but somtyme is sorie and troubled. Clysson, le Ryver, Montague, le Mercyer, and le Vyllayns, they have done yvell, and that shal be shewed them brevely. With suche lyke wordes the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse his wyfe sported them toguyder.

On a daye it happed that the duke of Burgoyne and the

CAP. CLXXXV

Howe the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey had the governaunce of the realme.

duke of Berrey communed secretely togyder, and sayde: It were tyme that we began to distroye them that have dishonored our nephue the kynge, and have ledde hym at their wylles; and first let us begyn at the constable, he is the grettest and hath most to lese, for this other daye he made his testament of sevyntene hundred thousande frankes: where the devyll hath he gadered toguyder all that richesse? And yet the maryage of his doughter to Johan of Bretayne, whom he delyvered out of prison in England, and payde for his raunsome two hundred thousande frankes of Englande. Let us se what poyntes we can lay to him by reason, for our nephue the duke of Orleaunce beareth hym greatlye, and so do dyvers other barones of Fraunce; howebeit, and we stycke therto, we shall finde mater ynough to him by lawe and parlyament. That is trewe, quod the duke of Burgoyne; and the first tyme that he cometh to speke with me, and that I thynke wyll be or tomorowe at night, I shall so receyve hym that he shall well knowe that I love hym nat: and if he come to you, good brother of Berrey, do lykewise. That shall be done, quod he, and so departed at that tyme.

So it fortuned that the lorde of Clysson, who knewe nothynge but that he had been in good grace with the sayde dukes: and certayne knightes and squiers, suche as hadde been in the sayd voyage with the kyng, came to the constable, and were sente by the chaunceller and treasourers to hym to pursue for money for their wages. Wherupon in a mornyng he came to the house of Arthois, in Parys, to shewe the state of that busynesse to the duke of Burgoyne, and to none other, bycause he hadde the hole governaunce of the realme of Fraunce. Whane he came thyder he entred into the court, for the porter had lette hym in. Than he alyghted and mounted the steares into the hall, al onelye acompanyed with one squyer, and in the hall he founde ii. squyers of the dukes: than he demaunded if he might speke with the duke or nat. Sir, quod they, we can nat tell you: tary here and we shall go and knowe his pleasure. The squiers entred into the dukes chambre, and founde hym at good leysar, talkyng with an heraude, who was come fro a great feest that had ben holden in Almaigne. Than the

CAP. CLXXXV

Howe the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey had the governaunce of the realme.

squiers sayd: Sir, the constable is in your hall, and saythe he is come to speke with you if it be your pleasure. A Goddes name, quod the duke, lette hym come in, we be at good leysar to here what he wyll say. One of the squiers went into the hall and said to the constable, Sir, come on, my lorde wyll have you to come in. The constable entred, and whan the duke sawe hym he chaunged colour, and repented in that he had caused hym to come into his chambre, and yet he had gret desyre to speke with hym. The constable dyde of his hatte and made his reverence to the duke, and sayde: Sir, I am come to you to knowe of the state and governaunce of the realme, and howe every thynge shal be ordred: for by reason of myne offyce I am dayly called upon, and as nowe you and my lorde of Berrey have the rule, therfore it may please you to shewe me what I shall do. The duke lightly aunswered and sayde: Clysson, Clysson, ye have nothyng to do to busye you with the governynge of the realme: ye have medled therwith to long, and in an yvell tyme. Howe the devyll have ye gadered suche rychesse, as ye made your testament of but late? The kynge, nor my brother of Berrey, nor I, have nat so moche. Go youre waye, departe out of my presence, and lette me no more se you, for and it were nat for my shame, I shulde putte out your better eye. And therwith the duke departed and lefte the lorde Clysson alone, who issued out of the chambre and hanged downe his heed, and so passed through the hall, and in the courte toke his horse with his company, and retourned prively into his lodgyng without spekyng of any worde.

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson, constable of Fraunce, departed out of Parys, after the answere that the duke of Burgoyne had made hym, and wente to Mount-le-Heury, and fro thens into Bretayne.

WHAN the lorde of Clysson was retourned to his lodgynge, he was in many ymaginacyons to remembre what was best for hym to do. For he parceyved wel the maters went but yvell for hym, nor he wyste nat to whome to make his complaynt, nor to declare his busynesse, for the duke of Orlyaunce was at Crayell: and thoughe he hadde been at Parys, yet it laye nat in his power to defende hym. And he feared lest the duke of Burgoyne wolde have caused hym to be arested, and to spoyle his house. Wherfore he durst nat abyde that adventure, but shortely made hym redy, and shewed to certayne of his servauntes what he wolde do. And agaynst nyght he wente out of his lodgyng prively on the backesyde, and but thre persones with hym, and issued out of Parys at the gate of saynt Anthony, and passed the ryver of Seyne, at the bridge of Charenton, and roode so longe that he came to a castell of his owne, a sevyn leages fro Parys, called Mount le Heury, and there taryed tyll he herde other tidynges.

The same daye that the duke of Burgoyne had spoken with the constable, the duke of Berrey and he mette toguyder, for they assembled at the palays to commune toguyder of certayne matters touchynge the realme. Than the duke of Burgoyne shewed his brother what he had sayde to sir Olyver of Clysson. The duke of Berrey answered and sayd, Ye have done well, for we must have a begynnynge to entre upon theym; for surely Clysson, le Ryver, Mercier, and Montague, have robbed the realme of Fraunce: but the tyme is come that they shall leave all, yea, and lese their lyves, and I maye be beleved.

The same proper daye that the constable departed,

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

Montague in likewise departed secretely by the gate saynt Anthony, and toke the waye to Trois, in Champayne, and into Burgoyne, and sayd he wolde nat rest tyll he came to Avygnon: for thyder he had sent before the chiefe of his rychesse, and lefte a certayne with his wyfe to kepe her estate curtesly. For he sawe well sithe the kyng had lost his wytte, that all maters shulde go but yvell for hym, for he sawe howe the dukes of Burgoyne and Berrey wolde nat speke to hym. Sir Johan Mercier in lykewise wolde fayne have ben gone and he myght, but there was suche watche layde on hym, that he coude nat go out of his lodgynge, without knowledge. And suche of his goodes as he hadde saved before stode hym in right good stede afterwarde. For as moche as coude be founde of his, was departed bytwene the dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey, and he was commytted by them to prisone into the castell of Loure. And in lykewyse so was commaunded the Begue of Vyllayns erle of Rebydewe,[1] in Spayne. There were men sente to the house of Montague, but he was nat founde, nor no man knewe where that he was become; in lyke case to the constables house to have had hym to prison, but he coude nat be founde, for there was no man there but the kepar, who knewe nothynge where he was become: and within two dayes after it was knowen that he was at his castell of Mount le Heury. Whan the dukes that loved hym nat knewe that, they ordayned the Barroys of Barres, sir John of Castell Morant, the lorde of Coucy, and sir Wyllyam of Tremoyle, with thre hundred speares to go thyder, and commaunded them to beseige the towne and castell, and nat to departe thens tyll they had brought sir Olyver of Clysson to them, outher quicke or deed. These knyghtes dyde as they were commaunded, they durste do none otherwyse, for the two dukes had the admynistracion of the realme. So they departed fro Parys with a thre hundred speares, but nat all at one tyme, but in fyve partes, to the entent to be the lesse knowen. But God ayded so well the constable, and he had so good frendes of some in that company, that he had suche warnynge that he toke no dommage, for he and his company departed and rode by covert wayes through woodes, and lefte closed townes, so

[1] *Ribadeo.*

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

that at laste he came surely into Bretaygne, and entred into a castell of his owne, called the castell Joselyn, and there taryed to here other newes. For all that, the Barrois of Barres, and the other knightes in his company, lette nat to do their enterprice at they were charged, but came to Mount le Heury, and entred into the towne, and besieged the castell, and taryed there all a nyght, wenynge that the constable hadde ben within: but he was gone, as ye have herde: and the nexte mornynge they thought to assaute the castell. The servauntes within the castell sente out to knowe what they wolde have, or what they demaunded. They sayde they wolde have sir Olyver of Clysson, and therfore they were come. They answered and said, that he was departed thens foure dayes passed, and offered to open the gates to sertche for hym. The knightes went into the castell with all their company armed, for feare of enbusshement within the castell; they sertched highe and lowe, and founde for trouthe that he was nat there. Thane they departed and retourned to Parys, and shewed howe they had sped.

Whan the dukes of Burgoyne and Berrey knewe that sir Olyver of Clysson was scaped, they were sore displeased, and the dukes of Orlyaunce and of Burbone ryght joyfull. Than the duke of Burgoyne sayde: It semeth well that he douteth hymselfe, seynge he is fledde awaye: yet for all that he is so quytte, we shall cause hym to come agayne shortely, or elles he shall lese all that he hath that we can sette our handes on. For we have to laye to his charge dyvers artycles unresonable, whiche requyre judgement of punisyon. And if suche as be great be nat corrected, the maters shall nat be equally proporcioned, for suche as be but small personages shall grudge, and saye they have wrong to be punysshed, and the great to scape: therfore justyce ought to be equall, and to spare nother gret nor small, wherby any ensample shulde growe. Thus the duke of Burgoyn devysed of sir Olyver of Clysson, who was in Bretaygne, in his castell called Joselyn, whiche fortresse was well provyded for of all thynges necessary. Whan the Barrois of Barres was retourned to Parys, and had shewed that sir Olyver of Clysson was departed fro Mount le

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

Heury, and gone to the castell of Joselyn, in Bretayne, than he was commaunded to go to Amyence,[1] and there to take the lorde de la Ryver. The next day he rode with his companye to Amyence, a fayre fortresse besyde Charters, whiche the lorde de la Ryver helde by right of his wyfe, the lady of Mans;[1] he had greatly amended that castell, and was welbeloved of the men of his countrey, for he loved alwayes nothyng but trouth. Than the dukes commissyoners came thyder, and dyde as they had in charge, and founde the lorde de la Ryver there, and his wyfe and his chyldren. The knight loked for nothyng els, for he might have ben gone before if he had lyste, for he had knowledge that sir Johan Mercyer and the erle of Ribydewe were in prisone, and that the constable was fledde into Bretaygne. And he was counsayled before by one of his frendes, who said to hym: Sir, save yourselfe, for the envyous do nowe reygne, and fortune as nowe is on their sydes. He aunswered and sayde: Here and elswhere I am at the pleasure of God; if I shulde flye or hyde myselfe, I shulde yelde myselfe gyltie, where I knowe myselfe clere; God hath gyven me that I have, and he maye take it fro me whan it is his pleasure; the wyll of God be fulfylled. I have served kynge Charles, and nowe his sonne well and trewly; my servyce hath ben well knowen with them, and they have greatlye rewarded me, and seyng that I have so truely served at their commaundements, and traveyled for the busynesse of the realme of France, I dare well abyde the judgement of the parlyament chambre in Parys; and if they can fynde any faute in my dedes or wordes, lette me be punysshed. Thus the lorde de la Ryver sayd to his wyfe and to his counsayle: this he sayd or the dukes commyssioners came to his castell. At laste one shewed hym and sayd: Sir, here cometh suche men and suche with a great armye; howe saye you, shall we opyn the gates or nat? Yea, quod he, what elles. They are welcome. Therwith he went and mette them, and receyved them one after another right honorably. Thus they all entred into the castell of Mans. Than the Barroies of Barres, whan they were within the hall, executed his commaundement, and arested the lorde de la Ryver, who obeyed mekelye. Thus he was prisoner in his owne castell

[1] *Auneau.*

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

of Mans. It may well be thought that the good lady his wyfe was sore discomfyted, whan she sawe fortune tourne her whele agaynst her lorde and husbande, and also she douted the conclusyon.

Thus the lorde de la Ryver was prisoner in his owne castell of Mans. And anone after he was sente for by them that had the governaunce, bothe of the temporalitie and of the spirytualtie. For pope Clement of Avignon had nothyng in the realme of Fraunce, but by their meanes. The lorde de la Ryver was brought to Parys, and set in prison in the castell of Loure. Many men in the realme of Fraunce had great pytie on hym: howebeit, they durst nat speke but prively. The people cared nat so moche for the trouble of sir Johan Mercyer, as they dyde for the lorde de la Ryver. For he was alway swete, curtesse, meke, pacyent, and gentyll to poore men, and a good meane always for them that myght nat be herde. It was sayde daylye in Paris, that these prisoners shulde lese their heedes. And a sclaundre ran upon them, howe they were traytours against the crowne of Fraunce, and pylled the realme, and therby kepte their great portes and estates, and made fayre houses, castelles, and buyldynges, and other poore knightes and squiers, suche as had adventured their bodyes and membres in dedes of armes, and served truelye the realme of Fraunce, and had solde and layde to pledge their herytages, and yet coude nat be payde for that they had served, nother by the constable nor by none of them that were in prisone, nor by Montague that was fledde. The envyous condempned and judged them to dye. So by reason of this they were in great daunger: and also it was sayd, that by their counsaile the kyng toke on hym the journey into Bretaygne, wherby he fell into that maladye of fransey, and had gyven hym drinkes of poyson at their pleasure, and howe that the kynges phisycions coude nat be herde nor beleved, by reason of them. Suche maters were layde to the lorde de la Ryvers charge and to syr Johan Mercyer, that they were delyvered out of the castell of Loure into the handes of the provost of Paris, and putte into the castell of saynt Anthony, in the kepyng of the vicount of Achy, who as than was chatelayne there. Whan it was knowen that they were

CAP. CLXXXVI

there, than the common brute ran that they shulde be executed to dethe: but to saye trouthe, there was no cause why to trouble them: for suche as hated them coude fynde in their conscyence no cause why they ought to dye. But every daye they were borne in hande, and it was sayd to theym: Sirs, thynke on youre soules, for as for your bodyes are but loste, for ye are judged to dye, and for to be beheeded. In this case they were in prisone a greate space. The Begue of Vyllayns, a ryght valyaunt knyght in armes, of the countrey of Beauce, who was in prisone also for the same cause, he had suche frendes and was so ayded that he was delyvered out of prison, and was clene pardoned of all thynges. And suche as were of his lynage, as sir Barroys and other, counsayled hym to go into Castyle, where as he had fayre herytages, by reason of his wyfe, countesse of Ribydewe; and as he was counsayled so he dyde. And as soone as he might departed out of Fraunce and went into Castyle; and the other two knightes remayned styll in prison, in daunger of losyng of their lyves.

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

All the movable and unmovable godes and possessions parteyninge to sir Johan Mercyer within Parys and without, in the realme of Fraunce, that myght be layde hande on, was taken as goodes forfaite, and gyven to other persons. His fayre house of the bridge of Aubumen,[1] in the dioces of Laon, whiche had cost hym a great good, was gyven to the lorde Coucy, with all the appurtenaunces. I knowe nat wheder the lorde of Coucy desyred it or nat; but sir Johan Mercier was disheryted, he and his heyres for ever. Also the lorde de la Ryver was sore handled. Trewe it was, all his movables was taken awaye, and suche landes as he had bought, reservynge to the lady of Mans his wyfe all her herytages whiche came by her by father and mother. Also he had a yonge damosell to his doughter of x. yere of age, who was maryed to a yonge gentylman called Jaques of Chastellon, sonne to sir Hugh of Chastellon, who had ben before maister of the crosbowes of Fraunce. And he was heyre to his father, and had fayre herytages, and was lykelye to enjoye more; howebeit, agaynst the yonge mannes mynde he was dismaryed, and maryed agayne to another gentylwoman, at the pleasure of the duke of Burgoyne and of

[1] *Nouvion.*

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

the lorde de la Tremoyle, who toke on them that quarell. Moreover, the lorde de la River had a sonne to his heyre, whiche sonne was maryed to the doughter of the erle Dampmartyne: and the erle had no mo children, nor was nat lyke to have, whiche doughter was his heyre: and the duke wolde have broken that maryage, and have maryed her unto an heyre of blode. But the erle Dampmartyne, lyke a valyaunt knight, wolde nat, but sayd: as long as the lorde de la Ryvers sonne hadde lyfe in his body, his doughter shulde have none other husbande: and sayde, he wolde putte her herytage into suche mennes handes, that he trusted suche as wolde wrongfully have it shulde nat attayne therto. Whan the erles mynde was knowen, they let hym alone. So that maryage stode styll, but the fyrst maryage was broken; and pope Clement made a dispensacyon wheder he wolde or nat, for as at that tyme the Pope had no more puissaunce in Fraunce than suche as the governours wolde consente to, the churche was so subjecte, what by reason of the scisme, and by them that governed Fraunce. Many men, specially in the realme of Fraunce, excused greatly the lorde de la Ryver; but all that wolde nat serve: for none durst speke, thoughe they sawe the mater never so clere, except all onely the valyant lady Jane of Boloyne, duchesse of Berrey. Oftentymes the good lady wolde fall on her knees before her husbande, holdynge up her handes, and sayeng: Ah, sir, ye suffre to moche the envyous to enforme you so wrongfullye agaynst the valyaunt knight. The lorde de la Ryver he hath clerely wronge; there is none that dare speke for hym but I. And, sir, I wyll ye knowe that if he dye thus, I shall never have joye in this worlde, but I shall alwayes contynue styll in sorowe and hevynesse, for he is a true and a valyant knight. Ah, sir, ye consyder but lytell the fayre servyce that he hath done to you or this tyme, the paynes and traveyle that he hath hadde for you and for me, to bring us togyder in maryage. I saye it nat for any thyng of bostyng of myselfe, for I am but lytell worthe in comparyson to you: but whan ye wolde nedes have me, ye remembre howe harde the erle of Foiz was to you, with whom I was brought up: and if the swete wordes and wyse demeanour of the lorde de la

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

Ryver had nat been, I had never come into your company, but I had ben rather as nowe in Englande, for the duke of Lancastre wolde have had me for his sonne the erle of Derby, and the erle of Foiz enclyned rather that waye than to you. Right dere sir, ye ought to remembre this, for all that I say is true. Wherfore I requyre you right humbly that this gentyll knight, who brought me to you, have no dommage of his body nor of his membres. The duke of Berrey, who sawe his wyfe fayre and gentyll, and loved her with all his hert, and also knewe well that all she had sayd was true, it molifyed greatly his herte towardes the lorde de la Ryver: and to apease his wyfe, bycause he sawe she spake with good herte, sayd unto her: Dame, as God helpe me, I wolde it had cost me xx. thousande frankes, on the condycion the lorde de la Ryver had never made forfette to the crowne of Fraunce, for before this malady came to the kynge I loved hym entierly, and tooke hym for a wyse and a sage knyght. But sythe ye desyre so effectuously for hym, I wyll do no dyspleasure to hym; he shall fare moche the better at your instaunce: and for your sake I shall do as moche for hym as my power may extende, and rather at your desyre than and all the realme had spoken for hym, for surely I se well it is almes to helpe hym, and I beleve he hath no advocate but you. Thus the lady was well pleased with her lordes wordes, for surely and she had nat ben he had been deed. But for her sake the duke of Berrey dyssymuled the mater, and that was happy for syr Johan Mercyer, for he and the lorde de la Ryver were accused for one cause, wherfore the dukes had conscyence to cause one to dye and nat the other. Howebeit, for all the promesse that was made to them, yet they thought themselfe nat well assured of their lyves as longe as they were in prison: for they sawe well they had as than many ennemyes, who as than reygned and were in their prosperyte, and some were right angry that they were saved so longe, and they coulde amended it. Syr Johan Mercyer beynge in prisone, wepte so contynually that he had almost lost his sight; it was pytie to se his lamentacyon.

Whyle these two knyghtes were thus in prisone more than a yere, and no man knewe what ende shulde come of

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

them, than the dukes and their counsayle dyd all that they coulde to have taken sir Olyver Clysson, and to have put hym fro his honoure and offyce. They had rather have had hym than all the resydewe: but he kepte hymselfe out of their handes, wherin he dyd wysely, for if he had ben taken, they had so ordeyned for him that he shulde have had judgement of deth without remedy, and all for envy to have pleased therby his adversary the duke of Bretaygne, who never dyd good in the realme of Fraunce. Whan the lordes sawe that he was scaped their handes, they toke other advyse, and dyd as ye shall here. They sommoned hym to apere in the parlyament chamber at Parys, to answere to such articles as he was accused of, on payne to lese his honour and to be banysshed the realme of Fraunce: certayne commyssioners were sent into Bretaygne to sommon hym to apere. They that were sente rode into Bretaygne, and demaunded where as they came where syr Olyver of Clysson was, and sayd howe they were sente by the kynge to speke with the constable, wherfore they desyred to knowe where he was. The men of suche townes and garysons as helde of the constable were determyned before what aunswere to make, and sayd: Syrs, ye be welcome; and if ye wyll speke with the constable, ye muste go into suche a place; there we thynke ye shall fynde hym without faute. So the commyssyoners were sente from towne to towne, but they coude nat fynde him: and so longe they sought that they were wery, and so retourned to Parys, and declared what they had sene and founde. Suche as had accused hym were gladde that he dalte so, for than they sayd his falsnesse was playnely shewed, and therby acordyng to reason they said he shulde have as he had deserved. Than by the course of the parlyament they proceded to all his sommonynges, to thentent that suche as loved hym shulde nat say he had any wronge by envy or hatred. And whan all his xv. sommonynges were accomplisshed, and that they coulde here no tydynges of hym, nor of his aparaunce, and that he had been openly called at the parlyament chambre dore, and on the steyres, and in the courte, with all other seremonyes therto belongynge, and no answere made for hym, he had processe made agaynst hym cruelly in the parlyament. There

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

he was openly banysshed the realme of Fraunce as a false traytour against the crowne of Fraunce, and judged to pay a hundred thousande marke of sylver for the extorcyons he had doone, and for that he had so craftely in tyme paste occupyed the offyce of the constablery of Fraunce, and therfore to lese for ever without recovery the sayd offyce. At the gyveng of this sentence the duke of Orleaunce was desyred to be present, but he wolde nat, and excused hymselfe; but the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyn were there, with many other great lordes of the realme of Fraunce. Thus a man may se the warkes of fortune, howe ferme and stable they be, seynge howe this good and valyaunt knyght, who in his dayes had so moche traveyled for the realme of Fraunce, and as than was put to so moche shame as to be dysgraced fro honoure and goodes. Howebeit, he was happy he appered nat at their sommonynge, for if he had, surely he had shamfully loste his lyfe. As than the duke of Orlyance durst nat speke for hym; if he had, it shulde have doone hym no good. It is nat to be douted but that the duke of Bretaygne and syr Peter of Craon were right joyfull of those tydinges; howebeit, they were sory that he was nat prisoner in Parys as well as sir Johan Mercier and the lorde de la Ryver. Of this shamfull banysshing great brute ranne therof in the realme of Fraunce and elswhere; some compleyned secretly, and sayd that he had wronge: and some other said he was worthy to be hanged, and that he had well deserved it; and moreover sayd, Howe the dyvell coulde he assemble togyder so moche rychesse as a myllyon and an halfe of florayns? He coulde never gette that by ryghtwyse meanes, but rather by pillynge and robbyng, and retaynyng to hymselfe the wages of the poore knyghtes and squyers of the realme of Fraunce that had deserved it, as it may well appere in the chauncery or treasory, where every thyng is written and regestred, in the voyage that the kynge made into Flaunders. There and than he reysed great profyte to his owne use, and also in the voyage to Almayne: for all maner of tayles and subsydyes that were reysed in the realme to paye men of warre passed through his handes. He payed where as it pleased hym, and the rest he kept to hymselfe, and none

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

durste speke agaynst it. In this maner syr Olyver of Clysson was accused in many mennes mouthes. It is sayde in an olde proverbe: He that hath mysfortune, every man offereth hym wronge. If the Frenche kynge, the duke of Berrey, and the duke of Burgoyne had nat ben, the duke of Bretaygne had ben able to have subdued syr Olyver of Clysson, seynge he was in the dukes countrey, but he suffred hym for a season to se howe the maters shulde procede. Also he sawe well that syr Olyver of Clysson was set on the heyght of fortunes whele, and as than agayne he sawe howe he was cast downe and lyke to lese his offyce. Thus the duke of Bretayne and syr Peter of Craon were set upon their fete, and all by the workes of fortune, whiche is never parmanent, but nowe up, nowe downe. The constable syr Olyver of Clysson, the lorde de la Ryver, and syr Johan Mercyer were principally accused for the chefe causers of the kinges malady, and suche as loved them nat sayd howe they had poysoned the kynge; howebeit, every man maye consydre by reason that it was nat so, for they were the persones that shulde lese moste by the kynges malady, wherfore it is to be thought they sought moste for his helthe, but they coulde nat be beleved. So the two knyghtes remayned styll in prison in daunger openly to have loste their heedes, and by all lykelyhode so they had done if the kynge had nat recovered his helth, and by the meane of the duchesse of Berrey, who made instante labour for the lorde de la Ryver. And the lorde Clysson was styll in Bretayne, and made sore warre agaynst the duke there, and the duke agaynst hym, whiche warre cost many a mannes lyfe, as ye shall here after in this hystory.

Trewe it is this sycknesse that the kyng tooke in the voyage towardes Bretayne greatly abated the joye of the realme of Fraunce, and good cause why, for whan the heed is sicke the body canne have no joye. No man durste openly speke therof, but kepte it privy as moche as myght be, and it was covertly kept fro the quene, for tyll she was delyvered and churched she knewe nothynge therof, whiche tyme she had a doughter. The physycion, mayster Guyllyam, who had the chefe charge of healynge of the kynge, was styll aboute hym, and was ryght dyligent and well acquyted

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

hymselfe, wherby he gate bothe honour and profyte: for lytell and lytell he brought the kynge in good estate, and toke away the fever and the heate, and made hym to have taste and appetyte to eate and drinke, slepe and rest, and knowledge of every thynge: howebeit, he was very feble: and lytell and lytell he made the kynge to ryde a huntynge and on hawkynge. And whanne tydynges was knowen through Fraunce howe the kynge was well mended, and had his memory agayne, every man was joyfull and thanked God. The kyng thus beyng at Crayell, desyred to se the quene his wyfe and the dolphyn his sonne. So the quene came thyder to him, and the chylde was brought thyder. The kynge made them good chere, and so lytell and lytell, through the helpe of God, the kynge recovered his helthe. And whan mayster Guyllyam sawe the kynge in so good case he was ryght joyfull, as reasone was, for he had done a fayre cure, and so delyvered hym to the dukes of Orlyance, Berrey, Burgoyne, and Burbone, and sayd: My lordes, thanked be God the kyng is nowe in good state and helth, so I delyver hym, but beware lette no man dysplease hym, for as yet his spyrytes be nat fully ferme nor stable, but lytell and lytell he shall waxe stronge. Reasonable dysporte, rest, and myrthe shall be moste profytable for hym; and trouble hym as lytell as may be with any counsayles, for he hath been sharpely handeled with a hote malady. Than it was consydred to retaygne this mayster Guylliam, and to gyve hym that he shulde be contente with all, whiche is the ende that all physicions requyre, to have gyftes and rewardes. He was desyred to abyde styll about the kynge, but he excused himselfe, and sayd howe he was an olde impotent man, and coulde nat endure the maner of courte, wherfore he desyred to returne into his owne countrey. Whan the counsayle sawe he wolde none otherwyse do, they gave him leave, and at his departing gave him a thousande crownes, and retayned hym in wages with four horses whansoever he wolde resorte to the courte. Howebeit, I beleve he never came there after, for whan he retourned to the cytie of Laon there he contynued and dyed a ryche man: he lefte behynde hym a xxx. thousande frankes. All his dayes he was one of the greatest nygardes

CAP. CLXXXVI

Howe sir Olyver of Clysson departed out of Parys.

that ever was; all his pleasure was to get good and to spende nothynge, for in his howse he never spente past two souses of Parys in a day, but wolde eate and drinke in other mennes howses, where as he myght get it. With this rodde lyghtly all physicyons are beaten.

CAP. CLXXXVII

Howe the truse whiche was acorded bytwene Englande and Fraunce for thre yeres was renewed.

AS ye have herde here before in the bokes of this hygh and excellent hystory, at the request of the ryght hygh and myghty prynce, my dere lorde and mayster, Guy of Chastellone, erle of Blois, lorde of Avesnes, of Chymay, of Beaumont, of Streumehont,[1] and of the Gode: I Johan Froysart, preest and chapeleyn to my said lorde, and at that tyme treasourer and chanon of Chymay, and of Lysle in Flaunders, have enterprised this noble mater, treatynge of the adventures and warres of Fraunce and Englande, and other countreys conjoyned and alyed to them, as it maye apere clerely, by the treaties therof made unto the date of this presente day, the whiche excellent mater, as longe as I lyve, by the helpe of God, I shall contynue, for the more I folowe and labour it, the more it pleaseth me: as the noble knyght or squyer lovynge the feates of armes, do perceyver in the same, and be therby experte and made parfyte, so in laborynge of this noble mater I delyte and take pleasure.

[1] *Schoonhove.*

It hath ben here before conteyned in our hystory howe truce was made at Balyngham,[2] to endure thre yere, bytwene Englande and Fraunce, and for that purpose the erle of saynt Poll, the lorde of Castell Morant, and syr Taupyn of Cantemell, ambassadours of Fraunce, had ben in Englande with the duke of Lancastre and the duke of Yorke, for to understande the kinges pleasure, and the opynion of the commons of Englande: for at the comunycacyon and parlyamente at Amyence they were at a poynte of agrement of peace, upon certayne artycles specifyed, reservynge the

[2] *Lelinghen.*

agrement therto of the commons of Englande. Thus these ambassadours were retourned into Fraunce, and were answered howe that at the feest of saynt Mychell nexte ensuynge there shulde be a parlyament at Westmynster of the thre estates of Englande, at whiche tyme the mater shulde be declared, and a full aunswere made. Whan tydynges was come into Englande of the Frenche kynges sycknesse, that matter was greatly hyndred; howebeit, kynge Rycharde of Englande and the duke of Lancastre had great affection to have had peace, so that if they might have had their ententes, peace had ben made bytwene Englande and Fraunce. But the commynalte of Englande desyred warre, sayenge howe warre with Fraunce was more convenyent for them than peace. And of that opynyon was one of the kynges uncles, Thomas duke of Glocestre, erle of Perces,[1] and constable of Englande, who was welbeloved in the realme: he enclyned rather to warre than to peace. And of his opynyon were the yonge gentylmen of the realme, suche as desyred feates of armes. But his brother the duke of Lancastre, bycause he was eldest and of most puissaunce in Englande, he thought and said that the warre bytwene Englande and Fraunce had endured longe ynoughe, and that peace were more mete: for by the warre Cristendome was sore febled. For the Great Turke Lamorabaquyn was with greate puyssaunce on the fronters of Hungery; wherfore he sayd it shulde be honorable to all yonge lusty knyghtes and squyers to take their waye thyder, and ther to exercyse dedes of armes.

[1] *Essex.*

CAP. CLXXXVII

Howe the truse whiche was acorded bytwene Englande and Fraunce for thre yeres was renewed.

Lette us wysely consydre the duke of Lancasters wordes, who spake them of good entent, for he had greatly traveyled in the warres of Fraunce, and conquered but lytell, and sore traveyled his bodye, brent and dystroyed the playne countreys in his waye, and after his retourne it sone recovered agayn: he sawe this warre drewe never to none ende, but rather encreased. Also he sawe that if fortune shulde turne agaynst the Englyssh party, that great dommage therof shulde ensue, and parceyved well that the kyng his nephue was enclyned moche rather to the peace than to the warre. I Johan Froysart, auctoure of this hystory, canne nat well saye whether this dukes opinyon was good or nat; but it was shewed me,

CAP. CLXXXVII

Howe the truse whiche was acorded bytwene Englande and Fraunce for thre yeres was renewed.

that bycause the duke of Lancastre sawe his two doughters maryed in higher degree than hymselfe, and out of the realme of Englande, the one was quene of Spaygne, the other quene of Portugale, this caused him gretly to enclyne to the peace. For he knew well that the kynge of Spaygnes sonne, who had maryed his doughter, was as than but yonge, and in daunger of his owne subgiettes: and knewe well that if he shulde peasably enjoye the herytage of Spaygne, it was convenyente that the Englysshemen shulde kepe the peace with Fraunce. For if the peace shulde be broken by any incydent, than the Frenchemen myght shortly be revenged of the realme of Spayne; for they had open entrees as well through Aragon and Chathalone, as Bierne and Byskay. For the lady Yolant of Bare was quene of Aragone, and she was good Frenche, and governed Aragon, Chathalone, Bierne, and Byskay. For the vycount of Chatellon, who was heyre to therle of Foiz, had so sworne and promysed the Frenche quene, wherby the Frenchemen hadde many fayre entrees into Spaygne without daunger of the kynge of Naver, who wolde nat wyllyngly dysplease the Frenche kynge his cosyn germayne: for as than syr Peter of Naverre his brother was with the Frenche kynge, who alwayes apeased the Frenche kynges ire and dyspleasure whan he had any to his brother the kynge of Naver, for he was a true Frencheman, and never founde the contrary. All these imagynacions the duke of Lancastre had in hymselfe, and shewed his mynde to his sonne the erle of Derby, though he were but yonge, yet he was of great wysdome, and lykely to come to great honour, whiche erle had thre[1] sonnes, Johan, Humfrey, and Thomas,[2] and two doughters by the lady his wyfe, doughter and heyre to the erle constable of Englande, erle of Herforde and Northampton, by whiche lady he helde great herytage.

[1] *quatre.*

[2] *Henry, Jehan, Offrey et Thomas.*

The conclusyon of the parlyament holden at Westmynster by the thre estates of the realme, a trewce was taken by see and by lande, bytwene Fraunce and Englande, their frendes and alyes, to endure fro the feest of saynt Mychell to the feest of saynt Johan Baptyst nexte after; and suche commyssioners as the Frenche kynge had sent to this parlyament were dyspatched, and the charter of the truce sent by them

sealed, whiche treuce was well upholden on all partyes. The Frenche kynge was sore febled by reason of his sycknesse, and the physicyon, mayster Guyllyam Harselay, was as than deed. But whan he departed fro Crayell fro the kynge, he ordeyned many receytes for the kynge to use, wherby in the wynter season he recovered his helth, wherof all his lovers and frendes rejoysed, with the hole commynalte of Fraunce, for he was well beloved. And so he and the quene came to Parys, and helde their householde most parte at saynt Powle, and somtyme at Loure, and the longe wynter nyghtes they passed the season with daunsynge and carollynge, and other revels and dysportes. The quene was acompaned with the duchesse of Berrey, the duchesse of Orlyance, and other ladyes. The same season the vycount of Chastellon was come to Parys, who was newly entred into the herytage of the erledome of Foize and of Bierne as ryght heyre: and he releved the sayde erledom of Foiz, and dyd his homage to the kyng, but nat for Bierne, for that countrey helde themselfe of so noble condycion, that they helde servyce to no man lyvynge. Howebeit, the Prince of Wales said to the erle of Foiz that last dyed, that he ought to releve of him, and to have his resorte to the duchy of Acquitayne. But alwayes the sayd erle denyed and defended it. And it is to be thought, that the chalenge that the Prince of Wales made therunto, was by the settynge on and movyng of Johan erle of Armynake, as it hath ben shewed here before in this history, wherfore as nowe I wyll over passe it. Whan this vycount of Chastellon, called fro henseforthe the erle of Foiz, was at Paris with the Frenche kyng, he had there in his company with hym his cosyn syr Yvan of Foiz, bastarde sonne to the laste erle of Foize, who was a goodly knyght. The erle of Foiz, or he dyed, wolde have made hym his heyre, with another of his bastarde sonnes, called Gracian, who dwelte as than with the kyng of Naver, but the knyghtes of Bierne wolde never consent therto; therfore the mater rested as it dyd; and the erle dyed sodaynly, as ye have herde before. Whan the Frenche kynge sawe this yonge knyght syr Yvan of Foiz, he lyked hym marveylous well; also the kynge and he were moche of one age. And by reason of the favour that

CAP. CLXXXVII

Howe the truse whiche was acorded bytwene Englande and Fraunce for thre yeres was renewed.

CAP. CLXXXVII

Howe the truse whiche was acorded bytwene Englande and Fraunce for thre yeres was renewed.

the kynge bare to this yonge knyght, the erle of Foiz had the shorter spede, and was delyvered of all his businesse, and than departed into his owne countrey. And syr Yvan abode styll with the kynge, and retayned as one of his knyghtes of his chambre, with xii. horses, and all other thynges therto belongynge.

CAP. CLXXXVIII

Of the adventure of a daunce that was made at Parys in lykenesse of wodehowses, wherin the Frenche kynge was in parell of dethe.

IT fortuned that sone after the retayninge of this foresayd knyght a maryage was made in the kynges house, bytwen a yonge knyght of Vermandoys and one of the quenes gentylwomen; and bycause they were bothe of the kynges house, the kinges uncles and other lordes, ladyes, and damoselles made great tryumphe. There was the dukes of Orlyaunce, Berrey, and Burgoyne, and their wyves, daunsynge and makynge great joye. The kynge made a great supper to the lordes and ladyes, and the quene kepte her estate, desirynge every man to be mery. And there was a squyer of Normandy, called Hogreymen of Gensay,[1] he advysed to make some pastyme. The daye of the maryage, whiche was on a Tuesday before Candelmas, he provyded for a mummery agaynst nyght. He devysed syxe cotes made of lynen clothe, covered with pytche, and theron flaxe lyke heare, and had them redy in a chambre. The kynge put on one of them, and therle of Jouy,[2] a yonge lusty knyght, another, and syr Charles of Poicters the thyrde, who was sonne to the erle of Valentenoys, and syr Yvan[3] of Foiz another, and the sonne of the lorde Nanthorillet had on the fyfte, and the squyer hymselfe had on the syxte. And whan they were thus arayed in these sayd cotes, and sowed fast in them, they semed lyke wylde wodehouses,[4] full of heare fro the toppe of the heed to the sowle of the fote. This devyse pleased well the Frenche kynge, and was well content with the squyer for it. They were aparelled in

[1] *Hugonin de Guisay.*

[2] *Joigny.*

[3] *to syr Yvan* P.

[4] *i.e. satyrs.*

these cotes secretly in a chambre that no man knewe therof but such as holpe them. Whan syr Yvan of Foiz had well advysed these cotes, he sayd to the kynge: Syr, commaunde straytely that no man aproche nere us with any torches or fyre, for if the fyre fasten in any of these cotes, we shall all be brent without remedy. The king aunswered and sayd: Yvan, ye speke well and wysely; it shall be doone as ye have devysed; and incontynent sent for an ussher of his chambre, commaundyng him to go into the chambre where the ladyes daunsed, and to commaunde all the varlettes holdinge torches to stande up by the walles, and none of them to aproche nere to the wodehouses that shulde come thyder to daunce. The ussher dyd the kynges commaundement, whiche was fulfylled. Sone after the duke of Orlyance entred into the hall, acompanyed with four knyghtes and syxe torches, and knewe nothynge of the kynges commaundement for the torches, nor of the mummery that was commynge thyder, but thought to beholde the daunsynge, and began hymselfe to daunce. Therwith the kynge with the fyve other came in; they were so dysguysed in flaxe that no man knewe them. Fyve of them were fastened one to another; the kynge was lose, and went before and led the devyse.

CAP. CLXXXVIII

Of the adventure of a daunce that was made at Parys in lykenesse of wodehowses.

Whan they entred into the hall every man toke so great hede to them that they forgate the torches: the kynge departed fro his company and went to the ladyes to sporte with them, as youth requyred, and so passed by the quene and came to the duchesse of Berrey, who toke and helde hym by the arme to knowe what he was, but the kyng wolde nat shewe his name. Than the duches sayd: Ye shall nat escape me tyll I knowe your name. In this meane season great myschyefe fell on the other, and by reason of the duke of Orlyance; howebeit, it was by ignoraunce, and agaynst his wyll, for if he had consydred before, the myschefe that fell, he wolde nat have done as he dyd for all the good in the worlde. But he was so desyrous to knowe what personages the fyve were that daunced, he put one of the torches that his servauntes helde so nere, that the heate of the fyre entred into the flaxe, wherin if fyre take there is no remedy, and sodaynly was on a bright flame, and so eche

CAP. CLXXXVIII

Of the adventure of a daunce that was made at Parys in lykenesse of wodehowses.

of them set fyre on other; the pytche was so fastened to the lynen clothe, and their shyrtes so drye and fyne, and so joynynge to their flesshe, that they began to brenne and to cry for helpe. None durste come nere theym; they that dyd, brente their handes, by reason of the heate of the pytche. One of them, called Nanthorillet, advysed hym howe the botry was therby; he fled thyder, and cast himselfe into a vessell full of water, wherin they rynsed pottes, whiche saved hym, or els he had ben deed as the other were, yet he was sore hurt with the fyre. Whan the quene herde the crye that they made, she douted her of the kynge, for she knewe well that he shulde be one of the syxe, wherwith she fell in a sowne, and knightes and ladyes came and comforted her. A pyteous noyse there was in the hall. The duchesse of Berrey delyvered the kynge fro that parell, for she dyd caste over hym the trayne of her gowne, and covered him fro the fyre: the kynge wolde have gone fro her. Whyder wyll ye go quod she; ye se well howe your company brennes. What are ye? I am the kyng, quod he. Haste you, quod she, and gette you into other apparell, that the quene maye se you, for she is in great feare of you. Therwith the kynge departed out of the hall, and in all haste chaunged his apparell, and came to the quene. And the duchesse of Berrey had somwhat comforted her, and had shewed her howe she shulde se the kynge shortely. Therwith the kynge came to the quene, and as soone as she sawe hym, for joy she enbrased hym and fell in a sowne. Than she was borne into her chambre, and the kynge wente with her. And the bastarde of Foiz, who was all on a fyre, cryed ever with a loude voyce: Save the kynge, save the kynge. Thus was the kynge saved. It was happy for hym that he went fro his company, for els he had ben deed without remedy. This great myscheife fell thus about mydnyght in the hall of saynt Powle in Parys, where there was two brente to dethe in the place, and other two, the bastarde of Foiz and the erle of Jouy, borne to their lodgynges, and dyed within two dayes after in gret mysery and payne. Thus the feest of this maryage brake up in hevynesse; howebeit, there was no remedy: the faulte was onely in the duke of Orlyaunce, and yet he thought

none yvell whanne he put downe the torche. Than the duke sayde: Syrs, lette every man knowe there is no man to blame for this cause, but all onely myselfe; I ame sory therof: if I had thought as moche before, it shulde nat have happened. Than the duke of Orlyaunce went to the kynge to excuse hym, and the kyng toke his excuse. This case fell in the yere of oure Lorde God a thousande, thre hundred, fourscore and twelve, the Tuesday before the feest of Candelmas: of whiche fortune great brute spredde abrode in the realme of Fraunce, and in other countreys. The dukes of Burgoyne and of Berrey were nat there present at that season. They hadde taken their leave before of the kyng, and were gone to their lodginges.

CAP. CLXXXVIII

Of the adventure of a daunce that was made at Parys in lykenesse of wodehowses.

The next daye these newes spredde abrode in the cytie, and every manne had merveyle therof: and some sayd howe God had sente that token for an ensample, and that it was wysedome for the kynge to regarde it, and to withdrawe hymselfe fro suche yonge ydell wantonnesse, whiche he had used overmoche, beynge a kyng. The commons of the cytie of Parys murmured and sayd: Beholde the great myshappe and myschiefe that was lykely to have fallen on the kynge; he myght as well have been brent as other were. What shulde have fallen than of the kynges uncles and of his brother? They myght have ben sure none of them shulde have scaped the dethe; yea, and all the knyghtes that myght have been founde in Parys. As soone as the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne herde of that adventure, they were abasshed and marveyled greatly: they lepte on their horses and rode to the kyng, and comforted and counsayled hym, whiche was necessary, for he was sore troubled, and the paryll that he was in was styll in his ymaginacion. He shewed his uncles howe his aunt of Berrey had saved hym. But he sayde he was very sorie for the dethe of the erle of Jouye, of sir Yvan of Foiz, and of sir Charles of Poicters. His uncles reconforted hym and sayde: Sir, that is loste canne nat be recovered; ye muste forgette the dethe of them, and thanke God of the fayre adventure that is fallen to your owne persone. For all the realme of Fraunce by this incydent myght have ben in great daunger of lesynge, for ye maye thynke well that these people of Parys wyll never

CAP. CLXXXVIII Of the adventure of a daunce that was made at Parys in lykenesse of wodehowses.

be styll: for God knoweth, if the mysfortune had fallen on you, they wolde have slayne us all. Therfore, sir, aparell you in estate royall, and lepe on your horse, and ryde to Our Lady in pylgrimage, and we shall accompany you, and shewe youreselfe to the people, for they desyre soore to se you. The kynge sayde he wolde so do. Than the kynges uncles toke aparte the duke of Orlyaunce, and in curtesse maner somwhat blamed hym of his yonge dede that he had done. He aunswered and sayde, howe he thought to have done none yvell. Than anone after the kynge and his company lepte on their horses, and rode throughe the cytie to apease the people, and came to Our Lady churche, and there herde masse and offred, and thanne retourned agayne to the house of saynt Poule. And lytell and lytell this mater was forgotten, and the obsequyes done for the deed bodyes.

Ah, erle Gascoyne of Foiz, if this had fortuned in thy lyfe dayes, thou shuldest have had great displeasure, and it had been harde to have peased the, for thou lovedest hym entierly. All lordes and ladyes throughe the realme of Fraunce and elswhere that herde of this chaunce had great marveyle therof.

CAP. CLXXXIX

Howe pope Bonyface and the cardynals of Rome sent a frere, a wyse clerke, to the Frenche kyng.

POPE BONYFACE beyng at Rome with his cardinalles, rejoysed of this said adventure, bycause the Frenche kyng was agaynst them. The Pope sayde it was a token sente fro God to the realme of Fraunce, bycause they supported the Pope at Avygnon, who was proude and presumptuous, and never had done good in all his lyfe, but disceyved the worlde. The Pope at Rhome and his Cardynalles were in counsayle, and concluded to sende to the Frenche kyng secretely a man of prudence, a frere mynor, a great clerke, and he wisely to preche and to counsayle the

CAP. CLXXXIX

Howe pope Bonyface and the cardynals of Rome sent a frere to the Frenchekyng

kyng to folowe the waye of reason; for they said the kyng toke a wrong waye, seynge he was named to be the chiefe kyng of Christendome, by whom holy churche ought to be illumyned and ayded. Wherfore they charged this frere to go into Fraunce, and delyvered hym instructions of the effecte that he shulde saye and do. This was done, but it was by leysar, for the frere had farre to go, and also knewe nat whether he shulde have audyence whanne that he came thyder or nat.

Nowe lette hym go on his journey, and we shall somwhat speke of the busynesse of Fraunce.

Natwithstandyng for all these adventures, the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne and their counsayls lefte nat to pursue to have distroyed the lorde de la Ryver and sir Johan le Mercier, who were in prisone in the castell of saynt Anthony, in the kepyng of the vycount of Archy.[1] And it was said that they shulde be put to dethe, and delyvered to the provost of the Chattelet; and it was ordayned, that as sone as they shulde come into his handes, that they shulde be beheded openly as traytours agaynst the crowne of Fraunce; and so they had been, if God had nat provyded for them, and at the speciall instaunce and request of the duchesse of Berrey: for and she had nat ben, their dethe had been hasted. Specially she prayed for the lorde de la River, for by his meanes she was brought into Fraunce, and the maryage made bytwene the duke of Berrey and her. She sayde on a tyme to the duke her husbande, all wepyng: Sir, that is layd to the lorde de la Ryver is but a false sclaundre, and done for envy; and, sir, remembre what payne and traveyle he toke to bring us toguyder; ye rewarde hym but smally to consent to his dethe. Thoughe all his landes and goodes be taken fro hym, yet lette hym have his lyfe, for and he dye in this opyn shame I shall never have joye in my herte. Sir, I saye nat this of fayned corage, but that I say is with all my hole hert; wherfore, sir, I requyre you provyde for his delyveraunce. Whan the duke herde his wyfe speke so effectuously, and also knewe well that she sayde but trouthe, than he had pytie and swaged his displeasure. And the lorde de la Ryver had been the soner delyvered and sir John Mercier had nat been, for they sought all the wayes that myght be

[1] *Acy.*

CAP. CLXXXIX

to have putte hym to dethe, whiche they coude nat do, without bothe shulde have dyed.

Howe pope Bonyface and the cardynals of Rome sent a frere to the Frenche kyng.

This sir Johan Mercyer hadde wept so moche in prison that his sight was therby sore febled. If they had folowed the duchesse of Burgoyns counsayle, they had ben putte to execucyon longe before shamefully, without favour. For she hated them, bycause they and sir Olyver of Clysson had counsayled the kynge to go into Bretaygne, to warre agaynst her cosyn the duke; also she sayde that Clysson, le Ryver, and Mercyer, were causers of the kynges maladye; howebeit, the kyng was well recovered and in good estate. The dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne kepte styll the governaunce of the realme of Fraunce, for they had great profyte therby: they had apoynted suche persones as them pleased to be about the kyng.

In those dayes the kynge bare the name of a kynge, but as touchyng the busynesse parteynynge to the crowne of Fraunce he was but lytell obeyed, for the dukes wolde se and knowe howe every thynge paste. The duchesse of Burgoyne was nexte persone to the quene, wherewith the duchesse of Orlyaunce was nothynge pleased, for she wolde have hadde the honoure and preemynence. And she sayde to suche as were secrete with her: What, the duchesse of Burgoyne ought in no condycion to go before me, nor is nat so nyghe to the crowne as I am. My lorde my husbande is brother to the kynge, and it myght so fall that he shulde be kynge and I quene; I wotte nat why she shulde take on her this honour, and putte me behynde. Thus some envy was amonge these ladyes.

Nowe lette us leave speakynge of them, and retourne to sir Olyver of Clysson.

Ye have herde howe he was sommoned fyftene dayes to apere in the parlyament chambre, and how certayne knyghtes were sente into Bretaygne to seke for him, as sir Philyppe of Savoises and other, who wente into Bretaygne and sertched for hym in all places, but they founde hym nat, for he hydde hymselfe so covertly, that they coulde never speke with hym, for if they hadde they wolde have rested hym. At their retourne into Fraunce they made relacyon of their voyage. Than it was judged by the lordes of the

parlyament that sir Olyver of Clysson, constable of Fraunce, hadde forfayted landes, lyfe, and goodes, and so juged hym to be banyshed for ever out of the realme of Fraunce, and to lese all his offyces and herytages within the realme; and bicause he had nat sente the martell, whiche is the token of the offyce of the Constablery as he was sommoned to do, therfore the offyce was vacant and voyde. Than the dukes and their counsayls, suche as were agaynst syr Oliver of Clysson, thought it necessary to provyde some person to occupy the said offyce, whiche was so noble and of so gret renome, that it might nat long be without a governour for the incidentes that myght happe to fall. They advysed that the lorde Coucy was a mete man for it, and layde it to hym: but he excused himselfe, and sayd that in no wyse he wolde medyll therwith, he wolde rather forsake the realme of Fraunce. Whan they sawe he wolde not medyll therwith, than the dukes toke other advyse.

CAP. CLXXXIX

Howe pope Bonyface and the cardynals of Rome sent a frere to the Frenche kyng.

CAP. CXC

Howe the maryage was treated of the lorde Philyp of Arthoys, erle of Ewe, and the lady Mary of Berrey, wydowe, doughter to the duke of Berey; and howe he was admytted constable of Fraunce.

IN this same sesone there was a treatie of maryage to be had bytwene the lorde Philyppe of Arthoys and the yong wydowe lady of Berrey, somtyme called countesse of Dunoys and wyfe to Loyes of Bloys. The Frenche kynge wolde gladly have had this maryage avaunsed, but the duke of Berrey was natte wyllynge therto, for he thought the erldome of Ewe but a small thyng as to the regarde of her fyrste husbande; wherfore he thought to mary her more highlyer. Indede the lady was beautifull, and endued with all vertues that shulde apertayne to a noble lady. Howebeit, finally the duke of Berrey was lothe to displease the kynge, yet he had many offers made hym for his doughter, as by the yonge duke of Loreyne, by the erle of Armynake,

CAP. CXC

Howe the maryage was treated of the lorde Philyp of Arthoys and the lady Mary of Berrey.

and by the sonne and heyre of the erle of Foiz. The kynge brake of all these maryages, and sayd to his uncle: Fayre uncle of Berrey, we wyll nat that ye shall putte our cosyn youre doughter, come of the Floure de lyce, into so farre countreys; we shall provyde for her a mariage mete, for we wolde gladly have her nere us; it ys right mete that she be with our aunt your wyfe, for they be moche of one age. Whan the duke sawe the kynges entente, he refrayned hymself of makynge of any promyse to any person for his doughter. Also he sawe well that the kynge enclyned his favour to his cosyn the lorde Philyppe of Arthois, who was a yonge lusty knyght, and of highe corage, and hadde endured many traveyls in armes beyond the see and other places, and had atchyved many voyages to his great laude and honour. Than the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne agreed bytwene them, that if the kynge wolde gyve to their cosyn Phillyppe of Arthois the offyce of constablery of Fraunce, whiche as than they reputed voyde, by reason of the forfayture of syr Olyver of Clysson, than they to agree at the kynges pleasure in this sayd maryage. For the duke of Berrey thought that if he were constable of Fraunce, he shulde than have suffycient to mentayne his estate. On this the two dukes determyned to speke to the kynge, and so they dyde, and said to hym: Sir, your counsayle generally are all agreed that the lorde Philyp of Arthoys be preferred to the offyce of constableshyp of Fraunce, whiche is nowe voyde. For by jugemente of your parlyament Olyver of Clysson hath forfayted the offyce, whiche maye nat be long vacant, but it shulde be prejudyce to the realme. And, syr, both you and we also are bounde to avaunce and promote our cosyn of Arthoys, for he is nere of blode and of lynage to us. And, sir, seinge the offyce is voyde, we can nat tel where ye shulde better enploy it than on hym; he shall right well exercise it; he is wel beloved with knyghtes and squiers, and he is a man without envy or covetousnesse. These wordes pleased well the kyng, who answered and said: Uncle, if it be voyde, we had rather he had it than another. The kyngs uncles sued styll for the lorde Philyppe of Arthoys, for the duke of Berrey hated sir Olyver of Clisson, bycause he consented to distroye

Betysache hys servaunte; and the duke of Burgoyne hated hym bycause he made warre agaynst the duke of Bretaygne, and yet the duchesse hated hym worse. Finally, the kyng assented, so that the duke of Berrey wolde agre to the maryage bytwene his doughter and the said lorde Philyppe of Arthoys. And yet, to satisfye the kyng and the duke of Orlyaunce, who bare syr Olyver of Clysson in that offyce, they sente syr Guyllyam of Bourdes and syr Guyllyam Martell, bothe knyghtes of the kynges chamber, and syr Philyppe of Savoises, a knyght of the duke of Berreys, into Bretaygne, to speke with syr Olyver of Clysson. These knyghtes tooke theyr journey and rode to Angers, and there they found the quene of Hierusalem and Johan of Bretaygne, who receyved them right honorably for the honour of the Frenche kynge. There they taryed two dayes, and demaunded newes of syr Olyver of Clysson, sayeng: they had curtesse letters and message fro the Frenche kyng to hym, and fro none other persone. And they were aunswered, no man coude tel where he was, but that he was surely in Bretayne in one of his fortresses; but they said he was so flyttyng fro one place to another, that it was harde to fynde hym. Than these knightes departed, and toke leave of the quene and of her sonne Charles the prynce of Tharent, and of Johan of Bretaygne, erle of Ponthieu, and rode to Rennes. And the duke of Bretayne and the duchesse were at Wannes, and rode nat lightly forthe out of the towne, for he ever douted the busshmentes of his ennemye sir Olyver of Clysson. There was so harde warre made bitwen them that there was no mercy but dethe. And thoughe the duke was lorde and soverayne of the countrey, yet there was neyther barone, knyght, nor squyer in Bretaygne that wolde arme them agaynst sir Olyver of Clysson, but dyssymuled and sayde, that their warre touched them nothyng; wherfore they satte styll. The duke coude have none other conforte.

CAP. CXC

Howe the maryage was treated of the lorde Philyp of Arthoys and the lady Mary of Berrey.

Whanne these Frenche knyghtes were at Rennes, they enquered where to fynde sir Olyver of Clysson, but they coude here no certentie of hym. Thanne they were counsayled to drawe to the castell of Joselyn, where sir Olyver of Clyssons men receyved them well, for the love of the

CAP. CXC
Howe the maryage was treated of the lorde Philyp of Arthoys and the lady Mary of Berrey.

Frenche kynge. Than they demaunded where they myght here of syr Olyver of Clysson, sayeng, they had to speke with hym fro the Frenche kynge and from the duke of Orlyaunce, and from none other persones. But his men coude tell nothyng of hym, or els they wolde nat tell. But they sayd: Sirs, surely it wyll be harde to fynde hym, for this daye he is in one place and to morowe in another; but if it please you, ye may ryde over all the duchy of Bretaygne, and sertche over al his forteresses and houses, none shall be closed agaynst you. Whan they sawe they coulde have none other aunswere they departed thens, and rode and visyted all the fortresses great and small, parteynynge to the lorde Olyver of Clysson. Thanne they came to Wannes, and there founde the duke of Bretaygne and the duchesse, who receyved them, and there they taryed but halfe a daye, and dyscovered nat to the duke the secrete mater that they came thyder for, nor also the duke examyned them nothynge of the mater. Also they coulde nat se there syr Peter of Craon.

Thus they toke leave of the duke and of the duchesse and retourned to Parys, where they founde the kyng and the lordes, and there reported to the kynge and to the duke of Orlyaunce howe they hadde sought al the places and townes parteynynge to sir Olyver of Clysson, but in no wyse they coulde fynde hym. The dukes of Burgoyn and Berrey were right glad of these newes, and wolde nat it had ben otherwise. Than anone after, proceded the maryage bytwene the lorde Philippe of Arthois and the lady Mary of Berrey. And so this lorde Philyppe was constable of Fraunce, and used the offyce with all profytes and advauntages therto belongyng of auncyent ordynaunces. Yet the lorde Olyver of Clysson had nat renounced the offyce, nor delyvered up the martell, whiche is the token of the constable of Fraunce. For he contynued, and sayd he wolde abyde styll constable, and had done no cause why to lese it nouther to the kynge nor to the realme. He knewe well the erle of Ewe was profered to have the offyce of the constable, and to enjoye the proffytes therof, by consente of the kynge, and how he hadde maryed the doughter of the duke of Berrey, the lady Mary. He toke but lytell regarde to all this, for he knewe hymselfe

true to the kynge and to the crowne of Fraunce, and knewe well all that was done agaynst hym was through envy and hatered that the dukes of Burgoyne and Berey had against hym. Thus the lorde of Clysson lette the mater passe, and contynued styll his warre agaynst the duke of Bretayne, whiche warre was right fierse and cruell, without mercy or pytie. The lorde of Clysson rode ofter abrode and layde busshmentes than the duke dyde. And all other lordes of Bretayne satte styll and wolde nat medyll. The duke dyde sende for the lordes of his countrey, and they came to speke with hym and to knowe his entent. Than the duke requyred them of their ayde and helpe agaynst his ennemy sir Olyver of Clysson. Than the lordes of Bretayne, as the vicount of Rohan, the lorde Dignan, the lorde Hermen of Lyon, and dyvers other excused them, and sayd they knewe no cause why, nor they wolde nat make no warre agaynst the lorde Clysson, but they said they wolde right gladlye endevour themselfes to bringe them to a peace if they coude. Whan the duke sawe he coude have none other conforte of them, and parceyved well howe he lost and was lykely to lese mo men in that warre than sir Olyver of Clysson, than he consented that the sayde lordes shulde go to sir Olyver of Clysson and treate for a peace, and to bringe hym under saveconducte to Wannes to speke with hym, at whiche time he sayd he shulde be founde tretable, and to agre to all reason. And if syr Olyver had done hym any displeasure, that he myght have amendes accordynge to their advyse. These lordes were well agreed thus to do, and so they all thre wente to the lorde Olyver of Clysson, and dyde so moche that they spake with hym, as I was enformed, in the castell of Joselyn, and shewed hym the dukes entent. And moreover to bringe them to a peace, for they sawe well warre was nat fytting bytwene them, but greatly noyed the noble men, marchauntes, and commons of Bretaygne, they sayd to the lorde Olyver: Sir, if it wyll please you to go to the duke, we shall bynde us to abide here in this castell tyll your retourne; and we doute nat, ye beynge ones in his presence, ye shall fynde him so resonable that peace and good accorde shal be had bitwene you. Sir Olyver sayd: Sirs, what shall it profyte you if I were deed? Thynke you

CAP. CXC

Howe the maryage was treated of the lorde Philyp ofArthoys and the lady Mary of Berrey.

CAP. CXC

Howe the maryage was treated of the lorde Philyp of Arthoys and the lady Mary of Berrey.

that I knowe nat the duke of Bretayne? He is so cruell and so haute, that for all his saveconducte, or whatsoever he saythe, if he sawe me in his presence he wolde never cease tyll I were deed; and thane shulde you dye lykewise, for my men here wolde soone slee you without mercy. Wherfore it is best that bothe you and I save our lyves, rather than to putte us in that daunger. I shall kepe me fro hym and I can, and lette hym kepe hym as well fro me. Thane the lorde Charles of Dignan sayde: Fayre cosyn, ye may saye as it please you: but we thynke surely thoughe he sawe you, he wolde do you no displeasure: this that we offre you is of good affection, and to bringe you to accorde, and we praye you that ye wyll thus do. Than the lorde Clysson sayde: Sirs, I beleve surely ye meane well; but I ensure you upon this assuraunce I shall never go to hym; but sithe ye medell in the mater bytwene us, ye shall nat thynke that I shal be unresonable; I shall tell you what I wyll do. Retourne you agayn to the duke, and saye that I wyll nat take you for no pledge nor hostage; lette hym sende me his sonne and heyre, who is maryed to the doughter of Fraunce, and he shall abyde here in this castell with my men tyll I retourne agayne. This way I thynke more surer than the other. For if ye shulde abyde here, as ye offre, who shulde thane entremedell in the busynesse bytwene the duke and me? For without a meane we shall never come to accorde.

Whan these lordes of Bretayne sawe they coude have non other answere, they tooke their leaves and retourned to Wannes to the duke, and shewed hym what they had done: but in no wyse the duke wolde consente to sende his sonne to the castell of Joselyn. So their warre contynued styll, wherby no persone durst ryde abrode, and marchaundyse was layde downe, thoroughe whiche the people of good townes and cyties were sore hindred, and poore laborers lette laboringe of the erthe. The duchesse of Burgoyn covertly ayded her cosyn the duke of Bretayne with men of armes, as well of Burgoyne as of other places, for the duke coude get none of his countrey to take his parte in that quarell agaynst sir Olyver of Clysson. They alwayes dissymuled the mater, except suche as were of his owne house.

CAP. CXC

Howe the maryage was treated of the lorde Philyp ofArthoysand the lady Mary of Berrey.

The duke of Orlyaunce on the other parte loved well the lorde Olyver of Clysson, and secretely socoured hym with men, and sente hym horses. Sir Olyver of Clysson roode ofter abrode than the duke dyde; and it fortuned on a day he encountred two squyers of the dukes, the one called Bernard and the other Yvonet: they were taken and brought to sir Olyver, who was gladde of them: he knewe them well; one of them hadde done hym servyce in tyme past, and the other nat, but he had done hym displeasure. Than sir Olyver said to Yvonet: Remembrest thou nat howe in the castell of Ermyne thou sheweddest me but small curtesy; and thou Bernarde haddest pyte on me, and dyddest putte of thy gowne and putte it on me whan I stode in my doublet on the pavement, the whiche kepte me fro colde. I wyll now yelde thy curtesy to the; thy lyfe shal be saved. But thou false knave and traitour Yvonet, thou myghtest have done otherwise than thou dyddest, therfore thou shalte repent it; and therwith drewe his dagger and strake hym to the herte. Another tyme the lorde Clisson rode, with thre hundred speares in his company, towarde the castell of Alroy, where the duke and duchesse of Bretayne were. This was aboute mydsomer, and by fortune he encountred a fourtie of the dukes servauntes, who hadde tyed their horses to the trees, and had sickels in their handes, and were cuttyng downe the corne, and makynge trusses to cary to their lodgynges lyke forragers. Whan the lorde Olyver came on them they were sore afrayde. And the lorde Oliver said: Sirs, howe dare ye come into the feldes to steale and to take awaye poore mennes corne? Ye never sowed them, and yet ye cutte theym downe or they be rype; ye begyn harvest to soone. Leape on your horses and take youre sickels, for this tyme I wyll do you no hurt; and saye to the duke of Bretaygne, who is in Alroye, that if he wyll come or sende his men to drive me away, here he shall fynde me tyll the sonne goynge downe. These poore men were gladde they were so delyvered; they feared to have ben slayne. So they retourned to the castell of Alroy to the duke, and shewed hym what they hadde herde and sene; but the duke nor none of his men issued out of the castell. Many scrimysshes were made in Bretaygne bytwene the duke

CAP. CXC and sir Olyver of Clysson, and they of the countre medled nat bytwene them.

Howe the maryage was treated of the lorde Philyp ofArthoysand the lady Mary of Berrey.

Nowe we wyll leave to speke of the duke of Bretayne and of sir Oliver of Clysson and of their warre, and speke of the busynesse bytwene Englande and France.

CAP. CXCI

Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande, by meanes of the four dukes, uncles to bothe kynges.

YE have herde here before, howe the parliament was holden in the cytie of Amyence, and howe the Englysshe lordes departed, and upon what artycles: and howe the Frenche kynge sent after into Englande to the duke of Lancastre, and the answere that they hadde of the Englysshmen, who were harde to be brought to any peace. For it laye nat all onely in the kyng nor in the dukes of Lancastre and Yorke, for great parte laye in the commens of Englande and archers, and other servyng men. They sayd howe they had rather have warre than peace; and many yong knightes and squiers were of the same opynion, for by reason of the warre they had maynteyned their estates; howebeit, perforce they were fayne to obey as the kyng and his uncles wolde. The duke of Lancastre bycause his ii. doughters were quenes, the one of Spaygne, the other of Portugale, and also bycause he sawe the kynge his nephue enclyned to have peace, he sayd the warre had endured longe ynoughe, and sayde he wolde take payne therin, so it myght be for the honour of the kyng and the realme. On the other partie the duke of Burgoyne dyde all that he myght do to have peace, consydring howe he was greatly charged with the busynesse of Fraunce, and that his two nephues, the Frenche kynge and the duke of Orlyaunce, were yonge of age and of discrecion. Also he consydred howe he was enherytour to the duchy of Brabant, and thought that if ever Flaunders and Brabant shulde vary agaynst the crowne of Fraunce with the ayde of Englande,

as they had other tymes done before, that the realme of Fraunce shulde than have over moche to do. The duke of Burgoyne was a wyse and a farre castyng prince, and depely regarded his busynesses. This duke of Burgoyne, and the duke of Lancastre, tooke great payne to have a parlyament agayn to be holden at Balyngham,[1] whiche was agreed, and bothe partyes suffycyently provyded with full auctorites to conclude a full peace. And this counsayle to be holden at Balyngham, in the moneth of May than nexte after, in the yere of our Lorde God, a thousande, thre hundred, fourscore and xiii. And all suche as shulde be at this assemble were named and apoynted.

CAP. CXCI
Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande.

[1] *Lelinghen.*

Firste on the party of kynge Rycharde kinge of Englande were apoynted his two uncles, the duke of Lancastre and the duke of Gloucestre, who were greatly in favoure with all the commons of Englande, and with all such that loved better to have warre than peace. And with them shulde be the archebysshop of Yorke, the byssop of London, and other clerkes of the lawe. It was apoynted that these lordes shulde come to Calays, as they dyd, aboute the myddes of Aprill, anone after the feest of saynte George, holden at the castell of Wyndesore, by the kynge and other knyghtes of the ordre of the garter. And on the Frenche party there was assygned the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne to be there, and other counsaylours of Fraunce, and it was ordeyned that they shulde come to the towne of Boloyn. And the Frenche king, who, as he shewed, had great affection to have peace bytwene Englande and hym, sayde to his uncles, that he wolde come as nere to the parlyament as he myght, wherupon it was advysed where the Frenche kinge shulde lye, the parlyament durynge at Balyngham. Some sayd at saynt Omers, and some sayd at Thourayne, and some at Mutterell or Abvyle. But all thynges consydred, it was advysed that the kynge shulde lye at Abvyle, bycause the towne was stronge and well fournysshed, and there every man shulde be well lodged. Whan this was determyned, provysyon was made there for the kynge, and he to be lodged in the abbay of saynt Peters, an abbay of blacke monkes, and thyder came the kynge and the duke of Orlyaunce, and their counsayle, and the lorde Reynolde of Corby, chaun-

CAP. CXCI
Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande.

cellour of Fraunce. The dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne, and suche other as were in their commyssion, were at Boloyne, and the dukes of Lancastre and Gloucestre, and other, were at Calays. It was goodly to beholde to se the ordre of this parlyament that was holden at Balyngham, bytwene the Frenchemen and Englysshmen. There were tentes and pavylyons pyght up to refresshe bothe partyes, and twyse or thryse a weke the commyssioners mette there in a fayre tente, ordayned for that purpose, aboute nyne of the clocke in the forenoone, and there communed upon many artycles. At whiche tyme I Johan Froysart, auctour of this booke, was at Abvyle, and desyrous to knowe the effecte of this treatie, I enquyred the trouth of suche lordes and other as I thought shulde knowe the certayntie. As it was shewed me, whan they entred into comunycasion, and had sene eche others auctoryte, and perceyved that they had full power to conclude a peace, bothe by lande and see, bytwene Fraunce and Englande, and all their alyes, than one of the firste demaundes that the Frenchemen desyred, was to have Calays raced downe, in such maner that there shulde be never after any habytacion there. Therto the dukes of Lancastre and Gloucestre answered and said, how they had no suche auctorite to cause Calays to be beaten downe, but that Englande shulde holde it in his demayne and trewe herytage; and sayd, that if they purposed to entre any further in treatye of peace, to seace of that demaunde, and to speke no more therof. Whan the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne herde their two cosyns of Englande answere so quyckly in that case, they seased to speke any more of that mater, for they sawe well their traveyle shulde be but in vayne, and so than spake of other matters. Than the Englysshe men demaunded to have restytucyon of all suche landes as had been delyvered to kynge Rycharde their soveraygne lorde, or to kynge Edwarde the Thyrde, or to any of their deputies or commyssioners, and also to have fully payed the somme of florayns that was lefte unpayed at the tyme whan the warre renewed bytwene Englande and Fraunce: and this the Englysshe clerkes and lawyers proved reasonable and lawfull to be had. The lordes and chauncelours of Fraunce argued to the contrary, and sayd, As to retourne all the

landes agayne to the governynge of the kyng of Englande and his successours, was impossyble to be done: sayenge howe suche landes, cyties, townes, castels, lordeshyppes, and homages, as the Englysshemen demaunded, were gyven awaye whan the peace was concluded at Bretygny, and after confermed and sealed at Calays, wherby they were clene put awaye fro the kyng of Englande, whiche peace and grauntes was made in the yere of our Lorde God, a thousande, thre hundred, threscore and one; and therupon the Frenche kyng graunted to suche landes great lyberties by his othe, writyng, and promesse, whiche in no wyse canne be broken agayne nor revoked; wherfore they sayd that if the Englysshemen purposed to have peace, they shulde drawe to some nerer poynt. Than by delyberacyon of the foure dukes, it was devysed that the Frenchemen, as well as the Englysshmen, shulde put all their demaundes in writynge, and the same to be delyvered to eyther partye, that they might be regarded at length on bothe partes: and suche as were unreasonable to be rased and cancelled, and such as were good to be upholden. This ordynaunce semed to all parties good and reasonable. Before this ordre was taken, the four dukes had to moche busynesse to do. Specyally the Englysshemen had moche payne to here and to understande the Frenchemen, who were full of subtyle wordes, and cloked perswacions and double of understandynge, the whiche the Frenchemen wolde tourne as they lyst to their profyte and advauntage, whiche Englysshemen use nat in their langage, for their speche and entent is playne. And also the Englisshmen were enfourmed that the Frenchemen had nat alwayes upholden the artycles, promyses, and condycyons, ratyfied in the artycles of peace: yet the Frenchmen wolde ever fynde one poynte or other in their writynges, by some subtyle cloked worde, affermynge that the Englysshemen had broken the peace, and nat they. Wherfore whan the Englysshemen sawe or herde in the Frenchemens writynges any darke or cloked worde, they made it to be examyned by suche as were profoundly lerned in the lawe, and if they founde it amysse, they caused it to be canselled and amended, to the entent they wolde leave nothynge in trouble. And the Englysshmen to excuse themselfe, wolde say, that

CAP. CXCI
Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande.

CAP. CXCI

Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande.

Frenchemen lernynge suche subtylties in their youth, muste nedes be more subtyle than they. Somtyme suche frowarde wordes bytwene the parties greatly drave of the tyme of treatie. The Frenchemen helde themselfe fre, and thought they shulde nat be charged with no suche demaundes, as to make restytucyon of all the landes, with the apendances pertaynyng to the duchy of Acquytayne, with the arerages of that hath ben levyed syth the warre renewed, to the whiche they wolde never acorde. The Frenchemen offred to rendre the countre of Terbe, and of Bygore, and the countye of Piergourt and Pyerguys,[1] and the countie of Agen and Agenoys. But Kaours, Rouergue, Quercy and Lymosyn, they wolde in no wyse delyver, nor the countie of Ponthyeur, nor of the countie of Guysnes, more than the Englysshmen hadde in their handes at the same tyme. Thus these lordes contynued a fyftene dayes and made no conclusyon, but these dukes determyned to sende worde to the two kynges, to gyve them knowledge what they had done. The Frenche dukes rode to Abbevyle, and shewed the kynge all the mater, and howe they had desyred their cosins of Englande to write the hole treatie to the kynge of Englande, and so they sayd they had promysed to do. And as I was enfourmed, on the Englysshe party the duke of Glocestre was harder to entreat than the duke of Lancastre. And bycause the commons of Englande knewe somwhat of his entent, therfore they agreed that he shulde be sent to this treatye, for they knewe well that nothynge shulde passe hym, without it were for the honour of the realme. Thus these four dukes amyably departed eche fro other, and concluded to mete there agayne the nynth day after. Thus these Englysshe lordes retourned to Calays, and the Frenche lordes to Boloyne, and so to Abvyle. That tyme in Abvyle there was a fayre garden, closed with the ryver of Somme, where as oftentymes the Frenche kynge passed the tyme; he sayd to his brother of Orlyaunce, and to his counsayle, that his beynge at Abbevyle dyd hym moche good in his helthe. There was there the same seasone with the kynge, the kynge Lyon of Armony, newly come thyder out of Grece, and out of those marches. Into his owne countrey he durst nat entre, for the Turkes had conquered it, except the stronge

[1] *Pyergyns* P.

towne of Conych,[1] standynge on the see syde, whiche the Genoways helde and kepte for doute of the Turkes. For if the Turkes had gotten that porte, they shulde have doone moche yvell by the see to the Cyprians and to the Rodes, and other boundes of Crystendome. The kyng of Armony wolde gladly have hadde peace bytwene Englande and Fraunce, in trust that all yonge knightes and squyers shulde go into Grece to helpe to conquere agayne his realme of Armony. Whan the Frenche kynges uncles were come to Abbevyle, the kynge was gladde and made theym good chere, and demaunded howe they had spedde; and they shewed hym all the hole processe, and upon what poynte they departed, wherof the kynge was gladde, for he shewed to be glad to have peace. In lyke maner the Englyssh dukes, whan they came to Calays, they wrote to the kynge of Englande all the poyntes and artycles of that treatye. And shortly they had agayne a good aunswere, commaundynge them to procede for a peace, sayenge the warre had contynewed longe ynoughe, and that Crystendome therby was sore dommaged. Thus at the daye prefyxed, the dukes mette agayne at Balyngham, and with the Frenche lordes came the kynge of Armony, to shewe to the lordes of Englande his busynesse and necessyte. He was well knowen with the duke of Gloucestre, for he had ben in Englande whan the Frenche army was ordeyned at Sluse, to have gone into Englande. The duke of Glocestre the same tyme receyved the kynge of Armony, and made hym good chere at a fayre place of his in Essex, called Plasshey. At Balyngham also the dukes of Englande made the kynge of Armony good chere, and was glad to here hym speke. And they aunswered hym that gladly they wolde ayde hym, wherof the kynge was ryght joyfull. Many thynges were treated in this parlyament. And all this season the cardynall of Line[2] lay at Abbevyle, who was sente thyder in legacyon by hym that called hymselfe pope Clemente, for maters concernyng the churche. The Frenche dukes at this assemble at Balyngham wolde have had certayne artycles comprised in their treatie, concernynge the churche, and susteynynge the opynyons of this pope Clemente, Robert of Geneve. But whan the Englysshe dukes harde that, they sayd to their cosyns of

CAP. CXCI

Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande.

[1] *Curch.*

[2] *De Luna.*

CAP. CXCI
Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande.

Fraunce: Cosyns, and ye wyll that we shall fall to any poynte of conclusion, speke no more of that cardynall: we have nothyng to do with hym; his matter is a busynes without profyte or effecte; we are determyned upon a Pope to whom we wyll obey: we wyll here no spekyng agaynste hym; if the other medle any thynge with us we shall departe and goo hence, and leave all togyder. After that tyme there was no mo wordes of that cardynall, he taried styll at Abbevyle. Than these lordes proceded in their treaties; the duke of Lancastre was well enclyned to have peace. The Frenche kynge the yere before hadde sore desyred hym to be a good meane to entreate for a peace, and so he promysed to do. Howbeit, his brother the duke of Gloucestre was harde to agre, for he layde forthe the Frenchemens dysceytes and colored wordes that they used alwayes in their writynges, sayenge howe the Frenchemen wolde alwayes wrestell with their armes dyscovered,[1] whiche was ever perceyved. On a daye there came a squyer of honour, a Frencheman, called Robert the Hermyte, to the duke of Gloucestre; he was one of the Frenche kynges privy chambre. Whether he was sente to the duke of Glocestre, or came on his owne heed, I can nat tell; but as the duke shewed me in Englande at Plasshey, this squyer sayd to him: Syr, for the love of God be nat agaynst this treatie of peace, for ye se howe the lordes of Fraunce do their dyligence to bringe it aboute; ye shall do an almesse dede, for the warre hath to longe endured, and sythe that bothe kynges are content to have peace, all their subgiettes ought to obey therto. Than the duke answered hym, as he sayd: Roberte, I am nat agaynst it, nor wyll nat be: but ye Frenchemen amonge you, ye have so many coloured wordes, so darke and obscure to our understandynge, so that whan ye wyll it is warre, and whan ye lyst it is peace; thus have ye ledde us unto this presente daye. But if the kynge my soveraygne lorde had beleved me, and suche other of his realme as are bounde to serve hym, peace shulde never have been bytwene Englande and Fraunce, tyll restytucyon had ben made to us of all that is taken fro us without cause, by subtylte and crafte, as God and all the worlde knoweth. But sythe the kynge my soverayne lorde enclyneth to the peace, it is

[1] *que les François vouloient toujours lutter les deux bras desseure.*

reasone that we agree to the same. And therfore if we make a peace acordyng to the desyres of bothe kynges, sythe we be here assembled, let it be well holden on your syde, for it shall be well kepte on our partye. And thus the duke shewed me that this Roberte the Hermyte departed fro hym, and went to his company. And so these lordes contynewed styll their treatie.

CAP. CXCI
Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande.

I wyll make no further processe, but come to conclusyon. These foure dukes that were at this assemble, and had full power and auctorite of their kynges to take a trewce, and to make a peace, they dyd so in suche wyse, that a generall voyce and renome ranne through the towne of Abbevyle, that a peace was taken upon certayne artycles bytwene the two kynges, their alyes and confyderates. But I sir Johan Froyssart, auctour of this hystory, beynge the same tyme in Abbevyle, coulde nat lerne the certaynte of the artycles comprised in that peace; howebeit, I knewe that a peace was taken to endure four yeres, to be kepte ferme and stable, bothe by see and by lande. And it was concluded and agreed, that within the sayde space of the four yere shulde be delyvered to the kynge of Englande for ever, and perpetually to all kinges of Englande and to his commyssioners, all the landes and sygnories in the countrey of Languedoc, and to be as of the demayne and herytage of the crowne of Englande. And this doone and accomplysshed, it was agreed by the same ordynaunce, that certayne capitayns and their men that helde some holdes and fortresses in the realme of Fraunce, shulde avoyde and departe, all suche as made warre, and do make any warre, under the shadowe and coloure of the kynge of Englande and the Englysshemen, of what nacyon so ever they were. To all these artycles, these lordes that were as than at Balyngham were bounde in writynges sygned and sealed, and the copyes therof sent to bothe kynges. Than the dukes of Lancastre and Gloucestre sent an harauld, called Marche, with letters to the kynge of Englande, shewynge and declarynge all the hole processe and ordynaunce concluded in their treatie, upon the forme of peace. Thus this harauld departed with his letters, and rode to Calys, and passed over to Dover, and rode forthe tyll he came to the kynge, who was at a manoure of his

CAP. CXCI
Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche' kyng and the kyng of Englande.

owne besyde London. Whan he came in the kynges presence he delyvered his letters. And whan the kynge had redde them, he was ryght joyouse, and gave to the haraulde, for his good tydynges bryngynge, great giftes, as the same haraulde shewed me after at leysare, as I rode with hym into the realme of Englande. These foure dukes of Fraunce and of Englande were styll at Balyngham, and sojourned there in fayre tentes and pavylyons, and well and dylygently perused and examyned the artycles of their treatie, and wolde passe nor seale to none tyll all darke and obscure wordes were clerely declared and made perfyte. Nowe in the same season there happed to fall a great lette and trouble in this matter, wherby all was nyghe at a poynte to have been broken and made voyde. And it is reason I tell you the cause, to the entent that the hystory be playne and trewe.

Ye have herde here before howe the Frenche kyng had great pleasure to lye at Abbevyle, and also to be nere to here dayly howe the treatie wente forwarde at Balyngham. And whan the four dukes were at a poynt, as ye have herde, at the conclusyon of the mater, the dukes of Lancastre and Gloucestre sayd, howe that it was the entensyon of kynge Rycharde, kynge of Englande, and his counsayle, that pope Bonyface, beynge at Rome, whome the Romayns, Almayns, Hungaryons, Lumbardes, Venysyans, and all the nacyons of the worlde chrystened, helde to one Pope, and he that named hymselfe Clement degraded and condempned, that they shulde desyre the Frenche kynge to take the same way. Whan the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne understode those wordes, the duke of Burgoyne, to the entent somewhat to please his cosyns of Englande, and to the entente that their treatie of peace shulde nat be hyndred therby, sayd: Fayre cosyns, we desyre you to have some respyte to take counsayle upon that mater, whiche was graunted them. And therupon they toke counsayle, and than aunswered, and the duke of Burgoyne spake and sayd: Fayre cosyns, the mater and questyon of the two popes is nat covenable to be moved nor spoken of here amonge us, and we marveyle why ye put this mater in communycacion, for at the fyrst begynnyng of our treatie, ye refused to se or to speke with the legate de la

Lyne, who is as yet in Abbevyle, wherfore we rest us on that. Whan the cardynalles at Rome dyd chose pope Urbayne, and after his dyscease pope Bonyface, none of our party nor yet of yours were called to that electyon, and in lykewyse we saye of Clement, who is at Avygnon. We saye nat agaynst, but that it were great almes to apease theym, and to unyte the churche, who so myght entende to do it; but lette us leave that mater, and lette the unyversitees and clerkes determyne it. And whan all our busynesse is concluded, and a ferme peace ratifyed, than by the counsayle of our cosyn the kynge of Almayne, we shall entende therto gladly on our partye, and in lykewyse do you on your partie. With this aunswere the dukes of Englande were well content, for it semed to them reasonable. Than they aunswered and sayde: Fayre cosyns, ye have sayde very well, we are content with the same. Thus that mater rested. Than there fell another great lette and trouble, for the Frenche kynge, who had layne at the towne of Abvyle a great season, bycause of the great disportes, pleasure, and pastyme that he founde there, sodaynly he fell agayne into his maladye of fransy, in lyke maner as he had ben the yere before. He that fyrst perceyved it was syr Willyam Martell, a knyght of Normandy, who was alwayes nere to the kynges persone in his privy chambre. The same seasone the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne were at Boloyne, or at Balyngham, upon thende of their parlyament, and they had in a maner all concluded for that seasone. And as soone as the duke of Orlyaunce, brother to the kynge, knewe of this chaunce of the kynges sycknesse, and that he had sene hym, he sente a secrete squyer of his, named Bonyface, to his uncles to Boloyne, advertisynge them secretly of the kynges dysease. Whanne the dukes knewe that, they were ryght sorye, and departed. For they had allredy taken their leaves of their cosyns of Englande, who were also departed to Calays, and taryed there to here tydynges fro the kyng of Naverre, and fro the duke of Bretaygne: for they had moved in their treatie that the castell of Chyerbourge, standynge on the see syde, upon the close of Constantyne, in Normandy, whiche the kynge of Englande had in gawge and in kepynge, as I was enfourmed, for the somme of threscore thousande

CAP. CXCI

Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande.

CAP. CXCI
Of the forme of the peace made bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande.

nobles of Englande, that the Frenche kynge shulde paye the sayd somme, and the castell to retourne to the kynge of Naverre, and also the stronge castell of Brest that the Englysshemen helde, shulde retourne to the duke of Bretaygne. The dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne abode nat the conclusyon of that matter, but came to Abbevyle, and founde the kynge in ryght yvell estate of his helthe, whereof they were sory. The kynges sycknesse was kepte secrete as longe as it myght be, but it was nat very longe, for suche adventures are soone spredde abrode. Thus all the lordes that had been in Abbevyle departed one after another, every man home to his owne howse. Than it was determyned that the kynge shulde be caryed in an horse lytter to the castell of Crayll, upon Oyse, where he had ben before: thyder he was conveyed by nyght tyme, and the daye tyme he rested, for the heate of the sonne. The duke of Berrey, and the duke of Orlyaunce, rode to Crayell with the kynge, and the duke of Burgoyne rode into Arthoys, and into Flaunders, vysitynge his countreys, and founde the duchesse his wyfe at the castell of Hedyn. As than there was no mo wordes spoken of the lorde de la Ryver, nor of syr Johan Mercyer, they were as than all forgoten; no man spake of their grevaunce, nor of their delyveraunce. This seconde malady that Charles the Frenche kynge was fallen in, dyd put away greatly the spekynge of the people. The wyse and sage men of Fraunce feared before greatly this chaunce, for they sawe the kynge was lykely to fall into that malady, by reason of the great excesse that he had used in tymes paste, and through the feblenesse of his heed. Mayster William of Harsley was as than newly deed, and suche as were nere about the kyng coude nat tell where to have a good sure phisicyon to wayt upon the kyng; howbeit, they that were about him dyd the best they coude devise.

CAP. CXCII

Of the dethe of pope Clement at Avygnon, and of the lectyon of pope Benedic.

IN that tyme in the moneth of Septembre, passed out of this worlde at Avygnon, Roberte of Geneve, named pope Clement. And it came by hym as he had alwayes said before: whan any man spake of the peace and unyon of the church, he wolde say alwayes, howe he wolde dye Pope, and so he dyd, in maner as ye have herde here before; wrongfully or ryghtfully I wyll nat determyne. Than the cardynalles there were sore abasshed, and studyed whome they myght chose to be Pope. The same tyme the Frenche kynge retourned agayne to his helth, wherof all suche as loved him had great joye, and specyally the good quene, who had gyven moche almesse, and done many pylgrymages for the kynge, and caused generall processyons to be made in Parys. As I was enfourmed, the cardynals at Avygnon dyd electe and chose to be Pope the cardynall de la Line. To speke truely this cardynall was an holy manne and of good lyfe. This electyon was made condycionally, that if the Frenche kynge and his counsayle were content therwith, or els nat. Nowe regarde and considre the great subjectyon that the churche was in, in that, where the churche shulde be free, they submytted them to be under suche as shulde have ben ordred by theym. Thus this cardynall de la Lyne was chosen Pope, and named Benedic. He gave generall graces to all clerkes that wolde come to Avignon, and by the counsayle of his bretherne the cardynalles, he wrote of the creacyon of his papalyte to the Frenche kynge: but as I was enfourmed the kynge toke lytell regarde therto, for as than he was nat determyned whether he shulde take hym for very Pope or nat, and therupon the kynge sent for the greatest clerkes of the unyversyte of Paris, to have their advyse and counsayle. Than mayster Johan of Gygencourte,[1] and mayster Pyer Placyons,[2] who were in prudence and lernyng the greatest clerkes in Parys, sayde to the kynge in the name of all the hole unyversyte, howe that the

[1] *Guignicourt.*
[2] *Playon.*

CAP. CXCII Of the dethe of pope Clement at Avygnon.

cysme of the churche corrupted the Crysten fayth, and howe that it myght nat longe endure in that estate, without all Crystendome shulde repent it, and rynne in great daunger, and specially the prelates and preestes of the churche. They of the unyversyte were determyned to sende no rolles to Avygnon, for any clerkes to have any graces of this pope Benedyc. The Frenche kynge sawe well their opynyons were reasonable, and wolde have none of his clerkes enrolled to seke for the Popes graces, tyll the mater were better determyned. Thus that mater abode styll in that estate. Howebeit, the duke of Berrey exalted greatly this pope Benedic, and sent his roll, wherby moche people were purveyed of graces of this Benedic. The duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse dyssymuled the mater with the kinge, and so dyd the duke of Orlyaunce, with many other great lordes of Fraunce. And some for favoure helde them to this pope Benedyc, who denyed no man his graces, to the entent that his courte at Avygnon shulde be full, and to have the more reputacyon. The duke of Bretaygne folowed the Frenche kynges opinyon, for he was before tyme so abused by the enformacyon of his cosyn the erle of Flaunders, that his herte wolde never enclyne to beleve on pope Clemente, though the clerkes of Bretaygne beleved and helde hym for Pope. So whan any promocyon was voyde in Fraunce, the kynge promoted his clerkes, without gyvyng any knowledge therof to this pope Benedic, wherwith he and his cardynalles at Avygnon were sore abasshed, and douted leste the Frenche kynge wolde restrayne suche rentes and profytes as they were wonte to have of the benefyces gyven in the realme of Fraunce. Than they determyned to sende a legate into Fraunce to speke with the kynge and his counsayle, to knowe howe he wolde ordre hym agaynst the churche, and to shewe hym howe that he that is chosen Pope is under this condycyon, that if he be pleased, than he to abyde styll as Pope, or els they to put hym out of his papalyte, and the cardynals to entre agayne into conclave, and chose one after the kynges pleasure. At this tyme was come to Paris, and was about the kynge, the freer mynour, a meke man, who was sente into Fraunce by pope Bonyface of Rome: the Frenche kynge herde gladly this freers

prechynge. Than came into Fraunce the legate fro Avygnon, who was a great and a subtyle clerke, and well langaged. Than the hole unyversyte counsayled the kynge, and sayde howe it were well done that eyther Bonyface, or els Benedyc, to be put oute of their papalyte, and all his cardynalles to be putte out of their cardynalyties, and in stede of them to be chosyn good clerkes, wysemen, and of good conscyence, as well of Almayne and Fraunce, as of other nacyons, and they to be sette toguyder by good delyberacyon and counsayle, without favour or yvell wyll, to sette the churche therby at one poynt with one Pope. They sayde, they sawe well there was none other waye to bringe it to a good conclusyon, bycause pride and envy so reygned in the worlde, that the princes and lordes eche helde their owne partie. This preposycion that the unyversite hadde made before the kynge, pleased right well the kynge, and the dukes of Orlyaunce and of Burgoyne; and the kyng sayd he wolde write and sende messangers to the kynge of Almaygne, and of Boesme, and of Hungry, and to the kyng of Englande. And he thought hymselfe sure ynough of the kynges of Castyle, of Naver, of Aragon, of Cicyle, of Naples, and of Scotlande, that they wolde obey to suche a Pope as he and his realme obeyed unto; and upon this the Frenche kyng sente his letters and messangers to these sayde kynges. There was good leysar in doing of this, bothe in goyng and commyng agayne with answere. And in the meane tyme there passed out of this worlde at Parys the noble clerke mayster Johan of Gygencourt, of whose dethe the kynge and the lordes, and the hole universyte were right sorie; for he lafte nat his felowe behynde him; and he had in his dayes taken great payne to reforme the churche, and to have brought it into a perfyte unyte.

CAP. CXCII
Of the dethe of pope Clement at Avygnon.

CAP. CXCIII

Of a clerke named mayster Johan of Warennes.

THE same season there was a great clerke at Avignone, bothe of scyence and of prudence, doctor in the lawes and auditor of the palais of the nasion of Rennes,[1] called maister Johan of Warennes. And by reason of suche service as he had done to pope Clement and to other, he was greatly avaunced and promoted with benefices, and he was at the poynt to be a bysshop or a cardynall; he had been chapelayne with one at Avygnone, called saynte Peter of Lusenbourge. The same maister Johan Warennes for all his promocions he resigned them all, and retayned to hymselfe but a small lyveng, and that was the sextenry of Our Lady churche in Renes, worthe by yere, if he be resydent, a C. frankes, and in absence but xxx. and so departed fro Avignon, and came to dwell nere to Renes, in a village called saint Ley. And there he ledde an holy lyfe, and preched the worde of God, and exalted moche the Pope at Avygnon, and condempned in his wordes the Pope at Rome. He was visited of moche people of all countreis that came to se hym, and to se the holy lyfe that he ledde. He fasted every day. Some people sayd that the cardynals at Avignon, by crafte and subtylte, hadde sent hym thider to exalte and to colour their opinyon, or els he was come thider to shewe his holy lyfe. He wolde in no wyse be called the holy man of saynt Ley, but the audytor. He had alwayes in his company his mother. He sayd masse every daye devoutly, and all that was gyven him, he wolde gyve it agayne for Goddessake; he wolde aske nothyng of no man.

[1] *Rheims.*

Nowe lette us leave spekyng of hym, and speke of other busynesse, as the mater requyreth.

CAP. CXCIIII

Howe the king of Englande gave to the duke of Lancastre and to his heyres for ever the duchy of Acquytayne, and howe the kyng prepared to go into Irelande, and the duke into Acquytayne.

YE have herde here before in this hystorie, howe trewce was taken bytwene Englande and Fraunce, and there adherentes and alyes, bothe by see and by lande. For all that, yet there were robbers and pyllers in Languedocke, whiche were straungers and of farre countreis, as of Gascoyne, of Bierne, and of Almaygne. And amonge other sir Johan of Grayle, bastarde sonne somtyme of the Captall of Beufes,[1] a yonge and an experte knyght, was capitayne of the stronge castell of Boutevyll. These capitayns of the garysons in Bigore, and marchynge on the realme of Arragone, and on the fronters of Xaynton, and in the marchesse of Rochell, and of the garyson of Mortaygne, were sore displeased that they myght natte over rynne the countrey, as they were accustomed to do. For they were straitlye commaunded on payne of grevous punysshment, to do nothyng that shulde sounde to the reproche of the peace.

[1] *Buch.*

In this season it was agreed in Englande, consyderynge that the kynge was yonge, and that he hadde peace with all his ennemyes farre and nere, excepte with Irelande, for he claymed that lande of enherytaunce, and his predecessours before him, and was written kyng and lorde of Irelande; and kynge Edwarde, graunfather to kynge Rycharde, made allwayes warre with the Irysshemen: and to the entente that the yonge knyghtes and squyers of Englande shulde enploye themselfe in dedes of armes, and therby to augment and encrease the honour of the realme, it was concluded that kynge Rycharde of Englande shulde make thyder a voyage with puyssaunce of menne of warre, and so to entre into Irelande, and nat to retourne agayne without they hadde an honourable composycion or conclusyon. The same season it was concluded, that the duke of Lan-

CAP. CXCIIII

castre, who had greatlye traveyled bothe by see and by lande for the augmentacyon and honour of the realme of Englande, shulde make another voyage with fyve hundred menne of armes, and a thousande archers, and to take shyppynge at Hampton, or at Plommouthe, and so to sayle to Guyane and to Acquitaygne. And it was the entencyon of kynge Rycharde, and by consent of all his counsayle, that the duke of Lancastre shulde have for ever to hym and to his heyres, all the countrey of Acquitayne, with the purtenaunces, as kyng Edwarde his father had, or any other kynges or dukes of Acquitayne before tyme had holden and optayned, and as kyng Rycharde at that tyme had: reserved always the homage that he shulde do to the kynge of Englande, and to any kynges to come after; but as for all the obeysaunces, rentes, lordshyppes, and revenewes, shulde parteygne to the duke of Lancastre, and to his heyres for ever: of this the kyng made to hym a clere graunt, and confyrmed it under his writyng and seale. With this gyfte the duke of Lancastre was well content, and good cause why, for in that duchy are landes and countreis for a great lorde to maynteygne his estate withall. The charter of this gyfte was engrosed and dewly examyned, and paste by great delyberacyon, and good advyse of counsayle; beynge present the kynge and his two uncles, the duke[1] of Yorke, and the duke of Gloucestre, the erle of Salisbury, the erle of Arundell, the erle of Derby, sonne to the duke of Lancastre, and also therle Marshall, [the] erle of Rutlande, the erle of Northumberlande, the erle of Nottyngham, the lorde Thomas Percy, the lorde Spensar, the lorde Beamonde, the lorde Willyam of Arundell, the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury, and the archebysshoppe of Yorke, and the bysshoppe of London, and other; all these were presente, and dyvers other prelates and barownes of Englande. Thanne the duke of Lancastre purposed to make his provisyon to passe the see to go into Acquitayne, to enjoye the gyfte that the kyng hadde gyven hym. In lykewise great provisyon was made for the kynges voyage into Irelande; and lordes and other were apoynted, suche as shulde passe the see with the kyng, and had warnyng to make them redy.

How the king of Englande gave to the duke of Lancastre and to his heyres for ever the duchy of Acquytayne.

[1] *dukes* P.

CAP. CXCV

Of the dethe of Quene Anne of Englande, wyfe to kynge Richarde, doughter to the kynge of Boesme and Emperour of Almaygne.

THUS, as I have shewed, great preparacyons was made at the portes and havyns, where as the kynge shulde take shyppynge for to go into Irelande; and in lykewyse there as the duke of Lancastre shulde passe to go into Acquitayne. Their voyage was lette and taryed the space of two monethes lengar than it shulde have ben, and I shall tell you why.

The same season that all these preparacyons was made, the quene named Anne tooke a sickenesse, wherby the kynge and all his lordes were ryght sore troubled, for she was so sore sicke that she passed out of this worlde at the feest of Penthecost, the yere of our Lorde God a thousande, thre hundred, fourscore and fourtene, of whose dethe the kynge and all that loved her, ladyes and damoselles, were sore troubled, and in great hevynesse. She was buryed at Poules, in London, and her obsequies done after at good leysar, for the king wolde have it done sumptuously, with great habundaunce of waxe tapers and torches, so that the lyke hadde nat ben sene before. The kynge wolde have it so, bycause she was the Emperours doughter of Rome, and kyng of Almaygne: the kynge loved her so entierly. They were maryed yonge; howebeit, she dyed without issue. Thus in one season the kynge, the duke of Lancastre, and the erle of Derby, were wydowers; and there was no spekynge of remaryeng, nor the kyng wolde here no spekynge therof. Thus the kynges voyage into Irelande was somwhat retarded and let; howebeit, the provisyon, and other lordes, suche as shulde go with the kynge, passed over the see and landed at Duvelyn, whiche was alwayes Englysshe, and there is an archebisshoppe who was with the kynge. And anone after mydsomer the kynge departed fro the marchesse of London, and toke the waye throughe Wales, huntyng and sportynge hym, to forgette the dethe of

CAP. CXCV
Of the dethe of Quene Anne of Englande.

his quene, and suche as shulde go with the kynge sette forwarde. Two of the kynges uncles, Edmonde duke of Yorke and Thomas duke of Gloucestre, constable of Englande, sette forwarde in great arraye, so dyde other lordes, as the erle of Rutlande, sonne to the duke of Yorke, the erle Marshall [the] erle of Salisbury, the erle of Arundell, the lorde Wyllyam of Arundell, the erle of Northumberlande, lorde Percy, lorde Thomas Percy his brother, great Seneschall of Englande, the erles of Devonshyre and Notyngham, and great nombre of other knightes and squiers; suche reserved as abode behynde to kepe the marchesse agaynst the Scottes, who were suche people as never kepte no truce nor promyse. The lorde Johan of Hollande, erle of Huntyngton, was as than on his waye to Jerusalem, and to saynt Katheryns mount, and purposed to retourne by the realme of Hungry, for as he passed through Fraunce, where he hadde great chere of the kyng, and of his brother and uncles, he herde howe the kyng of Hungry and the great Turke shulde have batayle togyder, therfore he thought surelye to be at that journey. On the other syde the duke of Lancastre came to Plomouthe, where his shippes laye redy. And whan his men were come, and his vesselles all charged, and had wynde at wyll, they toke shippyng and disancred and sayled towardes Burdeaux, on the ryver of Garon.

Nowe lette us speke of the kyng of Englande, who had in his company four thousande men of armes, and thyrtie thousande archers. They shipped at thre places, at Bristowe, at Holyheed, and at Herforde;[1] they passed over daylye. And in Irelande all redy there was a valyaunt knyght of Englande, called erle of Ormonde: he helde landes in Irelande, and so dyde his predecessours, but it was as than in debate. The erle Marshall of Englande hadde the vowarde with fyftene hundred speares, and two thousande archers. The kynge of Englande and his two uncles toke shyppinge at Herforde in Wales. Thus the army passed over without dommage, and than they were lodged in Irelande, by the apoyntement of the duke of Gloucestre, constable of Englande, and by the marshals, all abrode in the countrey, beyond the cytie of Duvelyn, a xxx. myle, for

[1] *Haverford-west.*

the countrey was as thane inhabytable. Howebeit, they laye wysely and surely for feare of the Yrisshemen, as nede was, or els they myght have taken great dommage. And the kynge and his uncles were lodged in the cytie of Duvelyn; and as it was shewed me all the whyle they were there, they were largely provyded of vitayls. For the Englysshemen are suche men of warre as can well forrage and take advauntage, and make good provisyon for themselfe and their horses. And what fell of this voyage I shall shewe you here after, as I was enformed.

CAP. CXCV Of the dethe of Quene Anne of Englande.

CAP. CXCVI

Howe sir Johan Froissart arryved in Englande, and of the gyfte of a boke that he gave to the kyng.

TREWE it was, that I sir Johan Froissart, as at that tyme treasourer and chanon of Chymay, in the erldome of Heynaulte, in the diocese of Liege, had great affectyon to go and se the realme of Englande, whan I had ben in Abbevyle, and sawe that trewce was taken bytwene the realmes of Englande and Fraunce, and other countreis to them conjoyned, and there adherentes, to endure four yeres by see and by lande. Many reasons moved me to make that voyage: one was, bycause in my youthe I hadde been brought up in the court of the noble kynge Edwarde the Thyrde, and of quene Philyppe his wyfe, and amonge their chyldren, and other barones of Englande, that as than were alyve, in whome I founde all noblenesse, honour, largesse, and courtesy: therefore[1] I desyred to se the countre, thynkynge therby I shulde lyve moche the lengar, for I hadde nat been there xxviii. yere before, and I thought, though I sawe natte those lordes that I lefte alyve there, yet at the leest I shulde se their heyres, the whiche shulde do me moche good to se, and also to justifye the hystories and maters that I hadde written of them. And or I toke my journey, I spake with duke Aubert of Bavyere, and with the erle of Heynaulte,[2] Hollande, Zelande, and lorde of Freese, and with my lorde Wyllyam

[1] *Herefore* P.

[2] *Monseigneur le duc Aubert de Bavière, conte de Haynnau, etc.*

P. CXCVI erle of Ostrevaunt, and with my right honourable lady
re sir Jahane duchesse of Brabant and of Lusenbourge, and with
an the lorde Engerant lorde Coucy, and with the gentyll
smart knyght the lorde of Gomegynes, who in his youthe and
ved in myne had been toguyder in Englande in the kynges courte.
lande. In lykewise so had I sene there the lorde of Coucy, and dyvers other nobles of Fraunce, holden great housholdes in London, whan they laye there in hostage for the redempcion of kynge Johan, as than Frenche kynge, as it hath been shewed here before in this hystorie.

These sayd lordes and the duchesse of Brabant counsayled me to take this journey, and gave me letters of recommendacyon to the kynge of Englande and to his uncles, savynge the lorde Coucy: he wolde nat write to the kynge bycause he was a Frencheman, therfore he durste nat, but to his doughter, who as than was called duchesse of Irelande. And I had engrosed in a fayre boke, well enlumyned, all the matters of amours and moralytees that in four and twentie yeres before I hadde made and compyled, whiche greatly quickened my desyre to go into Englande to se kyng Rycharde, who was sonne to the noble prince of Wales and of Acquitayne, for I hadde nat sene this kynge Rycharde sythe he was christened in the Cathedrall churche of Burdeaux, at whiche tyme I was there, and thought to have goone with the prince the journey into Galycia in Spaygne; and whane we were in the cytie of Aste,[1] the prince sente me backe into Englande to the quene his mother.

For these causes and other I hadde great desyre to go into Englande to se the kynge and his uncles. Also I hadde this said fayre boke well covered with velvet, garnysshed with clapses of sylver and gylte, therof to make a present to the kynge at my fyrst commynge to his presence: I hadde suche desyre to goo this voyage, that the payne and travayle greved me nothyng. Thus provyded of horses and other necessaries, I passed the see at Calais, and came to Dover, the xii. daye of the moneth of July. Whane I came there I founde no man of my knowledge, it was so longe sythe I had been in Englande, and the houses were all newly chaunged, and yonge children were become men, and the women knewe me natte, nor I theym. So I abode

halfe a daye and all a nyght at Dover; it was on a Tuesdaye, CAP. CXCVI
and the nexte daye by nyne of the clocke I came to Canter- Howe sir Johan Froissart arryved in Englande.
bury, to saynt Thomas shrine, and to the tombe of the noble prince of Wales, who is there entered ryght richely. There I herde masse, and made myne offrynge to the holy saynt, and thanne dyned at my lodgynge; and there I was enformed howe kyng Richarde shulde be there the nexte daye on pylgrimage, whiche was after his retourne out of Irelande, where he had ben the space of nyne monethes or there about. The kyng hadde a devocyon to visyte saynt Thomas shrine, and also bycause the prince his father was there buryed. Than I thought to abyde the kynge there, and so I dyde. And the next daye the kynge came thyder with a noble company of lordes, ladyes, and damoselles. And whan I was among them they semed to me all newe folkes, I knewe no persone: the tyme was sore chaunged in xxviii. yere. And with the kynge as than was none of his uncles; the duke of Lancastre was in Acquitayne, and the dukes of Yorke and Glocestre were in other busynesses, so that I was at the first all abasshed, for if I had sene any auncyent knyght that had ben with kyng Edwarde, or with the prince, I had ben well reconforted and wolde have gone to hym, but I coulde se none suche. Thane I demaunded for a knyght called sir Rycharde Seury,[1] whyder he were alyve or nat; and it was shewed me yes, but he was at London. Than I thought to go to the lorde Thomas Percy, great seneschall of Englande, who was there with the kyng: so I acquaynted me with hym, and I founde hym right honorable and gracyous. And he offred to present me and my letters to the kynge, wherof I was right joyfull, for it behoved me to have some meanes to bringe me to the presence of suche a prince as the kynge of Englande was. He wente to the kynges chambre, at whiche tyme the kynge was gone to slepe, and so he shewed me, and badde me retourne to my lodgynge and come agayne, and so I dyde. And whan I came to the bysshoppes palays, I founde the lorde Thomas Percy redy to ryde to Ospring; and he counsayled me to make as than no knowledge of my beynge there, but to folowe the court: and sayd he wolde cause me ever to be well lodged tyl the kyng shulde be at the fayre

[1] *Stury.*

CAP. CXCVI

Howe sir Johan Froissart arryved in Englande.

castell of Ledes,[1] in Kent. I ordered me after his counsayle and rode before to Ospring; and by adventure I was lodged in an house where was lodged a gentyll knyght of Englande, called sir Wyllyam Lysle: he was taryed there behynde the kynge, bycause he had payne in his heed all the nyght before: he was one of the kynges prevy chambre. And whan he sawe that I was a straunger, and as he thought, of the marchesse of Fraunce, bycause of my langage, we fyll in acquayntaunce toguyder: for gentylmen of Englande are curtesse, treatable, and gladde of acquayntaunce. Than he demaunded what I was, and what busynesse I had to do in those parties. I shewed hym a great parte of my commynge thyder, and all that the lorde Thomas Percy hadde sayd to me, and ordred me to do. He than answered and sayde, howe I coulde nat have a better meane, and that on the Friday the kyng shulde be at the castell of Ledes; and he shewed me that whan I came there, I shuld fynde there the duke of Yorke the kynges uncle, wherof I was ryght gladde, bycause I had letters dyrected to hym, and also that in his youthe he hadde sene me, in the courte of the noble kyng Edwarde his father, and with the quene his mother. Than on the Friday in the mornyng sir Wylliam Lysle and I rode toguyder, and on the waye I demaunded of hym if he had been with the kynge in the voyage into Irelande. He answered me yes. Than I demaunded of hym the maner of the hole that is in Irelande, called saynt Patrykes purgatorie, if it were trewe that was sayde of it or nat. Than he sayde, that of a suretie suche a hole there was, and that he hymselfe and another knyght of Englande hadde ben there whyle the kynge laye at Duvelyn, and sayd howe they entred into the hoole and were closed in at the sonne goynge downe, and abode there all nyght, and the nexte mornyng issued out agayne at the son risyng. Than I demaunded if he had any suche strange sightes or vysions as were spoken of. Than he sayd, howe that whan he and his felowe were entred and past the gate that was called the purgatorie of saynt Patryke, and that they were discended and gone downe thre or four paces, discendyng downe as into a cellar, a certayne hoote wapure rose agaynst them, and strake so into their heedes, that they were fayne to syt

[1] *Leeds.*

downe on the steeres, whiche are of stone; and after they had sytte there a season, they had great desyre to slepe, and so fell aslepe and slepte there all nyght. Than I demaunded that if in their slepe they knewe where they were, or what visyons they had. He answered me, that in slepyng they entred into great ymaginacyons and in marveylous dremes, otherwyse than they were wont to have in their chambres: and in the mornynge they issued out, and within a shorte season clene forgate their dremes and visyons, wherfore he sayde he thought all that mater was but a fantasy. Than I lefte spekyng any further of that matter, bycause I wolde fayne have knowen of hym what was done in the voyage in Irelande. And I thought as than to have demaunded what the kyng had done in that journey; but than company of other knyghtes came and fell in communycacion with hym, so that I lefte my purpose for that tyme. Thus we rode to Ledes, and thyder came the kyng and all his company, and there I founde the lorde Edmonde duke of Yorke. Than I went to hym and delyvered my letters fro the erle of Heynaulte his cosyn, and fro the erle of Ostrevaunt. The duke knewe me well, and made me good chere, and sayde: Sir Johan, holde you alwayes nere to us, and we shall shewe you love and courtesy: we are bounde therto for the love of tyme past, and for love of my lady the olde quene my mother, in whose courte ye were: we have good remembraunce therof. Than I thanked hym as reason requyred. So I was advaunsed by reason of hym and sir Thomas Percy, and sir William Lysle; by their meanes I was brought into the kynges chambre, and into his presence by meanes of his uncle the duke of Yorke. Than I delyvered my letters to the kyng, and he toke and reed them at good leysar. Than he sayd to me that I was welcome, as he that hadde ben and is of the Englysshe courte. As on that daye I shewed nat the kynge the boke that I hadde brought for hym: he was so sore occupyed with great affayres, that I had as than no leysar to present my boke. The kyng was sore busyed there in counsayle for two great and mightye maters. First was, in determynynge to sende sufficient messangers, as therle of Rutlande his cosyn germayne, and the erle Marshall, the archbysshoppe

CAP. CXCVI

Howe sir Johan Froissart arryved in Englande.

CAP. CXCVI of Dublyn, the bysshoppe of Ely, the lorde Loys Clyfforde, the lorde Henry Beaumonde, the lorde Hughe Spensar, and many other, over the see to Charles the Frenche kynge, to treate with hym for a maryage to be hadde bytwene the kyng of Englande and the Frenche kynges eldest doughter, named Isabell, of the age of eyght yeres. The seconde cause was the lorde de la Barde, the lorde of Taryde, the lorde of Pyntherne,[1] the lorde of Newcastell, the lorde of Nesque,[2] the lorde of Copane, and the counsaylours of Burdeux, Bayon, and of Daxe, were come into Englande, and had quickely pursued their mater, sythe the kynges retourne out of Irelande, to have an answere of the requestes and processe that they had put forthe to the kyng, on the gyfte that the kynge had gyven to his uncle the duke of Lancastre, of the landes, seignories, lordshippes, and baronyes in Acquytayne, whiche they verifyed to pertaygne to the kynge and realme of Englande. They hadde alleged to the kynge and his counsayle, that his gyfte myght nat passe so, bycause it was unprofytable and inutyle. For they sayd all those landes helde of right and of the demayne of the crowne of Englande, wherfore they sayde, they wolde nat disjoyne nor discever them fro the crowne. They alleged furthermore many other reasonable causes, as ye shall here after in this processe. But thus to have counsayle of those two great matters, the kynge had sente for the moost parte of the prelates and lordes of Englande to be at the feest of Maudelyntyde at a manner of the kynges called Eltham, a sevyn Englysshe myles fro London. And whan they had taryed at Ledes a four dayes, the kyng retourned to Rochester and so to Elthame, and so I rode forthe in the kynges company.

Howe sir Johan Froissart arryved in Englande.

[1] *Puycornet.*
[2] *Lesque.*

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre; and howe they sent into Englande to the kynge and his counsayle, shewyng hym the wyll of the hole countrey of Acquytayne.

IN rydynge the waye bytwene Leades and Eltham, I demaunded of syr Willyam Lysle and of syr John of Graily, capitayne of Boutevyll, the cause why the king drewe to London warde, and why that great counsayle shulde assemble at Eltham. They tolde me, and specially syr Johan Graily rehersed to me playnly why the lordes of Gascon were come thyder, and the counsaylours of the good townes and cyties. Thus I was enfourmed by this knight, who knewe the trouth, for he was often tymes amonge theym; they and he were in a maner all of one countrey and fronter. He sayde thus: Surely whan the duke of Lancastre came fyrst into Acquytayne, suffycyently fournysshed with charters and wrytinges, engrosed and sealed with the great seale of Englande, and enrolled and fermely decreed with full accorde of all prelates and lordes of Englande, and also by consente of the duke Edmonde of Yorke and erle of Cambridge, and of Thomas duke of Gloucestre, though the sayd herytages might by succession have come to them, for kynge Rycharde of Englande their nephue had as than no chyldren, and these sayd two dukes were brethern germayns of father and mother to the duke of Lancastre: whiche duke, anone after he was come into Acquytayne, sente some of his counsayle to the cytie of Burdeaux, to shewe to the mayre and counsaylours of the towne the fourme and tenoure of his request, and for what cause he was come into the countrey. Whan they herde this they greatly marveyled; howebeit, they joyfully receyved the kynges and dukes commyssioners, for the honoure of the kynge, to whome they ought their servyce and obeysaunce. Than they desyred to take counsayle, and so they dyd. Than after they aunswered and said, that the duke of Lancastre, sonne to kynge Edwarde,

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

who had ben their lorde, was welcome amonge them, and none otherwyse. For they sayde, they had nat so farre forthe taken counsayle as to receyve hym to their soverayne lorde, for they sayd that to kyng Rycharde their soveraygne lorde they had done feaultie and homage, and as than he had made them no quytance. Than aunswered the commyssioners and sayd: Syrs, feare nat but that ye shall have suffycient dyscharge in that behalfe, so ye take the duke to your soverayne lorde, for ye shall se by the content of the kinges charters that there shall never questyon be made therof in tyme to come. Whane they of Burdeaux sawe they were so nere touched, they founde theym another socoure, and sayd: Fayre lordes, your commyssion extendeth nat all onely upon us, but in lykewyse to them of the cytie of Bayon, and to the prelates and barones of Gascoyne, and to all that be under the obeysaunce of the kynge of Englande; ye shall drawe you towardes them, and as they do and ordre them we shall folowe the same. Other aunswere the commyssioners coulde nat have at that tyme of them of Burdeaux. Than they departed and rode to Lyborne, where the duke of Lancastre laye.

Whan the duke herde their aunsweres, he imagyned in hymselfe that the busynesse that he was come thyder for shulde nat be so sone atcheved as he trusted it shulde have ben. Than he sent his counsayle to the cytie of Bayon; and as they sped in Burdeaux so they dyd there; other answere coude they have none. And fynally all the prelates and noble men, counsaylours of cytes and good townes in Gascoyne, under the obeysaunce of the kyng of Englande, conjoyned them togyder, and concluded in the forme and manner as I shall shewe you. They sayde they wolde gladly receyve the duke of Lancastre into their cyties, townes, and castelles, as the sonne of kyng Edwarde, and uncle to kinge Rycharde of Englande, so that at his entringes he shulde solemply swere that pesably and in good maner he and his shulde entreat the people without enforsynge of any thynge, and to pay reasonably for every thynge that they shulde dispende, and also to swere that he shulde nat oppresse nor cause to be oppressed the jurysdictyon of the crowne of Englande, by no maner of waye nor

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

accyon. The duke aunswered to this and sayd, that he was nat come into the countrey to greve or oppresse the people, but wolde rather kepe and defende them agaynst all men as his herytage: and desyred and requyred theym that the commaundement of the kynge of Englande myght be observed and acomplisshed. Than the hole countrey by a comune voyce sayd, that in no wyse they wolde departe fro the crowne of Englande, and that it was nat in the kynge of Englandes power to gyve them away to another lorde, nor to put them fro the crowne of Englande. These demaundes and denyenges were longe a debatyng bytwene the duke of Lancastre and the lordes and townes of Gascon. And whan the duke sawe none other remedy, than he made request to the countrey that the prelates and noble men and counsaylours of the good townes shulde sende suffycient personages to the kynge of Englande and to his counsayle, and howe he wolde sende in lykewyse notable persones of his counsayle; and loke whatsoever the kyng and his counsayle shulde determyne in that cause, he promysed surely to abyde therby, whether it were with hym or agaynst him. Than they of Gascon consydred well that his request was reasonable, and agreed to do as the duke had desyred. Than the duke rode to Burdeaux, and was lodged in the abbey of saint Andrewes, where he had ben lodged before tyme. Than they of the cytie of Bayon and Dax apoynted suffycient personages to sende into Englande, and the barons of Gascon under the kinges obeysaunce sent in lyke wyse. Also ye shall knowe, that whan the Frenche kyng and his uncles understode that the duke of Lancastre was peasably entred into the cytie of Burdeaux, and knewe nat for what entent, nor whether he wolde kepe or breake the trewce, than he and his counsayle determyned to sende to hym, to knowe somwhat of his entent. There was apoynted to go, the lorde Boucyquaut, marshall of Fraunce, the lorde Johan of Castell Morante, and Johan Barres of Barroys, and they to have with them a thousande speares. Thus they rode forth tyll they came to the cytie of Agen, and there taryed. Than they sent harauldes and messangers[1] to Burdeaux to the duke of Lancastre, shewynge hym howe they wolde gladly speke with hym. The duke made these messangers

[1] *messagers* P.

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

good chere, and wrote agayne to these lordes, certifyeng them that where as they had great desyre to speke with hym, in lyke wyse he had the same to speke with them; and bycause they shulde take the lesse payne, he promysed to come and mete with them at Bergerate. And whan the Frenche lordes sawe this letter, they gave credence therto, and ordred them there after. And as sone as they knewe that the duke was come to Bergerate they departed fro Agen and rode thyder. There they were receyved and lodged in the towne, and their company in the subbarbes. These lordes spake with the duke, and shewed hym their message. The duke receyved them swetely, and aunswered and sayd, howe he wolde be a good and a kynde neyghbour to the Frenche kyng and the realme, and to kepe and mayntayne the trewce taken bytwene the two kynges: for he sayde he hymselfe was one of the princypalles that ayded to make and ordayn that truce; wherfore he sayd he ought nat nor wolde nat breke it, therof they myght be well assured. The dukes aunswere greatly pleased the lordes of Fraunce. Thus the duke and they were lovingly togyder, and the duke gave them a great dyner and supper, and after they tooke their leave, and the duke retourned to Burdeaux and the Frenchemen into Fraunce. They founde in their waye the duke of Berrey at the cytie of Poycters, and they shewed hym what they had doone. The duke of Berrey thought the duke of Lancasters answere reasonable, and so dyd the Frenche kynge and the duke of Burgoyne, and so the mater abode styll in this estate. And for this cause, quod sir Johan Graily, the duke of Lancastre hath sent hyther into Englande of his counsayle, as syr Wylliam Perreer and syr Peter Clyfton,[1] and two clerkes lerned in the lawe, as mayster Johan Huche and mayster Johan Rycharde of Leycettour, to treate and to pleate his maters before the kynge and his uncles. And for this cause the kynge rydeth to Eltham, and shall be there on Thursday nexte, that shall be Mary Maudelyn daye; but what shal be done as yet I knowe nat. But as I am enfourmed of some Englysshemen that knowe somwhat, the duke of Gloucestre will be princypally of the opynion that his brother the duke of Lancastre shulde abyde styll in Guyen rather than to

[1] *Clynton.*

retourne agayne into Englande, bycause he was so great with the kynge: for I ensure you this duke of Gloucestre is a marveylous mynded man, proude and presumptuous; he wolde rule all hymselfe, and he is so beloved of the comynalte, that whatsoever he saythe they wyll enclyne to him. He caused the valyaunte knyght the lorde Symon Burle, and the duke of Irelande, the archebysshoppe of Yorke, and many other knyghtes, and other of the kynges counsayle to dye, for hatred and yvell wyll, durynge the seasone that the duke of Lancastre was beyonde the see in Castyle: he is more dred in Englande than beloved.

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

Nowe lette this mater passe, quod syr John Graily, and I shall shewe you nowe the seconde busynesse that the kynge hathe to do, as I am enfourmed. The kynges pleasure is to be remaryed, and hath sertched over all for a wyfe. If the duke of Burgoyne or the erle of Haynalte had any doughter to mary, the kynge wolde gladly have had one of them; but they have none but suche as be maryed. It hath ben shewed the kyng that the kynge of Navarre hath bothe susters and doughters, but he wyll nat entende that wayes. The duke of Gloucestre hath a doughter able to mary; he wolde gladly that the kyng shulde have had her, but the kynge wolde nat, for he said she was to nere of his kynne, for she is his cosyn germayne. The kynge enclyneth moste his mynde to the Frenche kynges doughter, wherof all the countrey hath great marveyle that he wolde take his enemyes doughter. The kynge is nat the beste beloved prince of the worlde with his people, but he setteth lytell therby; he sheweth always how he had rather have warre with any other realme than with Fraunce, wherfore he wolde have a good peace bytwene the Frenche kynge and hym and their realmes: for the kynge wyll often tymes saye that the warre hath endured to longe bytwene them, and that many valyaunt men are deed therby on bothe parties, wherby the Christen faythe is sore mynysshed and febled. And it is nat pleasaunt to the realme of Englande that he shulde mary with Fraunce; and it hath ben shewed hym that the doughter of Fraunce is over yonge, and that this fyve or syxe yere she shall nat be able to kepe hym company. Therto he hath aunswered, and saythe that she shall

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

growe ryght well in age, and though he faste a season, he shall take it well a worth, and shall ordre her in the meane season at his pleasure, and after the maner of Englande; sayenge also howe he is yet yonge ynough to abyde tyll the lady be of age. No man canne breke the kynge out of this purpose, and or ye departe ye shall here moche of this matter. And thus for these causes the kynge rydeth nowe to Eltham.

Thus this gentle knyght syr Johan of Graily and I devysed togyther as we rode bytwene Rochestre and Dertforde. This knight was capytayn of Boutevyle, bastarde sonne somtyme to the Captall of Beufz, and I herde his wordes gladly, and dyd put them in memory; and all the way bytwene Leades and Eltham I rode most parte in his company, and with syr Wylliam Lysle. Thus the kynge came to Eltham on a Tuesday, and on the Wednysday the lordes of all costes began to assemble. Thyder came the duke of Gloucestre, and the erles of Derby, Arundell, Northumberlande, Kent, Rutlande, and the erle Marshall, and the archebysshoppes of Caunterbury and Yorke, and the bysshoppes of London and Wynchester. And on the Thursday, aboute the houre of thre, they assembled togyther in the kynges chambre in the kynges presence: than the knyghtes of Gascoyne were sent for, and the counsaylours of the good townes, and also the duke of Lancastres counsayle was sent for. I was nat present, nor might nat be suffred; there were none but the lordes of the counsayle, who debated the mater more than four houres. And after dyner I fell in acquayntaunce with an auncyent knyght, whome I knewe in kynge Edwardes dayes, and he was as than of kynge Rychardes privy counsayle; he was called syr Rycharde Sury;[1] he knewe me anone, and yet in xxiiii. yeres he had nat sene me before, whiche was at Colbridge[2] and at Bruselles, in the house of duke Wyncelante of Brabant, and of the duchesse Jahan of Brabant. This knyght syr Rycharde Sury made me good chere, and demaunded of me many thynges; and I aunswered hym as I knewe. And as I walked up and downe with hym in a galery before the kynges chambre, I demaunded hym questyons of that counsayle, and desyred hym to tell me, if he

[1] *Stury.*
[2] *Codenberg.*

myght, what conclusion was taken. He herde me well, and paused a lytell, and afterwarde sayd: Syr Johan, I shall shewe you, for it is no mater to be hydden and kept secrete, for shortly ye shall here theym publysshed all openly. Ye knowe well, quod he, and I ame sure ye have herde rehersed howe the duke of Lancastre is gone into Acquytayne, to rejoyce the gyfte that the kynge my soveraygne lorde hath gyven hym, for the love that he hathe to hym, for he hath doone the kynge ryght good servyce, and the crowne of Englande; therfore in rewarde the kynge hathe clerely gyven to hym and to his heyres for ever the hole duchy of Acquitayne, so as it extendeth in metes and lymytacyons, seneschalles, baylyages, sygnories, and wasselages, and clene quyteth all them that holde of hym by faythe or othe; and in all homage the resorte reserved: more the kynge hath [not] reserved to the crowne of Englande in tyme to come. And this gyfte is so sufficyently confermed, that all the kynges other uncles and all the counsayle of Englande hath acorded therto, and the kynge hathe gyven specyall commaundement to all his subgiettes in the sayd lymytacyons of Acquytayne, to obey in all poyntes, without any other meane, his dere and well beloved uncle, duke Johan of Lancastre; and after the syght of his letters to holde and to take hym to their soverayne lorde, and to swere to hym faythe and homage, and to holde of hym truely, as they have auncyently done and helde at the date of those letters, gyven by the kyng of Englande or his deputies or commyssioners. And whosoever that rebelleth or speketh agaynst this the kynges graunt, of what condycion soever he be, to aunswere therto within thre dayes. The kynge gave to his uncle of Lancastre and to his commyssioners full power and puyssaunce to correcte them, and to put them out of all hope to have any other retourne or resorte. Yet natwithstandynge all these letters and strayte commaundement of the kynge, the good townes and cyties of Gascoyne, under the kynge of Englandes obeysaunce, and all other lordes, knyghtes, and gentlemen of the countrey are conjoyned togyther to kepe their townes close agaynste the duke, and wyll nat, nor are nat in mynde to obey the duke in this case; for they say, and have sayd, and yet susteyne at this

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

houre, that the gyfte that the kynge hath gyven to his uncle of Lancastre is nat suffycient nor profitable, and out of the ordre of reason. And the duke, who wolde nat wynne theym but by gentylnesse, herde pacyently their defences. And that no further inconvenyentes shulde ensue, therfore his counsayle and their counsayles are come hyther to debate and to declare the cause why they do nat obey the kynges commaundement. And surely, as this day they have right wysely shewed their answere, and layde forth certayne artycles of reason, and they have ben well herde: and they have layde suche reasons, that in a maner the kynge and his counsayle thynke they have cause to abyde by their quarell; I shall shewe you howe, but I wolde ye kepe it secrete tyll it be knowen further abrode. And I aunswered, I wolde so do. Well, quod the knyght, one, as me thought was offyciall of Burdeaux, spake for all his partie, and first shewed forthe his procuracyon and auctorite, to the entent he myght the better be beleved: and than beganne and sayde, that the cytie of Burdeaux, and the cyties of Bayon and Dax, and all the sygnories and lordshyppes[1] that be appendaunt to the lymyttes of the sayd countreys and cyties, are of so noble condycyon, that no kyng of Englande by no maner of accyon or dede may put awaye or dyscever them fro the demayns of the crowne of Englande, nor to gyve or alyenate them to chylde, uncle, nor brother, by reasone of maryage or otherwise; and to veryfie this, we say that the above named townes, cyties, and sygnories are suffyciently priveleged by kynges of Englande, who have sworne faythfully to holde and to kepe us so, without revocasyon. For as soone as any kynge of Englande entreth into the possessyon of the herytage of the crowne of Englande, he swereth sufficiently on the evangelystes to holde this ferme and stable without breakynge. And ye ryght dere syr, as kyng of Englande, have made lyke othe: and, syr, to veryfie this to be of trouth, beholde here these writynges. And therwith he shewed forth letters and charters under the sygnes of notaryes imperyalles, and sealed with the great seale of Englande, gyven by the same kynge Rycharde there beynge present; and there openly he redde it frome clause to clause. The charter was well herde

[1] *lordshyppes* P.

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

and understande, for it was bothe in Laten and in Frenche, and it named in the ende many wytnesses of prelates and great lordes of Englande, who were for the more suretie testes of that dede, at the leste to the nombre of xi. Whanne the kynges counsayle herde this, they behelde eche other, and loked on the kynge. There was no man spake a worde nor made no replycacion. Whan he had redde it over, he folded it and put it up, and spake further, addressynge his wordes to the kynge, and sayde: Ryght dere syr and redouted soveraygne lorde, and you my ryght dere lordes and other: at my departynge out of the countrey I was charged to shewe you by the counsaylours of the good cyties and townes of Gascoyne, beynge under the obeysaunce of the crowne of Englande, who hath well oversene the fourme and maner of your commaundement, sent unto them under your seale, whiche they knewe right well, yet they thinke and say that this commaundement may nat be obeyed. For if so were that the cyties and good townes of Guyen wolde enclyne to receyve the duke of Lancastre to their lorde, and acquyte for ever the homage and obeysaunce that they owe to you, it shulde be greatly to the prejudyce of the crowne of Englande: for thoughe it were so that at this tyme presente the duke of Lancastre is the kynges uncle and subgiet, and well beloved, and wolde holde and kepe all poyntes and artycles belongyng to the crowne of Englande, yet it maye so hap that suche love and tenure may lyghtly be lost, by chaunge of heyres, by reason of maryages that are made bytwene lordes and ladyes, in chaungynge fro one to another, though they be nere of lygnage, by dyspensacyon of the Pope. For sometyme it is of necessyte that maryages be made of hyghe princes or of their chyldren one with another, to holde their landes and sygnories in love and amyte. And so it myght fall that suche heyres as myght dyscende of the duke of Lancastre shulde conjoyne theym by maryage to the chyldren of some kynge in Fraunce, or of dukes of Berrey, Bretayne, or erles of Foize, or Armynake, or kynges of Navarre, or dukes of Anjou or of Mayne; and than they beynge beyonde the see, peradventure in the parties of Fraunce, shulde clayme their enherytaunce, and therby put

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

the countrey of Guyen in dyscorde, and to bring it to be against the crowne of Englande: wherby the kynge of Englande than reygnynge, and the realme also, shulde have peradventure over moche payne to recover it agayne: and so the ryght to be put farre of fro thence wherunto it shulde retourne and be, as of the demayne of the crowne of Englande. Wherfore, ryght dere syr and redouted lordes and noble counsayllours, please it you to consydre all these poyntes and artycles which I have purposed in your presence, and determyne it as ye shall seme best; for syr, the full opynion of all the countrey is, they saye they wyll abyde styll in the obeysaunce of you, ryght redouted lorde and kynge, and in the demayne of the noble crowne of Englande. Therwith this offyciall helde his peace, and the prelates and lordes eche of them regarded other. Than they drewe togyther and aproched to the kynge, fyrste his two uncles, and the erles of Derby and Arundell. Than they of Acquytayne were commaunded to departe tyll they were called agayne: they departed, and also the two knightes that were come thyder fro the duke of Lancastre. Than the kyng demaunded counsayle what shulde be done, and what aunswere shulde be made. The prelates tourned the aunswere to the kynges uncles, bycause the mater touched them rather than any other. At the fyrst they excused them, sayeng they myght nat well aunswere, for the mater was commune, and ought to be debated by commune counsayle, and nat by lygnage nor favour. Thus they bode a good space, but fynally the aunswere was layde on the duke of Gloucestre, and he was prayed and requyred to saye his advyse. Than he aunswered and sayde, howe it was a herde thynge to take away or to dysanull the gyfte of a kynge, confermed and sealed by the acorde of all his subgiettes, and by delyberacyon of his specyall counsayle; wherfore he sayde his subgiettes shulde be rebell that wolde nat obey; for in that they wolde make that the kynge shulde nat be lorde of his owne enheritaunce, if that he myght nat do with his owne what it pleased hym. Some glosed those wordes, and some thought in their corage that the aunswere was nat reasonable, but they durst nat saye agaynst it, the duke of Gloucestre was so sore dred. And the erle of Derby, sonne to the duke of Lancastre, was

there presente, who furthered those wordes, and sayde: Fayre uncle, ye have well sayd; I am of your opinyon. Therwith the counsayle began to breke, and some murmured one with another, and they of Guyen nor yet the duke of Lancasters knightes were nat called agayne at that tyme. Whan the kynge sawe all the mater, he dyssimuled a lytell, and it was his entensyon that they shulde assemble togyther agayne in counsayle after dyner, to se if any other propre way myght be taken for the honoure of the crowne of Englande. Than the kynge caused the bysshop of Caunterbury to speke of that he had gyven hym in charge in the mornynge to speke of: that was upon the state of his maryage, and to sende into Fraunce. The lordes were of accorde, and named them that shulde go, whiche were the archebysshoppe of Duvelyn, the erle of Rutlande, the erle Marshall, the lorde Beaumonde, the lorde Hughe Spenser, the lorde Loys Clyfforde, and twenty knyghtes and xl. squyers. These were sent into Fraunce to treat for the maryage of the Frenche kynges doughter Isabell, of eyght yere of age, and yet she was allredy promysed to the duke of Bretayns sonne, by a treatie that was made in Towrs in Thourayne. Nowe beholde howe this myght be broken, for the Frenche kynge and his uncles hadde sealed with the duke of Bretayne: yet for all that thenglysshe ambassadours had their charge gyven unto them; and so they departed out of Englande and aryved at Calays, and there taryed a fyve dayes, and than departed in great araye, and tooke the waye to Amyence. And they sente before Marche the haraulde, who had brought to them saveconducte goynge and comynge, and besyde that the lorde Moncheverell[1] was sette to be their guyde, and to se them served of all thynges necessary.

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

[1] *Montcavrel.*

Nowe we shall leave to speke of them, and retourne to our fyrste purpose.

Nowe as I have shewed you before, the counsaylours of the cyties and good townes of Acquytayne prayed the kynge and his counsayle, to whome they were bounde, to mayntayn their lyberties and fraunches, as in the demayne of the crowne of Englande, as he was sworne to do: affermynge that surely they wolde kepe their auncyente lyberties, and wyll nat breke it for no maner of cause or condycion; and

CAP. CXCVII

Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

in holdynge thus their opynyon, foure partes of the counsayle and the commune voyce of the countrey reputed theym for valyaunt and worthy men. But the duke of Gloucestre was of another opinyon, for he wolde that his brother the duke of Lancastre shulde have bydden styll in Acquytayne, for he thought he was over great in Englande, and to nere the kynge: as for his brother the duke of Yorke he cared nat, for the duke of Yorke was a prince that loved his ease and lytell busynesse; also he had a fayre lady to his wyfe, doughter to the erle of Kent, on whome was all his pleasure. But the duke of Gloucestre was subtyle, and ever demaunded somwhat of his nephue kynge Rycharde: yet he was but poore, for all that he was a great lorde and constable of Englande, and erle of Hertforde[1] and of Perces,[2] and of Bokyngham; and also he had yerely out of the kynges cofers foure thousande nobles, and never rode on the kinges busynesse nor for the realme one daye, without he knewe why and wherfore. For these causes he was nat indyfferent for the maters of Acquytayne, for he wolde have had his brother of Lancastre to have bydden still in Acquitayn for ever, for than he thought he wolde have shyfted well ynoughe in Englande. As soone as he had sayd his sentence, as ye have herde before, and that he sawe some murmured in the kynges chambre, and that the prelates and lordes talked togyther two and two, he issued out of the chambre, and the erle of Derby with hym, and came into the hall at Eltham, and made a clothe to be layde on a table, and so sate downe to dynner, and lefte all other styll talkynge togyther. Whan the duke of Yorke knewe that he was at dyner, he went to kepe hym company. And after dyner, whiche he made shorte, the duke of Gloucestre dyssymuled the mater, and tooke his leave of the kynge syttynge at the table, and so departed, and toke his horse and rode to London; and the erle of Derby abode styll with the lordes that daye and the nexte daye. Thus they of Acquytayne coulde have none expedicyon nor delyveraunce.

[1] *Hereford.*
[2] *Essex.*

I have delyght to write this mater at length, bycause to enfourme you of the trouthe: for I that am auctour of this hystory was presente in all these maters, and this valyaunt knyght syr Rycharde Surye shewed me every thynge. And

so it was, that on the Sonday folowynge all suche as had ben there were departed, and all their counsaylours, except the duke of Yorke, who abode styll about the kynge; and the lorde Thomas Percy and syr Rycharde Sury shewed my busynesse to the kynge. Than the kynge desyred to se my booke that I had brought for hym: so he sawe it in his chambre, for I had layde it there redy on his bedde. Whanne the kynge opened it, it pleased hym well, for it was fayre enlumyned and written, and covered with crymson velvet, with ten botons of sylver and gylte, and roses of golde in the myddes, with two great clapses gylte, rychely wrought. Than the kyng demaunded me wherof it treated, and I shewed hym howe it treated of maters of love; wherof the kynge was gladde and loked in it, and reed it in many places, for he coulde speke and rede Frenche very well; and he tooke it to a knyght of hys chambre, named syr Rycharde Creadon, to beare it into his secrete chambre. And the same Sonday I fell in acquayntaunce with a squyer of Englande, called Henry Castyde, an honest man and a wyse, and coude well speke Frenche. He companyed wyth me, bicause he sawe the kyng and other lordes made me good chere, and also he had sene the boke that I gave to the kynge; also syr Richarde Sury had shewed hym howe I was a maker of hystories. Than he sayd to me as hereafter foloweth.

CAP. CXCVII
Of the refuce of them of Acquytayne made to the duke of Lancastre.

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande, and howe he brought into his obeysaunce four kynges of that countrey.

SYR JOHAN, quod he, have ye nat founde in the kynges courte sythe ye came hyder no man that hath tolde you of the voyage that the kyng made but late into Irlande, and in what maner the foure kynges of Irelande are come into the obeysaunce of the kynge of Englande? And I aunswered, No. Than shall I shewe you, quod the squyer, to the entent that ye maye putte it in perpetuall memorie, whan ye retourne into your owne countrey, and have leysar

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

therto. I was rejoysed of his wordes, and thanked hym. Than he began thus, and sayd: Sir Johan, it is not in memorie that ever any kyng of England made such appareyle and provision for any journey to make warre agaynst the Yrisshmen, nor suche a nombre of men of armes nor archers. The kyng was a nyne monethes in the marchesse of Irelande to his great cost and charge to the realme, for they bare al his expenses. And the marchauntes, cyties, and good townes of the realme thought it well bestowed, whan they sawe the kynge retourne home agayne with honour. The nombre that he had thyder, gentylmen and archers, were foure thousande knyghtes and xxx. thousande archers, well payde wekely, that every manne was well pleased. But I shewe you, bycause ye shulde knowe the trouthe. Irelande is one of the yvell countreis of the worlde to make warre upon, or to bring under subjection. For it is closed strongely and wydely with highe forestes, and great waters and maresshes, and places inhabytable. It is harde to entre to do them of the countrey any dommage, nor ye shall fynde no towne nor persone to speke withall. For the men drawe to the woodes, and dwell in caves and small cotages, under trees and among busshes and hedges, lyke wylde savage beestes. And whan they knowe that any man maketh warre agaynst them, and is entred into their countreis, than they drawe toguyder to the straytes and passages, and defende it, so that no man can entre into them. And whan they se their tyme, they wyll sone take their advauntage on their enemyes, for they know the countrey and ar lyght people. For a man of armes beyng never so well horsed, and ron as fast as he can, the Yrisshemen wyll ryn afote as faste as he and overtake hym, yea, and leape up upon his horse behynde hym, and drawe hym fro his horse: for they are stronge men in the armes, and have sharpe weapons wyth large blades with two edges, after the maner of darte heedes, wherwith they wyll slee theyr enemy; and they repute not a man ded tyll they have cutte his throte and opyn his bely and taken out his herte, and cary it awaye wyth them. Some saye, suche as knowe their nature, that they do eate it, and have great delyte therin: they take no man to raunsome. And whanne they

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

se at any encountre that they be overmatched, than they wyll departe asonder, and go and hyde themselfe in busshes, wodes, hedges, and caves, so that no man shall finde theym. Also syr Wylliam of Wyndsore, who hath moste used the warres in those parties of any other Englyssheman, yet he coulde never learne the maner of the countrey, nor knowe their condycions. They be herde people, and of rude engen and wytte, and of dyvers frequentacyons and usage; they sette nothyng by jolyte nor fresshe apparell, nor by noblenesse: for though their realme be soveraynly governed by kynges, wherof they have plentie, yet they wyll take no knowledge of gentylnesse, but wyll contynewe in their rudenesse, acordynge as they are brought up. Trouthe it is, that foure of the princypall kynges and moste puyssaunt, after the maner of the countrey, are come to the obeysaunce of the kynge of Englande by love and fayrenesse and not by batayle nor constraynte. The erle of Ormonde, who marcheth upon them, hath taken great payne, and hath so treated with them, that they came to Duvelyn to the kynge, and submytted them to hym, to be under the obeysaunce of the crowne of Englande; wherfore the kyng and all the realme reputeth this for a great and honorable dede, and thynketh this voyage well bestowed, for kynge Edwarde of good memory dyd never so moche upon them as kynge Rycharde dyde in this voyage. The honoure is great, but the profite is but lytell, for though they be kynges, yet no man can devyse nor speke of ruder personages.

I shall shewe you somwhat of their rudenesse, to the entent that maye be ensample agayne people of other nacyons; I knowe it well, for I have proved it by themselves. For whan they were at Duvelyn I hadde the governaunce of them about a moneth, by the kynges commaundement and his counsayle, to thentent that I should lerne them to use themselfe accordyng to the usage of Englande, and bycause I coulde speke their language as well as Frenche or Englysshe, for in my youthe I was brought up amonge theym. I was with the erle of Ormonde, father to the erle that nowe is, who loved me right well, bycause I coude as than ryde and handell an

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

horse metely well. And it fortuned one tyme that the sayde erle, who as than was my maister, was sent with thre hundred speares and a thousande archers into the marchesse of Irelande to make warre with the Yrisshemen, for alwayes the Englysshmen have had warre with them, to subdue and putte them under. And on a daye as the sayd erle went agaynst them, I rode on a goodly horse of his, lyght and swyfte. Thus I rode and folowed my mayster; and the same day the Yrisshemen were layde in a busshement, and whanne we came nere theym they opyned their busshement. Thanne the Englisshe archers began to shote so egrely, that the Yrisshemen coulde nat suffre it, for they are but simply armed, therfore they reculed and wente backe. Thanne the erle my mayster folowed in the chase, and I that was well horsed folowed hym as nere as I coude. And it fortuned so that my horse was afrayd, and toke his bridell in his tethe and ranne away with me, and whether I wolde or nat, he bare me so far forthe amonge the Yrisshemen, that one of them, by lyghtnesse of ronnynge, lepte up behynde me, and enbrased me in his armes, and dyde me none other hurt, but so ledde me out of the way, and so rode styll behynde me the space of two houres, and at the laste brought me into a secrete place, thycke of busshes, and there he founde his company, who were come thyder and scaped all daungers, for the Englysshemen pursued nat so farre. Than as he shewed he had great joye of me, and ledde me into a towne and a stronge house amonge the woodes, waters, and myres. The towne was called Harpely, and the gentylman that toke me was called Brine Costeret. He was a goodly man, and as it hath ben shewed me, he is as yet alyve; howbeit, he is very aged. Thys Brine Costeret kepte me sevyn yere with hym, and gave me his doughter in maryage, of whom I hadde two doughters. I shall shewe you howe I was delyvered.

It happened at the sevin yeres ende one of their kynges, named Arthur Mackemur,[1] kyng of Lynster, made an armye agaynst duke Lyon of Clarence, sonne to kyng Edwarde of Englande, and agaynst sir Wyllyam of Wynsore. And not farre fro the cytie of Lynster, the Englysshemen and Yrisshemen mette toguyder, and many were slayne and

[1] *Art Mac-Murrough.*

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

taken on both parties, but the Englysshemen opteygned the vyctorie, and the Yrisshemen fledde. And the kyng Arthur saved hymselfe, but Brine Costeret, my wyves father, was taken prisoner under the duke of Clarence baner. He was taken on the same courser that he toke me on. The horse was well knowen among the erle of Ormondes folkes; and than he shewed howe I was alyve and was at his maner of Harpelyn, and howe I had wedded his doughter, wherof the duke of Clarence, sir Wylliam Wynsore, and the Englysshemen, were ryght gladde. Thane it was shewed hym that if he wolde be delyvered out of prison, that he shulde delyver me into the Englysshemennes handes, and my wyfe and chyldren. With gret payne he made that bargayne, for he loved me well, and my wyfe his doughter, and our chyldren. Whan he sawe he coulde make his fynaunce none otherwyse, he accorded therto, but he reteigned myne eldest doughter styll with him. So I and my wyfe and our seconde doughter retourned into Englande, and so I went and dwelte besyde Bristowe, on the ryver of Syverne. My two doughters are maryed, and she in Irelande hath thre sonnes and two doughters, and she that I brought with me hath foure sonnes and two doughters. And bycause the langage of Yrisshe is as redy to me as the Englysshe tong, for I have alwayes contynued with my wyfe, and taught my children the same speche, therfore the kyng my soverayne lorde and his counsayle commaunded me to gyve attendaunce on these four kynges, and to governe and bringe them to reason, and to the usage and customes of Englande, seyng they hadde yelded them to be under his obeysaunce, and of the crowne of Englande, and they were sworne to holde it for ever. And yet I ensure you for all that, I dyde my power to ensygne and to lerne them good maner, yet for all that, they be ryght rude and of grose engyn: moche payne I hadde to make them to speke any thyng in fayre maner: somwhat I altred them, but nat moche, for in many cases they drewe to their naturall rudenesse. The kyng my soveraygne lordes entent was, that in maner, countenaunce, and apparell of clothyng, they shulde use accordyng to the maner of Englande, for the kyng thought to make them all four knyghtes: they had a fayre house to lodge in in

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

Duvelyn, and I was charged to abyde styll with them and nat to departe. And so two or thre dayes I suffred them to do as they lyst, and sayde nothynge to them, but folowed their owne appetytes. They wolde sytte at the table and make countenaunce nother good nor fayre. Than I thought I shulde cause them to chaunge that maner. They wolde cause their mynstrelles, their servauntes and varlettes, to sytte with them and to eate in their owne dysshe, and to drinke of their cuppes; and they shewed me that the usage of their countre was good, for they sayd, in all thynges, except their beddes, they were and lyved as commen. So the fourthe day I ordayned other tables to be covered in the hall, after the usage of Englande, and I made these four kynges to sytte at the hyghe table, and there mynstrels at another borde, and their servauntes and varlettes at another byneth them, wherof by semynge they were displeased, and behelde eche other and wolde nat eate, and sayd howe I wolde take fro them their good usage, wherin they hadde been norisshed. Than I answered them smylyng to apeace theym, that it was nat honourable for their estates to do as they dyde before, and that they must leave it, and use the custom of Englande, and that it was the kynges pleasure they shulde so do, and how he was charged so to order them. Whan they harde that they suffred it, bycause they had putte themselfe under the obeysaunce of the kyng of Englande, and parcevered in the same as long as I was with them. Yet they hadde one use whiche I knewe well was used in their countre, and that was they dyde were no breches; I caused breches of lynen clothe to be made for them. Whyle I was with them I caused them to leave many rude thynges, as well in clothyng as in other causes. Moche ado I had at the fyrst to cause them to weare gownes of sylke furred with mynevere and gray, for before these kynges thought themselfe well apparelled whan they hadde on a mantell. They rode alwayes without sadelles and styropes, and with great payne I made them to ryde after our usage. And on a tyme I demaunded them of their beleve, wherwith they were nat content, and sayd howe they beleved on God and on the Trynite, as well as we. Than I demaunded on what Pope was their affection. They aunswered me On hym of Rome.

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

Thane I demaunded if they wolde nat gladly receyve the order of knyghthode, and that the kyng of Englande shulde make them knyghtes, accordynge to the usage of Fraunce and Englande, and other countreis. They aunswered howe they were knyghtes allredye, and that suffyced for theym. I asked where they were made knyghtes, and howe and whan. They answered, that in the age of sevyn yere they were made knyghtes in Irelande, and that a kynge maketh his sonne a knyght. And if the sonne have no father alyve, than the nexte of his blode maye make hym knyght. And thane this yonge knyght shall begyn to juste with small speares, suche as they maye beare with their ease, and rynne agaynst a shelde sette on a stake in the felde; and the more speares that he breaketh the more he shal be honoured. I knewe their maner well ynough, though I dyde demaunde it. But than I sayd, that the knighthode that they had taken in their youthe suffyced nat to the kynge of Englande. But I sayde he shulde gyve theym after another maner. They demaunded howe. I aunswered, that it shulde be in the holy churche, whiche was the moost worthyest place. Than they enclyned somewhat to my wordes. Within two dayes after the erle of Ormonde came to them, who coude right well speke the langage, for some of his landes laye in those parties: he was sente to them by the kynge and his counsayle; they all honoured hym and he them. Than he fell in swete communycacion with them, and he demaunded of them howe they lyked me. They aunswered and sayde, Well, for he hath well shewed us the usage of this countrey, wherfore we ought to thanke him, and so we do. This aunswere pleased well the erle of Ormonde. Than he entred lytell and lytell to speke of the order of chivalry, whiche the kyng wolde they shulde receyve. He shewed it them fro poynt to poynt, howe they shulde behave themselfe, and what parteygned to knyghthode. The erles wordes pleased moche these four kynges, whose names were these; Fyrst, the great Anele,[1] kyng of Mecte;[2] the seconde, Brine[3] of Thomonde, kynge of Thomonde; the thyrde, Arthure of Mackequemur, kyng of Lynster; the fourthe, Conhue,[4] kyng of Cheveno[5] and Darpe. They were made knightes by kyng Richarde of Englande, in the cathe-

[1] *O'Neill.*
[2] *Meath.*
[3] *O'Brien.*
[4] *O'Conor.*
[5] *Connaught.*

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

drall churche of Duvelyn, dedycate of saynt Johan Baptyst: it was done on Our Lady Day in Marche, as than it fell on a Thursday. These four kynges watched all the night before in the churche, and the nexte daye at highe masse tyme, with great solempnyte they were made knightes; and with them sir Thomas Orphen, sir Jonatas[1] Pado, and sir Johan Pado his cosyn. These kynges sate that day at the table with kyng Rycharde: they were regarded of many folkes, bicause there behavyng was straunge to the maner of Englande, and other countreis, and ever naturally men desyre to se newelties. Than I sir John Froissart sayde: Henry, I beleve you well, and I wolde it had cost me largely that I had been there: and surely this yere past I hadde come hyder and it hadde nat been for that I herde of the dethe of quene Anne of Englande, whiche dyde lette me. But one thynge I wolde desyre of you to knowe, howe these four kynges of Irelande came so soone to the kynge of Englandes obeysaunce, whan kynge Edwarde the kynges graunfather, who was so valyaunt a prince and so redouted over all, coude never subdue them nor putte them under, and yet he had alwayes warre with them; and in that they are subdued nowe, ye sayd it was by treatie, and by the grace of God. Indede the grace of God is good, who so can have it, it is moche worthe; but it is sene nowe a dayes, that erthely princes getteth lytell without it be by puissaunce. I desyre to know this, for whan I shall come into Heynalt, of which countrey I am of, I shal be examyned of this and many other thynges, bothe by duke Aubert of Bavier, erle of Heynalte, of Holande, and of Zelande, and also by his sonne Wyllyam of Bavyere, who writeth hymselfe lorde of Frese, whiche is a great countrey and a puissaunt, whiche countrey the sayd duke and his sonne claymeth to have by ryght successyon, and so dyde their predecessours before them: but the Fresons wolde never fall to any reason, nor come under obeysaunce, nor as yet do nat unto this day. Than answered sir Henry Christall and sayd: Sir Johan, to shewe you the very trouth I can nat, but as many a one saythe, and it is to suppose, that the great puissaunce that the kyng had over with him, and taryed there in their countrey nyne monethes, and every man well payed, abasshed the Yrisshe-

[1] *Joatas* P.

men: also the see was closed fro them on all partes, wherby their lyvenges and marchaundises myght nat entre into their countreys, thoughe they that dwell farre within the realme cared lytell for it, for they knowe natte what marchaundyse meaneth, nor they lyve but grosely and rudely like unto beestes; yet suche as lyveth on the marchesse of England, and by the see coost, use feate of marchaundyse with us, and into other places. Kynge Edwarde of noble memorie, in his tyme had to answere so many warres, what in Fraunce, Bretayne, Gascone, and Scotlande, so that his people were devyded in dyvers places, and sore occupyed, wherfore he coude nat sende no great nombre into Irelande. But whan the Irysshemen sawe the great nombre of men of warre that kyng Rycharde hadde in Irelande this laste journey, the Yrisshmen advysed themselfe and came to obeysaunce. And indede of olde tyme there was a kyng in Englande named Edwarde, who is a saynt and canonysed, and honoured through all this realme. In his tyme he subdued the Danes, and disconfyted them by batayle on the see thre tymes. And this saint Edwarde kyng of Englande, lorde of Irelande, and of Acquitayn, the Yrisshmen loved and dredde hym moche more than any other kyng of Englande that had been before. And therfore our soverayne lorde kyng Richarde this yere past, whan he was in Irelande, in all his armories and devyses, he lefte the beryng of the armes of Englande, as the lybardes and flour delyces quarterly, and bare the armes of this saynt Edwarde, that is a crosse patent, golde, and goules, with four white martenettes in the felde: wherof it was said the Yrisshmen were well pleased, and the soner they enclyned to hym. For of trouthe the predecessours of these four kynges obeyed with faithe and homage to the sayd kyng Edwarde, and they repute kynge Richarde a good man and of good conscience, and so they have done to hym faithe and homage, as they ought to do, and in like maner as their predecessours somtyme dyde to saynt Edwarde. Thus I have shewed you the maner how the kyng our soverayne lorde hath this yere accomplysshed and furnysshed his voyage in Irelande; put it in your memoriall, to the entent that whan ye shall retourne into your owne countrey, ye

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

CAP. CXCVIII

The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

may write it in your cronicle, with many other hystories that depende to the same matter. Than I thanked hym, and sayd it shulde be done. So I toke leave of hym. Than I mette with Marche the heraulde, and I demaunded of hym what armes this Henry Christell bare; and I shewed the heraulde howe this sir Henry had shewed me the maner of the kynges jorney in Irelande, and the state of the foure kynges, who had ben, as he sayd, in his governyng, more than fyftene dayes at Duvelyn. The heraulde answered me and sayd: Sir, he beareth in his armes sylver, a cheverne goules, thre besans goules. All these thynges I dyde putte in writynge, bycause I wolde nat forgette them.

Thus I taryed in the kynge of Englandes courte, as longe as it pleased me, nat always in one place, for the kynge oftentymes removed, to Eltham, to Ledes, to Kyngstone, to Shene, to Charsey or to Wyndsore, aboute the marchesse of London. And I was enfourmed of a trouthe that the kyng wrote to his uncle the duke of Lancastre, for they of Acquitayne spedde so in their busynesse, that their countrey abode styll to the crowne of Englande. Thane it was concluded by generall counsayle of Englande, that the gyfte that the kynge hadde gyven to the duke of Lancastre, must nedes abyde styll as his owne; howebeit, the duke of Gloucestre wolde that his brother myght have enjoyed the kynges gyfte, but his saying coulde nat be herde in that case. For they of the realme of Englande, bycause of doutes and casualtyes in tyme to come, herde well the wordes of theym of Burdeaux and of Bayone, and consydred well that yf the herytage of Acquitaygne were putte fro the crowne of Englande, it shulde be in tyme to come a great prejudice to the realme, whiche they wolde in no wyse shulde fortune: for alwayes Burdeux and Bayon, and the fronters and marches of Gascon, had kept and augmented greatly the honour of the realme of Englande. These thynges were well consydred of the wyse men of the kynges counsayle, the duke of Gloucestre absent, for before hym no man durst speke. So the mater abode in this case.

We shall leave of this mater, and speke of the kynge

of Englandes ambassadours, as the erle of Rutlande, and therle Marshall, and other, that were sente into Fraunce to treate of the maryage bytwene kynge Rycharde their lorde, and the doughter of Charles, Frenche kyng, who was but eyght yeres of age: and I shall shewe you howe they spedde.

CAP. CXCVIII
The devyse, and of the conquest that kyng Richarde had made in Irlande.

CAP. CXCIX

Of the ambassade that the kynge of Englande sente into Fraunce to treate of the maryage bytwene the lady Isable, the Frenche kynges eldest doughter, and hymselfe; and of the lovyng answere they had.

THESE Englysshe lordes rode fro Calais to Amyence, and to Clermount, in Beauvosyn, and so to Parys, and in every place they were well receyved by the commaundement of the Frenche kyng. They were lodged about the crosse of Tyrouer;[1] they were a fyve hundred horses. The Frenche kynge was lodged at the castell of Lour, and the quene and her chyldren at the house of saynt Poule, upon the ryver of Seyne; the duke of Berrey at the house of Nesle; the duke of Burgoyne at the house of Arthoyse; and the duke of Burbone in his owne house; the duke of Orlyaunce, the erle of saynt Poule, and the lorde of Coucy, at their owne houses. The kynge had assembled there all his counsayle, to the entent to make the better answere to thembassadours of Englande. The kyng had commaunded that every day there shulde be delyvered to these ambassadours two hundred crownes of France, for their small expences, and for their horses. And the chiefe of these Englysshe lordes, as the erle Marshall, and therle of Rutlande, were oftentymes with the kynge, and dyned with hym; they had as good chere as coulde be devysed, for the love of the kynge of Englande. These lordes desyred ever to have an answere, and they were ever fedde forthe with fayre wordes, for the noblemen of Fraunce had great marveyle of the requestes of the Englysshemen,

[1] *à Paris à la croix ou Tiroy.*

CAP. CXCIX

Of the ambassade that the kynge of Englande sente into Fraunce.

and that the kynge of Englande wolde marry with Fraunce, seynge that the warre had ben so cruell, and so long endured. And some of the Frenche kynges counsayle sayd, Howe maye our kyng agree to gyve his doughter in maryage to his adversary, or this treatie shulde be made; we thynke we shall have peace with Englande by some other wayes, though it be nat by the meanes of maryage. And as at that tyme there was a valyaunt knyght of the Frenche kynges counsayle, called sir Raynalt of Corby; he was a farre castyng man, and consydred what myght fall in tyme to come. Thane he sayd to the kyng and to his uncles: My lordes and maysters, a man shulde entre in at the ryght dore into a house. It semeth that kyng Richarde of Englande wolde nothyng to you nor to the realme, but love and all favour, seynge that by reason of maryage he wolde alye hym to you. Two tymes your counsaylours and his have mette toguyder at Amyence and at Balyngham, to treate for a peace, and yet they coulde never take no good conclusyon, but on the state of a truce. And sir, it is well knowen that Thomas duke of Gloucestre, kyng Richardes uncle, is of a contrary opinyon, against the king and his other two uncles, the dukes of Lancastre and of Yorke. The kyng nor other can nat make hym agre wyllingly to have peace; howebeit, his puissaunce canne natte resyst the kynges power. Therfore sir, after myne opynyon, receyve this offre and refuce nat this treatie, and let these lordes have suche aunswere as maye content them. Than the kyng and his uncles agreed therto, and specially the duke of Burgoyne, for he was so sore charged by reason of the warres, that gladly he wolde have peace; and the princypall cause was, bycause of Flaunders, wherof he claymed to be lorde by reason of his wyfe, bycause that countrey marched upon Englande; and also the hertes of the Flemynges were rather Englysshe than Frenche, bycause of the entrecourse of marchaundyse bytwene Englande and Flaunders, by see and by lande.

Than it was concluded by the Frenche kynges counsayle, that there shulde be as good chere made to the Englysshmen as was before. And whether it was by dissymulacyon or otherwyse, the Frenchemen were determyned to make a

CAP. CXCIX
Of the ambassade that the kynge of Englande sente into Fraunce.

good and a swete aunswere to the Englisshemen, and to put them in hope that the kynge of Englande shulde have his desyre. The quene and her chyldren laye at the house of saynt Powle, and where as the Englysshe lordes desyred to se theym, it was graunted to them, and specyally to se her for whome their treatie was. Than it was shewed them that they muste be content howe so ever they founde her, for they sayde she was but a yonge chylde of eyght yere of age, wherfore they sayd, there coulde nat be in her no great wysdome nor prudence; howebeit, she was indoctryned well ynough, and that the lordes founde well whan they sawe her. The erle Marshall, beynge on his knees, sayde to her: Fayre lady, by the grace of God ye shall be our lady and quene of Englande. Than aunswered the yonge lady well advysedly, without counsayle of any other persone: Syr, quod she, and it please God and my lorde my father that I shall be quene of Englande, I shall be glad therof, for it is shewed me that I shall be than a great lady. Than she toke up the erle Marshall by the hande, and ledde him to the quene her mother, who had great joy of the answere that she had made, and so were all other that herde it. The maner, countenaunce, and behavoure of this yonge lady, pleased greatly the ambassadours, and they sayd amonge themselfe, that she was lykely to be a lady of hygh honoure and great goodnesse. Thus whan these lordes of Englande had ben at Parys a twenty dayes, and their costes and charges payed for by the Frenche kynge, a reasonable aunswere was gyven them, so that they were put in great hope to bringe aboute that they came for; howebeit, the Frenchemen sayd, it coulde nat be doone shortly, bycause the lady was so yonge, and also she was fyansed to the duke of Bretayns eldest sonne. Wherfore they sayd they must treate to breke that promesse, or they coude procede any further in that mater, and therupon the Frenche kynge and his counsayle shulde sende into Englande the next Lent after, to shewe howe the matter wente; and whan the dayes begyn to encreace and waxe fayre, than the kynge of Englande to sende agayne into Fraunce whome it shulde please hym, and they shulde be welcome. With this aunswere the Englysshemen were contented, and toke leave of the quene and of her doughter,

CAP. CXCIX

Of the ambassade that the kynge of Englande sente into Fraunce.

and of the kynge, and of all other, and departed fro Paris, and toke the same way they came, and so retourned to Calays, and than into Englande, and the two erles rode in post before their company, to bringe tydynges to the kyng; they rode fro Sandwiche to Wyndsore in lesse thanne a daye and an halfe. The kynge was ryght joyouse of their comynge, and was well contente with the Frenche kynges aunswere. He set the mater so to his herte that he toke great pleasure therin, and tooke hede to none other thynge, but studyed howe he myght bringe it aboute to have the Frenche kynges doughter to wyfe.

On the other syde the Frenche kynge and his counsayle studyed daye and nyght, howe they myght make this maryage with Englande to the honour of the realme of Fraunce. There were many in the realme of Fraunce that sayd, that if they had been called to these treatyes, and our wordes herde, the kynge of Englande shulde never have the doughter of Fraunce, for any maner of peace. What good shulde it be for Fraunce, seynge the trewce bytwene them endured but for two yere to come, and than shall we fall agayne in warre, and eche of us hate other as we have doone before? The dukes of Berrey and Orlyance were of the same opynion, and dyvers other lordes of Fraunce. But the king, the duke of Burgoyne, and the chauncellour of Fraunce, enclyned to this maryage, and gladde to have peace, reservyng alwayes the honour of the realme. The same tyme there was a squier in Fraunce, of the nacyon of Normandy, in the countrey of Caulx, he had in his dayes ben sore traveyled in farre parties, and as than he was newly retourned into Fraunce; his name was Robert le Mennot, but as than he was called Robert the Hermyte: he was relygyous and of good lyfe, of the age of fyfty yere. He had been at the treaties that was holden at Balyngham, at whiche tyme he was well herde, and howe he entred than into that treatie I shall shewe you.

CAP. CC

Of a squyer named Roberte the Hermyte, howe he was sente to the treaties of the peace holden at Balyngham, and howe he was after sente into Englande, to kynge Rycharde and his uncles.

SO it was, whan this Roberte the Hermyte returned into Fraunce out of the parties of Surey, and toke shyppyng at Baruth,[1] whyle he was upon the see a great tempest of wynde rose, in suche wyse that they feared to be perysshed, and every man fell to make his prayers to God. And at the ende of this tempest, and that the wether began to waxe fayre and clere, there apered to Robert the Hermyte an ymage more clere than crystall, and sayd thus: Robert, thou shalte issue and escape this parell, and all thy company, for love of the: for God hath herde thyne orisons and prayers, and he sendeth the worde by me, that thou shuldest make hast into Fraunce, and go to the kynge and shewe him thyne adventure, and say unto him, that in any wyse he enclyne to have peace with his adversary kynge Rycharde of Englande; and amonge them that be treaters of the peace, preace thou forthe and shewe them thyne advysyon, for thou shalte be herde. And say that all suche as be of the contrary opinyon against the peace, shall bye it derely in their lyfe tyme in this worlde. And therwith the clerenesse and voyce vanysshed away. Than Robert abode in a great study, but he remembred well what he hadde sene and herde, by the devyne inspyracyon. And after this adventure they had fayre wether and the wynde at their wysshynge, and than aryved in the ryver of Gennes, and there Robert the Hermyte toke leave of his company, and went by lande fro thence tyll he came to Avygnon. And the fyrst thynge he dyd he went to the churche of saynt Peter, and there founde a good vertuous man a penytenser, and of hym he was confessed, and shewed hym all his adventure, and demaunded counsayle what was best to do. Than his ghostly father charged hym in any

[1] *Baruch* P.

CAP. CC

How Roberte the Hermyte was sente to Balyngham and after into Kyngland.

wyse that he shulde speke nothynge of this mater tyll he had shewed it fyrste to the Frenche kynge, and loke what counsayle the kynge dyd gyve him, so to do. This Robert folowed his counsayle and arayed hymselfe in symple habyte all in gray, and so poorely departed fro Avygnon, and journeyed so longe that he came to Parys, but the kynge was at Abbevyle, and the treatie beganne at Balyngham, bytwene the Frenchemen and Englysshemen, as ye have herde before. Than this Robert came to Abvyle and drewe to the kynge, and a knyght of his acquayntaunce brought him to the kyng, whiche knyght was of Normandy, and was called sir Willyam Martell: he was of the kynges privy chambre. Than Roberte the Hermyte shewed the kynge all his hole journey and adventure. The kyng herde hym well, and bycause the duke of Burgoyne, and syr Raynolde Corby, chauncellour of Fraunce, who were of the kynges opynyon to have peace, were at Balyngham, in the treatie holden there, the kynge sayd to Robert: Our counsayle as nowe is nat here, they be at Balyngham: ye shall abyde here with me, and whan they be retourned I shall speke with myne uncle of Burgoyne, and with our chauncelloure, and than we shall do in this mater as they shall advyse me. Syr, quod this Robert, as God wyll, so be it.

The same weke the Frenche kynges counsayle returned fro Balyngham to Abbevyle, and brought with them the artycles of the maner of the peace, whiche the Englysshemen had devysed. And the maters were so weyghty that the treatie was put over tyll another daye, unto suche tyme as bothe kynges were advertysed of eche others demaundes, and their pleasures therin to be knowen. Than on the Frenche partie the Frenche kynge drewe aparte his uncle of Burgoyne, and the chauncellour, and shewed them what enfourmacyon Robert the Hermyt had made unto him, and the kynge demaunded of them if it were a thynge lyaytte and lawfull to beleve. They studyed a lytell, and at last sayde: Syr, we requyre youre grace lette us se this hermyte and here hym speke, and therupon we wyll take advyse. Than he was sent for. Whan he came before the kynge he made his reverence. Thanne the kynge sayd: Roberte, shewe us here at length all the hole mater, as ye

enfourmed me before. Sir, quod he, gladly; than as he that was nothynge abasshed, rehersed all the hole mater, as ye have herde before. Whan he had doone he departed. Than the kynge asked of his uncle what was best to be done. Syr, quod he, the chauncellour and I shall take advyse agaynst tomorowe. Well, quod the kyng, so be it. Than the duke and the chauncellour counsayled togyther on this mater; they sawe well the kynge greatly enclyned to this Robertes wordes: therfore they thought it good to advyse the kynge to joyne this Robert in commyssion with them to go agayne to Balyngham to the treatie of peace, for they thought his langage so fayre and so swete, that he shulde styrre the hartes of them that shulde here hym speke, to have peace, and to shewe the devyne vysion that he had, to the lordes of Englande. This they thought lawfull ynough to be done, and the nexte day they shewed this to the king. And than after whan the duke and the chauncellour wente agayne to Balyngham, they had this Roberte with them. And whan all the lordes, Frenche and Englysshe, were assembled togyder in counsayle, than this Robert came before them, and there well and wisely he declared all the vysion that he hadde on the see, and affermed that it was inspyracyon devyne sente by God, bycause he wolde it shulde be so. Some of the lordes of Englande toke good hede to this mater and enclyned therto, as the duke of Lancastre, the erle of Salysbury, the lorde Thomas Percy, and other, the bysshops of Lyncolne and London; but the duke of Gloucestre, and the erle of Arundell, toke no hede nor set nothynge therby. Whan they were in their lodgynges they sayd, they were but fantasies, and wordes fayned by the Frenchemen to abuse them all: howebeit, they determyned to write to kynge Rycharde the maner and sayenge of this Robert the Hermyte, and therupon sent a knyght, called Rycharde Credon, to kynge Rycharde, who he founde in Kent, at the castell of Leades, and delyvered him letters sent fro his ambassadours in the marches of Caleys, wherin was conteyned the hole sayenge of this Robert. The kynge tooke great pleasure in these letters, and sayd howe he wolde gladly speke with this Robert the Hermyte: he beleved this vysion to be of trouthe. Than the kyng wrote agayne to

CAP. CC

Howe Roberte the Hermyte was sente to Balyngham and after into England.

CAP. CC

Howe Roberte the Hermyte was sente to Balyngham and after into England.

the duke of Lancastre, and to the erle of Salysbury, that if it myght be by any meanes, that a good peace myght be taken bytwene hym and the Frenche kyng, their realmes and alyes: for he sayde, surely he thought that the warre had overlonge endured, and that it was tyme to have peace. And ye have herde here before howe the treaters bare them, and how the lordes departed one fro another, and howe the treuce was taken to endure for foure yere. This was the entent of the lordes of the Englyssh party, except the duke of Gloucestre, for he thought whansoever he came into Englande, never to agree to any peace bytwene Fraunce and Englande. He dyssimuled as moche as he might, to thentent to please the king, and his brother of Lancastre. Thus by this meanes Roberte le Hermyte came to knowledge.

And as ye have herde here before how the erle of Rutlande, therle Marshall, the archebysshop of Duvelyn, the lorde Hugh Spenser, the lorde Lewes Clyfforde, and other, had been sent into Fraunce to treate for kynge Rychardes maryage, and were retourned agayne into Englande, and brought the kynge good tydynges, so that the kynge was well pleased, as ye have herde before. Than Mychelmas came, and the generall counsayle began, suche as Englysshemen call the terme, wherin all maters be debated; and at the begynnynge of the sayd terme the duke of Lancastre returned out of Gascon into Englande, and had nat ben receyved there as he thought he shulde have been, as ye have herde before. So whan the duke of Lancastre was retourned, the kyng made hym good chere. Tydinges anone came into Fraunce howe the duke of Lancastre was retourned into Englande. Than the Frenche kynge and his counsayle determyned to sende Robert the Hermyte into Englande with letters to the kynge, who desyred to se hym: and that the erle of saynt Poll shulde acquaynte hym with the kyng and with the lordes, that they myght here hym speake of the busynesse of Surey and Tartary, and of the greate Turke and Turkey, where he had ben longe: for it was thought that the lordes of Englande wolde gladly here speakyng of suche maters. Than this Robert the Hermyte was warned to make hym redy to go

into Englande in commyssion, wherof he greatly rejoysed, bycause he had never been there before. So he had letters delyvered hym, dyrected to the kyng of Englande and to his uncles. Thus Robert departed fro Parys with seven horses, at the cost and charge of the Frenche kynge, and rode tyll he came to Boloyne, and there tooke the see and aryved at Dover, and spedde so in his journeys that he came to Eltham and founde the kynge there, and the duke of Lancastre, the erles of Salysbury and Huntyngdon, and the lorde Thomas Percy; and for the honour of the Frenche kynge he was well receyved, and specyally of the kynge, who desyred greatly to se hym. Than he delyvered his letters of credence, whiche were redde over by the kynge and the other lordes. The duke of Gloucestre was nat ther, he was in Essex, at a castell of his called Plasshey. Whan this Robert had been with the kynge and with the duke of Lancastre at Eltham a fyve daies, he departed thens to go se the duke of Gloucestre, and so toke leave of the kynge and of the lordes and came to London: and the next day rode fyftene myle fro London to a towne called Brendwode, and the next day to Plasshey, and there he founde the duke and the duchesse and their chyldren, who ryght goodly receyved hym acordyng to his degre. Than Robert delyvered hym his letters sent fro the Frenche kyng. And whan the duke sawe they were of credence, he drewe this Robert aparte, and demaunded what credence he had. Robert aunswered hym and sayd: Syr, I shall shewe theym to you at good leyser; I am nat come to departe agayn so soone. Well, quod the duke, ye be welcome. This Robert knewe well ynough that the duke of Gloucestre was a sore dyssymulynge prince, and contrary to any peace, and thought it harde to breke hym fro his opinyon, for he knewe well he was alwaies contrary to the peace, whiche was well sene at the treaties of Balyngham, for he never demaunded but to have warre. Yet for all that Robert the Hermyte spared nat to speke to the duke on the forme of peace. Alwayes he founde the duke colde in aunswers, and sayd the mater lay nat in hym, for he had two elder bretherne, the duke of Lancastre and the duke of Yorke, to whome the mater partayned rather than to hym; and also that if he wolde

CAP. CC

Howe Roberte the Hermyte was sente to Balyngham and after into England.

CAP. CC

Howe Roberte the Hermyte was sente to Balyngham and after into England.

consent therto alone, peradventure the other lordes, prelates, and counsaylours of good townes wolde nat accepte it. Well, quod Robert the Hermyte, for the love of our Lorde Jhesu Christ, be ye nat contrarye to the peace, for ye maye do moche: and also ye se well howe the kyng your nephue enclyneth to the peace, and wyll by maryage have the Frenche kynges doughter, by whiche conjunctyon shal be gret alyaunce of peace and love. Than the duke aunswered and sayd: What though ye be beleved and herde at this tyme, with the kynges and lordes of bothe realmes, and that ye have good audyence with them and with their counsaylours, the mater is so hygh and weyghty, that it is convenyent that greater personages than ye shulde medle therwith: I have tolde you, and often tymes I have said, that I shall never be contrary to the peace, so it be to the honoure of the kynge and the realme of Englande. In tyme paste, peace was taken bytwene the king our father and our brother the prince of Wales, and kinge Johan of Fraunce, and the Frenche party sworne and bounde upon payne of sentence of the Pope; and yet it helde nat, for the Frenchmen fraudulently have broken all covenauntes, and have taken agayne possessyon of all the landes and lordeshyppes that were yelded and delyvered at the peace makyng to our sayd soverayne lorde and father, and to our predecessours: and moreover of the somme of xxx. thousande frankes, that the redempcyon mounted unto, there is yet to paye syxe hundred thousande frankes; wherfore, such maters to remembre troubleth sore our corages, and we and many of this realme marveyle greatly howe the kynge our soverayne lorde leaneth to so yonge advyse and counsayle, and regardeth none otherwyse the tyme passed and the tyme present, but enclineth to alye hym by maryage with his adversary, and by that alyaunce dysheryte the crowne of Englande, and his successours to come, of the clayme of Fraunce. Ah, ryght dere lorde, quod Robert, our Lorde Jesu Christ suffered passyon on the crosse for us all synners, and pardoned his dethe to them that crucyfied him; in lykewyse a man must pardon that wyll come to the glory of heven; and, sir, all yvell wylles, hates and rancoures were pardoned the daye that the peace was made and sealed at Calays by our prede-

cessours: and nowe warres have been againe newly renewed bytwene your men and ours, I thynke surely through faulte on bothe parties. For whan the prince of Wales, duke of Acquytayne, was retourned out of Spayne into Acquytayne, there were a certayne maner of people callyng themselfe companyons, wherof the moste partye were Englysshemen and Gascons, holdynge of the kynge of Englande and of the prince of Wales; these people assembled them togyther, and entred into the realme of Fraunce, without any tytell of reason, wherby ensued mortall and cruell warre, greater than was before: these companyons called the realme of Fraunce their chambre; they were so set to do yvell dedes, that they coude nat be resysted. And whan the realme of Fraunce sawe and felte them so harmed by this people, and sawe well the lengar they contynewed the more they multyplyed and more hurte they dyd, than kyng Charles of Fraunce, sonne to kyng Johan, was counsayled by his subgiettes to resyst and subdue suche enemyes, outher by warre or otherwyse; and many great barons of Gascoyne came to the Frenche kyng, suche as said they were sore overlayde with their lorde the prince of Wales, and many injuryes done to them, whiche they shewed to the Frenche kynge they might nat nor wolde nat suffre no lenger; and so they beganne the warre bycause of their resorte to the prince of Wales. Than this kynge Charles, by counsayle of them and of his subgiettes, enhardyed himselfe to the warre with these barones of Gascoyne for to mete against these companyons. And in this newe warre many lordes retourned to the Frenche kynge, and dyvers lordeshyppes, cyties, townes, and castels, for the great oppression that the prince of Wales dyd to them, and consented to be done by his commyssioners. Thus the warre was renewed, wherby many great myschyefes have fallen, to the dystruction of moche people and countreys, and the faythe of Christ sore febled and decayed, and the enemyes of God ryssen and coraged, and have allredy conquered moche parte of Grece. The emperour of Constantynople hath nat the power to resyst the puyssaunce of the Great Turke, called Basant[1] Lamorabaquyn, who hathe conquered the realme of Armony, excepte all onely a towne standynge on the see

CAP. HowR the Her was sen Balyngl and aft Englan

[1] *Bajazet of Asia*

CAP. CC

Howe Roberte the Hermyte was sente to Balyngham and after into England.

syde, called Courche, whiche the Venysians and Genovoys kepe agaynst the Turke. And the emperour of Constantyne the noble, who is of your blode, he was sonne to the emperoure Hugues of Luzignen and of my lady Mary of Burbon, cosyn germayne to my lady the quene your mother, he shall nat be able of longe to resyst the puyssaunce of this Gret Turke. And if peace maye be had bytwene Englande and Fraunce, as I trust by the grace of God it shall be, than knyghtes and squyers, suche as demaunde for dedes of armes for their advauncement, shall drawe them to that parte, and shall helpe kynge Lyon of Armony to recover agayne his herytage and to put out the Turkes. For surely the warre hath over longe endured bytwene Fraunce and Englande, and surely whosoever it be that is or wyll be against the peace shall derely aunswere therto, outher quycke or deed. Howe knowe you that? quod the duke of Gloucestre. Syr, quod Robert, all that I say cometh by dyvyne inspyracyon, and by a vysione that came to me upon the see, as I retourned fro Baruth, a porte in Surey, besyde the isle of Rodes. Than he declared all his hole vysion, the rather therby to move the dukes herte to pytie and reason; but this duke was herde herted agaynst the peace and kept styll his opynion, and by his wordes condempned and dispysed greatly the Frenchemen, for all that ever Robert the Hermyte coude say. But bycause that this Robert was a straunger, and shewed by his wordes and werkes that he wolde all were well, and also bycause the duke sawe that the kyng his nephue enclyned to have peace, he dyssymuled and spake fayre, whatsoever his herte thought. Two dayes this Robert taryed at Plasshey with the duke and had good chere, and the thyrde day departed and retourned to London, and fro thence to Wyndesore, where the kynge made hym good chere for love that the Frenche kyng had sent him thyder, and bycause he was wyse and eloquent, and of swete wordes and honest. It is nat to be doubted but that the kynge demaunded of hym howe he founde his uncle the duke of Gloucestre. And Robert answered him well to the poynte. The kyng knewe well his uncle of Gloucestre enclyned rather to warre than to peace; wherfore he favoured moche better his other two uncles, dukes of Lancastre and

Yorke. Whan Robert the Hermyte had ben a moneth with the king he toke his leave, and at his departynge the kynge gave hym great gyftes, and so dyd the dukes of Lancastre and Yorke, and the erles of Huntyngdon and Salysbury, and the lorde Thomas Percy. The kynge caused hym to be conveyed to Dover, and there passed over into Fraunce; and he founde the Frenche kyng and the quene and his uncles at Paris, and there shewed the kinge all his voyage, and what good chere he had in Englande. Thus dayly messangers went in and out bytwene these two kynges, and amyable letters sent bytwene them. The kynge of Englande desyred nothyng so moche as to come to this maryage, and semblably the Frenche kynge had lyke desyre, for he thought his doughter shulde be a great estate if she might be quene of Englande.

CAP. C
Howe Rol
the Herm
was sente
Balyngha
and after
England.

CAP. CCI

Of the delyveraunce of the lorde de la Ryver and of syr Johan le Mercyer; and howe they were put out of prisone.

YE have herde here before howe the lorde de la Ryver and sir Johan le Mercyer were in jeoperdy of their lyves, and removed fro prison to prison, and at laste delyvered to the provost of the Chatelet of Parys, and were at the poynte to lose their lyves, and all for hate and envye that the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne and their counsayle had to them. They were in this daunger more than two yere. The kyng socoured them, for always he stopped the execusion; and that the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne sawe well, and also they perceyved that the duke of Orlyaunce ayded them as moche as he might; also the duches of Berrey was a good meane for them, and specially for the lorde de la Ryver: and also the one coulde nat be condempned without the other, for they were accused all for one cause. The prayers of good folkes and their ryght togyther ayded theym. Than it was regarded by many of the high barones of Fraunce who had pytie on them, and

CAP. CCI

Of the delyveraunce of the lorde de la Ryver and of syr Johan le Mercyer.

sayd they had suffred prisonement over longe, and that it was tyme to shewe them grace, for this Johan le Mercyer had so moche wept in prison that his syght was sore decayed, so that he coude scant se: the brute ranne through the realme that he was blynde. Than at last they had sentence gyven them of grace by the kynge, and there the lorde de la Ryver was restored agayne to all his landes and castels, as the fayre castell of Anjou:[1] but he was charged on payne of his lyfe, that whan he was ones in his castell of Anjowe, that he shulde never after repasse the ryver of Sayne, without he were commaunded by the kynges owne mouthe; and syr Johan le Mercyer to retourne to Pounte de Nonnon,[2] into his fayre house in Laonnoys, and he nat to repasse the ryver of Oyse, of Marne, nor of Seyne, without he were in lykewyse called by the kynges owne mouth. Thus they bounde themselfe to take this prisonment, and thought they had a great grace to scape so well, and were ryght joyouse whan they were delyvered fro the Chatelet. They trusted whan they came out of prison to have spoken with the kynge, an to have thanked hym of his grace; but they coulde nat be suffred, but were commaunded to avoyde out of Parys, and to resorte thyder as they were commaunded. Thus they were delyvered, wherof their frendes had great joy.

[1] *Auneau.*

[2] *Nouvion.*

CAP. CCII

Of the peace that was hadde bytwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Olyver Clysson.

YE have herde howe the duke of Bretayne and syr Olyver of Clisson warred longe togyther mortally, for bytwene them they toke none to mercy: and surely syr Olyver of Clysson and his partie bare them so valyauntly, that of thre he had twayne: for the lordes of Bretaygne dyssimuled with the duke; and men of the cyties and good townes sayde, howe they must nedes lyve and use their marchaundyse, whatsoever warre was bytwene the duke and syr Olyver of Clysson, for they sayd it touched them nothinge, wherfore they wolde nat entermedle bytwene

them; but ever the vycount of Rohan, the lorde de Leon, and the lorde of Dignan, treated for a peace to be had bytwene them. So moch they pursewed that the duke promysed to be entreated, so that he myght se syr Olyver in his presence and speke with hym. And therupon these lordes on a day rode to a fortresse of syr Olyvers to speke with hym, and there they shewed him for what cause they wer come thyder, and howe they had got graunt of the duke to sende to him a safeconducte, safely to go and come to speke with hym, sayeng that surely they thought if he were ones in his presence, all the yvell wyll and displeasures shulde be clerely pardoned. Than sir Olyver sayd: Sirs, ye are all my frendes and lovers, and I trust greatlye in you, and beleve that the duke hath promysed as you saye, and I thynke he wolde gladly se me in his presence; but so God helpe me and saynt Yves, upon his worde and promise I ensure you I wyll nat ones issue out of my house. But I shall tell you what ye shall saye to hym; that if he wyll have me to come to hym, let hym sende hyder in pledge his eldest sonne, and whan he is here, thane I wyll go and speke with hym, and suche ende as I shall make, his sonne shall make; yf I retourne, he shall do in lykewise; and if I abyde, he shall abide. Whan these lordes sawe they coude have none other ende, they tooke their leave and retourned to Wannes, where the duke was, and shewed every thynge as they had herde. The duke coude have none other waye. This sir Olyver bare hymselfe so valyauntly in this warre, that he wanne more than he lost. He toke two tymes all the dukes vessell and plate of golde and sylver, and dyvers other jewelles, wherof he hadde great profyte.

CAP. Of the that wa bytwen duke o Bretay sir Oly Clysso

The conclusyon of the warre and hate bytwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Olyver Clysson was thus. The duke of Bretayne, lyke a great lorde as he was, sawe well he coude nat come to his entent of sir Olyver of Clysson, and that he had over many frendes in Bretayne: for savyng their alegiaunce to the duchy of Bretayne, all the Bretons, knyghtes, squyers, prelates, and men of the good cyties and good townes enclyned more to the lorde Clysson than to the duke: and the highe barons dissymuled, and had aunswered the duke that they wolde nat entremedle them with that

CAP. CCII

Of the peace that was hadde bytwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Olyver Clysson.

warre, but sayde they wolde gladly sette a peace and accorde bytwene them. Also the duke of Orlyaunce specially comforted covertly in many maner of wayes sir Olyver of Clysson, and he was alwayes joyous whan he herde of his good spede in any of his entreprices. The duke of Bretaygne, who was a subtyle prince and ymaginatyfe, and had endured moche payne duryng this warre, and sawe well he was nat very well beloved with his owne people, as the chyldren of the lorde Charles of Bretayne were, the one called Charles of Bloyes, who was slayne at the batayle of Alroy,[1] and John of Bretayne, erle of Ponthieux[2] and of Lymogines, who had to wyfe the doughter of sir Olyver of Clisson, and the lorde Henry of Bretayne his brother, and their suster the quene of Naples and of Hierusalem; also the duke sawe that he began to waxe olde, and that his chyldren were but yonge, and parceyved well he had no frendes in Fraunce, except the duke of Burgoyne and the duches his wyfe; and he sawe well his chyldren shulde have as fewe, for by their mothers syde they came and were issued of the membres and braunches of Naver, whiche generacion was nat overmoche loved in Fraunce, for the great myscheves that kynge Charles of Naverre, father to the duchesse of Bretayne, had done in tyme past in Fraunce, wherof the remembraunce as than endured; and the duke sawe that if he dyed in that estate, bothe with sir Olyver of Clisson and with the erle of Ponthieux, he than douted that his chyldren that were so yonge shulde have over many great enemyes. And also he sawe that the alyaunce bytwene hym and Englande began to waxe colde, for he was enformed that the kynge of Englande shulde have to wyfe the doughter of Fraunce, the same lady that was promysed to hym for his sonne and heyre. The duke dyde cast all these doutes. Thane all thynges consydered, he ymagined to breke his herte without dissimulacion, and make a ferme peace with sir Olyver of Clysson and with Johan of Bretayne, and wolde putte hymselfe at their pleasure; to make amendes for all wrathes, forfaytes, and dommages that ever they dyde to hym or to his men duryng the warre, he wolde desyre nothynge, but that they shulde take hym for duke of Bretayne, and his children after hym, accordyng to the artycles of the peace

[1] *Les enfans à Messire Ch. de B., que on dist de Blois, qui fut occis, etc.*

[2] *Ponthieure.*

CAP. CCII

Of the peace that was hadde bytwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Olyver Clysson.

before made bytwene hym and the chyldren of sir Charles of Bloyes, whiche charter of peace he wolde nat breke, nor any artycle comprised therin; and also to kepe and upholde every thyng that he had promysed to John of Bloyes his cosyn, erle of Ponthieux. And if he hadde nat his parte of the herytage of Bretayne suffycient, he wolde putte the ordring therof without any dissymulacion to the vicount of Rohan, and to the lordes of Dignan, of Leon, of Lavall, and of Beaumont, and of the lorde John of Harpeden. Whan the duke of Bretayne had advysed in hymselfe all this purpose, without makynge of any man of his counsayle, he called to hym his secratorie: and in a chambre they two alone, he caused hym to write a letter to sir Olyver of Clysson, as swetely and amiably as coude be devysed, desyring hym that they might speke toguyder secretely on trust to have good peace bytwene them. Whan this letter was made, devysed, and sealed, than he toke a secrete person, commaundyng hym to go to the castell of Josselyn, and sayde: I do sende the to speke with my cosyn sir Olyver of Clysson: and salute hym fro me and delyver hym this letter, and bring agayne an answere: and on payne of thy lyfe kepe this secrete, and shewe no creature whider thou gost, nor who dothe sende the. He tooke his journey and spedde hym so well, that he came to the castell Josselyn. The porters had marveyle whan they herde hym saye that he came fro the duke to speke with their maister: they wente and shewed their lorde therof. Than he commaunded that the messanger shulde come to hym, and so he dyde, and well and wisely declared his message, and delyvered his letter sealed with the dukes seale, whiche sir Olyver knewe ryght well, and opyned and reed the letter two or thre tymes, the better to understande it. And in the redyng he had great marveyle of the swete wordes, tretable and amyable, that was comprised in the letter: he studyed a season, and at last sayd, howe he wolde take advyse and write agayne. Sir Olyvers men hadde great marveyle of this, for before he had forborne no man of the dukes, but outher he was slayne, or putte in prisone. Thane sir Olyver wente into his secrete chambre, and began to muse and ymagyn upon these newes. At last he apesed his yvell wyll, in that the duke humyled

CAP. CCII
Of the peace that was hadde bytwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Olyver Clysson.

hymselfe so moche towardes him, and that he wrote so swetely: yet he thought in hymselfe to prove the duke further, or he adventured hymselfe to go to the duke, for he thought if he toke any hurte, no man wolde bewayle hym, if he lost hymselfe by folly. Than he wrote a letter to the duke ryght swete and tretable, but the conclusyon was, that yf he wolde have hym to come and speke with hym, that he shuld sende his sone and heyre to lye in hostage for hym tyll his retourne. This letter was delyvered to the dukes varlet, who retourned therwith to Wannes where the duke was, and there delyvered his letter. The duke reed it, and studyed a lytell and sayd, I shall do it, to the entente to treate lovyngly with hym. Than the duke wrote a letter to the vycount of Rohan, who was at the castell of Cayre. Whan the vycount sawe the dukes letter, he came incontynent to Wannes. Than the duke shewed all his purpose and entencyon, and sayd: Vycount, you and the lorde of Mountbursier shall leade my sone to the castell Josselyn, and leave hym there, and bringe with you the lorde Olyver Clysson, for I wyll agree and make peace with hym. The vicount sayd it shulde be done gladly: so they toke the dukes sonne and heyre, who was about the age of eight yere, and ledde hym to the castell Josselyn, to the lorde Olyver Clysson, who receyved them ryght honorably. And whan he sawe the chylde and the good affection of the duke, he humyled and apesed his herte greatlye: and with that the knyghtes tolde hym, and sayd: Sir, ye se the good wyll of the duke, he hath spoken nothyng but his hert dothe agre to the same. I se it well, quod sir Olyver, and for that I se and perceyve his good wyll, I shall put me so far forthe, that I shall yelde me under his obeysaunce; and it semeth ye be ryght nere to hym, seynge he putteth his affiaunce and trust in you, to delyver you his heyre to bringe to me to lye in hostage tyll I be retourned; I wotte nat if he have shewed you what he hath written to me, sygned and sealed with his seale. The lordes answered and said: Sir, he hath well tolde us, that he hath ryght great desyre to come to a peace and accorde with you: in this ye maye right well beleve us, we be of your blode. Thane sir Olyver went for the letters that the duke had sent hym, and reed them.

CAP. CCII

Of the peace that was hadde bytwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Olyver Clysson.

Sir, quod they, all that is conteyned in this letter he hath said unto us, and upon the same estate he hath sent us hyder. Than sir Olyver ordaygned hym to departe with the sayd lordes, and toke the dukes sonne agayne with them, and said, howe they shulde bringe agayne the chylde to his father, sayeng that he trusted right well his promyse, consydring that he had proved hym so farre, and that he had shewed suche humilyte, he douted nat but that his herte was in unyte: so they came to Wannes. The duke had apoynted that sir Olyver shulde tary at a Freres without the towne of Wannes, and there the duke shulde come and speke with hym: as it was ordayned so it was done. And whan the duke sawe that sir Olyver had brought agayne his sonne and heyre, he reputed it for a great curtesy, and was well content therwith. Thus the duke and sir Olyver mette in the Freres, and there they two alone entred into a chambre, and communed toguyder a season, and after issued out through a gardeyn and came to the ryver syde, and there they entred into a bote, and fro thens entred into a shyppe that laye at ancre. And so whan they were farre of fro all people, they communed a longe season toguyder. What their wordes were I knowe nat, but their dealynge was as I shall shewe you.

Their men had went they hadde been styll in the Freres: but as it was shewed me they were thus in the shyppe more than two houres, and there made a good peace bytwene them, and sware faythe and trouth eche to other without dissymulacyon. Than they called agayne the boteman, and he brought them agayne where he had them, and so entred agayne by the gardeyne syde into the Freres. Than anone after the duke came out and ledde sir Olyver of Clysson by the hande, and so went into the towne of Wannes, and into the castell called le Mote. Of this peace every man was greatly rejoysed, and to se them so amiably togyder, and so was all the countrey. At the makyng of this peace John of Bloyes erle of Ponthieux lost nat, for his revenewes was therby augmented of twentie thousande crownes of golde by yere for ever to hym and to his heyres. And at this peace a maryage was ordayned for the duke of Bretaynes doughter,[1] to confyrme the better the love and alyaunces bytwene

[1] *mariage du fils au conte de Pentèvre à la fille du duc de Bretaigne.*

CAP. CCII

Of the peace that was hadde bytwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Olyver Clysson.

them. Great newes ran through Fraunce and Englande of this peace.

Ye have herde here before howe sir Peter of Craon fell in the Frenche kynges displeasure, and of the duke of Orlyaunce, bycause of sir Olyver of Clysson, in that he wolde have slayne hym on a nyght as he went to his house warde: and howe the duke of Bretayne susteyned hym in his house, by whiche occasyon the Frenche kyng wolde have made warre agaynst the duke, if the sickenesse that tooke hym had nat been, by whiche incydentes the kynges army brake up. And also ye have herde howe the dukes of Berrey and Burgoyne bare great displeasure to all suche as counsayled the kyng therto, as sir Olyver of Clysson, the lorde de la Ryver, the lorde Johan le Mercyer, Montague, and other, who afterwarde endured therby great prisonment; and howe the two dukes had the governaunce of the realme, as long as the kynge was in his sickenesse. Also it hath ben shewed what mortall warre was bytwene the duke of Bretayne, and sir Olyver of Clysson: and also howe the lordes de la Ryver, sir Johan Mercyer, and Montague, were delyvered out of prisone, whiche Montague had nat so moche trouble as the other had, for as soone as the kyng was returned to his helth, he toke Montague agayne about hym, and made his excuse. So by reason of these sondrie sickenesses that the kyng had dyvers tymes gretly troubled the realme of Fraunce, and moche abated the kynges puissaunce, so that he had nat every thyng done accordynge to his wyll. In this season sir Peter of Craon was nothyng displeased with the kynges sickenesse, nor with the trouble that they of his counsayle hadde; howebeit, than he made sute to retourne agayne into the kynges favour and love, and the duke of Burgoyne, and the lorde Guy of Tremoyle, were his advocates to treate for hym. And lightly his peace had been made, and the duke of Orlyaunce had nat ben, for he letted all that treatie: for as longe as the hate endured bytwene sir Olyver Clysson, and the duke of Bretaygne, sir Peter of Craon coude come to no peace nor accorde. But whan it was surely knowen that there was a peas made bytwene the duke and sir Olyver, than the quarell agaynst sir Peter of Craon was molyfied and well apeased. The

same season quene Jane of Naples and Hierusalem, and duches of Anjou, had a plee in parlyament agaynst sir Peter of Craon, for the some of a C. M. frankes. This lady lay styll at Paris, the better to entende to her busynesse. Sir Peter of Craon that sawe hymselfe in that danger, and that he was in sute in the parlyament, and knewe nat howe his busynesse shulde passe, outher with hym or agaynst hym, for the ladyes partie was strong, and had good profe of whom he had receyved the money, in the dayes of kyng Loyes her husbande; all these thynges consydred, he ymagyned that it was nat easy for him to beare; and also he knewe well he was in hate with the Frenche kyng, and with the duke of Orlyaunce: but the duke and duchesse of Burgoyne conforted and ayded hym as moche as they myght; he gate suche grace that he was at Paris secretly, in the house of Arthoys, with the duches of Burgoyne.

CAP. CCII
Of the peace that was hadde bytwene the duke of Bretayne and sir Olyver Clysson.

Nowe we shall leave to speke of hym at this tyme.

CAP. CCIII

Howe the kyng of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the Great Turke, and howe Johan of Burgoyn, eldest sonne to the duke of Burgoyne, was chefe and heed of the army that went thider.

IN this sayd season Henry kyng of Hungry sent swete and amyable letters to the Frenche king, by a notable ambassade, a bysshop and ii. knightes of Hungry. In the same letters was conteyned a great parte of the state and doyng of the Great Turke, and how that he had sent worde to the kynge of Hungry, that he wolde come and fight with hym in the myddes of his realme, and wolde go fro thens to the cytie of Rome, and wolde make his horse to eate otes upon the high auter of saynt Peter, and there to holde his see imperyall, and wolde bringe the emperour of Constantyne the noble in his company, and all the great barons of the realme of Grece, and eche of them to kepe styll their

CAP. CCIII

Howe the kyng of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the Great Turke.

owne lawe: for he desyred nothynge but the tytell and signorie. Thus the kyng of Hungry in his letters, prayed the Frenche kyng to entende to ayde and socour him, and that this businesse in farre countreis might be publisshed abrode, to thentent that all knightes and squyers myght provyde to come into Hungry, to resyst agaynst Lamorabaquy, the Great Turke, to thentent that Christendome shulde nat be violated by him, and that his pride and bost myght be abated. In these letters were conteygned many wordes of great love, as kynges and cosyns write eche to other in case of necessyte. And they were sente by suffycient personages, who dyde so moche that the Frenche kynge enclyned his hert therto, and was the gladder to sette forwarde the treatie of the mariage of his doughter to the kynge of Englande. Than anone these newes of Hungry were publysshed abrode, and written into many countreis, to move the hertes of gentylmen, knightes, and squiers, suche as wolde avaunce them to get honour. The same season that these newes were brought to the kyng, there was at Parys the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse, and Johan of Burgoyne their sonne and heyre, erle of Nevers, who as than was no knyght, and the lorde Guye of Tremoyle, and the lorde Wyllyam his brother, and many lordes and other of the realme of Fraunce. Than the duke of Burgoyne enclyned sore to this viage, and specially that his sone shulde enterprice the sayd voyage, so he might be chefe heed and leader of the army that shulde go in that viage. This Johan of Burgoyne was but a yonge man of the age of xxii. yeres, wyse, curtesse, tretable, humble, and wel beloved of knyghtes and squyers of Burgone, and of other nacyons, suche as knewe hym. He had to wyfe the doughter of duke Aubert of Bavier, erle of Heynalte, Hollande and Zelande, a good lady, wyse and devout, and had two chyldren full lykely to come to great maryages. One shewed this Johan of Burgoyne howe the Frenche kyng wolde sende hym in this voyage into Hungry, to se what he wolde saye. Than he sayd, If it pleace the kynge and the duke my father to sende me as chiefe of this armye, it shall please me right well, for I have great desyre to avaunce myselfe. Well, sir, quod they, ye were best to speke with the duke youre

father that he maye speke to the kynge, for without his good wyll ye can do nothynge.

CAP. CCIII

Howe the kyng of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the Great Turke.

It was nat long after but that this Johan of Burgoyne spake to his father, prayeng hym humbly to consent that he myght go in this voyage into Hungry; and at the same tyme there was by hym sir Guye and sir Wyllyam of Tremoyle, and other, and they said to the duke: Sir, this request that your sonne maketh is but resonable, for it is tyme he take the order of knighthode, and more nobly he can nat take it, than in goyng the journey agaynst the enemyes of holy churche: and if the kynge wyll sende any personage in that voyage, he can nat sende a more honorable man thane his owne cosyn germayne your sonne, and ye shall se many knyghtes go with hym, as well for their owne avauncementes as for your love. Than the duke said, Well, so be it; I shall nat lette the good wyll of my sonne, I shall speke to the kyng therin, and shall se what answere he wyll make. And anone after, the duke spake to the kynge therin, and the kynge incontynent enclyned therto, and sayd, howe it shulde be well done that he went, And we wyll that he shall go, and we wyll make hym as chefe of that journey. Than the tidynges was shewed throughe all Parys, and without, that Johan of Burgoyne, with a great company of knyghtes, shulde go into Hungry to se the puyssaunce of the Great Turke; and that journey atchyved, thanne the Christenmen to go to Constantyne the noble, and to passe over the arme of saynt George, and so to entre into Surrey, and to delyver Hierusalem out of the panyms handes. Than awaked suche knyghtes and squyers as desyred advauncement. Whan the duke of Burgoyne sawe that his sonne shulde go in this voyage, and that he shulde be chiefe of the army, he honored than the more the ambassadours of Hungry, who whan they sawe the kynges good wyll, the dukes, and the Frenchmens, they were gladde, and toke their leave of the kynge and of the other lordes of Fraunce, and so retourned to their countrey, and made relacyon to the kyng of Hungry howe they had spedde: wherwith the kynge was greatly rejoysed, and made great provisyon agaynst the commynge of the Frenchemen, and sent these ambassadours to his brother the kyng of Almaigne,

CAP. CCIII Howe the kyng of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the Great Turke.

to open his passages, and also to his cosyn the duke of Austriche, for throughe the straytes of Austryche he muste nedes passe. And by all the wayes he caused great provisyon of vitayle to be ordayned: and also he wrote letters to the great mayster of Pruce, and to the Rhodes, certifyeng them of the commyng of Johan of Burgoyne, with a thousande knyghtes and squyers of valyant men, to the entent to entre into Turkey, and to resyst the great bost of kyng Basant, called the Great Turke.

In this season the lorde Coucy was come to Parys, and was but newlye retourned fro a voyage, where he hadde ben a hole yere, whiche was on the fronters of Gennes. And there were certayne great men Genowayes, that had enformed the duke of Orlyaunce, that the hoole duchy of Geane desyred to have to their chiefe lorde some noble persone, discended of the lynage of the flour delyce. And for as moche as the duke of Orlyaunce had wedded the doughter of the lorde of Myllaygne, and that the lande and duchy of Geane shulde be ryght mete for hym, at the duke of Orlyaunce instaunce the lorde of Coucy with thre hundred speares, and fyve hundred crosbowes, passed over into Savoye and to Pyemont, by the accorde and consent of the erle of Savoye, and came into Aste in Pyemont, by the consent of the lorde of Myllayne, and came to a cytie called Alexandria: and so came to the fronters and marchesse of the Genowayes, and there fell in treatie with them to know more playnly their entencyons, for perforce he coulde do nothyng, without he had had greatter puissaunce than he had. And whan the lorde of Coucy came first upon the fronters of the ryver of Geane, where the entrees are stronge to conquere, if there be made any defence, some lordes of the Genowayes, suche as favoured the lorde Coucy, and had enformed the duke of Orlyaunce, wherby he sente thyder the lorde of Coucy, they entreated him amiably and brought hym to their countreis, and offred to hym their castels. The lorde of Coucy, who was sage, subtyle and ymaginatyfe, and knewe right well the nature of the Lombardes and Genowayes, wolde nat trust them over moche, nor have to great confydence in their offers and promyses, but alwayes wysely he helde them

in love and amyte, as longe as he was amonge them, and ledde them forthe with fayre wordes and treaties. They had many communycacyons in the felde toguyder, but never in no fortresse, and ever the more he comuned with theym, the lesse he conquered or gate: the Genovoys made to him sygne of love, and promysed hym many thynges, and wolde have had hym to have gone into the cytie of Gennes, or to Porte Vender,[1] but the lorde of Coucy durst never assure hym in their offers. The conclusyon of his voyage was suche that he gate nothynge: and whan he sawe that he coulde nat atcheve his busynesse, he signyfied his estate to the duke of Orlyance: wherupon he was remaunded; and so he retourned to Parys, and came thyder the same season that all the busynesse was for the journey goynge into Hungery. The duke of Burgoyne rejoysed greatly of his retourne, and he and the duchesse sente for hym to their house of Arthoyse, in sygne of great love. Than they sayd to him: Syr, we trust moche in you: we have caused Johan our sonne and heyre to take on hym an enterprise in the honour of God and of all Christendome, and we knowe well that above all other knyghtes of Fraunce, ye are the moste used and expert in all thynges; wherfore derely we requyre you that ye wolde be companion with our sonne in this voyage, and his chyefe counsaylour, wherof we shall thanke you, and deserve it to you and yours. Than the lorde of Coucy said: My lorde, and you madame, your wordes and requestes ought to be to me a commaundement: in this voyage I shall go if it please God, for two causes: First, for devocyon to defende the faythe of Jhesu Christ: Secondly, in that ye do to me so moche honour as to gyve me charge of my lorde Johan your sonne, and I shall acquyte me truely to him to my power; howebeit, of this dede ye may well dyscharge me, and to charge specyally his cosyn and nere kynesman, my lorde Phylyppe of Arthoys, erle of Ewe, and constable of Fraunce, and his other cosyn the erle of Marche; bothe two ought to go with hym in this voyage, for they be both nere of his blode. Than the duke sayd: My lorde of Coucy, ye have moche more sene than these other twayn have, and knowe better the orderynge of an army in straunge countreys, than outher our cosyn of Ewe or of March: therfore we

CAP. CCIII

Howe the kyng of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the Great Turke.

[1] *Porto Venere.*

CAP. CCIII

Howe the kyng of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the Great Turke.

charge you and praye you to execute our requestes. Than he aunswered and sayd: My lorde, your prayer is to me a commaundement, and I shall do it, sythe it pleaseth you, with the ayde and helpe of my lorde Guye of Tremoyle, and of my lorde Guillyam his brother, and of the admyrall of Fraunce. Of this answere the duke and duchesse had great joye.

These lordes prepared themselves to go in this journey into Hungery, and lordes, knyghtes and squyers were desyred to go in their company, and many desyred themselfe to go. Some were retaygned, and some went without maysters, and some, consyderynge the voyage into Hungery and fro thence into Turkey to be overlonge and chargeable for them, beynge nat retaygned, waxed colde in their enterpryse. For the settynge forwarde of this yonge Johan of Burgoyne, nothynge was spared, horse, harnesse, fresshe clothes, riche vessell, and plate of golde and sylver, and offycers apoynted to do their atendaunce, and money delyvered and werkemen payed. Than all barones, knightes, and squiers, for the honour of John of Burgoyne, and also for the avauncement of their bodies, enforced them to make them redy. The lorde Phylyppe of Arthoys ordeyned hym so puyssauntly that nothynge was spared, and wolde go in that voyage as constable of Fraunce; and the Frenche kynge, who loved him entierlye, helped hym moche towarde his charges, and so he dyd to the lorde Boucyquaut marshall of Fraunce. The duke of Burgoyne consydered that this voyage of his sonnes shulde coste over moche fynaunce, and he thought it convenyent that the state of his sonne shulde be mayntayned. And to fynde sylver to mayntayne it withall, he founde out subtelly a backe tayle; for by a former tayle all the countreys, cyties, and fortresses, had ben tayled, and the said backe tayle mounted in Burgoyne of the chyvallry,[1] syxe hundred thousande crownes of golde. And agayne, the duke made it to be tolde to all knyghtes and ladyes that helde of him in fee, yonge and olde, that they shulde go into Hungery in their owne propre persones with his sonne, or els to paye a taxe of sylver; so they were taxed, some at a thousande pounde, the other at fyve hundred frankes, and eche man after his goodes and valure of his landes. Ladyes and auncyent

[1] *pour la chevallerie premiere de son aisné fils.*

knyghtes remembringe the traveyle of their bodyes, and were nat shapen nor made to endure suche payne, compounded and payed at the wyll of the duke. The yonge knyghtes and squyers were forborne payeng of any money, but it was said to them that they shulde go with the lorde Johan at their owne coste and charge, and otherwyse nat. Of this backe tayle the duke reysed lx. thousande crownes, and so none was forborne.

CAP. CCIII
Howe the kyng of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the Great Turke.

The tydynges of this voyage spredde abrode, and whan it came into the countrey of Haynalt, knyghtes and squyers, suche as desyred avauncement, spake togyther and sayde: A, this were a mete voyage for my lorde of Ostrevant, who is yonge, and for his brother the erle of Nevers; and if any of them wente, we myght well go in their company. The erle of Ostrevant beynge at that tyme at Quesnoy, understode what the knyghtes and squyers of his countrey sayde, and he thought no lesse than they dyd, and had great affectyon to go in this voyage. And whan he herde any spekyng of that mater, he wolde answere but lytell, but dyssymuled the mater, but he was in good entencyon to speke with duke Aubert of Bavyer erle of Haynalt, and to do as he wolde counsayle hym. Within a whyle after the erle of Ostrevant came into Hay, in Holand, where his father was with the duchesse his wyfe. Than he sayd to his father: My lorde, suche tydinges rynneth abrode that my fayre brother of Nevers hathe enterprised this sommer to go into Hungery, and fro thens into Turkey, where by all lykelyhode great dedes of armes shall be atchyved. And syr, as at this tyme I wotte nat where better to enploye myselfe in any dede of armes, wherin I wolde gladly knowe youre pleasure: I wolde go in that honourable voyage with a hundred knyghtes, and beare company with my fayre brother; the duke of Burgoyne, and my lady the duches shall can me gret thanke, and many knyghtes and squyers of Haynalt wyll gladly holde me company. Than duke Aubert, as a man redy purveyed of aunswere, sayd: Guylliam, what haste or wyll have you to go in this voyage into Hungery, and into Turkey, to seke armes upon people and countrey that never dyd us any forfeyte; thou hast no tytell of reason to go, but for the vayne glory of the

CAP. CCIII

Howe the kyng of Hungry wrote to the Frenche kynge the state of the Great Turke.

worlde: lette Johan of Burgoyne and our cosins of Fraunce do their enterprise, and do thy dedes aparte, and go thou into Frese and conquere our herytage, that these Fresones by pride and rudenes do witholde fro vs, and wyll come to none obeysaunte, and to do this I shall ayde the. The wordes of the father to the sonne lyghtened greatly the herte of therle of Ostrevant, who aunswered and sayd: My lorde, ye saye well, and if it please you that I shall do that voyage, I shall do it with ryght a good wyll.

CAP. CCIIII

Howe the erle of Ostrevant enterprised to go into Frese.

THESE wordes bytwene the father and the sonne multyplyed so moche, lytell and lytell, that the voyage into Frese was taken and enterprised. And one thyng helped moche the matter forwarde, and that was, the erle of Ostrevant had at that tyme aboute hym, and nere of his counsayle, a squyer of Haynalte, called Ferebrase, otherwise called the bastarde Vertayne, a wyse man and a subtyll in feates of armes, so that whan he herde of this he said to the erle: Syr, my lorde your father speketh well: it is better for your honour that ye make this voyage rather than into Hungery, and ordayne you therto, and ye shall fynde knyghtes and squyers of Haynalt, and elsewhere, that wyll be gladde to kepe you company, and shall ayde you to their powers to do this enterprise. And if ye have mynde thus to do, I wyll counsayle you to go into Englande, and to signyfy your enterprise to the knyghtes and squyers there: and pray the kynge of Englande your cosyn, that he wyll gyve lycence to knyghtes, squyers and archers, to go with you into Frese, at your wages: Englysshemen be men of dedes, and if ye have them ye shall do your businesse the better; and if ye may have by prayer your cosyn therle of Derby in your company, your voyage shall be moche the fayrer, and your enterprise the more renomed. The erle enclyned to those wordes, for it semed to hym that his counsayle was good. In lykewyse the lorde Gomegynes

gave hym counsayle, and so dyd dyvers other. These wordes anone spredde abrode in Haynalte. Than there was a commaundement made to all knyghtes and squiers in Heynalt, that none of theym shulde go out of the countrey, to go into Hungery, nor into no place els, bycause the erle of Ostrevant shulde ocupy them another waye, and shulde leade them into Frese. We shall leave speakynge of this busynesse, and retourne to the voyage into Hungery.

CAP. CCIIII
Howe the erle of Ostrevant enterprised to go into Frese.

Thus knyghtes and squiers in many parties had cause to awake and to take corage, for the warres that were toward in that season, as well for the voyage into Hungery as into Frese. The erle of Nevers avaunced his journey, and all knyghtes and squyers were named and written that shulde go with him: provision was great and well ordeyned. And for that he wolde be renomed in this voyage he was lyberall, and made great larges to many knyghtes and squyers that shulde go in his bande, for the voyage was longe and costely, wherfore it was nedefull for them to have some ayde towardes their charges. And the other lordes, as the constable of Fraunce, and the erles of Ewe[1] and Marche, the lordes Henry and Phylippe of Bare, the lorde of Coucy, the lorde Guy of Tremoyle, the lorde Johan Vyen admyrall of Fraunce, Boucyquaut marshall of Fraunce, and Raynolde du Roy, the lordes of saynt Powle, of Mutterell and of saynte Pye, the Hasell of Flaunders, the lorde Loys of Frese[2] his brother, le Bourge of Montquell,[3] and other, they were to the nombre of a thousande knyghtes and a thousande squyers, and all valyaunt men. Every man departed fro their owne houses about the myddes of Marche, and so rode forth by companyes, and alwayes they founde the wayes open, for the kynge of Almayne had commaunded through all his realme of Almayne and Boesme, that they shulde have all thynges necessary, and that no vytayle shulde be witholden fro them. These lordes of Fraunce thus rode forwarde to the ayde of the kyng of Hungery, who shulde have batayle with the Great Turke, puyssaunce agaynst puyssaunce, the twenty day of the moneth of May. These lordes passed Lorayne, the countie of Bare, the countie of Mountbelyart and the duchy of Burgoyn, and entred into Ausay,[4] and passed the

[1] *le connestable de France conte d'Eu.*
[2] *Brese* P.
[3] *le borgne de Montcavrel.*
[4] *i.e. Alsace.*

CAP. CCIIII Howe the erle of Ostrevant enterprised to go into Frese.

countrey and the ryver of Ryne, in many places, and the countie of Fierte, and so entered into Austriche, whiche is a great countrey, and the entres and issues stronge, and great desertes. But they went with so good wyll and corage, that payne and traveyle greved them nothyng. The duke of Austriche made capytaynes in his countrey, suche as made the lordes good chere,[1] and specyally to John of Burgoyne, who was chiefe of that army. All these lordes were apoynted to assemble in a cytie in Hungery, called Bode.[2]

[1] *fist aux chiefs des seigneurs en son pays là ou ils se trouvèrent très bonne chière.*

[2] *Buda.*

Nowe let us speke of other maters.

Ye have herde here before howe the kynge of Englande had sente in the same season suffycient ambassade to the Frenche kyng and to his counsayle, to have to his wyfe Isabell the doughter of Fraunce, whiche ambassadours were the archebysshop of Duvelyn, the bysshoppe of Wynchester, the erle Marshall, the erle of Rutlande, sonne to the duke of Yorke, the lorde Henry Clyfforde, the lorde Beamonde, the lorde Spenser, and many other. The Frenche kyng had made them good chere, and all his uncles and counsayls, whiche ambassade were retourned into Englande upon good hope to atayne to their desyres. The kynge of Englande for his parte, all the wynter folowynge, oftentymes sent to the Frenche kynge, consernynge the sayd maters, who was well enclyned to have peace, and to have ende of the warre, whiche had over longe endured. These pursutes and treaties toke suche effect, and the two kynges had writen so solemply eche to other, that their maters drewe nere to a poynte: so that suche ambassadours as were fyrst sent out of England into Fraunce, were than sente agayne, and came to Parys, and were lodged at the crosse of Tyroner, and their men in the streat there aboute. They were to the nombre of syxe hundred. Thus they sojourned at Parys more than thre wekes.

CAP. CCV

Of the judgement made in the parlyament for the quene of Napoles agaynst syr Peter of Craone.

THE same seasone that the Englysshemen were at Paris, quene Jane, duches of Anjowe, who wrote herselfe quene of Napoles and of Jherusalem, was at Parys, and pursued dylygently her busynesse. She was a lady of great corage: she pleted in parlyament for two causes: the fyrst was for the herytage of the countie of Roussey, agaynst the erle of Brayne;[1] for Loys the duke of Anjou, her lorde and husbande, had bought it and payed for it, to a lady that was countesse of Roussey, somtyme wyfe to the lorde Loys of Namure, but afterwarde she was devorsed fro hym for a reasonable cause, as it was sayde. The seconde sute this quene had was agaynst syr Peter of Craon: she demaunded of hym the somme of a hundred thousande frankes, whiche she was redy to prove that he had receyved it in the name of his lorde and mayster, Loys kyng of Napoles, Cysyll and Jherusalem, her husbande, which money was delyvered hym to have payed into Powell.[2] And or it was payed he herde howe his sayd mayster my husbande was deed; than he journeyed no further, but returned agayne into Fraunce, and kept styll the sayd somme of money to his owne profyte, and never made acompte to the sayde quene therof, nor to her chyldren Loys and Charles, but spente and wasted the money in pride and bobbans. The quene layde to his charge that for faute of payment of the sayd money, the realme of Napoles was loste and conquered by Margarete of Duras, and by the heyres of the lorde Charles de la Paix, by reason that suche soudyours as her husbande had to mayntayne his warres in Puell and Calabre, were nat payed their wages, wherby many tourned to the erle of saynt Sevyre, and to Margarete of Duras, and other departed and lefte the warres. All these causes were put into the Parlyament chambre at Parys, where all causes were preposed, shewed, and demaunded, and all the defences and

[1] *Brienne.*

[2] *Apulia.*

CAP. CCV

Of the judgement made in the parlyament for the quene of Napoles agaynst syr Peter of Craone.

aunsweres herde on all partyes. Their plee had endured the space of thre yeres. And though syr Peter of Craon were absent fro the parlyament, yet his advocates defended his cause, and sayd, though he had receyved the sayd somme in the name of his lorde and mayster, yet his mayster was as moche bounde to him as that somme came to and more, for the good servyce that he had done to him. This plee had endured so longe that it was necessary to have a conclusyon, and the lady made importunate sewte to have judgement. The lordes of the parlyament consydred all thynges, and sayd they wolde gyve no judgement, without both parties were present. And syr Peter of Craon durste nat well apere in Parys, bycause of the kynges dyspleasure, and the duke of Orlyance, for the offence that he had doone to syr Olyver of Clysson constable of Fraunce. And without he were present they wolde gyve no sentence defynityve. Wherupon the sayd lady pursewed to set hym clere in Fraunce, and by her meanes he was pardoned, so that he myght ryde and go where he lyst without any daunger, except the sute that was bytwene her and hym for the sayd somme of money. So he was clerely dyscharged of all other charges, and lordes and ladyes made hym good chere: I wote nat whether it were by dissymulacyon or otherwyse. Thus he was agayne at Parys holdynge as great estate as ever he dyd. The same tyme he was apoynted to be one of theym to receyve and bringe the Englysshe ambassadours to the kynge, for he was a knyght that hadde sene moche, and knewe moche honoure. Than the daye was prefyxed that the judgement concernynge the quenes maters shulde be determyned, at whiche day there were present in the parlyament great nombre of the lordes of Fraunce, to the entent that the maters shulde be the more autentyke. There was the quene of Cicyll and Jherusalem, and her sonne Charles, prince of Thaurent, and Johan of Bloys, called Johan of Bretaygne, erle of Ponthyevre and of Lymogynes, and the dukes of Orlyaunce, Berrey, Burgoyne, and Burbone, and the erle of Brayne, and the bysshoppe of Laon; and before theym the lady was herde to laye her tytell for the countie of Roussey. And on the other parte there was syr Peter of Craon, and many

of his lygnage. Fyrste judgement was gyven for the countye of Roussey, and that was, the herytage was remyssed and judged into the handes and possessyon of the erle of Brayne, and to the heyres that shulde dyscende of the ryght braunche of Roussey, reserved that the quene shulde have agayne repayed to her all the money that kynge Loys her husbande hadde payed to the countesse of Roussey laste deed. Of this judgement the enherytours of the countie of Roussey, to whom the herytage pertayned, thanked greatly the lordes of the parliament. Than suche as were ordayned to gyve the seconde sentence arose up and sayde: howe that by the sentence of the parlyament, sir Peter of Craon ought to pay to the quene of Napoles duchesse of Anjowe, the somme of a hundred thousande frankes in redy money, or els his body to go to prysone tyll she were contented and satysfyed. Of this judgement the sayd lady thanked the lordes of the parlyament, and incontynent at the complaynte of the lady, handes was layde on him by the kynges commaundement, and so was ledde to the castell of Loure, and there surely kepte. So the lordes departed fro the parlyament. Thus these two judgementes were gyven by the princypall occasyon of this lady, duchesse of Anjou.

CAP. CCV Of the judgement made in the parlyament for the quene of Napoles agaynst syr Peter of Craone.

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage taken at Parys, bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge: and howe the duke of Lancastre remaryed.

THE ambassadours of Englande were with the Frenche kynge at Parys a xxii. dayes, and they had as good chere as coulde be devysed, and their maters tooke suche effecte, that it was agreed that the kyng of Englande shuld have in maryage Isabell the eldest doughter of kynge Charles: and by vertue of procuracyon the erle Marshall fyaunced and espoused her in the name of the kinge of Englande, and so she was called fro thensforthe

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

quene of Englande. And as I was enformed it was a goodly syght to se her behavour: for all that she was but yonge, ryght plesauntly she bare the porte of a quene. Than all this mater concluded, the Englysshemen tooke their leave of the Frenche kynge and of the quene, and of their doughter quene of Englande, and of all other lordes, and so departed fro Parys, and retourned to Calays, and so into Englande. The kynge and other of his opynyon were glad of their retourne. But who so ever was gladde of that maryage, the duke of Gloucestre, uncle to the kynge, made no joye thereof, for he sawe well that by reasone of that maryage and alyaunce, peace shulde be bytwene the kinges and their realmes, whiche greved hym, without it shulde be greatly to the honour of the kynge and the realme of Englande, and that the Englysshemen myght be in the same case or better in the parties of Gascoyne, as they were or the warres renewed agayne. And of this matter he wolde oftentymes speke with his brother the duke of Yorke, and drewe hym as moche as he coulde to his opynions, for he was but a softe prince: but to the duke of Lancastre his eldest brother he durste nat speke over largely, for he sawe well he was of the kynges opynion, and was well pleased with the kynges maryage, princypally for the love of his two doughters, the quene of Spaygne and the quene of Portugale. The same season the duke of Lancastre remaryed agayne the thyrde tyme, to a lady, doughter to a knyght in Haynalte, called syr Paon of Ruette; he had ben in his tyme with the noble quene Phylyp of Englande, who was of the nacyon of Haynalt: she was called Katheryn, and was brought up in her youthe in the duke of Lancasters howse, with the duchesse Blaunce of Lancastre. And after the dethe of this lady Blaunce, the duke maryed the lady Constaunce of Spaygne, and in her dayes the duke kepte to his concubyne this lady Katheryne of Ruet, who hadde maryed a knyght of Englande, who was as than deed. And the duke had by her thre chyldren, two sonnes and a doughter, the eldest called Johan, otherwyse lorde Beauforde of Lancastre, the duke loved hym entyerly: the other was called Thomas, the duke brought him up at Asque:[1] he was a good clerke and connynge in

[1] *Oxford.*

bothe lawes, he was a great juryst and legyst, and was after bysshoppe of Lyncolne. The duke of Lancastre, for the love he had to his chyldren, he wedded their mother the lady Katheryn of Ruet, wherof there was moche marveyle bothe in Englande and in Fraunce, for she was but of a base lynage, in regarde to the two other wyves. And whan the knowledge of the maryage of the duke to this lady Kateryne of Ruet was come to the great ladyes of Englande, as the duchesse of Gloucestre, the countesse of Derby, the countesse of Arundell, and other ladyes, dyscended of the blode royall of Englande, they marveyled moche, and layd gret blame to the duke for that dede, and sayde, howe the duke of Lancastre was greatly to dysprayse to mary his concubyne; for by reason therof she shulde be the seconde person in honoure in Englande, wherby they sayd the quene shulde be shamefully accompanyed, and sayde, howe surely they wolde nat come into no place where she shulde be presente; and moreover they sayde, it shulde be a great shame for theym, that suche a duchesse, come of so base a blode, and concubyne to the duke in his other wyfes dayes, shulde go and have the preemynence before them: they sayde their hertes shulde breke for sorowe. Bothe the duke of Gloucestre and the duchesse his wyfe spake of this mater, and sayd howe the duke of Lancastre was nat wyse, but fowle oversene to marry his concubyne, and sayde they wolde never do her honoure, nor call her suster. The duke of Yorke passed it over lyghtly ynough, for he was ever lyghtly resydente aboute the kynge and with the duke of Lancastre. The duke of Gloucestre was of another maner, for he sette by no man, though he were yongest brother; he was orgulous and presumptuous of maner, and therto he enclyned his nature, and alwayes agaynst the kynges opynions and his counsaylours. Thus this lady Kateryne of Ruet was duchesse of Lancastre, and was as the seconde persone in Englande, and was moche aboute the kynge, as she that knewe moche honour, for in her youth and all her dayes she had ben brought up therin. And the duke loved greatly the chyldren that he had by her, and that he shewed well in his lyfe and after his dethe.

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

Ye have herde here before howe jugement of the parliament was gyven agaynst syr Peter of Craon, and howe he was condempned in a hundred thousande frankes, to be payed to the quene of Napoles. Whan the sayde syr Peter sawe howe he was condempned he was sore abasshed, for outher he muste paye the somme, or els abyde styll prisoner. Than he was counsayled by the duke of Burgoyne and by the duchesse, that he shulde requyre the yonge quene of Englande to be meane for hym to the quene of Napoles, that he myght be released oute of prysone fyftene dayes to go abrode in Parys, to sewe to his frendes to pay his fynaunce, or els to fynde sureties for him tyll he myght go into Bretaygne to gather amonge his frendes the same somme. So at the desyre of the yonge quene of Englande, the quene of Napoles was contente that he shulde go all the day abrode in Paris, and at nyght alwayes to yelde hymselfe prisoner into the castell of Lowre, and there to remayne all the night. After this rate he went abrode and sewed to many of his blode and frendes, but he coulde fynde none that wolde abyde there prisoner for hym, the somme was so great. And at the ende of the fyftene dayes he was fayne to returne prisoner bothe day and nyght, and was kept streyghter than he was before at his cost and charge.

Nowe lette us a lytell speke of the journey of therle of Nevers, and the lordes of Fraunce, and what they dyd the same sommer in Hungery. And after we shall speke of the goynge into Frese of the erle of Haynalte and the erle of Ostrevaunt. The erle of Nevers and his company, with many valyaunt men that he had of Fraunce, and of other countreys, whan they were come into Hungery into a great cytie called Bode, the kyng of Hungery made them good chere, and well they deserved it, for they were come farre of to se him. The entensyon of the kynge was, that or he sette forwarde with his puyssaunce, and with the ayde of Fraunce to entre into the felde, to here fyrste some newes fro the Great Turke called Lamorabaquy, who had sent hym worde in the moneth of February, that surely he wolde be in Hungery or the ende of the moneth of Maye, and that he wolde passe the water of Dunoe:[1] of whiche message many had great marveyle. And some sayde that there is

[1] *Danube: Dunoe* P. *passim.*

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

in a maner nothynge but that man maye do it, consyderynge that the Turke is valyaunt and puyssaunt, and desyreth moche dedes of armes; therfore sythe he hath said it, by all lykelyhode he wyll do it. And if he passe nat the Dunoe to come hyther to this syde, than lette us passe over and entre into Turkey with puyssaunce: for the kynge of Hungery with suche ayde as he hath of straungers, shall well make an hundred thousande men, and suche a nombre of suche men are well able to conquere all Turkey, and to go into the empyre of Perce. And if we may have one journey of vyctory upon the Great Turke, we shall do after what we lyst, and shall conquere Surey, and all the holy lande of Jherusalem, and shall delyver it fro the handes of the Sodayne and the enemyes of God. For at the sommer nexte commynge, the Frenche kynge and the kynge of Englande, who wyll conjoyne togyther, shall reyse up a great nombre of men of armes and of archers, and shall fynde the passages open to receyve them; than nothyng shall abyde before us, but all shall be conquered and put in oure obeysaunce, whan we shall go all togyther. Thus devysed the Frenchemen that were in the realme of Hungery.

Whan the moneth of May was come, trustynge to here tydynges of Lamorabaquy the Great Turke, the kynge of Hungery sent to the passages of the ryver of Dunoe, and sent throughout his realme to assemble his puissaunce togyder. And the lordes of the Rodes came to hym strongly, and all the moneth of May they taryed for the comyng of the Sarazyns, but no tydynges coulde be herde of them. Than the kynge of Hungery sente suche as knewe the countrey beyonde the ryver of Dunoe, to serche to have some tydynges of the Great Turke. Suche as wente sertched all the countrey beyonde the brase of saynt George,[1] and to the marches of Alexaundre, of Damas, and Antyoche, but they coulde here no newes of Lamorabaquy, nor of none army towarde. Than they retourned and shewed the king what they had herde and sene. Than the kynge assembled his counsayle, and called the lordes of Fraunce, who desyred to do dedes of armes. The kyng shewed them howe he had sente men into Turkey to have knowlege what his enemies dyd, and howe they coulde here no tydinges of

[1] *Hellespont.*

CAP. CCVI
Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

Lamorabaquy, nor no lykelyhode of his aprochyng, for all the promesse he had made to passe the Dunoe, and to entre into Hungery to fight with the Crysten men or mydde May shulde passe, wherfore the kynge demaunded what counsayle they wolde gyve hym to do. Than the lorde of Coucy for all the other, sayd: Syr, though Lamorabaquy come nat forwarde acordynge to his promesse, and maketh but a jape therof, yet that ought nat to lette us to do dedes of armes, and to pursue our enemyes, seynge we be assembled to that purpose. Thus all the Frenchmen, Almayns, and other straungers, shewed well howe they had great desyre to seke out Lamorabaquy to fyght with him, whiche was to their great honour. The lorde of Coucyes wordes were affyrmed by all the straungers: it was all their opynyons howe they coulde enploye their season and tyme no better. Than it was ordeyned by the kynge and by his marshalles, that every man shulde prepare hymselfe to be redy to sette forwarde at a daye assygned, whiche was the utas of saynt Johan the Baptyst. Than offycers and other servauntes aparelled for their maisters all thynges necessary, and the Frenchemen thynkynge to be fresshe and gay spared nouther golde nor sylver. Their departure fro Bode, the soveraygne cytie of Hungery, was goodly to regarde. The constable of Hungery had the vowarde, with a great nombre of Hungaryons and Almayns with him, bycause he knewe the countreys; and nexte after hym rode the Frenchemenne with the constable of Fraunce, the erle de la Marche, the lorde of Coucy, syr Henry and syr Phylyppe of Bare, and dyvers other. And with the kynge rode the great lordes of his countrey, as reasone was, and besyde the kyng rode Johan of Burgoyne, and oftentymes devysed with the kyng: they were in the felde a threscore thousande horse, they hadde but fewe a foote, savynge suche as were folowers. The company of the Crysten men were noble and well ordred, and of Hungery there were many crosebowes a horsebacke. The army journeyed so longe that they came to the ryver of Dunoe, and passed over in shyppes and barges, and suche bridges as they had ordeyned for that purpose: it was eight dayes or they were all passed over, and as they passed they lodged theym, every company taryenge for other. This

ryver of Dunoe departeth the realmes of Hungery and Turkey asonder.

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

Whan the Cristen men were all over, and nothynge taryed behynde, and were in the fronters of Turkey, they greatlye rejoysed and desyred greatly to do dedes of armes. There they toke counsayle, and determyned to go and ley siege to a towne in Turkey, called Conjecte. And as they ordayned so they dyde, and besieged it as they myght well do, for it stode in a playne countrey, and a ryver joynynge to it with shyppes theron, called Mecte,[1] the heed commynge out of Turkey, and fallynge into the see at the ryver of Dunoe. The ryver of Dunoe is a great ryver of thre hundred myles[2] in length, fro the begynnynge tyll it entre into the see, whiche were the moost profytable ryver in all the worlde for the realme of Hungry, if the shyppes that be theron myght issue out therof into the see. But they can nat: for in the mouthe therof, whan they shulde issue into the see, there is in the ryver a mountayne whiche departeth the ryver in two partes, and maketh suche brute and noyse, that it maye well be herde sevyn myle of, and for that cause there is no shyppe that dare aproche nere to it. Alonge by this ryver syde there be fayre medowes and pastures, wherby all the countrey is well served, and dyvers vynes, whiche in seasone make good wynes, whiche the Turkes do make and putte into goot skynnes, and selleth it unto Christen men. For accordyng to their lawe they dare drinke no wyne to be knowen, it is defended them on payne of lyfe. But they eate the reysynges, and they have other good frutes and spyces, wherof they make drinke, and use greatly to drinke gootes mylke, whiche refressheth theym in the hote season. Thus the kynge of Hungry and his hoost lodged before the cytie of Conjecte at their ease and pleasure, for no manne troubled their siege. And whan they came before the cytie they founde the frutes rype, the whiche was great pleasure to them. They made to this cytie dyvers assautes, and they within defended themselfe, trustyng dayly to have ayde and socour of Lamorabaquy their lorde, to reyse the siege with puyssaunce: but he dyde nat, wherby the cytie was taken by force of assaute, and distroyed with great slaughter of men, women, and chyldren,

[1] *Timok.*

[2] *quatre cens lieues.*

CAP. CCVI
Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

for the Christen men that entred hadde no mercy nor pytie. Whane this cytie was thus wonne, the kyng of Hungry dislodged and wente forwarde into Turkey, and was determyned to go and ley siege to a great cytie called Nicopoly. And as they rode they founde in their waye the towne of Quayre, and layde siege to it fyftene dayes or it was won, but finallye it was won by assaute, and clene distroyed. And so passed forthe; and in their waye they founde another towne and a stronge castell, called Brehappe, and a knyght of Turkey was lorde therof, and was within the castell to defende it. The kyng and his army were lodged within a myle where was a fayre ryver, and about the towne there was none. There the erle of Nevers was made knight and reysed his banner, and with hym were made mo than thre hundred knyghtes, and all they and their companies went before Brehap, and besieged it, and wan the towne perforce within four dayes, but nat the castell, it was so strong. The lorde of Brehap saved moche of his people by force of the castell, who was called Corbodas, a right valyant knyght, and he had other thre bretherne, one named Maladius, another Balachius, and the thirde Rufyn. After this towne was won, the Christen men were before the castell sevyn dayes, and made dyvers assautes, but they loste more than they wanne. The foure knyghtes bretherne that were within shewed well by their defence that they were valyant men. Whan the Frenchemen hadde consydred well the force of the castell, and the valyaunt ordringe of the Turkes within, and the defence that they made, they sawe well thane they loste their payne, and so dislodged, for they had knowledge howe the kyng of Hungry wolde go and laye siege to the stronge towne of Nicopolye. Thus the siege before Brehap brake up, and they within the castell were in peace, but the towne was clene brent. Than the erle of Nevers, and all the lordes of France resorted to the kynges armye, ordring themselfe to go to Nicopoly.

Whane Corbodas of Brehappe sawe the siege brokenne up, he was right joyfull, and sayde to his company: We nede no more to fere this season, though my towne be brent and exiled, I shall right well recover it agayne. But of one thynge I marveyle greatly, and that is, that I can here no

newes fro my lorde the kyng Besant, called Lamorabaquy. For the last tyme that I sawe hym in the cytie of Nicopoly, he sayde unto me, that this May tyme he wolde be in this countrey, and had entencyon to passe with a great puyssaunce the brase of saynt George, and to go into Hungry to fight with the Christen men, and so he sent worde to the kyng of Hungry, and yet he hath done nothyng. And therupon they of Hungry be fortifyed, and have as nowe great socour out of Fraunce, and have passed the ryver of Dunoe, and are entred into Turkey, and have and do distroye the countre, for there is no resistence made against them, and they thinke surely to go and lay siege before Nicopoly. The cytie is stronge ynoughe to resyst the siege a longe season, if it be well defended and kepte; we are here four bretherne and knyghtes of the lynage of kynge Besant: we ought and are bounde to defende his ryght, therfore lette us ordre oureselfe as I shall shewe you. I and my brother Maladyus, we shall go to the cytie of Nicopoly, to ayde to helpe and defende it, and my brother Balachyus shall abyde here to kepe this castell of Brehap, and my brother Rufyne shall passe the brase of saynt George, and go seke out Lamorabaquy, and shewe him every thynge that is past and done, and advyse hym for his honoure to entende to defende his herytage, and to come with suche puyssaunce that maye resyst the Christen men, and to breke their purpose, or els he shall lese the realme of Armony, whiche he hath conquered, and his owne countrey also. For by all ymagynacyon the kynge of Hungry, and the Christen men are gadered to thentent to do some great enterprice. His thre bretherne agreed to his sayeng. On this apoyntment they prepared themselfe to departe.

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

So in this season siege was laid before Nicopolye. And Corbodas of Brehappe, and Maladyus his brother, came and entred into Nicopoly, wherof they of the cytie were ryght joyfull, and Balachyus abode styll at Brehappe to kepe the castell. And Rufyn whan he sawe tyme, be nyght he passed the Christen army, for he knewe well the countre, and passed over the brase saynt George, and serched for Lamorabaquy. And the same season he was at Quayre,[1] with the Soudane of Babylone, to have ayde of men of hym.

[1] *Cairo.*

CAP. CCVI
Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

Rufyn founde this Turke there; and whan kynge Besant sawe hym he had marveyle, and thought surely he shulde here some newes out of Turkey. Thane he demaunded what tidynges. Sir, quod Rufyn, all the countrey desyreth sore to se you there, for the kyng of Hungry with puissaunce hath passed the ryver of Dunoe, and is entred into Turkey, and hath done great dommage, and hath brent and assayled a fyve or sixe of your closed townes; and whan I departed fro Brehappe, he was in purpose to go and leye siege to Nicopoly. Corbodas and Maladyus my brother, with suche men of warre as they have, are entred into Nicopoly to helpe to defende the towne, and my brother Balachyus is styll at Brehappe, to kepe the castell there. And sir, of a suretie there is in the company with the kynge of Hungry, the goodlyest armye and best apoynted come out of Fraunce that ever was sene. Wherfore, sir, it behoveth you to assemble your hoost and frendes, and retourne into Turkey, to cause your enemyes to retourne agayne over the ryver of Dunoe; and ye do it nat with gret puyssaunce, it wyll be harde to bring it about. What nombre be they, quod Lamorabaquy? Sir, quod he, they be mo than a hundred thousande, and the goodlyest men of the worlde, and best armed, and all on horsbacke. Lamorabaquy gave none answere, but entred into the Soudans chambre, and shewed the Soudane all the hole mater, as his knyght had shewed hym. Than the Soudane sayd: We must provyde for it, ye shall have men ynowe to resyst them. Nedes we muste defende our lawe and our herytage. That is true sir, quod Lamorabaquy. Nowe my desyres arre come to passe, for I have alwayes desyred none other thynge, but that the kynge of Hungry with his puissaunce myght ones come over the ryver of Dunoe, and entre into Turkey. In the begynnynge I wyll suffre a season, but at the ende they shall paye for the scotte. Of all this I hadde knowledge four monethes paste, by my great frende the lorde of Myllayne, who sente me goshaukes, gerfaucons, and faucons, to the nombre of xii. whiche were the best and fayrest that ever I sawe. And with this present he wrote to me by name, all the heedes and chiefe capitayns of the barones of Fraunce, suche as shulde come to make me warre; in the whiche letters was

also conteyned, that if I myght get them in my daunger, they shulde be worthe to me a myllyon of floreyns; and also howe there shulde be in their company of the lymytes of Fraunce, mo than fyve hundred knightes, valyaunt men of armes. Also the duke of Myllaygne wrote, that surely they wyll gvve me batayle: wherfore I wyll prepare to mete with them by arte, advise, and good ordynaunce, for they are men of great feate and so valiaunt in armes, that they wyll nat flye nor recule; they are worthy of thanke to issue out of their owne nacyon by valyauntnesse to fynde dedes of armes; and I truste to accomplysshe their desyres within thre monethes, so that they shall have ynoughe to do.

CAP. CCVI
Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

To consydre these wordes, one ought greatly to marveyle that the lorde Galeas, erle of Vertues and duke of Myllayne, who was reputed to be a Christen man, baptysed and regenerate after the Christen lawe, wolde seke or requyre love or alyaunce with a kynge myscreant, out of our lawe and faythe, or to sende hym gyftes and presentes, as he dyde every yere, as dogges, haukes, and fyne lynen clothes, whiche are ryght plesaunt to the Sarazins, for they have none but that cometh fro our parties: also the Great Turke sent to hym agayne other presentes of ryche clothe of golde and precyous stones, wherof the Sarazins have great plentie. But in those dayes the erle of Vertues, duke of Myllayne, and sir Galeas his father, reygned as tyrantes, and so helde their signories.

It is marveyle to thynke of their dedes, and fyrste howe they entred and opteygned the signorie of Myllayne. So it was there were thre bretherne, the lorde Manfres,[1] the lorde Galeas, and the lorde Barnabo; they hadde an uncle, who was archebysshoppe of Myllayne. And so it fortuned that whan the lorde Charles of Lusenbourge, kyng of Boesme and of Almayne, and emperour of Rome, who reigned after kyng Loyes of Bavyer, who opteygned to the empire by force, for he was never taken as emperour by the churche, but excommunycate and acursed by pope Innocent, who reygned as thane: for this Loyes of Bavyer went to Rome, and made hymselfe to be crowned emperour by a Pope and xii. Cardynalles that he made; and as soone as he was crowned he made the Almayns, to be payed their wages,

[1] *Matteo.*

CAP. CCVI
Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

to overryn Rome, and to robbe and to pyll it. This was the rewarde that the Romayns had for receyvyng of hym, wherfore he dyed excommunicat and in that sentence. The Pope and Cardynalles that he made, without any constreynt came after to Avignon, and submytted themselfes to pope Innocent, who reigned before Urbayne the fyfthe, and there were assoyled of their errours.

Nowe to purpose howe the lordes of Myllayne came fyrste to that signorie, I shall shewe you howe.

So it was, the archebysshoppe of Myllayne at a tyme receyved kynge Charles of Boesme, emperour, into the cytie of Myllayne nobly and tryumphantlye, after the emperour had been before Axe the Chapell, and had accomplysshed there his xl. dayes, accordyng to the usage in the case parteyning. And for the great chere that he made to the emperour, and for a hundred thousande ducates that he lent to the emperour, he made the bysshop vycount of Myllayne, and his nephewes after hym for ever, to holde the lande and signorie of Mylayne free at his wyll, unto the tyme that the emperour hadde payde agayne at one tyme the sayd somme of a hundred thousande ducates. And so after the bysshoppe dyed; and the lorde Manfres his nephue, by the accorde of the emperour and for love of his uncle was receyved into the signorie of Myllayne. Than his two bretherne, who as than were nat very riche, the lorde Galeas and the lorde Barnabo, counsayled toguyder and determyned to reigne, and to holde the landes of Lombardy bytwene them, and to conjoyne them by mariage to some great lordes to maynteyne their estates, and to cause men to feare their displeasures. And so they caused their brother Manfrese to be slayne by venyme or otherwyse, after whose dethe they reygned puissauntly by force and polycy. All their dayes they lyved in good accorde toguyder, and departed the cyites of Lombardy bytwene them. The lorde Galeas hadde tenne, bycause he was the eldest, and the lorde Bernabo nyne; and the cytie of Myllayne was governed one yere by the one brother and another yere by the other brother: and to the entent to reigne puissauntly, they sought the wayes to gader great rychesse by raysinge up in possessyons, subsydies, and gabelles, and many other yvell customes, wherby

they gadered great store of golde and sylver. And they caused their townes and cyties to be kepte with soudyours straungers, as Almaygnes, Frenchemen, Bretons, Englysshmen, and of all other nacyons, excepte their owne countreymen, for they hadde no trust nor affiaunce in them, for feare of rebellyon agaynst them. And these soudyours were payed fro moneth to moneth, wherby they were so douted and fered of the people, that none durste displease them, for if any dyd ryse or dyde any thyng agaynst them, there was cruell vengeaunce taken upon them. They distroyed many a one in their dayes, to gyve ensample to other.

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

In all their signories no man hadde any thynge but atte their pleasure: they wolde tayle a ryche man thre or foure tymes in a yere. They sayd that Lombardes were over proude and presumptuous in their richesse, wherfore it was behovable to kepe them under subjection; no man durst saye nay to any thyng that they commaunded.

These two bretherne maryed them hyghlye, and bought their wyves with the goodes and substaunce of their people. The lorde Galeas hadde to wyfe the suster of the good erle of Savoye, named Blaunche, and payde to the erle for her a hundred thousande ducates. The lorde Barnabo maryed hym in Almaygne to the suster of the duke of Bresvyche, and payde no lesse money than his brother dyd. These two bretherne hadde many chyldren, and maryed them highly and richelye, to atteyne therby great alyaunces. The lorde Galeas had a sone called Galleas. And as than the father understode that whan kynge Johan of Fraunce was come out of Englande, and put to raunsome to xxx. C. thousand frankes, and they of Fraunce wyst nat howe to reyse the fyrste payment, thane he treated with the Frenche kynge and his counsayle to have one of his doughters for Galeas his sonne. The kynge and his counsayle entended to this treatie, bycause they knewe well this lorde Galeas was grounded in richesse, and thus he bought the kynges doughter for sixe hundred thousand frankes, whiche were tourned in payment to the kynge of Englande. And so his sonne maryed kynge Johans doughter, and to hym was gyven the countie and erldome of Vertues in Champaygne. Of that sonne and doughter issued a doughter, whiche by

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

force of golde and sylver was maryed to the seconde sonne of kynge Charles of Fraunce, called Loyes duke of Orlyaunce, erle of Bloyes and Valoyes. The maryage cost the erle of Vertus, father to the sayde lady, tenne hundred thousande frankes. And the countie of Bloyes was bought of the erle Guye of Bloyes, as it hath ben conteyned here before in this hystorie. Thus these lordes, Galeas and Barnabo, acorded right well toguyder all their lyve dayes; they never varyed nor their people toguyder, therfore they reigned in great puissaunce. No man coude have reason nor right of them, Pope, Cardynalles, nor other, that made any warre agaynst them, savyng alonely the marques of Mountferant: and that was by the meanes of the lorde Johan Hacon[1] and the Englysshemen with the routes of the companyons, whiche Johan Hacon brought them out of Provynce into Lombardy, and made there great warre.

[1] *Hawkwood.*

Than at last dyed this lorde Galeas, and after hym reigned his sonne erle of Vertues, named Galeas, in great puyssaunce. And at the begynnyng of his reigne he gate him great love in Lombardy, and ordred hymselfe after a goodly maner, and like a wyse man: he put downe all suche yvell customes as his father had reysed in Lombardy; he was so well beloved and of so good renome, that every man sayd well of hym; but at laste whane he sawe his tyme, he spytted out his venyme, whiche he had longe borne in his hert: for he made on a day in the feldes a great busshement, wherby the lorde Bernabo his uncle was taken, who thought none yvell, nor knewe nat but that he was welbeloved and in great favour with his nephue. And at his takyng it was sayd to hym: One lorde is ynough to reygne in Lombardy. He coude have none other grace, for it laye nat in hym as thane to make resystence: so he was ledde to a castell, and there his nephue caused hym to dye, but in what maner I can nat shewe you. This sir Bernabo had two fayre chyldren, of whom the Frenche quene was doughter to one of his doughters, whiche was wedded to the duke of Ostrevaunt of Bavyere.[2] This Galeas putte in prisone all his uncles chyldren, suche as he coulde gette, and tooke possessyon of all his uncles seignories, and joyned them to his owne, and so reigned in great puyssaunce and richesse:

[2] *Estienne de Baviere.*

for he reysed up suche maters, wherby he gathered toguyder great rychesse, as imposycions, gabels, subsydies, dysmes, and all other extorcyons, wherby he was moche more dreed than beloved. He helde the errour and opynyon of his father; that was howe one shulde nother honoure nor worshyppe God: he tooke fro abbeyes and priories moche of their revenewes, and toke them to hymselfe: he sayd the monkes were to delyciously norisshed with good wynes and delycious metes; by whiche superfluyteis, he sayd, they coude nat ryse at mydnight, nor do their servyce as they shulde do: he sayde, saynt Benet helde nat the order of his relygion after that maner; and so, he said, he wolde make them to lyve with egges and small wyne, to clere their voyces to syng the higher. These lordes in their dayes lyved lyke popes; they dyde great dispytes in their tyme to men of holy churche; they sette nothyng by the Popes curse, and specially after the cisme began, and that there was two popes; that the one cursed, the other assoyled. The lordes of Myllayne dyde but mocke at their doynges, and so dyd many other lordes through the worlde. The doughter of this lorde Galeas, duke of Myllayne, was duches of Orlyaunce, whose condycions were lyke to her fathers and nat to her mothers, who was doughter to kyng Johan of Fraunce. This lady was of high mynde, envyous and covytous on the delytes and state of this worlde: gladly she wolde have sene the duke her husbande to have attaygned to the crowne of Fraunce, she had nat cared howe. A generall fame and sclaunder ran upon her, that all the infyrmiteis the kyng had, which no phisycion coude remedye, came all by her sortes and artes: and the chiefe discoverynge of her workes, wherby she was had in great suspecte, was this.

CAP. CCVI
Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

This duchesse of Orlyaunce, named Valantyne, had a sonne by the duke her husbande, a fayre chylde of the age of the dolphyn, sonne to the kynge. On a tyme these two chyldren were playeng toguyder in the duchesse of Orlyaunce chambre, and sodaynly there was caste downe an apple full of poyson on the pavement, on the same syde that the dolphyn was on, to thentent that he shulde have taken and eaten it. But as grace was he dyd nat, for the duches sone

CAP. CCVI

Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

ran after the apple and toke it, and ete therof, wherwith he was poysoned and dyed, nothynge coude save hym. And suche as hadde Charles the yong dolphyn to kepe, toke hym thens, and he never came after in the duches chambre. Of this adventure great brute and murmuracyon ran throughe all the cytie of Parys and in other places. Thus it was sayde by her of all the people, so that the duke her husbande parceyved it well, for brute ranne through Parys, that if her husbande dyde nat putte her awaye out of the kynges courte, they wolde fetche her awaye by force, and cause her to dye. For the people said she wolde enpoyson the kyng and his chyldren, and that she hadde enchaunted the kyng. For the kyng in all his infyrmyteis wolde nat se the quene, nor none other woman, but all onlye this duchesse of Orlyaunce. Upon whiche sayeng, and for doute therof, her husbande had her awaye, and put her out of the house of saynt Poule in Parys, and sente her to a castell besyde Parys upon the waye of Beauvoyes, called Asnyers. And there she was kepte a longe season, and never wente out of the castell; and at last she was sent fro thens to Newcastell on the ryver of Loyre. And the duke of Orlyaunce had great displeasure to her, bycause of the adventure of the dethe of his son; but by reason that he had other chyldren by her, somwhat it brake his displeasure. These tidynges came to Myllayne, and the lorde Galeas was enfourmed howe his doughter was in trouble and in great daunger, wherof he was sore displeased with the Frenche kyng and his counsayle. Than he sent a suffycient messanger, as sir Jaquemont of Weryne[1] and other, to Parys to the kyng and his counsayle, in excusyng his doughter, sayeng, that if any persone wolde accuse her of trayson, he shulde be fought withall at utteraunce in that quarell. Whan these messangers came to Parys, the kynge was in good helth, but he tooke no hede of those messangers, nor of their excuse; and so they were shortely aunswered nothyng to their pleasure: so they retourned into Lombardy, and declared to the duke of Myllayne all that they had sene and done. Than the duke was in gretter displeasure than he was before, and reputed it a great injury, and than sent his defyaunce to the Frenche kynge, and to all the hole realme of Fraunce. And whan his

[1] *Verme.*

defyaunces were brought to Parys, the lordes and knightes with the Frenche armye were as than in Hungry, and entred into Turkey. And for the dispyte and hate that the duke of Myllayne had to the Frenche kyng and to some of his counsayle, therfore he helde in amyte and alyaunce the Great Turke, and shewed hym of the secretes of Fraunce.

CAP. CCVI Of the conclusyon of the maryage bytwene the kynge of Englande, and Isabell eldest doughter to the Frenche kynge.

Nowe we shall leave spekynge of the duke, and speke of the Great Turke and of the barons of Fraunce, and of other Christen knyghtes, that were as than in Turkey.

CAP. CCVII

Howe the Great Turke desyred the Soudan, and many other kynges Sarazyns, to ayde hym with menne of warre, to resyst agaynst the Christen men; and howe many valyant Sarazyns came to hym out of farre countreis.

IT was nat longe after but that the Great Turke departed fro Quayre fro the Soudan, who promysed to sende hym shortely great ayde of the best men of armes of all his signories, to resyst agaynst the puissaunce of the kynge of Hungry and the Frenchemen. And the Great Turke sente into all realmes and countreis, where as he thought to have any ayde and socour. For he consydred and sayd, that if the Frenchemen conquered Turkey, all other realmes adjoyning shulde trimble for feare of them, and therby their faythe and beleve shulde decaye, and become under the subjection of the Christen men, whiche they had rather dye. And thus at the desyres of the Soudan and the Great Turke, many kynges Sarazyns enclyned unto their desyres, as in Perce, in Mede, and in Trace, and also out of the Septentryon, and out of the realme of Lecto,[1] and to the boundes of Pruce. And for asmoch as they were enformed that their enemyes the Christen men were flour of chivalry, these kynges Sarazins and other lordes of their lawe dyd chuse out among them the best traveylynge and experte men of armes in all their

[1] *Lithuania.*

CAP. CCVII Howe the Great Turke desyred the Soudan, and many other kynges Sarazyns, to ayde hym with menne of warre.

countreis. This assembly coude nat be sodaynly done, nor their purvyaunces so soone done. The Great Turke set hymselfe forwardes into the felde, alwayes abyding for his people that came to hym fro farre countreis, and specially out of Tartary, Mede and Perce. There assembled many valyant Sarazins out of all countreis; they were desyrous to prove their strengthes agaynst the Christen men.

Nowe lette us speke of the Christen men beyng before Nicopolye.

CAP. CCVIII

Howe the lorde of Coucy and other lordes of the Christenmen, about a v. hundred speares, disconfited a fyftene thousande Turkes, duryng the siege before Nicopoly.

THEY that were besiege within the strong towne of Nycopolye defended themselfe right valyantly; howbeit, they were sore abasshed that they herde no tydinges fro the Great Turke. The Emperour of Constantyne the noble had written unto them that he was in the parties of Alexandre, and was nat as than passed the brase saynt George. So the Crysten men helde their syege styll before Nycopoly: they had vytayles plentye and good chepe, that came out of Hungery and other marches nere adjoynynge. And on a day the lorde Coucy and other Frenchemen tooke pleasure to ryde forthe at adventure to go se the countrey further in. So they departed fro the siege about the nombre of fyve hundred speares and as many crosbowes and archers, all horsemen. The lorde Coucy was capytayne of that journey, and the lorde Raynolde of Roye, and the lorde of saynt Pye in his company, and the Chateleyne of Beavoyre, the lorde of Mount Caurell, and the Bourge[1] of Mountquell, with dyvers other; and they had guydes with them suche as knewe the countrey, and they had certayne foreryders well mounted to discover the countrey before them. The same weke there was an armye of the Turkes assembled togyther to the nombre of twenty

[1] *borgne.*

thousande men, for they were enfourmed howe the Chrysten men were abrode dystroyenge their countrey; in resystence therof, they assembled togyder and came to a strayte whiche the Crysten men must passe, and they wolde entre into the playne of Turkey, and they coude nat well entre no waye. And there the Turkes taryed a two dayes and coude here no tydynges of the Crysten menne, and so the thyrde daye they thought to have retourned. Than the Crysten mennes foreryders came to Brechault, nere where the Turkes were; and whan the Turkes saw them aproche they stode styll close togyther, to se the dealynge of the Cristen men, and made no token nor sygne to skrymysshe with them. These Cristen men aproched nere to the Turkes, and sawe well they were a great nombre, and yet they coulde nat advyse them all. And whan they had well avewed them they reculed backe, and came to the lorde Coucy, and shewed hym what they had sene; of whiche newes the Crysten men were ryght joyfull, and the lorde of Coucy said: It is mete that we go and se theym more nerer: sythe we be come so farre forwarde, we shall nat departe without fyghtynge with them; if we shulde, it shall be to our blame and great rebuke. That is true, quod all the other knyghtes that herde hym. Than every man prepared hymselfe and his horse and rode towarde the place where the Turkes were; and bytwene them and the Turkes there was a lytell wode. Whan the Crysten men came to the wode syde, the lorde of Coucy said to the lorde Raynolde of Roy, and to the lorde of saynt Pye: Syrs, myne advyse is, to the entent to drawe the Turkes out of their strength, that ye two shall take two hundred of our speares, and I with the rest wyll abyde here in this wode: and ryde ye so nere them that ye may cause them to come out, and than retourne you, and suffre them to chase you tyll ye be paste us in this wode, and than sodaynly tourne upon them, and we shall close theym in behynde, and so we shall have them at our wyll. To this advyse all the knightes enclyned. Than two hundred of them that were best horsed rode forthe, and the rest, who were an eyght hundred, enbusshed themselfe covertly in the wode, and there taryed. The other rode forthe, and came to the place where the Turkes were. Whan they sawe the Crysten men come, they were

CAP. CCVIII

Howe the lorde of Coucy and other lordes of the Christenmen, about a v. hundred speares, discomfited a fyftene thousande Turkes.

CAP. CCVIII

Howe the lorde of Coucy and other lordes of the Christenmen, about a v. hundred speares, disconfited a fyftene thousande Turkes.

ryght joyouse, wenynge there had been no mo, and so came out of their holdes into the playne feldes. And whan the Crysten men sawe tyme they turned and fled, and made the Turkes to chase them: they were so well horsed, that the Turkes coulde nat overtake them, and they chased so longe that they passed the wode where as the enbusshement was. Whan the Turkes were passed the Crysten men issued out, and cryed: Our Lady be with the lorde of Coucy: and so dasshed in behynde them and made great occision. The Turkes helde them close togyther, whan they sawe how they were beset before and behynde, and dyd put themselfe to defence as well as they myght, but they kept none ordre, for they were nat ware of the reregarde: and whan they sawe themselfe so sodaynly sette on they were abasshed. The Frenchemen dyd quyte themselfe lyke valyaunte men of armes, and slewe the Turkes at their pleasure in their flyenge: there were many slayne, the Chrysten men toke none to mercy; happy were they that coulde escape and retourne fro thens as they came. And than the Cristen men that had done that dede retourned to their hoost before Nycopoly. Than tydynges ran over all the hoost, howe the lorde of Coucy by his wysdome and valyauntnesse had dyscomfyted mo than xv. thousande Turkes. Many spake well therof, but the erle of Ewe praysed nothing his dede, sayenge howe it was doone but by pride, and howe that he had put the Crysten men, and specyally his bande, in great adventure and parell, sayenge, that with an handefull of men he fought folysshely with the route of twenty thousande Turkes; he shulde rather, seynge he was in wyl to do dedes of armes, and that the Turkes were on the felde, have gyven knowlege before he assayled his enemyes to his hed capitayne the lorde Johan of Burgoyne, that he myght have had the renome and honour of that enterprise. Besemynge, the erle of Ewe spake those wordes by envy that he had to the lorde of Coucy, for all that voyage he had no love to him, bycause he sawe how the lorde of Coucy had the love and favour of all his company and of other straungers, whiche he deserved ryght well to have, for he was ryght nere of the Frenche kynges blode, and bare in his armes floure de lyces, and also he was constable of Fraunce.

Thus there engendred a great hate and yvell wyll covertly bytwene the erle of Ewe and the lorde Coucy, whiche hatred at last apered clerely, wherby great myschefe fell the same seasone upon the Crysten men, as ye shall here after.

CAP. CCVIII Howe the lorde of Coucy and other lordes of the Christenmen, about a v. hundred speares, disconfited a fyftene thousande Turkes.

Nowe we shall leave to speke any more at this tyme of this mater, and retourne to speke of the kynges of Englande and of Fraunce.

CAP. CCIX

Howe the peace bytwen Englande and Fraunce contynued; and of the maryage of the kynge of Englande with the doughter of Fraunce.

YE have herde here before of the mariage of the French kynges doughter with the kynge of Englande, the whiche tyme aproched nere, and bothe parties well wyllynge, excepte duke Thomas of Gloucestre; he was nothynge joyfull therof, for he sawe well that by that maryage there shulde be great confyderacyons and alyaunces bytwene the two kynges and their realmes to lyve in peace, whiche he was lothe to se, for he desyred rather to have warre. The same season the duke had aboute hym a knyght called syr Johan Baquegay,[1] a secrete man, and he set alwayes the duke to have warre. The same seasone also the duke of Guerles came into Englande to se the kynge and his uncles, and offred hymselfe to do any lawfull servyce to the kynge that he myght do; he was bounde therto by faythe and homage, and he wolde gladly that the kynge shulde have had warre rather than peace. This duke and the duke of Lancastre had great communycacyon togyder of the voyage that the erle of Haynalt and the erle of Ostrevaunt his sonne wolde make into Frese. The same tyme Fyerebrase of Vertayne was in Englande, sente thyder fro the erle of Ostrevant to gette men of armes and archers to go in that voyage to Frese. The erle of Derby was desyred to go in that voyage, in aydinge of his cosyns of Heynalt. The gentle erle hadde therto good affectyon, and

[1] *Lakingeth.*

CAP. CCIX
Howe the peace bytwen Englande and Fraunce contynued.

sayde howe he wolde ryght gladly go in that voyage, so that it pleased the kynge and his father. Whan the duke of Guerles came fyrst into Englande, the duke of Lancastre demaunded of him what he thought of that voyage into Frese. He aunswered and sayd, that it was a parylous voyage, and that Frese was a countrey nat lyghtly to be wonne; sayenge, howe in tymes past there had been dyvers erles of Holande and Heynalte that have claymed their right there, and gone thyder to have put them in subjectyon, but they have always loste their lyves there, affyrmynge howe the Fresons are people without honour, and have no mercy; they prayse nor love no lorde in the worlde, they be so proude; and also their countrey is stronge, for they be envyroned with the see, and closed in with isles, rockes, and marysshes, no man can tell howe to governe them but themselfe. I have ben desyred to go in that voyage, but I wyll nat, and I counsayle my cosyn your sonne the erle of Derby nat to entre into that voyage; it is no journey for hym. I thynke my fayre brother of Ostrevant wyll go, for he hath great desyre therto, and wyll have a bande of Haynowayes with hym; it shall be an adventure if ever they retourne. Whiche wordes caused the duke of Lancastre to thynke that his sonne shulde nat go in that voyage, and so shewed his sonne his entente, and badde hym delaye that mater, for the kyng nor he wolde nat that he shulde go. Thus the duke of Guerles dyd lette the ayde that the erle of Haynalte shulde have had of the erle of Derby. Many thought it was nat well counsayled, nor yet for none of their honours. The duke of Guerles all his lyfe naturally was envyous, presumptuous, and proude. Yet for all that Fierebrase of Vertayne lette nat his sute to gette ayde, and dyd so his dyligence that he gate knightes and squyers and a two hundred archers. But the erle of Derby excused himselfe, whiche excuse he was fayne to take in gree, and sawe well that his wyll was good to go, if the kynge and his father had nat been. Than the kynge, for the avauncement of his cosyns of Haynalte, made to be ordeyned in the ryver of Thamyse vesselles and shyppes for the men that shulde go in that voyage of Frese, to aryve at Encuse,[1] a towne in the countie of Haynalt, at the entre into Holande. This

[1] *Enkhuizen.*

towne standeth on the see, within twelve leages by water of the realme of Frese.

CAP. CCIX
Howe the peace bytwen Englande and Fraunce contynued.

The same season was sente into Englande fro the Frenche kynge, the erle Valeran of saynt Powle, with certayne artycles concernynge the treatie of the peace, and with him was sent Robert the Hermyte, whome the kynge of Englande was gladde to here speke. The erle of saint Powle founde the kynge of Englande and his bretherne, the erles of Brenne[1] and of Huntyngdon, and the duke of Lancastre, the kynges uncle, at the manour of Eltham. The kynge receyved him joyously, and herde well his message, and sayd to hym aparte: Fayre brother of saynt Powle, as to the treatie of peace bytwene me and my fayre father of Fraunce, I am right well enclyned therto, but I all alone canne nat promote that mater. True it is my bretherne and my two uncles of Lancastre and Yorke enclyne ryght well therto; but I have another uncle, the duke of Gloucestre, who is ryght paryllous and a marveylous man: he letteth it as moche as he can, and dothe what he canne to drawe the Londoners to his opynyon: I feare me to make a rebellyon in my realme, and that he shulde reyse the people agaynst me, whiche is a great paryll. For if the people of Englande ryse agayne agaynst me, and have myne uncle of Gloucestre on their parte, and suche other barones and knyghtes of the realme as be of his opynion, my realme were loste without remedy, for myne uncle of Gloucestre is so secrete that no man canne knowe his mynde. Syr, quod the erle of saint Powle, it behoveth you to wynne hym with fayre, swete, and lovynge wordes, and gyve hym great gyftes; if he demaunde any thyng, graunt it him: this is the way wherby ye shall wynne him; ye must flatter hym tyll the peace be made, and that ye have your wyfe brought hyther to you, and that doone than ye maye take other counsayle; ye shall be than of the puyssaunce to oppresse all your rebelles, for the Frenche kynge, if nede be, shall ayde you; of this ye maye be sure. In the name of God, ye saye well, and thus shall I do.

[1] *Kent.*

The erle of saynt Powle was lodged at London, and oftentymes went to Eltham to se the kynge and the duke of Lancastre, and had oftentymes communycacion on this

CAP. CCIX
Howe the peace bytwen Englande and Fraunce contynued.

maryage. Therle of saint Poule sayde howe the Frenche kynge shulde come to saynt Omers and his uncles, and bring with hym his doughter, so that the kynge of Englande wolde come to Calais; and so bytwene saynte Omers and Calays the two kynges shulde mete and speke togyther, wherby by reason of syght and speakynge togyther shulde encrease love and amyte; and there these two kinges and their uncles shulde speke togyder without any other companye on the forme of the peace; and if they conclude nat on some peace, yet at leste the trewce myght be relonged to endure for thyrty or xl. yere bytwene the two realmes and their alies. This devyse semed right good to the kyng and to his counsayle, and herupon the kynge and other lordes sente to Calays to make provysyon, and the kynge desyred his uncle the duke of Gloucestre to go with hym in that journey, and the duches his wyfe and his chyldren, and in lyke wyse the dukes and duchesses of Yorke and Lancastre. And so whan every thynge was redy, the kynge and the erle of saynt Powle departed fro Eltham and rode towardes Caunterbury, and after them folowed all other lordes, suche as shulde go in this voyage, and suche as had been desyred. The erle of saynt Powle passed the see fyrst, to the entent to advertyse the Frenche kynge, and so passed to Boloyne and so to Paris, and there declared to the Frenche kynge and to his uncles howe he had spedde; wherwith they were well content, and so departed fro Paris, and lytell and lytell aproched to the cytie of Amyence; and the kynge of Englande and his uncles came to Calais, with many lordes and ladyes. And the duke of Burgoyne, one of the Frenche kynges uncles, came to saynt Omers; and by the meanes of the erle of saynt Powle and Robert the Hermyte, the duke of Burgoyne came to Calays, to se the kynge of Englande and his uncles, where he was nobly receyved, and there they counsayled togyther on certayne artycles of the peace, wherto the kynge of Englande lyghtly enclyned. And, for to say trouth, he cared nat what he dyd, so he myght have his wyfe.

Whan the duke of Burgoyne had ben at Calais two dayes, and had communed with the kynge of Englande on the artycles of the peace, the kynge sayd howe he wolde sende all the

processe of the artycles over the see into Englande, to be shewed and declared there to the people: for he sayde that nouther he nor all the lordes that were there of Englande coulde nat conclude fermely on no peace, without the generall consentment of the people of Englande. And moreover the kynge sayde howe that he must fyrst go over agayne hymselfe, and so retourne, and therby make but one journey. That is well said, quod the duke of Burgoyne, for than at youre retourne every thynge shall be concluded and perfourmed. Thus the duke of Burgoyne and the erle of saynt Powle departed fro Calays, and retourned to saynt Omers, and fro thens to Amyence, where they founde the kyng and the quene, and their doughter, who shulde be quene of Englande: the same tyme there was the dukes of Bretaygne and of Berrey in great araye; and the kynge of Englande and his uncles and other lordes retourned into Englande, and their wyves taryed styll at Calays tyll their retourne.

CAP. CCIX
Howe the peace bytwen Englande and Fraunce contynued.

In this meane season the voyage was made into Frese by them of Haynalte: fyrst, the erle of Heynalte, Holande and of Zelande, and his sonne the erle of Ostrevaunt, as ye shall here after in this hystorie.

CAP. CCX

Howe the erle of Heynalt and the erle of Ostrevante his sonne made a great army of men of armes, knyghtes and squyers, to go into Frese.

YE have herde here before howe duke Auberte of Bavyer, and Guylliam his sonne, erle of Ostrevant, had gret desyre to go into Frese to conquere that countrey, wherof the sayde duke Aubert, by ryght succession of herytage, shulde be erle and lorde therof. And to avaunce the same journey, the erle of Ostrevant had sent Fyerebrace of Vertayne to have some ayde of the Englysshemen, who spedde hym so well that kynge Rycharde of Englande, for the honour of his cosyns, sent certayne men of armes with two hundred archers, under the guydyng of thre gentlemen: one called Cornewayle, another Collevyll,

CAP. CCX

Howe the erle of Heynalt and the erle of Ostrevante made a great army to go into Frese.

knyghtes, the thyrde a squyer, I knowe nat his name, but I was well enfourmed that he was a valyaunt man of armes; he hadde his chynne cutte of in a fray a lytell before, and he had a chynne made of sylver, tyed aboute his heed with a lase of sylke. These Englysshmen came to Encuse at their tyme prefyxed. This duke Auberte and his sonne had a valyaunt man of their counsayle, called Gylliam of Croenbourge, who greatly exorted theym to the warre, for he hated greatly the Fresones, and had doone them many dyspyghtes, and dyd after, as ye shall here. Thus the duke Aubert departed fro the Haye in Holande with Gyllyam his sonne, erle of Ostrevant, and so came into his countrey of Haynalte, to the towne of Monts. And there he assembled togyther the thre estates of the countrey, and there shewed unto them the great desyre that he had to go into Frese, and the rightfull occasion that he had so to do: and caused there to be openly shewed certayne letters patentes apostolykes and imperyalles ryght noble and autentyke, sealed under leade hole and entyre,[1] by the whiche apered evydently the ryght and tytell that he had to the signory of Frese. And than he sayd openly: Lordes and valyaunt men my subgettes, ye knowe well that every man ought to kepe and defende his herytage, and that a man may laufully move warr to recover his lande and herytage. Ye knowe also the Fresons ought by right to be our subgiettes, and they be inobedyent and rebell agaynst us and our sygnory, as people without lawe or faythe; and therfore good and dere frendes, ye know well that without your ayde, bothe with bodyes and goodes, we canne nat fournysshe to bringe to execusyon so hygh an enterprise: wherfore we desyre you in this busynesse to ayde us, that is to say, with money and with men of warre, to the entent that these inobedyent Fresons maye be subdued and brought to obedyence. These wordes, or suche lyke, spoken by the duke, the thre estates by a commune acorde graunted their lordes petycyon and request, lyke suche people as greatly desyred and alwayes had done to do obedyent servyce and pleasure to their lorde and prince. And as I was enfourmed, they caused him to have in redy money mountante to the some of thyrty thousande pounde, besyde the towne of Valencennes, who in lyke wyse

[1] *lyole and entre* P.

dyd their devoyre, and also in the towne of Monts. These thynges thus concluded, the valyaunt princes, the good duke Auberte and Giullyam his sonne, erle of Ostrevant, seynge the good wylles of his men, was ryght joyfull, whiche was no mervayle, for he sawe well that he was well beloved with his subgiettes, and shulde be well fournysshed with money. Than he had counsayle to sende to the Frenche kyng, and to shewe him the enterprise of his voyage, and to desyre ayde of hym: and thyder was sent two valyaunt and wyse men, that is to saye, the lorde Lygne and the lorde of Jeumont, who were two ryght valyaunt knyghtes, and well beloved with the Frenchemen, and specyally the lorde Lygne: the kyng had made hym one of his chamberlayns, and had hym in good favoure; he spake with the kynge, and shewed hym the dukes entent and request. To the whiche the kynge and his counsayle favourably agreed, and specyally the duke of Burgoyne, bycause his doughter was maryed to therle of Ostrevant, wherby he thought that in tyme to come after it shulde be to their profyte and to their heyres; howebeit, many great lordes and other spake of this journey in dyvers maners. Some sayd, To what purpose dothe these Haynowayes desyre the kyng of ayde? They have ben in Englande and sought for ayde there. Hath nat the erle of Haynalte of late taken on hym the blewe garter to tye his legge withall, which is the ordre in Englande; it semyth therby he hath no great affectyon to Fraunce. Than other that were ryght wyse answered and sayd: Syr, ye do wronge to say thus; though the erle of Ostrevant have taken the ordre of the garter, yet for all that he is nat alyed with the Englysshemen, but he is fermly alyed with Fraunce. Hath nat he in maryage the lady Katheryne, doughter to the duke of Burgoyne, whiche is a farre greater alyaunce than is a garter? Therfore never say but that he wyll love and do pleasure to Fraunce, by reason of his maryage, rather than to Englande for the garter; wherfore the kinge shall do right honourably to ayde hym. Thus the Frenchemen devysed amonge themselfe, and spake in dyvers maners both of that journey and also of the journey into Hungery and into Turkey, agaynst Lamorabaquy and the Turkes.

CAP. CCX

Howe the erle of Heynalt and the erle of Ostrevante made a great army to go into Frese.

CAP. CCXI

Of the army that the French kyng sente into Frese in the ayde of his cosyns, and the lorde Valeran erle of saynt Powle and the lorde Charles de la Brete were capytaynes.

THE Frenche kynge assembled an armye of fyve hundred speares, as well of Pycardes as of Frenchmen, and made capytayns over them the lorde Valeran, erle of saynt Powle, and the lorde Charles de la Bret,[1] who were valyaunt knyghtes and well expert in armes: and they were apoynted to leade this company to the towne of Encuse in base Frese, wher as the assemble shulde mete, and there to take the see to entre into high Frese, as they dyd. Whan these two knyghtes, the lorde Lygne and Jumont, sawe the kynges good wyll, and that these men of warre were dyspatched and their wages payed, they came to the kynge and thanked him, and toke their leave and retourned into Heynalt to their lorde the duke Aubert and to the lorde Gillyam his sonne, to whome they were right welcome, for they had well sped. There they shewed the good answere and good chere that they had with gyftes of great presentes. Whan duke Auberte knewe that the Frenche kynge had sente hym fyve hundred speares, than he assembled all his noble men, knyghtes, squyers, and other of Haynalt, as the lorde of Vertayne,[2] seneschall of Haynalte, who was a valyaunt man and greatly renomed in armes, the lordes of Lygne and Gomygnes,[3] who was made marshall, and the lordes of Havrech, of Nychelet,[4] of Lalayne, of Hordayne, of Chyne, of Cantan, of Quesnoy, of Fleron,[5] and John his brother, the lordes of Bouset and of Jeumont, who were fresshe knightes on their enemyes. Also there was Robert le Roux, and the lordes of Monchiaulx, of Fountayns, of Seuls,[6] and of Sars, William of Hermes, Pynchart his brother, the lordes of Lens, of Verlamont, of Ansealx, of Traseigmes,[7] Octes Seausmes,[8] Gyrarde his brother, the lorde Dyctre, and Johan his brother, Bridaulx of Montagny, Damaulx[9] de la Powle, and Guy his brother, the lorde of Mastynge, syr

[1] *d'Albret.*
[2] *Werchin.*
[3] *Comygnes* P.
[4] *Michiel de Ligne.*
[5] *Floion.*
[6] *Senzeille.*
[7] *Ansel de Trasegnies.*
[8] *Ote d'Escaoursines.*
[9] *Daniel.*

Floridas of Villyers, who was a valyaunt man, and had doone many dedes of armes amonge the Turkes and Sarazins, and sir Eustace of Vertayn, Fierebras of Vertayne, who was newly come out of Englande, syr Rase of Montigny,[1] the lorde of Rorsyn,[2] sir Johan Dandregnies, and Persant his brother, and dyvers other knightes and squiers. All these assembled at Monts, and desyred them to go with hym, and every man to bringe with hym company acordynge to their degrees, and that they wolde avaunce them to the towne of Encuse in base Frese and theraboute, and so to go with hym by see into hyghe Frese about the myddes of August next after; there he sayd he wolde tary for them, for he wolde go thyder before to move the Holanders and Zelanders to serve hym in lyke maner. Than these sayd knyghtes and esquyers of Haynalt, without any contradictyon acorded to his desyre, promysinge to do hym servyce as his trewe subgiettes, whiche they fulfylled in dede, and dyligently prepared for the same, so that by the begynnyng of the moneth of August, in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and syxtene, they were all redy aparelled and assembled by companies at Anvers, there to take the water, and fro thence to Encuse, where the hole assemble shulde mete.

CAP. CCXI
Of the army that the French kyng sente into Frese in the ayde of his cosyns.

[1] *Montiquy* P.
[2] *Roisin.*

Nowe whyle this assemble was thus made in Haynalte, it were to be demaunded if the ladyes and gentlewomen and other were joyouse of this journey. We ought to say naye, for than they sawe their fathers, their bretherne, their uncles, their husbandes, and their lovers and frendes departe to that peryllous warre: for some of them knewe well howe that in tyme paste the Haynowayes wente with their lorde into Frese, and never retourned agayne; wherfore they feared leste it shulde hap so than to these as it dyd on their predecessours. The duchesse of Brabant had defended all men in the countrey of Brabant, no man to be so hardy to go oute of the countrey in that journey. The ladyes and gentlewomen of Haynalt desyred often tymes their frendes and lovers to leave that journey, but they coulde nat lette the mater; howebeit, they were sore displeased in their myndes with the basterde of Vertayne, Fierebrase, for they said he was one of the chyefe setters on of that busynesse.

CAP. CCXI
Of the army that the French kyng sente into Frese in the ayde of his cosyns.

Thus after that the duke Aubert and Guillyam his sonne had herde the aunswere of his men of Haynalte, than he went into Zelande, shewynge them his busynesse. And they assented to his request, by the chiefe settynge on of the lorde de la Vere syr[1] Floris de Boesell, Floris Dabell,[2] the lorde of Zevembrige, syr Clays de Boysell, Phylyp Corteen, and dyvers other gentlemen. All these and other made themselfes redy, in suche wyse that it apered well by their dylygence that they had great desyre to avaunce themselfe to that journey.

[1] *and syr Floris* P.
[2] *d Alye.*

In lyke wyse the duke and his sonne went into Holande and made there lyke requestes to the lordes and good townes, as they had done in Zelande. The Holanders were therof ryght joyouse, for of all men they hated the Fresons, for they were ever at warre togyther, specyally on the see and on the borders of their countrey; and therfore the lordes of Holande, suche as the lorde Tarterell,[3] and dyvers other noble men, knyghtes, and squyers, herynge the requestes of their lordes duke Aubert and the erle of Ostrevant, they offred themselfe, promysynge comforte and ayde to the best of their powers; and that they well shewed, for incontynent they made them redy, and avaunced forwarde. In lyke wise dyd the men of the good townes and of the countrey. They sent forthe with these lordes a great nombre of crosbowes and morispykes and other men of warre. So daylye men assembled at the towne of Encuse, and shyppes and vesselles came thyder in suche wyse that the maryners were estemed to the nombre of xxx. thousande. It was sayd, that there came out of the towne of Harle xii. hundred, whiche shyppes were well provyded of all thynges necessary. And of a trouthe, if the ladyes and other damoselles were soroufull in Heynalt, in lykewise so were they of Hollande and Zelande. Sir Danyell of Marebbed[4] and Guillyam of Cruenbourge[5] they durst nat apere before the ladyes and gentylwomen, for they had sore sette forwarde the busynesse, for they hadde great wyll and desyre to be revenged of the Fresons, bicause of a batayle that hadde been there before, wherin the erle Wyllyam was pituouslye slayne, and lost xxxiii. cotes of armes of his lynage: wherfore these two knyghtes wolde never take any Freson to mercy nor raunsome. So within a certayne space

[3] *d'Arckel.*
[4] *Merweede.*
[5] *Oruenbourge* P.

CAP. CCXI
Of the army that the French kyng sente into Frese in the ayde of his cosyns.

every man was come to Encuse. Fyrst came the Englysshemen, and than the Henous, and their capyten was the seneschall of Jumont and the lorde of Gomegynes, who was marshall. Than came Hollanders and Zelanders: the Frenchemen came nat so soone. So they taryed a xi. dayes for the Frenchemen, in whiche season there fell a debate bytwene the Hollanders and the Englysshemen; and if the erle of Ostrevant had nat ben, all the Englysshmen had ben slayne. Whiche stryfe was apesed, and than the Frenchmen came. Than there was great joye made, and commaundement gyven that every man shulde entre into suche shyppes as they were assygned unto before, whiche was done. And whan they were all shypped, they hoysed up sayles and sayled forthe: the wether was fayre; it semed as it was disposed to do them pleasure. There were so many shippes, that if they had ben araynged one after another, they wolde have stretched fro Encuse to the boundes of Condren, whiche was in highe Frese, where they purposed to aryve, as they dyde, whiche was xii. leages by water, but they sayled a front right ordinatly.

Nowe wyll we leave spekyng of them, and speke of the Fresons, who, as I was enformed, were advertysed long before of duke Aubertes commyng with great puyssaunce on them.

Whan the Fresons knewe and understode that they shulde have warre, all the wysemen of the countre assembled toguyder, to take counsayle and advyse what they shulde do. Whan they had long debated the mater, their entencion was to fyght with their enemyes, as soone as they myght knowe that they were entred into their countrey, sayeng howe they had rather dye as fre Fresons, than to be in servage under any kynge or prince, or under subjectyon. And therfore they sayd, to dye in the quarell they wolde fight with their enemyes; and concluded amonge themselfes to take no man to raunsome, howe great soever he were. Amonge them there was one man farre excedynge in greatnesse above all other: he was hygher than any other man in that countrey by the heed: he was called Juye Jouer,[1] and some called hym the great Fresone. This manne was greatly commended in Pruce, in Hungery, in Turkey, in Rodes and in Cypres; he hadde done many noble feates of armes, so

[1] *Yves Juvinga.*

CAP. CCXI
Of the army that the French kyng sente into Frese in the ayde of his cosyns.

that he was greatly renomed. Whane he harde the opynions of the Fresons, howe they wolde fight with their enemyes, he aunswered and sayde:

O, ye noble and free Fresons, knowe for trouthe there is no chaunce but maye tourne. Though by your valyantnesse ye have or this tyme disconfyted the Heynowayes, the Hallanders, and the Zelanders, knowe for trouthe, that suche as come nowe upon you, are people more experte in the warre thanne they were before; and beleve verily, they shall do otherwyse than their predecessours dyde: they wyll nat gyve it up, they wyll menteyne their dedes. Therfore I wyll counsayle you to suffre them to entre, and let us kepe our forteresses, and lette them kepe the feldes, where they shall beate themselfes. Our countrey is nat to susteyne them long; we have many dykes; they canne nat go farre in the countrey; they canne nat ryde abrode in the countrey, and full yvell they maye go afoote, wherby they shal be so werye, that they shall waste theymselfes, and so retourne agayne. The moost they can do is to brenne a tenne or xii. vyllages, whiche shall natte greatly greve us; they shall be soone made agayne. If we shulde fight with them I feare me we be nat stronge ynough to fyght with them at ones, for as I am enformed they be to the nombre of an hundred thousande armed heedes. Whiche was of a trouthe, they were as many or mo. To his wordes consented thre other knightes of the Fresons, the fyrst named sir Fewe of Dorekerque, the seconde sir Gerarde of Canmy, and the thirde sir Tiny of Walturge: but the people wolde in no wyse consente to that devyse, no more wolde other noble men called the Elyns, that is to saye, the gentylmen or judges of the causes. They replyed so with this great Freson, that he was concluded with them, that as soone as they knewe their enemyes entred into their countre, they shulde go and fyght with them: they abode all on that opinyon, and so made themselfe redy. But to saye the trouthe, they were but poorelye armed: many had no armure but their cootes of wadmoll, and course grose clothe; some armed with lether, and some with rustye mayle, and some there were ryght well armed.

Thus they armed theym; and whan they were redy they wente to their churches, and toke the crosses and baners,

CAP. CCXI
Of the army that the French kyng sente into Frese in the ayde of his cosyns.

and made thre batayls, and in every batayle ten thousande fyghting men, and came to a narowe passage well diked, nere to the place where their enemyes shulde lande. And they sawe well howe their enemyes were come, and had great desyre to take lande, whiche was on saynt Bartylmewes daye on a Sonday, in the foresaid yere. And whan the Fresons sawe them aproche, they issued out upon the dikes a sixe thousande, to have lette the landynge of their enemyes. Among the Fresons ther was a woman apparelled all in blewe, who all in a rage went fro the Fresons and came nere to the Heynowes, within the shotte of a bowe. Than she tourned her backe towarde the Heynowes, and plucked up her clothes and shewed her bare arse, cryeng in her langage: Syrs, take this to your welcome. As soone as they sawe the leudnesse of this woman, they shot at her arowes and quarels, so that she was stryken in the legges and loynes, the arowes came flyeng at her as thycke as snowe. Than some lepte out of their shippes into the water, and ran after this folysshe woman with their swerdes and overtoke her, and hewed her into small peces. Than every man issued out of their vessels, and so came agaynst the Fresons, who receyved them right valyantly, and putte them of with longe pykes and longe staves bounde with yron. To saye the trouthe, in takyng of lande there was many dedes of armes done on bothe parties, and many slayne and sore hurte. But biforce of the Englisshe archers, and crosbowes of Heynaulte, Hollande, and Zelande, they wanne the dyke agaynst the Fresons; and upon that dyke they araynged their baners in good order, taryeng for their company; their renke was more than halfe a myle longe. Than the Fresons that were putte fro the dykes came to their company, who were mo than xxx. thousande, closed toguyder in a grounde dyked rounde aboute with a great depe dyke; and it was nat so farre of, but they myght well se their enemyes, where they were raynged on the fyrst dyke. Thus they contynued tyll all the Heynowayes were a lande, and all their baggage, and certayne tentes reyred up: there they rested them that Sondaye, and the Mondaye, advisynge the Fresons their enemyes: in whiche two dayes dyvers scrymisshes were made, and on the Tuesday bothe parties were redy. Than cer-

CAP. CCXI
Of the army that the French kyng sente into Frese in the ayde of his cosyns.

tayne newe knightes were made, and it was ordayned to fight with the Fresons. Than they avaunced forewarde in good order of batayle, and their archers before them and amonge them, and than sowned trumpettes and clarions, and so came a fayre pase to passe over the dike. Than the Fresons came to defende the passage, and the archers shotte agaynst them fiersly, and the Fresons covered themselfes with targes, and with the erthe of the dyke that was bytwene them and their enemyes; howebeit, they were so nere aproched that certayne of the Holanders entred into the dyke, and made bridges with speres and pykes, and so with valyant corage began to envade the Fresons, who defended their force right valyantly, and gave suche strokes against them that wolde mount up out of the dyke, that many were overthrowen downe agayne. But the Heynowayes, Frenchemen, Englysshemen, Hollanders and Zelanders were so well armed, that the Fresons coude do them no dommage nor hurt, but cast them downe to the grounde. There were suche noble dedes done and atchyved, that it were impossible to shewe it: the newe made knyghtes dyde nobly their devoyre, and the Fresons defended marveylously; they were great and bygge men, but they were yvell armed, many were barelegged and barefoted. In this assaut the lorde Lygne, the seneshall of Heynault, and the lorde Jumont, and dyvers other, as they wente aboute this dyke, they founde a way wherby they passed over the dyke, and so came on the Fresons with the poyntes of their speres, wherof the Fresons were sore abasshed, so that dyvers of them lepte the dyke: so perforce the Fresons were fayne to opyn and sparcle abrode here and there. In this batayle the great Freson was slayne, and the other began to flye. The chase was horryble and cruell, for none was taken to raunsome, and specially the Holanders slewe all they myght attayne unto, in so moche that suche as were taken by the Heynowes, Frenchemen, or Englysshemen, the Hollanders slewe them in their handes. Amonge the Hollanders, the lorde Wyllyam of Cruenbourge and his two sonnes, John and Henry, who were made knyghtes the same mornyng, acquyted themselfe marveylously well, and slewe many Fresons, for it semed well by them, that they loved but little

CAP. CCXI

Of the army that the French kyng sente into Frese in the ayde of his cosyns.

the Fresons. Thus finally the Fresons were discomfyted, and the moost parte slayne in the felde: but fewe were takenne prisoners, and caryed to Haye, in Hollande, and there were kepte a long season after. The lorde of Cundren, who was lorde of that countrey where the felde was, was the Mondaye before yelden to the duke Aubert and his two sonnes, and yet for all that they were in the felde with[1] the Fresons; the two sonnes were longe after with the duke. After this disconfyture they entred into the countrey of Condren, and toke townes and fortresses; howebeit, they conquered but lytell, for the Fresons dyde them great domage by prevy encountrynges. And whan they shulde take any prisoners, they wolde never yelde, but fought to the dethe, sayeng, they had rather dye free Fresons, than to be under the subjectyon of any prince or lorde. If any prisoners were taken there coude no raunsome be gotten for them, for their frendes wolde nat quyte them out, but rather suffre them to dye in prisone; they wolde never quyte none of their people, withoute it were to delyver man for man; and if they sawe that there were none of their people in prisone, they wolde slee all their enemyes, and take no prisoner. Thus about the ende of v. wekes, and that the Heynous and other had taken and beaten downe certayne townes, vyllages, and fortresses, of no great valure, the season beganne to waxe colde marveylously, and rayned nere hande every day, and the sees full of tempestes and wyndes. The duke Aubert and his sonne, consydringe the season, purposed to returne into base Frese, fro whens they came, and so into Hollande, the more easy to passe the colde wynter. So they departed and came to Encuyse, and there gave lycence to every man to departe, and specially to the straungers, and payde them truely their wages, and thanked them of their good ayde and servyce. Thus brake up the journey of Frese, and had conquered but lytell all that season. But within two yere after, the sayd two noble princes assembled agayn the seconde tyme a great armye, and wente into Frese, and made a great conquest, and dyd there many noble dedes of armes, as ye shall here after. But as nowe we shall leave spekyng therof, and declare the maner of the maryage of the kynge of Englande to the doughter of Fraunce.

[1] *contre.*

CAP. CCXII

Howe the mariage of the kyng of Englande to the doughter of France was ordred, and howe the Frenche kyng delyvered his doughter to the kynge of Englande in his tente bytwene Arde and Calys.

YE have herde howe the kyng of Englande was returned fro Calis into Englande, and there was tyll Michelmas that the parlyament at Westmynster shulde begyn. And in the meane season great provision was made at Calais and at Guysnes, for the kynge and for other lordes sent fro the portes of Englande on that cost, and great provisyon was had out of Flaunders, all came by see to Calais. In lykewise for the Frenche kyng, and for his brother, the duke of Orlyaunce, and his uncles, and other prelates and lordes of Fraunce, great provisyon was made at saynt Omers, at Ayre, at Tyrwyn, at Arde, at Mountoyre, and at all other houses and abbeyes there about; there was nothynge spared on bothe parties, and specially the abbey of saynte Bertyne was well replenysshed of all thynges to receyve these kynges. This parlyament at Westmynster began at Mychelmas, and it was ordeyned to endure xl. dayes. But it was abridged, for the king wolde nat tary there but v. dayes, wherin he declared the thynges most necessary perteyning to the realme, and specially that mater that touched hymselfe, and the cause why he came fro Calais. That done he retourned towardes Calais agayne, and with hym his two uncles of Lancastre and Gloucestre, and other prelates and lordes of Englande, suche as were commaunded to go with him; they spedde them so in their journey that they came agayne to Calays. The duke of Yorke taryed styll in Englande, and the erle of Derby, to governe the realme in the kynges absence. Whan the kyng of Englande was thus returned to Calais, the lordes of Fraunce beyng in Picardy were advertised therof. Than the duke of Burgoyn, and the duchesse his wyfe, came to

saynt Omers, and were lodged in the abbey of saynt Bertyne. As sone as the Frenche kyng knewe that the kynge of Englande was come agayne to Calais, he sente to hym therle of saynt Poule, to shewe hym what order was taken in Fraunce, concernyng his maryage, whiche the kynge of Englande was gladde to here. Thane the duke of Lancastre, and his sonne Beauforde of Lancastre, the duke of Gloucester, and Affren [1] his sonne, the erle of Rutlande, the erle marshall, [the] erle of Huntyngton, the kynges chamberleyne, and many other lordes, knyghtes, squyers and ladyes, rode with the erle of saynt Poule to saynt Omers, where they were well receyved of the duke of Burgoyne and of the duchesse: and thyder came the duke of Bretaigne, and had lefte the Frenche kynge at Ayre, and his doughter with hym.

CAP. CCXII

Howe the mariage of the kyng of Englande to the doughter of France was ordred.

[1] *Humphrey.*

Ye maye well knowe all the chere that coude be devysed was made to the Englysshe lordes and ladyes, and other at saynt Omers, and the duchesse of Burgoyne made them a great dyner. There was the duchesse of Lancastre, and her sonne and two doughters. There was great gyftes gyven of plate of golde and sylver, nothynge was spared, in so moche that the Englysshemen hadde marveyle therof, and specially the duke of Glocestre, and sayd to his counsayle: I se well there is great rychesse in the realme of Fraunce. There was moche gyven to hym, to the entente to abate and to molyfie his rancour that he hadde agaynste Fraunce. The lordes of Fraunce knewe well that he was alwayes harde to agre to the peace, wherfore they shewed hym as moche token of love and honour as they coude do. He toke ever all their gyftes, but alwayes the rancour abode styll in his hert; for all that ever the Frenchemen coulde do, they coulde nat molifye his fell stomake, for always he made herde answers as they treated for any peace. The Frenchemen be subtyle, yet for all that they coude gette no hold of hym, for his wordes and aunswers were alwayes so covert, that they wyst nat howe to understande them. Whan the duke of Burgoyne sawe his maner, he sayde to his counsayle: We lese all that ever we do to this duke of Gloucestour: for as longe as he lyveth there shal be no sure peace bytwene Fraunce and Englande, for he shall alwayes fynde newe invencyons and accydentes to engender hate and stryfe

CAP. CCXII

Howe the mariage of the kyng of Englande to the doughter of France was ordred.

bytwene bothe realmes, for he entendeth nor thynketh none other thynge; if it were nat the truste that we have in the kyng of Englande, wherby hereafter to fare the better, the kyng shulde nat have to his wyfe our cosyn of Fraunce.

Whan the duke and duchesse of Burgoyne, the countesse of Nevers, the countesse of saynt Poule, and the other lordes and ladyes of Fraunce, hadde greatly feested the lordes and ladyes of Englande, than there was communicacion howe these two kynges shulde mete and speke toguyder, and howe the lady shulde be delyvered: therupon apoyntment was made, and leave taken on all partes. The Englysshe partie returned to Calis to the kyng, and shewed what chere they had, and what presentes had ben gyven them. These newes pleased well the kyng, for he was gladde whan he herde any honour spoken of the Frenche kyng, he was so in love with hym bycause of his doughter, whome he trusted to have to his quene. Than anone after the Frenche kyng came to saynt Omers, and was lodged in the abbey of saynt Bertyne, and dislodged all other that were there before, and had the duke of Bretayne in his company. And than it was ordayned that the dukes of Berrey, of Burgoyne, and of Burbone, shulde go to Calis to speke with the kynge of Englande.

So they came to Calays, and were joyouslye receyved, and had as good chere as coulde be devysed. These thre dukes had secrete communycacion with the kynge and his counsayle, so that many, bothe of Fraunce and of Englande, reputed that there was a peace concluded bytwene Fraunce and Englande. And indede it was nere at a poynt, and the duke of Gloucester agreed well therto, as at that tyme. For the kyng of Englande hadde promysed hym, if he wolde agree to the peace, to gyve his son Affren the erldome of Rochester in herytaunce, and to make hym spende yerely in revenewes two thousande pounde sterlyng, and to gyve to hymselfe as soone as he came in Englande in redy money fyftie thousande nobles: so that by reason of these gyftes, the duke of Gloucestours hardnesse was well aleyed. So that the lordes of Fraunce sawe well his opinyons were nat so obstynate as they were before, for they founde hym than swete and meke. Whane every thynge was ordeygned of

that they came for, they tooke leave of the kynge and other, and retourned to saynt Omers to the Frenche kynge, and shewed howe they hadde spedde. Than the Frenche kyng wente to the bastyde of Arde, and the duke of Burgoyne to Mountoyre, and the duke of Bretaygne to the towne of Esque,[1] and the duke of Berrey to Balyngham. And in every parte all aboute there were pyght up tentes and pavilyons, and all the countrey full of people, what of Fraunce and of Englande. The kynge of Englande came to Guysnes, and the duke of Lancastre with hym, and the duke of Gloucestre to Hammes. Thus on a Fridaye, beyng the evyn of Symon and Jude, in the yere of oure Lorde God, a thousande, thre hundred, fourscore and sixtene, about tenne of the clocke in the forenoone, the two kynges departed oute of their tentes, the which were pyght nat farre asondre, and came afoote, the one to the other, and met at a certayne place that was apoynted. And on the one syde there was araynged four hundred knyghtes of Fraunce, armed with their swerdes in their handes; and on the other parte foure hundred Englysshe knyghtes in lyke maner: so the two kynges passed through them: the dukes of Lancastre and of Gloucestre ledde the Frenche kynge, and the dukes of Berrey and of Burgoyne ledde the kynge of Englande. Thus they came foreby the sayd eight hundred knightes. And whan the two kynges came just togyder, all the eyght hundred knyghtes kneled downe to the grounde, and many of them wepte for joye. Thus the two kynges mette toguyder bareheeded, and a lytell enclyned and tooke eche other by the handes. Than the Frenche kynge ledde the kynge of Englande into his tente, whiche was noble and ryche, and the four dukes tooke eche other by the handes and folowed the two kynges, and other knyghtes after, the Frenchemen on the one syde, and the Englysshemen on the other syde. And so they stode regardyng eche other in good and humble maner tyll all was done. Thane it was ordayned, that on the same place where as the two kynges tooke eche other by the hande, that there shulde be made and founded a chapell in the honoure of Our Lady, and shulde be called Our Lady of Grace. I can nat tell whether it were made or nat.

CAP. CCXII

Howe the mariage of the kyng of Englande to the doughter of France was ordred.

[1] *Nord Ausque.*

CAP. CCXII

Howe the mariage of the kyng of Englande to the doughter of France was ordred.

So the two kynges, hande in hande, entred into the Frenche kynges tente. Than the foure dukes kneled downe before the kynges and they reysed them up, and so talked toguyder. Than the two kynges wente a lytell aparte, and talked a certayne space. In the meane tyme wyne and spyces were brought. The duke of Berrey served the Frenche kynge of spyce, and the duke of Burgoyne of wyne; and the dukes of Lancastre and Glocester served the kyng of England. Than other knightes and squiers served all other prelates and lordes, so that every man within the tente hadde parte; and in the meane tyme the two kynges communed toguyder. This busynesse done and paste, the two kynges tooke leave eche of other, and so retourned to their tentes, and tooke their horses and rode towardes Calais, the kyng to Guysnes, the dukes of Lancastre and Gloucester to Hammes, and the other to Calais. The Frenche kynge rode to Cordre,[1] and the duke of Orlyaunce with hym: the duke of Berrey to Dornam,[2] and the duke of Burgoyne to Mountoyre. So there was no more done that daye; all their tentes stode styll in the feldes.

Ardre.

Tournehem.

Than on the Saturdaye on the feest of saynt Symon and Jude, aboute a xi. of the clocke, the kynge of Englande and his uncles, and other lordes, came to the Frenche kyng into his tent. They were receyved right honorably, and every manne talked with his felowe merily. Than tables were sette up, and the two kynges sat at one table alone, the Frenche kynge on the ryght hande; the dukes of Berrey, of Burgoyne, and of Burbone, served the two kynges. Than the duke of Burbone caste forthe many jestyng wordes to make the kynges to laughe, and suche as were before the table, for this duke was a mery man, and sayd openly, addressynge his wordes to the kynge of Englande: Sir, quod he, ye ought to make good chere, for ye have all that ye desyre; ye have your wife or shall have her delivered to you. Than the Frenche kyng sayd: Burbonoys, we wolde that our doughter were of the age that our cosyn of saynt Poule is, on the condicyon that it cost me a great good, than she shulde take my sonne with the better good wyll.[3] The kynge of Englande herde well those wordes, and answered, spekyng to the duke of Burbone, bycause the

[3] *si la prendroit nostre fils d'Angleterre en plus grant gré.*

Frenche kyng hadde compared his doughter to the erle of saynt Poules doughter, and sayd: Sir, the age that my wyfe, that shall be, is of, pleaseth you[1] right well; we love nat so moche her herytage than I do the love of you and of our realmes: for we two beyng of one accorde, there is no kynge, Christen nor other, that are able to anoye us. CAP. CCXII Howe the mariage of the kyng of Englande to the doughter of France was ordred.

This dyner thus done in the Frenche kynges tent, and after wyne and spyces taken, than the yonge quene was brought forthe, acompanyed with a great nombre of ladyes and damoselles, and there she was delyvered to the kyng of Englande. Whan that was done every man toke their leave to departe. The yonge quene was sette in a ryche lytter, and there wente no mo Frenche ladyes with her, but the lady of Coucy. There were the ladyes of Englande, the duchesses of Lancastre, of Yorke, and of Gloucestre, and of Irelande; the lady of Namure,[1] and the lady Poynynges,[2] and a great nombre of other ladies, who receyved the quene with great joye.

[1] *nous plaist.*

[2] *Man.*

Thus the kyng of Englande, and the yonge quene and his company, rode to Calais the same nyght, and the Frenche kyng and his company to saynt Omers. Than the Tuesdaye after, whiche was Alhalowen day, the kyng of Englande maryed the sayd lady Isabell of Fraunce, in the churche of saynt Nicholas in Calais; the archebysshop of Caunterbury wedded theym, at whiche tyme there was a great feest and great largesse. The Thursdaye after, there came to Calais the dukes of Orlyaunce and of Burbone to se the kynge and the quene. And on the Friday they tooke their leave and departed, and rode to saynt Omers to the Frenche kyng. And the same day in the mornyng the kyng and the quene toke their shyppe and hadde fayre passage, they were over within thre houres; the kynge laye in the castell of Dover, and the nexte daye to Rochestre, and than to Dartforde, and so to Eltham. Thane all lordes and ladyes toke their leave, and a fiftene dayes after the quene was brought to the cytie of London, accompanyed with many lordes, ladyes, and damosels, and laye the fyrst nyght at the Towre of London, and the nexte daye conveyed along throughe the cytie with great solempnyte to the kynges palais of Westmynster, and ther the kyng was before redy to receyve her.

CAP. CCXII

Howe the mariage of the kyng of Englande to the doughter of France was ordred.

The same daye the Londoners gave to the quene great presentes. Than was there ordayned a great justes to be holden in the cytie of London of xl. knyghtes and squyers chalengers, to be holden at Candelmas nexte after, whiche was delyvered to the herauldes to publysshe on bothe sydes of the realme, to Scotlande. And whan the Frenche kyng was come to Parys after the maryage of his doughter, and every lorde departed home, there ranne than a great brute through the realme, howe the Frenche kyng was in purpose at the begynnynge of Marche, to go with a great army into Lombardy, to dystroye the lorde Galeas duke of Mylayne; the kyng had suche displeasure agaynst hym that no man coulde tourne hym but that he wolde make that voyage. And the kyng of Englande had promysed to sende hym syxe thousande archers, and the duke of Bretaygne had offered to go with hym with two thousande speares Bretons: great provysyon was made for this journey in the Dolphenry of Vyen, and in the countie of Savoy. Whan the duke of Bretayne departed fro the Frenche kynge to retourne into his countrey, syr Peter of Craon, who was condempned to paye to the quene of Jherusalem a hundred thousande frankes, and was in prison in the castell of Loure, in Parys, at the request of the duke of Bretaygne, the duke of Burgoyne dyd so moche to the kynge, that by his good meanes the duke of Bretaygne had syr Peter of Craon with hym. I thynke he promysed to pay the sayd somme at certayne dayes to the foresayd quene. I wyll nowe leave this mater, and speke of the adventures of Turkey.

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy, and howe the Frenchemen were dyscomfyted, and howe the Hungaryons fled.

YE have herde here before howe the kynge of Hungery, and the lordes of Fraunce, were passed the ryver of Dunoe, and were entred into Turkey: and all the sommer after the moneth of July they had done many enter-

prises, and had brought dyvers townes to their subjection, for there was none that resysted them, and had besieged the towne of Nycopoly, and hadde nere brought it to a small estate, nigh redy to yelde, for they coude here no newes of Lamorabaquy. Than the kyng of Hungery said to the lordes of Fraunce, and to other: Syrs, thanked be God, we have had a fayre seasone, we have dystroyed parte of Turkey; I reken this towne of Nycopoly ours whan we lyst: it is so sore overlayde that it canne nat longe holde. Wherfore all thynges consydred, I counsayle, this towne ones won, that we go no further at this season; we shall drawe agayn over the Dunoe into the realme of Hungery, where I have many cyties, townes, and castelles, redy furnysshed to receyve you, as reason is, seyng ye be come so farre to ayde me to make warre agaynst the Turkes, whome I have founde herde and cruell enemyes. And this wynter we shall make newe provysion agaynst the next somer, and sende worde to the Frenche kyng what case we be in, so that this nexte sommer he maye refresshe us with newe men; and I beleve whan he knoweth what we have done, and howe every thyng standeth, he wyll have great affection to come hyther in his owne person, for he is yonge and couragyous, and loveth dedes of armes. And whether he cometh or nat, by the grace of God, this next sommer we shall wynne the realme of Armony, and passe the brase of saynt George, and so into Surrey, and wynne the portes of Japhes and Baruth, and conquere Jherusalem, and all the Holy Lande. And if the Sowdan come forwarde we shall fyght with hym, for he shall nat departe without batayle.

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

These or lyke wordes sayd the kynge of Hungery to the lordes of Fraunce, and rekened Nycopoly as their owne; howebeit, fortune fell otherwyse. All that season the kynge Basaach, called Lamorabaquy, had reysed an army of Sarazyns, some out of farre countreys, as out of Perce. Many great men of the Sarazyns came to ayde Lamorabaquy, to dystroy Crystendome: they were passed the brase saynt George, to the nombre of two hundred thousande men. To say the trouth, the Chrysten men were nat acertayned what nombre they were of. This kynge Basaache and his men aproched nere to Nycopoly by coverte wayes: they knewe

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

in feates of warre as moche as myght be, and this kynge was a valyaunt man, whiche shewed well by reason of his polycy: he ordered his bataylles thus: all his hoost was in a maner as wynges, his men comprised well a great myle of grounde, and before the hoost to shewe a face redye in a bande an eyght thousande Turkes; the two wynges of the batayle were open a forefronte, and narowe behynde, and Lamorabaquy was in the herte of the batayle; thus they rode all in coverte. These eyght thousande Turkes were ordeyned to make a face, and that as sone as they shulde se the Crystenmen aproche, than they to recule lytell and lytell into the herte of the batayle, and than the two wynges, whiche were open before, the Crystenmen beyng ones entred bytwene theym, to close togyther and joyne into one company, and than to fyght with their enemyes. This was the ordre of their batayle.

Thus in the yere of oure Lorde God a thousande, thre hundred, fourscore, and syxtene, the Monday before the feest of Saynt Mychell, about ten of the clocke, as the kyng of Hungery sate at dyner at the siege of Nycopoly, tydynges came to the hoost howe the Turkes were comyng; and the scoutes that came in shewed howe they had sene the Turkes. But their reporte was nat trewe, for they had nat rydden so forwarde, that they had avewed the two wynges, nor the batayle behynde; they had sene no mo but the fore ryders and vowarde, for as soone as they had sene theym they retourned. The same seasone the greatest parte of the host were at dyner. Than tydynges was brought to the erle of Nevers, and to all other in generall by their scurers, who said: Syrs, arme you quyckly, that ye be nat surprised, for the Turkes are comynge on you. These tydynges greatly rejoysed the Crystenmen, suche as desyred to do dedes of armes. Than every man rose fro their dynners, and put the tables fro them, and demaunded for their harnesse and horses, and they were well chafed before with drynkynge of wyne. Than every man drewe into the felde, baners and standerdes dysplayed, every man to his owne baner. Than the baner of Our Lady was dysplayed; therwith the valyaunt knyght sir Johan of Vien, admyrall of Fraunce, and the Frenchemen were the fyrst

that drewe into the felde fresshely aparelled, makynge small accompte of the Turkes; but they knewe nat that they were so great a nombre as they were, nor that Lamorabaquy was there in his owne persone. As these lordes of Fraunce were into the felde, there came unto theym the kynge of Hungeryes marshall in great hast, who was a valyaunte knyght, called Henry of Ostenlenyhall, upon a good horse, with a penon of his armes, of sylver, a crosse sable ancored, called in armure, the yron of a mylstone.[1] Whan he came before the baner of Our Lady he stode styll, and to the moste parte of the barones of Fraunce he sayd openly: Syrs, I am sent hyther to you fro the kynge of Hungery, and he desireth you by me, that ye set nat on your enemyes untyll suche tyme as ye have worde agayne fro him, for it ought to be doughted lest our scoutes have nat brought the certaynte of the nombre of the Turkes: but within these two houres ye shall here other tydynges, for we have sent other foreryders forth to avewe our enemyes more substancially than the first dyd; and syrs, ye maye be sure the Turkes shall nat indomage us, if ye tary tyll all our hole puyssaunce be togyder. Syrs, this is the ordre that the kynge and his counsayle hath ordered; I muste retourne agayne to the kynge. Whan he was departed, the French lordes assembled them togyder, to knowe what was best for them to do. Than it was demaunded of the lorde Coucy what he thought best to be done. He answered and said: I wolde counsayle to obey the kyng of Hungeryes commaundement, for that ordre semeth to be good. And as it was infourmed me, syr Phylippe of Arthoys, erle of Ewe, and constable of Fraunce, was nat contented that the advyse had nat fyrst have ben demaunded of hym. Than he for pride and dispyght helde the contrary opynyon, and sayd: Ye, sir, ye, the kynge of Hungery wolde have the floure and chiefe honour of this journey; we have the vowarde, he hath graunted it to us, and nowe he wolde take it fro us agayne: beleve hym who wyll, for I do nat; and than he sayd to the knyght that bare his banner, In the name of God and saynt George, ye shall se me this daye a good knyght. Whan the lorde Coucy herde the constable speke these wordes, he toke it done of a great presumpcyon. Than he loked on syr Johan

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

[1] *fer de moulin.*

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

of Vyen, who bare the standarde of Our Lady, and demaunded of hym what he thought best to be doone. Syr, quod he, where as wyse reasone canne nat be herde, than pride muste reygne, and sythe that the erle of Ewe wyll nedes set on, we must nedes folowe; howebeit, we shulde be the stronger and if our puyssaunce were hole togyther. Thus as they devysed in the felde, styll the Turkes aproched, and the two wynges, eche of lx. thousande men, beganne to aproche and to close, and had the Chrystenmen bytwene them, so that if they wolde have reculed they coulde nat, for they were closed in with the Sarazyns, the wynges were so thicke. Than dyvers knyghtes that were well expert in armes, sawe well the journey shulde be agaynst them; howebeit, they avaunced and folowed the baner of Our Lady, borne by the valyaunt knight syr John of Vien. Every knyght of Fraunce was in his cote armure, that every man semed to be a kinge, they were so fresshly aparelled. As it was shewed me whan they began fyrste to fyght with the Turkes, they were nat past a seven hundred men. Lo, beholde the great foly and outrage, for if they had taryed for the kynge of Hungery, who were threscore thousande men, they had been lykely to have doone a great acte: and by them and by their pride all was lost, and they receyved suche dommage, that sythe the batayle of Rounsevalx, where as the xii. peres of Fraunce were slayne, Crystendome receyved nat so great a dommage. Howebeit, or they were dyscomfyted a great nombre of Turkes were slayne, for the Frenchemen dyscomfyted the fyrst batayle of the Turkes, and had them in chase tyll they came into a valey, where Lamorabaquy was with his hole puyssaunce; than the Frenchmen wolde have retourned to their hoost, but they coulde nat, for they were closed in on all partes; there was a sore batayle, the Frenchemen endured longe. Than newes came to the kyng of Hungery, howe the Frenchemen, Englysshmen and Almayns were fyghtyng with the Turkes, and had broken his commaundement and counsayle gyven them by his marshall, wherwith he was sore dyspleased, and nat without good cause. Than he sawe well howe he was lykely to lese that journey. Than he said to the great mayster of the Rodes, who was by hym: Syr, we shall this day lese the

journey by reason of the pride of the Frenchmen, for if they wolde have beleved me, we had been stronge ynough to have fought with our enemyes. And therwith the kynge of Hungerye loked behynde hym, and sawe howe his men fled awaye and were discomfyted in themselfe. Than he sawe well there was no recovery, and suche as were aboute hym cryed and sayd: Save yourselfe, for if ye be slayne all Hungery is loste: ye shall lese the felde this daye by reason of the pride of the Frenchemen: their valyauntnesse turneth to folyssh hardynes, for they shall be all slayne or taken, none is lykely to scape: therfore syr if ye beleve us, save youreselfe, and scape this daunger.

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

The kynge of Hungery was sore dyspleased whan he sawe howe he had lost the journey by dysorderyng of the Frenchemen, and sawe no remedy but to flye, or els be taken or slayne: great murder there was, for in flyenge they were chased and so slayne. They of Hungery fledde without ordre, and the Turkes chased theym; howebeit, God ayded the kinge of Hungery, and the great mayster of the Rodes, for they came to the ryver of Dunoe,[1] and founde there a lytell barge parteynynge to the Rodes: they entered into it but with seven persones, and so went of the shore, or els they had been slayne or taken, for the Turkes came to the ryver syde, and there slewe many a Crystenman, suche as had folowed the kynge to save themselfe.

[1] *Dunoe* P.

Nowe lette us speke of the Frenchemen and Almayns, who fought valyauntly. Whan the lorde of Mountcaurell, a ryght valyaunt knyght of Arthoys, sawe that the dyscomfyture ranne upon them, he had by hym a sonne of his, a yonge man. Than he sayde to a squyer of his: Take here my sonne and leade hym away by yonder wynge whiche is open, and save hym, and I wyll abyde the adventure with other of my felowes. Whan the chylde herde his father say so, he sayd howe he wolde nat departe. But the father dyd so moche that perforce the squyer led hym away out of parell, and came to the ryver of Dunoe, but there the chylde had suche care for his father that he tooke small regarde to hymselfe, so that he fell into the ryver bytwene two barges, and there was drowned without remedy. Also syr Wyllyam of Tremoyle fought in that batayle valyauntly, and there was

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

slayne and his sonne by him, and syr Johan of Vyen bearynge the baner of Our Lady was slayne, and the baner in his handes. Thus all the lordes and knightes of Fraunce that were there were distroyed, by the maner as ye have herde. Syr Johan of Burgoyne erle of Nevers, was so rychely besene, and in lykewyse so was syr Guy de la Ryver,[1] and dyvers other lordes and knyghtes of Burgoyne, that they were taken prisoners. And there were two squiers of Picardy, ryght valyaunt men, called Gyllyam Dewe,[2] and the Bourge of Maytequell:[3] these two by valyauntnesse two tymes passed through the felde, and ever retourned in agayne and dyd marveyls, but fynally there they were slayne. To say the trouthe the Frenchemen and other straungers that were there acquyted themselfe valyauntly, but the Frenchmens pride lost all. There was a knyght of Pycardy, called syr Jaques of Helly, who had dwelte before in Turkey, and had served Lamorabaquy, and coude somwhat speke the langage of Turkey: whan he sawe the batayle loste he yelded hymselfe; and the Sarazyns, who are covetous of golde and sylver, toke and saved hym. Also a squyer of Tornasys, called Jaques du Fay, who had before served the kynge of Tartary, called Tauburyn,[4] as soone as this Jaques knewe that the Frenchemen came to make warre in Turkey, he toke leave of the kynge of Tartary and departed, and was on the sayd felde, and taken prisoner by the kyng of Tartaries men, who were there in the ayde of Lamorabaquy, for kynge Tauburyn of Tartary had sent to hym great nombre of men of warre.

[1] *Guy de la Tremoille.*

[2] *du Beu.*

[3] *le borgne de Montquel.*

[4] *Tamerlane.*

The Frenchmen were so richely arayed that they semed lyke kynges, wherby they were taken and their lyves saved, for Sarazyns and Turkes are covetous; they trusted to have great raunsomes of these that were taken, and reputed them greater lordes than they were. Sir Johan of Burgoyne, erle of Nevers, was taken prisoner. In lykewyse were the erles of Ewe and de la Marche, the lorde Coucy, syr Henry of Bare, syr Guy de la Tremoyle, Bouciquaut, and divers other: and syr Philyp of Bare, syr Johan of Vyen, Willyam of Tremoyle, and his sonne, slayne, and dyvers other. This batayle endured thre houres fyghtynge, and the kynge of Hungery lost all his baggage, and all his plate and jowelles, and was gladde to save hymselfe but with seven persons with him in

a lytell barge of the Rodes, els he had been taken or slayne without recovery. There were mo men slayne in the chase than in the batayle, and many drowned; happy was he that might scape by any maner of meanes.

CAP. CCXIII
Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

Whan this discomfyture was doone and passed, and that the Turkes, suche as were sent thyder by the Sowdan, were withdrawen into their lodginges, whiche was into tentes and pavylyons that they had conquered, whiche they founde well replenysshed with wyne and meate redy dressed, wherwith they refresshed them, and made joy and revell, lyke suche people as had ateygned vyctorye on their enemyes. Than Lamorabaquy, with a greate nombre of mynstrelles, acordyng to the usage of their countrey, came to the kynge of Hungeryes chefe tent, whiche was goodly aparelled and hanged with riche stuffe: and there he toke great pleasure, and glorifyed in his herte of the wynnyng of that journey, and thanked their God acordynge to their lawe. Than he unarmed hym, and to refresshe hym he sate downe on a tapyte of sylke, and caused all his great lordes to come to him to jangle and to talke with them. He made as great myrthe as myght be, and sayd howe he wolde shortely with great puyssaunce passe into the realme of Hungery, and conquere the countrey, and after other countreys upon the Crysten men, and to bringe them to his obeysaunce: for he sayd he was content that every man shulde lyve after their owne lawes; he desyred nothynge but the signory; but he sayd he wolde reygne lyke Alysaunder of Masydone, who was twelve yere kynge of all the worlde, of whose lynage he sayde he was dyscended. All that herde him agreed to his sayenge. Than he made thre commaundementes: the fyrst was, that who so ever had any prisoner Crysten, to bringe hym forthe the seconde daye after into his presence. The seconde was, that all the deed bodyes shulde be vysyted and sertched, and such as were likely to be noble men to be layde aparte by themselfe in their raymentes tyll he came thyder hymselfe, for he sayd he wolde se them. The thyrde was to enquyre justely if the kyng of Hungery were deed or alyve. All was done as he commaunded.

Whan Lamorabaquy had well refresshed hym, than to passe the tyme he went to the place where the felde was, to

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

se the deed bodyes, for it was shewed hym that he had many of his men slayne, and that the batayle had cost hym greatly, of the which he had great marveyle, and coulde nat byleve it. Than he mounted on his horse, and a great nombre with him: he had with hym two of his bretherne, called Basaache and Surbasaach, as some people sayd, but he wolde nat be knowen of them, for he sayd he had no bretherne. Whan he came to the place where the batayle was, he founde it of trouthe that there were many deed and slayne: he sawe that for one Crysten man deed, he founde xxx. Turkes slayne, wherwith he was marveylously dyspleased, and openly sayde: Here hath been a cruell batayle and marveylously defended of the Crystenmen, but I shal make them that be alyve to bye it derely. Than the kynge went to his lodgynge, and so passed that nyght in great furour of hert; and in the mornyng or he was up, moche people came to his tente to knowe what they shulde do with the Chrysten prisoners: the renome ranne that they shulde all be put to dethe without mercy. Lamorabaquy, for all his dyspleasure, ordeyned that suche Crystenmen as were in the batayle in great aray, and lykely to be great men, shulde be all sette togyther in one parte, for it was shewed hym that they myght well pay great raunsomes. Also there were dyvers Sarazyns and Panyms, of Perce, of Tartary, of Arabye, and Suryens, that had many prisoners, by whome they thought to have great advauntage, as they had indede: they hyd them out of the way so that they came nat to knowledge. Amonge other syr Jaques of Helley was brought before Lamorabaquy: he that had him durst nat hyde hym no lenger. Syr Jaques de Helley was beknowen with some of the kynges servauntes, who toke hym fro them that had him, whiche was happy for hym, as ye shall here after, for many Crysten men were afterwarde cruelly slayne and put to dethe.

[1] *Bajazet.*

Kynge Basaach[1] had commaunded to enquyre whiche were the greatest of the Crysten men, and that they shulde be set asyde, to the entent to save their lyves. So they were tryed out and set aparte. Fyrst, the lorde Johan of Burgoyne erle of Nevers, who was chiefe above all other, and than syr Phylyppe of Arthoys erle of Ewe, the erle of Marche, the

lorde Coucy, syr Henry of Bare, syr Guy of Tremoyle, and other, to the nombre of eyght persones. And Lamorabaquy went to se and to speke with them, and behelde them a longe seasone, and he conjured these lordes by their faythe and lawe, to saye the trouthe, if they were the same persones that they named themselfe for; and they sayde Ye. And yet to knowe the more certaynte he sente to them the Frenche knyght syr Jaques of Helley, to knowe them, for he had served Lamorabaquy before, therfore he had his lyfe graunted hym. He was demaunded if he knewe the Frenche knyghtes prysoners. He aunswered and said: I thynke if I se them I shall knowe them. Than he was commaunded to go and avewe theym, and to shewe playnely their names. He dyd as he was commaunded; and whan he came to them, he shewed them his adventure, and howe he was sente thyder to knowe surely their names. Than they sayde: Ah, syr Jaques, ye knowe us all, and ye se well howe fortune is agaynst us, and how we be in daunger of this kynge, therfore to save our lyves make us rather greater than we be indede, and shewe the kyng that we be suche men able to pay great raunsomes. Syrs, quod he, so shall I do, for I am bounde therto. Than this knight retourned to Lamorabaquy, and to his counsayle, and sayd howe those knyghtes whiche he hadde spoken with, were of the greatest men in all Fraunce, and were of the kynges lygnage, and said they were able to pay great raunsomes. Than Lamorabaquy sayd, howe their lyves shulde be saved, and all other prisoners to be slayne and hewen all to peces, in example of all other. Than the kynge shewed hymselfe before all the people that were there assembled, to whome they all made lowe reverence. They made a lane for hym to passe thorough, every man with his sworde naked in his hande, and so came thyder where the sayd lordes of Fraunce stode togyther. Than the king wolde se the correction of the other, whiche thynge the Sarazyns were desyrous to do.

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

Than they were all brought before Lamorabaquy naked in their shyrtes, and he behelde them a lytell and than tourned fro them warde, and made a sygne that they shulde be all slayne, and so they were brought through the Sarazyns that had redy naked swordes in their handes, and so slayne

CAP. CCXIII

Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

and hewen all to peces without mercy. This cruell justyce dyd Lamorabaquy that daye, by the whiche mo than thre hundred gentlemen of dyvers nacyons were tourmented and slayne for the love of God, on whose soules Jesu have mercy. Amonge other was slayne syr Henry Dantoigne, of Heynalt. And so it was, the lorde Boucyquaute, marshall of Fraunce, was one of theym that was brought naked before the kynge, and had ben slayne with other, and the erle of Nevers had nat espyed hym. As sone as he sawe hym he went streyght to the kynge and kneled downe, and dessyred hym effectuously to respyte fro the dethe that knyght syr Boucyquaut, sayenge howe he was a great man in Fraunce, and able to pay a great raunsome. Lamorabaquy condyscended to the request of the erle of Nevers, and so syr Boucyquaut was sette amonge them that shulde be saved. Thus cruell justyce was done that day upon the Crysten men. And bycause that Lamorabaquy wolde that his vyctory shulde be knowen in Fraunce, he apoynted out thre of the French knyghtes to come before hym, wherof syr Jaques of Helley was one. Than the kyng demaunded of the erle of Nevers whiche of the thre knyghtes he wolde chose to sende into Fraunce to the kynge, and to the duke of Burgoyne his father. Than the erle of Nevers sayd: Syr, and it please you, I wolde that this knyght, syr Jaques of Helley, shulde go thyder fro you and fro us. So syr Jaques taryed with Lamorabaquy, and the other two knyghtes delyvered to dethe and so slayne, whiche was pytie. Than Lamorabaquy was well apeased of his furoure, and understode howe the kyng of Hungery was scaped away alyve. Than he determyned to retourne into Turkey to a cytie called Bursa, and so he dyd, and thyder all the prisoners were brought, and than his army departed, and specyally suche as were of farre countreys, as Tartary, Perce, Mede, Sury, Alexandre, and of Lecto.[1] Than syr Jaques Helley was delyvered to retourne into Fraunce, and he was commaunded to retourne throughe Lombardy, and to recommaunde Lamorabaquy to the duke of Myllayne, and also he was streyghtly commaunded that in every place as he passed, to manyfest and publisshe the victory that Lamorabaquy had upon the Crysten men. The erle of Nevers wrote to

[1] *Lithuania.*

the Frenche kynge for hymselfe and all his company, and to his father the duke of Burgoyne, and to the duchesse his mother. Whan this knyght had his charge as well by writyng as by credence, he departed and toke his way towardes Fraunce. Or he departed he was sworne and promysed as soone as he had done his message in Fraunce, incontynent to retourne agayne thyder, whiche othe and promesse he acomplysshed lyke a trewe knight. Nowe we wyll leave speakynge at this tyme of Lamorabaquy, and of the lordes of Fraunce prisoners, and we wyll speke of other maters that fell the same season.

CAP. CCXIII Howe the siege before Nycopoly in Turkey was reysed by Lamorabaquy.

CAP. CCXIIII

Of the povertie and mysery that the Crysten knightes of Fraunce and other nacyons endured, in the commynge home to their countreys.

AFTER this great dyscomfyture that the Turkes had upon the Cristen men, suche knyghtes as coulde save themselfe, dyd. The same Mondaye there was a thre hundred knyghtes and squyers that were gone a foragynge, and were nat at the batayle, for whan they knewe by them that fledde that the batayle was doone, they had no desyre to retourne agayne to their lodginges, but fledde as well as they myght, and toke dyvers wayes to flye fro the Turkes. Ther fled bothe Frenchmen, Englisshmen, Almayns, Scottes, Flemynges, and of other nacyons, and they came into a countrey joynynge to Hungery, called Blacquy;[1] it was a countrey replenysshed with dyvers people, they were conquered upon the Turkes, and tourned perforce to the Crysten faythe. The kepers of the portes, townes, and castels, suffered these Crysten men to entre and to lodge, but the nexte mornynge at their departure they tooke fro these knyghtes and squyers all that they had, and gave them poore cotes, and a lytell sylver to passe therwith one dayes journey. This grace they shewed to the gentlemen. And as for other yeomen and varlettes they were spoyled all naked, and sore beaten, and yvell entreated,

[1] *Wallachia.*

CAP. CCXIIII

Of the povertie and mysery that the Crysten knightes endured in the commynge home.

without pytie. So they passed through the countrey of Blacquy in great povertie, and through Hungery: they coude scant get breed for Goddessake, nor lodgyng at nyght. They endured this daunger in passynge tyll they came to Vyen in Austrich: there they were receyved more swetely, and refresshed and newe cladde, and so throughe the realme of Boesme. For if they hadde founde the Almaygnes so harde, they had never tourned agayne, but rather dyed for colde and hunger. Every man that herde them tell of that adventure hadde pytie on them. So finally they came into Fraunce to Paris, and there shewed their adventures. At the begynnynge they coude nat be beleved: some in Parys sayde: It is pytie these unthriftes be unhanged or drowned, for tellyng of suche lies. Howebeit, these tidynges dayly multiplyed with resortyng of newe men. Whan the Frenche kynge understode that these newes dayly renewed, they were nothyng pleasaunt to hym, for it was a great dommage of the losse of the noble men of his blode, and of other good knyghtes and squyers of the realme of Fraunce. Than he commaunded no man to be so hardye to speke any more of that mater, tyll he were better enfourmed of the certentie: and commaunded that all suche as were come oute of Hungery, shulde be taken and put in prisone tyll the trouth were knowen. So there were many putte into prison. And the kyng hadde ordayned, that if the newes were nat trewe, that they shulde be all drowned and putte to dethe.

CAP. CCXV

Howe the trewe tidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house.

SO it was on Christenmas daye, sir Jaques of Helley about the houre of noone entred into Parys, and so toke his lodgynge, and demaunded where the kyng was; and it was shewed hym that he was at saynt Poules on the ryver of Seyn: than he went thyder. There was with the kyng the duke of Orlyaunce his brother, the duke of Berrey, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Burbone, and

CAP. CCXV

Howe the trewe tidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house.

therle of saynt Poule, and dyvers other noble men of the realme of Fraunce, as the usage was for suche noble men to be with the kynge at suche highe feestes. So sir Jaques of Helley entred into the court boted and spurred. As than he was nat beknowen, for he had of long tyme haunted farre countreis. He dyd so moche that he came to the kynges chambre, and sayd howe he came fro Lamorabaquy, oute of Turkey, and hadde ben at the batayle before Nicopolye, where the Christen men had lost the journey: and sayd he hadde letters fro the erle of Nevers, and fro other lordes of Fraunce, suche as were prisoners. Than he was brought to the kynge: he kneled downe, and wisely declared his message, as well fro Lamorabaquy as fro the erle of Nevers and other lordes of Fraunce prisoners in Turkey. The kynge gave hym audyence, and was swetely examyned of all the hole mater: and to every thyng he answered so discretely, that the kyng was well content with hym, and was ryght soroufull for the dommage that the kyng of Hungry and they had susteyned. Howebeit, they were gladde that the kyng of Hungery was scaped without dethe or prisonment; for they sayde he shulde recover ryght well agayne the losse and dommage that he had receyved at that tyme: also they were ryght joyfull that the erle of Nevers, and the other lordes, were escaped the dethe, and were but as prisoners. And they sayde there was no doute but they shulde be raunsomed and delyvered; for sir Jaques of Helley sayd, there was no doute but that Lamorabaquy wolde within the yere put them to raunsome, for he loved golde and richesse; and that sir Jaques sayd he knewe well, bicause he had long ben conversaunt in Turkey, and served Lamorabaquyes father more than thre yere. Thus the kynge ryght well receyved this knyght, and so dyde all other lordes, suche as were there: and every man sayd he was happy in this worlde to be in suche a batayle, and to have the acquayntaunce of suche a hethan kynge as Lamorabaquy was, sayenge it was an honoure for him and for all his lynage. Than the kyng commaunded all suche as were in prison to be delyvered, wherof they were gladde.

Thus these newes that sir Jaques of Helley had brought, spredde anone abrode in Fraunce and in other places.

CAP. CCXV Howe the trewe tidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house.

Many were right soroufull for the losse of their fathers, bretherne, husbandes and chyldren, and nat without good cause, and specially the gret ladyes of Fraunce, as the duchesse of Burgoyne for her sonne, the erle of Nevers, and her doughter Margarete of Heynault was soroufull for the erle her husbande. In lykewyse was dolorous Mary of Berrey countesse of Ewe, for her husbande the lorde Philyppe of Arthoise constable of Fraunce. And in lykewise so was the countesse of Marche, the lady of Coucy, and her doughter of Bare, the lady of Sully, and many other ladyes, as well of Fraunce as of other places. And whan they had wepte ynoughe, than they reconforted themselfe, in that they were natte slayne but prisoners; but suche as knewe their husbandes, fathers, bretherne, chyldren, and frendes deed, their lamentacions endured long in Fraunce. The duke of Burgoyn made moche of this knyght sir Jaques of Helley, who had brought hym worde that his sonne was alyve, and gave hym many ryche gyftes, and reteyned hym as one of his knyghtes with two hundred pounde of revenewes yerely duryng his lyfe. The Frenche kyng and all other lordes gave largely to this knight. Than he shewed howe he must nedes returne agayne to Lamorabaquy, for that was his promyse at his departynge, for he stoode but as prisoner, and sayd, howe he hadde nat retourned, but to do this message fro Lamorabaquy. The kynge and other thought it but resonable that he shulde kepe his promyse. Than the kynge and other wrote to these prisoners. And it was concluded by counsayle, that the Frenche kyng shulde sende a knight of honour to Lamorabaquy, to thentent that he myght retourne agayne to bring newe tydynges, in what case the prisoners were in: there was apoynted to go in this voyage sir John of Castellmorant, who was a wyse knyght and well languaged. Than it was demaunded of sir Jaques what jowelles or presentes the kynge myght best sende to Lamorabaquy, and that shulde best please him, to the entent that the prisoners shulde be the better entreated. The knight answered, that Lamorabaquy toke gret pleasure in clothes of arras, made of olde auncyent hystories; and also he sayd, he had great delyte in these whyte faucons, called gerfaucons; also he sayd, that fyne lynnen clothes, and fyne scarlettes, were moche made of

there, for of clothe of golde and sylke they hadde plentie. This pleased well the Frenche kyng and the duke of Burgoyne, whose myndes were sette to please Lamorabaquy. Thus a xii. dayes sir Jaques of Helley taryed at Parys, and every man was gladde to here hym reporte of the adventures of Turkey, and of the maner of Lamorabaquy.

CAP. CCXV
Howe the trewe tidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house.

Whan he departed to retourne, the kynge sayd to hym: Sir Jaques, take your way, and make but small journeys at your ease; I thynke ye wyll returne by Lombardy, and speke with the duke of Myllayne, for there is great amyte bytwene hym and Lamorabaquy. But whiche waye so ever ye go, we wyll that sir Johan of Castellmorant abyde in Hungry, tyll ye have gote hym a saveconducte to go to Lamorabaquy, with suche presentes as we shall sende hym, to the entent that he shulde be the more favorable to the prisoners. Sir, quod he, all this shal be done. So he departed and tooke the same waye he came. Anone after his departure, the kynge and the duke of Burgoyne dyde prepare for these presentes, and sir Johan of Castellmorant dispatched, and had his charge. He had with hym sixe sommers laden with presentes, two of them with clothes of arras, of the goodlyest that coude be gote, wrought with the storie of Alexandre, of his lyfe and conquestes, ryght pleasaunt to beholde; other two sommers were charged with fyne scarlettes whyte and reed; and also with moche payne the kynge gate of these whyte gerfaucons. Thus sir Johan of Castellmorant departed fro Parys with his presentes and charge, a fyftene dayes after that sir Jaques of Helley was departed. In this mean season the kynge of Hungry retourned into his countre, wherof all his people were right joyfull; for they loved hym, and so came and conforted hym, and sayde: Sir, though ye have hadde dommage at this tyme, another tyme ye shall right well recover it. Thus the kynge bare his dommage as well as he myght. On the other parte, Lamorabaquy returned into his countre, and came to a towne called Bursa, and thyder were all the prisoners brought, and there sette under sure kepynge. They were nothyng there at their ease; the heate of the countrey and dyette sore chaunged them, for they hadde ben used before to swete and delycate metes and drinkes,

CAP. CCXV

Howe the trewetidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house.

and had their owne cookes and offycers that dyde prepare their meates accordynge to their dyettes: and there in Turkey they were sarved all contrarye, with grose meates, flesshe yvell sodden and dressed: they had spyces ynoughe, and bredde made of mylke, clene fro the nature of Fraunce; they had wyne, and that was with great daunger. Thoughe they were all great lordes, they were but smally regarded there: the Turkes had as lyve they had been sicke as hole, and deed as alyve, they wolde they had ben all putte to execusyon. So these prisoners conforted eche other within themselfe for they sawe none other remedy; so some of them their nature chaunged and fell into sickenesse. He that made the best chere and countynaunce was the erle of Nevers, and that he dyde to conforte his companyons. Also sir Bouciquaut, and the erle of Marche, and sir Henry of Bare, were of good conforte, and tooke every thynge paciently, sayeng that the honours in armes, nor the glorie of this worlde, coude nat be hadde without payne, and somtyme with metyng of harde adventures: for they said that there was never so valyaunt and happy, that had alwayes every thyng as they wysshed; they sayde they were bounde to thanke God that he hadde saved their lyves, consydringe the displeasure that Lamorabaquy and his counsayle were in, for the losse of their men, For it was ones determyned that we shulde all generally have been putte to dethe. Than Bouciquaut sayd, I ought above all other to thanke God of my lyfe, for I was at the poynt to have ben hewen all to peces, as other of my company were: but at the request of my lorde here, the erle of Nevers, I was saved. This adventure call I good, and sithe God hath delyvered us fro this paryll, he wyll and it please hym delyver us fro a greatter, for we be his soudyers, and for his sake we have this payne. For by reason that sir Jaques of Helley is gone into Fraunce, I trust within a yere we shall have good conforte, and be delyvered; the matter can nat abyde thus; the Frenche kyng, and the duke of Burgoyn, wyll nat forgette us, but by some meanes raunsomed and delyvered.

Thus sir Boucyquaut reconforted hymselfe, and tooke every thing in good pacyence, but the lorde Coucy coude take no conforte, whiche was marveyle: for before that

tyme he was a lorde of great wysdome and of great conforte, and never was abasshed. But beyng thus in prison in Bursa, in Turkey, he was more disconforted than any other, and in more malencoly, and sayd he was sure he shulde never retourne into Fraunce. Sir Henry of Bare conforted hym as moche as he myght, and blamed hym of his disconforte, sayeng howe he ought to gyve conforte to all other; howebeit, the same sir Henry was sore abasshed in hymselfe, and oftentymes remembred his wyfe, and wolde wepe pituously: and in lykewise so dyd sir Philyppe of Arthoise, erle of Ewe and constable of Fraunce. Sir Guye of Tremoyle was of good conforte, and so was the erle of Marche. Lamorabaquy was content somtyme that they shulde have some pastyme, and somtyme he wolde go hymselfe and se them, and jangle and bourde with them right graciously, and wolde that they shulde se parte of his estate and puyssaunce.

CAP. CCXV

Howe the trewe tidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house.

Nowe lette us leave somwhat to speke of them, and speke of sir Jaques of Helley, and sir John of Castellmorant, who were bothe ryding towardes Hungry.

Sir Jaques of Helley taryed in the cytie of Bode,[1] in Hungry, about a ten or xii. dayes, abydinge for sir Johan of Castellmorant. And whan he was come sir Jaques was joyfull, for he was desyrous to passe forthe into Turkey, to acquyte hym of his faythe and promyse, and to se the erle of Nevers, and the lordes of Fraunce, and to comforte them. Whan the kynge of Hungry sawe sir John of Castelmorant, he made him good chere for the love of the Frenche kynge, and he understode that the Frenche kyng had sent by hym gret presentes and jowels to Lamorabaquy, wherwith he was sore displeased in his mynde, but he dissymuled the mater, and kepte it covert tyll sir Johan Heley was departed into Turkey warde. But he said to suche of his privye counsayle as he discovered the mater unto, howe that the miscreant dogge, his adversary Lamorabaquy shulde have no presentes out of Fraunce, nor fro no place els, if it laye in his power to lette it: sir John Helley was departed, and promysed to gette of Lamorabaquy a saveconducte for sir Johan Morant to passe into Turkey and repasse. So long he traveyled with guydes,

[1] *Buda.*

CAP. CCXV
lowe the ewetidynges f the batayle ı Turkey was nowen in ıe Frenche ynges house.

that he came into Turkey to the cytie of Bursa, but as than Lamorabaquy was in another cytie called Poly.[1] And where so ever he went the prisoners were caryed with hym, excepte the lorde Coucy, who taryed styll at Bursa, for he coude nat endure to ryde, he was so sicke; and with hym taryed a cosyn of his of Grece, a right valyant barone, discended of the lynage of the dukes of Austriche, who was called Mathelyn.[2] Whan sir Jaques was come to Poley, Lamorabaquy was gladde to se hym, bycause he was come out of Fraunce. Than sir Jaques right humbly said to him: Right dere and redouted sir, beholde here your prisoner; to the best of my power I have don your message that ye gave me in charge to do. Than Lamorabaquy sayd, Thou arte welcome, thou hast trewly acquyted thyselfe, and therfore I acquyte the of thy raunsome and prison, so that thou mayst go, retourne, and tary at thy pleasure. Wherof sir Jaques right humbly thanked hym. Than he shewed howe the Frenche kyng, and the duke of Burgoyne, had sente a knyght of honoure embassade to hym with credence, and had brought with hym certayne presentes of pleasure fro the Frenche kyng. Lamorabaquy demaunded what they were, and if he had sene them or nat. The knyght aunswered, Sir, I have nat sene them, but the knyght that hath the charge to do the message is at Bode, in Hungry; and sir, I am come before to shewe you therof, and to have a saveconducte for the sayd knyght to come and to retourne safely. Than Lamorabaquy sayd: We wyll that he have one, as thou wylte devyse; wherof the knyght thanked hym. So they departed as at that tyme. Another tyme sir Jaques spake with Lamorabaquy, and kneled downe before hym, and humbly requyred that he myght se the lordes and knyghtes of Fraunce, for he had dyvers thynges to saye to them out of their countre. Lamorabaquy studyed a lytell or he aunswered, and at laste sayd: Thou shalte speke with one of them, but with no mo: and so sent for the erle of Nevers alone. And whan he was come, sir Helley kneled downe to hym. Therle was glad to se hym, and demaunded howe the Frenche kynge, and the duke his father, and the duches his mother dyde. The knyght shewed hym all that he knewe, and all that he was charged to saye to hym; howe-

Boli (Hadrianopolis).

i.e. *the lord of Mitylene.*

beit, they had nat so good leysar to talke togyder as they wolde have had, for Lamorabaquyes men that were there present badde them have done, for they sayd they had other thynges to do than to stande there and wayte upon them. Than sir Jaques demaunded of the erle howe all the other lordes of Fraunce dyde. The erle said they were all in good case, except the lorde of Coucy, who was somwhat diseased, and was at the cytie of Bursa. Than sir Jaques shewed hym howe sir Johan of Castellmorant was come out of Fraunce fro the kyng, and fro the duke of Burgoyne, in ambassade to Lamorabaquy, and to asswage his yre he hath sent hym ryche jewelles and presentes, but he is at Bode, in Hungry, with the kyng there, and I am come before for a saveconduct for hym to come and go, the whiche Lamorabaquy hath graunted, and I thynke I shall retourne to hym shortely. Herof therle was right joyous, but he durst make no semblant for feare of the Turkes, but said: Sir Jaques, I understande by you that ye are quyte of your raunsome and prison, and that ye maye retourne whan it pleaseth you into Fraunce; whan ye come there, I praye you shewe the kyng and my father, that we all desyre them to treate as shortely as maye be for our delyveraunce, by some marchauntes Genowayes or Venisyons, and agree at the fyrst worde to that Lamorabaquy shall desyre for our raunsome: for if they shulde make long treatie with hym, we shal be lost for ever. For I understande Lamorabaquy is trewe of his worde, curtesse and shorte in all his maters, so he be taken at the poynt.

CAP. CCXV
Howe the trewetidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house.

Thus the erle of Nevers and sir Jaques departed. Whan the saveconducte was redy it was delyvered to sir Jaques. Than he toke his leave of Lamorabaquy, and of other of his courte of his aquayntaunce, and rode so longe by his journeys that he arryved at Bode, in Hungry: than he drewe to sir Johan Moraunt, who thought longe for hym. Than sir Jaques sayd: Sir, I have brought you a saveconducte to go into Turkey, and all youre company, and to retourne agayne at your pleasure. I am gladde therof, quod the knyght: lette us go to the kyng of Hungry and shewe hym therof, and than to-morowe betymes lette us departe, for I have taryed here longe ynoughe. Than they

CAP. CCXV

Howe the trewe tidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house.

bothe togyder wente to the kyng into his chambre, and shewed hym all the mater. The kynge than answered and sayde: Sir Johan Moraunt, and ye Helly, ye be welcome, ye shall go at youre pleasure, for the love of my cosyns of Fraunce, to whom I wolde be gladde to do pleasure, and to you also. Ye maye go and come throughe my realme at your pleasure, and also into Turkey if ye please; but as for your presentes that you, sir Johan, have brought out of Fraunce, I wyll nat agree that ye shall convey them to that hell hounde Lamorabaquye: he shall never be enryched therwith. It shulde tourne to our great shame and rebuke, if he shulde make his avaunt that bycause he hath had victorie on us, and hath in daunger and prison certayne lordes of France, that for feare therof there shulde be sente to hym riche presentes; as for the gerfaucons I care nat for, for foules flye lightly oute of one countre into another, they are soone gyven and soone lost: but as for riche hangynges of arras are thynges to be sene and to endure for ever: wherfore sir Johan Morant, if ye wyll passe into Turkey with your gerfaucons, go whan it please you, but as for any other thyng ye shall have non with you. Than the knyght aunswered and sayd: Certaynly, sir, it shulde nat be myne honour, nor pleasant to the Frenche kynge, nor to the lordes that have sente me hyder, without I myght accomplysshe my voyage as I have in charge. Well, quod the kynge, ye shall have none other waye of me at this tyme. So the kynge went fro them and lefte the two knightes spekynge toguyder: they were sore troubled with the abusyon of[1] the kynge of Hungery. Than they counsayled toguyder what was best for them to do. Than they determyned to sende hastye messangers to the Frenche kynge, and to the duke of Burgoyne, sithe they sawe they coulde have none other remedy; they wrote letters to the kyng, and to the duke of Burgoyne, that they shulde provyde for the mater. They sente their letters by poste, to make the more hast, and taryed styll themselfes at Bode, with the kyng of Hungry, abyding the retourne of their messanger.

[1] *on* P.

This messanger spedde so well, and made suche dilygence, that he came to Parys, and there founde the kyng and the duke of Burgoyn, and there shewed his letters, and they

CAP. CCXV

Howe the trewetidynges of the batayle in Turkey was knowen in the Frenche kynges house.

were reed at length, with the whiche they were nothynge pleased, and had marveyle that the kyng of Hungry wolde nat suffre his presentes to passe throughe his countre into Turkey. The duke of Berrey excused the kynge of Hungry, and sayde: howe he had good cause to do as he dyde, for it is a thyng to humbly done for the kynge to sende suche presentes to an hethan thyng. The duke of Burgoyne, bycause the mater touched hym, he was of the contrary opinyon, and said it was a thyng reasonable so to do, sith that fortune hath ben so favorable to him to have the vyctorie in suche a batayle, and hath hadde the kyng of Hungry in chase, and hath taken prisoners all suche noble men as were agaynst hym in that journey; wherfore the frendes of those prisoners may well fynde the meanes howe to comforte them for their delyveraunce. This dukes wordes were upholden with the kynge, and with dyvers of his counsayle. Than the kynge demaunded of his uncle of Berrey, sayeng, Fayre uncle, if Lamorabaquy the Soudan, or any other hethan kynge, sende you a ruby or a ryche jewell, wheder wyll ye receyve it or nat. Sir, quod he, I wolde take advyse. Than the kyng sayd, It passeth nat yet tenne yere sythe the Soudan sente you a ruby whiche cost twentie thousande frankes. So the kynge of Hungries dede was nat susteygned, but it was sayd that he had yvell done to stoppe the goyng of these presentes, and that it shulde rather hynder the prisoners than avaunce them. Than the kyng was counsayled to write to the kyng of Hungry amyable letters, desyringe hym nat to stoppe his knyght, but suffre him to passe into Turkey with his presentes and message. Than letters were written, sealed, and delyvered agayne to the same messanger; and so he departed to retourne into Hungry.

CAP. CCXVI

Howe the duchesse of Orlyaunce, doughter to the duke of Myllayne, was had in suspecte of the Frenche kynges syckenesse.

YE have harde here before howe the Frenche kyng lightly every yere was sore enclyned to fall into a fransey, so that there was nother phisycion nor surgion that coude remedy hym. Many said they wolde helpe hym; but whane it came to the poynt all their labour was in vayne, for the kynges sickenesse wolde nat cease nother for prayers nor for medycins, tyll it had ron his full course. Some of his phisycions and arioles and charmers, whan they sawe no remedy, than they said surely howe the kynge was poysoned or bewytched, by crafte of sorcerye, whiche noyse made the lordes and other to have many in suspecte. And some of these nigromancers affyrmed that the kynges sickenesse came by reason of sorcery and charmes; and to make them beleve it was so, they sayd they knewe it by the spyrites, who had shewed it to them. Of these devins, arioles and charmers, there were certayne brente at Parys, and at Avignon. They spake so moche, and sayd, that the duchesse Valentyne of Orlyaunce, doughter to the duke of Myllayn, hadde witched the kynge, to the entent to attayne to the crowne of Fraunce. They had so sclaundred this lady, that brute ran through the realme, that she used suche craftes of sorcery, sayeng, that as long as she was about the kyng, and that he myght se her, the kyng shulde nat amende. So it behoved this lady to avoyde this sclaunder, and to flye fro the paryll therof, to departe fro Parys: and so she wente to Asners, a fayre castell nere to Pontoyse, parteyning to her husbande the duke of Orlyaunce. And afterwarde she went and dwelt at Newcastell, on the ryver of Loyre, parteynynge to her husbande, who was sore displeased in his hert that suche a brute ran upon his wyfe; howebeit, he dissymuled the mater as well as he myght, nor dyd nat absent hymselfe fro the court, for he had moche busynesse for the maters of the realme. The

CAP. CCXVI

Howe the duchesse of Orlyaunce was had in suspecte of the Frenche kynges sycke-nesse.

duke of Myllayne, called Galeas, was well enformed howe his doughter the duchesse of Orlyaunce was accused, wherof he was sore displeased, and he sente twyse or thrise ambassadours to the Frenche kyng and his counsayle, and offred to fynde a knyght to fyght at uttraunce with any man that wolde accuse his doughter of any trayson. And the messangers in a maner thretned that the duke wolde make warre into Fraunce, bycause the Frenche kyng, beyng in good helthe, at Balyngham, bitwene saynt Omers and Calis, said, that assone as he were retourned into Fraunce, he wolde entende to nothyng, but to make warre upon the duke of Myllayne. And also the kyng of Englande, who as than called hymselfe his sonne, bycause he had maryed his doughter, promysed to sende hym a thousande speres, and sixe thousande archers, wherof the Frenche kyng was right joyfull. Provisyon was made for the Frenche kyng in the countie of Savoy, and in the Dolphenry. The kynges mynde was, to entre that waye into Lombardy, to make warre on the duke of Myllaygne. But that journey toke none effecte, for whan tidynges was brought into Fraunce of the disconfyture of the batayle before Nicopoly, in Turkey, and of the dethe and takynge of the lordes of Fraunce, the kynge and the duke of Burgoyne were so charged and busyed in that behalfe, that the journey into Lombardy was defeted. And also they sawe well that the duke of Myllayne was in favoure with Lamorabaquy, so that they durst nat displease hym, and so lette hym alone.

CAP. CCXVII

Howe the duke of Burgoyne, and the duchesse his wyfe, toke great dylygence to fynde the meanes to redeme out of prisone the erle of Nevers their sonne, and the other prisoners beyng in Turkey.

THE duke of Burgoyn and the duches studyed all the wayes they coulde devyse, by what maner or tretye they myght gette their sonne out of prysone; they knewe well or they coulde have hym they shulde be fayne to pay for hym a great raunsome. They mynisshed their housholde and kept a meaner estate, and gathered as moche golde and sylver as they coulde, for without that they coulde nat bringe aboute their purpose. And they gate theym acquayntaunce with marchauntes, Venycience and Genovoys, and suche other, for they thought by their meanes they shulde the rather come to their purpose. The duke of Burgoyne lay styll at Paris with the kynge his nephue, and had the chiefe governaunce of the realme, wherby his busynesse had the better effecte. The same seasone there was at Parys a marchaunt of Turkey, who had all the doynge for all other Lombardes; he was knowen and spoken of throughout all the worlde, his name was called Dyne of Responde,[1] and by hym all exchaunges were made. He was in good favour with the kyng and other lordes, before this journey in Turkey, but than after the batayle he was moche more made of. Oftentymes the duke of Burgoyne demaunded of hym counsayle howe he myght entre into treatie with Lamorabaquy, for the redempcion of his sonne, and of the other prisoners in Turkey. Sir, quod this marchaunt, lytell and lytell some meanes wyll be founde; syr, the marchauntes of Gennes, and of other isles, are knowen over all, and occupyeth the trade of marchaundyse in Quayre, in Alexandre, in Dammas, in Damiet, in Turkey, and out in farre countreys hethan, for as ye knowe well marchaundyse flyeth over all the worlde. Syr, let the

[1] *Dino Rapondi.*

kynge and you write amyably to theym, and promesse them great benefytes and profytes, if they wolde do for you; there is nothynge but it is overcome with golde and sylver. And also, syr, the kynge of Cyper, who hath hadde no warre with the kyng Lamorabaquy, he may ryght well ayde you: syr, as for me, ye may be sure I wyll do what I canne, for I am bounde therto. It is nat to be marveyled though the duke of Burgoyne and the duches sought out wayes howe they might recover agayne their sonne, for he was their heyre, therfore it touched them ryght nere. The ladyes of Fraunce tooke great sorowe for their husbandes and lovers, specyally the lady of Coucy coude nat forget her husbande: she wepte pytuously nyght and daye, and coulde take no comforte. The duke of Lorayne and syr Henry, her two bretherne, came to saint Gobyn, to se and to recomforte her, as moche as they myght, and they sayd they wolde sende into Turkey to knowe howe he dyd, for they said they understode howe he had a more gentyll prisone than any of his felowes had. The lady Coucy thanked greatly her two bretherne for their counsayle and great comforte. Than she desyred sir Robert Den,[1] a valyaunt knyght of Cambresys, to take the payne to go into Hungery, and into Turkey, to se what condycyon her husbande the lorde of Coucy was in. The knyght sayd, for her sake he was content to go thyder, and to bringe the certaynte of his estate. Thus he made him redy and five persones with him. Other ladyes in Fraunce sent in lykewyse to knowe what case their husbandes were in.

CAP. CCXVII

Howe the duke of Burgoyne toke great dylygence to redeme the erle of Nevers.

[1] *Esne.*

Ye have herde here before howe the kynge of Hungery wolde in no wyse consent that sir Morant shulde passe into Turkey with the Frenche kynges presentes, and in this opynion the kynge longe contynued, whiche was right dyspleasaunt to sir Morant, and to syr Helley, but they coude nat amende it. And so it happed that the great mayster of the Rodes came into Hungery to the cytie of Bode, to whome the kyng made good chere, wherto he was bounde, for the daye of the batayle the kynge had ben slayne or taken, and he had nat ben, and there he founde these two knyghtes of Fraunce. They came to him and shewed hym howe the kynge wolde nat suffre them to passe into Turkey,

CAP. CCXVII

Howe the duke of Burgoyne toke great dylygence to redeme the erle of Nevers.

with suche presentes as the Frenche kynge had sent to Lamorabaquy, wherof he had mervayle, and sayde howe he wolde speke to the kynge therin, and that they shulde well knowe. And so he dyd, and shewed to the kyng suche reasons that he tourned the kynges opynion, and so than they had leave to passe into Turkey, with all their presentes: and so they passed forthe under sure safeconduct, and came to Lamorabaquy, who receyved theym and their gyftes ryght honorably, after their usage, and made great joye of the presentes. The knyghtes for all that spake but ones all onely with the erle of Nevers at good leysare, and at their departynge the erle sayde to them: Syrs, I requyre you recommaunde me to my lorde my father, and to my lady my mother, and to my lorde of Berrey, and specyally to the kynge, and salute fro me all my other frendes: and desyre them that if Lamorabaquy wyll set us to raunsome, that by meanes of marchauntes or otherwyse, our raunsomes may be quyckly payed, and we delyvered; for by longe taryenge we shall lese, for in the begynnyng we were but viii. prisoners, and nowe we be xvi. whiche is in all xxiiii. and we shall nat be delyvered without we be delyvered all at ones, and as soone all as one, for Lamorabaquy hath so promysed, and surely he wyll nat be founde false of his worde. Syr Morant and syr Helley aunswered, and sayd howe his commaundement shulde be doone, to the whiche he was bounde. So they departed and retourned into Hungery, and by the way they encountred the messanger that was sent into Fraunce to the kynge, bringynge agayne letters fro the Frenche kyng to the kyng of Hungery. Than this messanger retourned agayne with theym, for he had no more to do whan he sawe them retourne, and had done their voyage into Turkey, and so retourned all togyther into Fraunce.

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought out the meanes howe to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande his nephue.

IT is long syth I spake of the duke of Gloucestre, yongest sonne to the kynge of Englande, Edwarde the Thyrde; I had no tyme to speke of him tyll nowe; and bycause his herte coude never love the Frenchemen, therfore of the losse that the Frenchemen had in Turkey he was rather gladde than sory. The same seasone he had a knyght with hym called syr Johan Laquynquay,[1] chiefe of his counsayle: as it was knowen after, he sayde to his lorde: Syr, the fumes and pride of the Frenchemen are well abated, by reasone of their journey into Hungery and Turkey; they be so full of pride and brages that they canne come to no good conclusion of any enterprise that they take in hande. That is trewe, quod the duke, and that apered right well duryng the warre in the dayes of the kynge my father, and of my brother the prince of Wales, for as than they coulde never atayne to any journey agaynst the Englysshemen, therfore I canne nat tell why we shulde have trewce with them: for if the warre were open, and by reason of our good tytell togyther, we shulde nowe make them better warre than ever was made before. For as nowe all the floure of chyvalry of Fraunce is outher taken or slayne, and the men of Englande desyre to have warre rather than peace, for they canne better lyve in warre than peace, for in lyenge styll is none advauntage. And I swere by God if I may lyve two yere in good helth the warre shall be renewed; I wyll nother spare for trewce, respyte, nor assuraunce. For in tyme paste the Frenchemen have kept no promesse with us, but have falsely and craftely taken away the herytage of the duchy of Acquytayn, whiche was gyven and delyvered by agrement of good treatie of peace to the kynge my father, whiche oftentymes I have shewed to the counsayle of Fraunce, whan we met and comuned togyther in the fronter of the marchesse of Calays. But alwayes they florysshed their

[1] *Lakingheath.*

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

ententes with so swete wordes, that myne opynion was nat regarded nor belyved, nouther by the kynge my nephewe, nor by my bretherne. But if there were a good heed kynge of Englande, that desyred the warre as well as I do, and wolde put to his payne to recover his herytage, whiche craftely and falsely hath been taken fro hym without any good tytle of reasone, he shulde fynde in Englande a hundred thousande archers, and syxe thousande men of armes redy apparelled to serve him and to passe the see, and to put their goodes and lyves in adventure in his servyce. But it is nat so, there is no suche kynge in Englande as nowe that loveth any dedes of armes; if there were, he wolde shewe hymselfe in Fraunce. There was never so good tyme to make warre in Fraunce as now, for whosoever goeth nowe shal be fought withall, whiche is all the desyre that Englysshmen have in trust of wynnyng, as they had in tyme paste in the dayes of good kynge Edwarde my father, and in my brothers dayes the prince of Wales. I am the yongest of all the bretherne of Englande, but if I may be beleved, I shall be the fyrste that shall renewe the warre, and trust to recover the wronges that the Frenchmen have done to us, and dayly do, and all by the symple slouthfulnesse that is amonge us, and specyally our heed the kynge my nephue, who wyll nowe alye hymselfe by maryage to the Frenche kinges doughter; this is no token that he wyll make warre, his eyen be to hevy, he careth for nothyng but for meate and drinke, and reste, and dalyenge with ladyes and damoselles: this is no lyfe for men of warre that wyll deserve to have honour by prowes of dedes of armes. Yet I remembre me of the last journey that I made into Fraunce: I thynke I had in my company but two thousande speares, and eyght thousande archers, and so passed the see, and entred into the realme of Fraunce fro Calayes, and so wente a longe into the realme, and founde none to withstande me, nor none that durst fyght with me. In lykewyse so dyd syr Robert Canoll,[1] and sir Hugh Caurell,[2] and Thomas of Grauntsome, and syr Phylyppe Gyssarde: and yet they had nat the nombre that I had with me, and yet they were before Parys, and demaunded batayle of the Frenche kynge, but they coulde never be aunswered, nor founde any person

[1] *Knolles.*
[2] *Calverley.*

CAP. CCXVIII

that sayd any thyng to them; and so they rode into Bretayne, and so alonge through the realme of Fraunce, fro Calais to Burdeaux, without havynge of any batayle or rencountre. But I thynke surely who so wolde nowe make any suche journey they shulde be fought withall, for he that calleth hymselfe kynge in Fraunce is yonge, hote, and of great corage and enterprise; he wolde surely fight, what ende so ever fell therof, and that is the thynge we desyre, for we love nothynge so well as to have batayle, for without it be by batayle and victory upon the Frenchemen, who be ryche, els we shall have no recovery, but suffre with the losse as we have done ever sythe my nephewe was kyng of Englande. This thyng can nat longe endure in this estate, but at laste the realme of Englande shall perceyve the mater and repente it, for the kyng taketh and shall take and reyse great tayles of the marchauntes, wherwith they be nat content, and yet they can nat tell where the good becometh. Thus the kynge enpovereth the realme of Englande, and gyveth to one and other largely, and there as it is but yvell bestowed, and his people byeth the bargayne, whiche shortely wyll growe to a rebellyon within the realme; for the people begyn to clater and to murmure therat, sayeng, howe they wyll no lenger suffre nor beare it; he sayeth to stoppe the peoples rumure that the trewce ones concluded bytwene him and Fraunce, that than he wyll make a voyage into Irelande, and enploye there his men of armes and archers, and there he hath ben but with a small conquest, for Irelande is no lande of great conquest nor profyte; the people ther are but rude and yvell, and a right poore countrey and inhabytable, and looke, what is wonne there in one yere, is loste in another. Laquynay, Laquynay, quod the duke, all that I have sayde is of trouth.

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

Thus the duke of Gloucestre devysed with his knyght with suche wordes and other, as it was well knowen after. He hated the kynge, and coulde speke no good worde of him, and though he were with his brother the duke of Lancastre, as one of the greatest rulers of the realme, he toke no care therof. And whan the kyng dyd sende for him he wolde come at his pleasure, and sometyme nat a

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

whyt; and whan he came to the kynge, he wolde be the laste shulde come, and the first that wolde departe; and in counsayle what he had ones sayd of his opynion, he wolde have it taken and accepted, els he wolde be displeased, and somtyme take his leave and departe to his maner in Essex, called Plasshey, there was his chiefe abydynge. This duke was a great prince, and might well spende by yere a threscore thousande ducates: he was duke of Gloucestre, erle of Essex and of Buckingham, and constable of Englande. He was of so marveylous condycyons, that the kynge douted hym more than any other of his uncles, for in his wordes he wolde nat spare nor forbeare the kynge. The kynge alwayes was humble and meke to hym, and what so ever he wolde demaunde the kynge wolde graunte it hym. This duke had caused in Englande to be done many cruell and hasty jugementes, for he had caused to be beheeded withoute tytell of any good reasone, that noble knyght syr Symon Burle, and dyvers other of the kynges counsayle, and chased out of Englande the archebysshop of Yorke, and the duke of Irelande, bycause they were so nygh of the kinges counsayle, and layde to their charge that they had counsayled the kynge wronge, and ledde hym as they lyst, and had spente the revenewes of Englande at their pleasures. This duke had two bretherne, the duke of Lancastre, and the duke of Yorke: these two were ever about the kynge, wherat this duke of Gloucestre hadde great envy, and wolde say to dyvers, as to suche as he trusted, as Robert bysshop of London, and to other, whan they came to him to Plasshey: Frendes, my two bretherne overchargeth greatly the kynges house: it were better they were at home at their owne houses. This duke by subtyle coverte wayes drewe to his acorde the Londoners, for he thought if he might be sure of them, he shulde sone have all the rest of the realme to his acorde. This duke had a nephue, sonne to the doughter of his elder brother, called Lyonell duke of Clarence, whiche doughter was maryed into Lombardy, to the sonne of syr Galeas duke of Myllayne; this duke Lyonell dyed in the cytie of Aste, in Piemounte. So this duke of Gloucestre wolde gladly have sene his nephue, sonne to the doughter of the duke of Clarence, called Johan erle of Marche, to

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

have ben kynge of Englande, and to have had his nephue kynge Rycharde deposed, for he sayd howe the kynge was nat worthy to holde nor to governe the realme of Englande. This he wolde say to them that he trusted, and he dyd so moch that he caused the erle of Marche to come to his house, and than and there he dyscovered to hym all his entent and secretnesse, and sayde howe he had determyned to make hym kynge of Englande, and kyng Richarde to be put downe, and his wyfe also, and to be kept in prison durynge their lyves: and so he desyred effectuously the erle to accept his offre and good wyll, sayenge howe he wolde do the beste he coulde to bringe it aboute, and that he had of his acorde and alyaunce the erle of Arundell, and therle of Warwyke, and dyvers other prelates and lordes of Englande. The erle of Marche was sore abasshed whan he herde the duke his uncle speke suche wordes; howebeit, lyke a yonge man he dissymuled the mater, and aunswered wysely, to thentent to please the duke, and said howe he wolde be glad to be ruled as he wolde have hym, but, he sayd, he wolde be well advysed or he accepted suche promesse to sone, and wolde take therin advyse and delyberacyon. And whan the duke of Gloucestre sawe the maner of the erle, than he desyred him to kepe the mater secrete. The erle answered so he wolde do. Than therle departed as sone as he coude, and so wente into Irelande to his herytage, and after he wolde never entende to the dukes treatie, but alwayes excused himselfe wysely, yet ever he kept the mater secrete, for he sawe well the conclusyon shulde nat be good.

It was sayd howe the duke of Gloucestre sought all the wayes he coude to set a trouble in Englande, and to styrre the Londoners agaynst the kynge. So it was the same yere that the truce was made bytwene Englande and Fraunce, to endure for thyrty yere, and that the kynge was retourned agayne into Englande with his yonge wyfe; than the duke of Gloucestre enfourmed the Londoners, and sayd: Syrs, make ye a request to the kynge and it shall be reasonable: desyre, that seynge he hath peace with his enemyes, that ye may be franke and fre fro all subsydies and aydes that hath ben graunted this twenty yere past, affyrmyng howe they

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

were nat graunted but durynge the seasone of the warre. For ye syrs, quod the duke, that be marchauntes, are yvell entreated and sore oppressed, to pay of every hundred florens xiii.; and all these goodes are spent in ydlenesse, in daunsynge, and makynge of feastes, and eatynge and drinkynge, and all ye pay for, wherby ye be sore traveyled: and shewe you to the kynge howe ye wolde that the realme of Englande shulde be governed acordinge to the auncyent customes; and ye may say that whan the kyng hath any nede, or the realme, or for the honour of the countrey, and for the defence therof, howe that ye wyll be redy to ayde it, in suche wyse that the kynge and his counsayle shall holde them content. Thus by the settynge on of the duke of Gloucestre, the Londoners, and the counsayles of dyvers other cyties and townes of Englande, assembled theym togyther, and on a daye came to Eltham, a seven myle fro London, where the kyng was: and whan they came before the kynge, they made a request of all these foresayd thynges, and wolde that it shulde have ben acomplysshed incontynent. And whan this request was made there was with the kynge no mo of his uncles but two, the dukes of Lancastre and of Yorke. Than the kynge charged the duke of Lancastre to make theym an aunswere, and than the duke sayd to them: Syrs, the kynges pleasure is that ye departe home every man to his owne, and within a moneth assemble agayne togyder at London, or at Westmynster, and there the kynge wyll be with his counsayle, and his nobles, prelates and other, and there they wyll be redy to here your requestes; and loke what shall be thought necessary by his counsayle, the kynge wyll graunt it you, in suche wyse that ye shall all be well contente. This aunswere pleased many of them, but nat all, for there were some that were of the opinyon of the duke of Gloucestre, who wolde have had a shorter answere: but the dukes of Lancastre and of Yorke apeased them with fayre swete wordes, and so they departed for that tyme. But for all that they left nat their pursute, so that the next moneth after they assembled at Westmynster, there beynge the kynge with his counsayle, and than there was present the duke of Gloucestre, who greatly enclyned to their demaundes, but at makinge of the aunswere he spake nat all

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

that he thought in his hert, but dissymuled the mater, to the entent that the kynge nor his bretherne shulde nat preceyve his mynde. Than the duke of Lancastre made the aunswere to the Londoners for the kynge, and sayd: Ye syrs of London and other, the kynge hath commaunded me to gyve you a determynable answere to your requestes in his name and his counsayle, and by the consent of other prelates and noble men of his realme. Sirs, ye knowe well to the entent to eschewe all parelles and daungers that myght come to this realme, there was a generall graunt made by you and other of the good cyties and townes of Englande, that there shulde be raysed a tayle on the state of marchaundyse, in maner and fourme as it hath rynne nowe upon a syxe yere, that was to paye of every hundred, xiii.; and by reason therof, the kynge graunted and sealed to you certayne fraunchesses, the whiche he is nat in mynde to take fro you, but rather to encrease it dayly acordyng to your desertes; but where as ye nowe wolde repell agayne that ye ones wyllyngly agreed unto and graunted, therfore here openly he repelyth agayne all suche graces and grauntes as he hath made to you before this tyme. Beholde here all these noble men and prelates have sworne and promessed to the kynge to ayde and sustayne all thynges lawfully gyven and graunted. Therfore, syrs, considre well that the state of the king is great and chargeable, and if it augment in one maner it mynyssheth in another, for the rentes and revenewes turneth nat to the kynges profyte as moche as it hath doone in tyme paste: the kinge and his counsayle hath ben at great coste and charge sythe the warres renewed bytwene Englande and Fraunce, and great charge it hath been to the kynge for suche ambassadours as have treated bytwene the parties, as well here as beyonde the see; also the pursuynge of the kynges maryage hath coste gret goodes. And though there be nowe peace bytwene the realmes, yet the charge is great of kepynge of the garysons in townes and castelles, beynge under the kynges obeysaunce as well in Gascoyne, Burdeloys, Bayonois, Bygore, and the marches of Gyan and Calays; also in kepyng the see and the portes and havens of Englande. In lykewyse it is chargeable the kepyng of the fronters of Scotlande, whiche may nat be

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

unprovyded, and also the marchesse of Irelande. All these thynges and other consernynge the kynges estate and honour of the realme draweth yerely great coste and charge, whiche is farre better knowen by the noble men of the realme than by any of you that medeleth but with your marchaundyse. Thanke God, sirs, that ye be thus in peace, and take hede that none paye without he be worthy and occupye the feate of marchaundyse, and as well payeth the straungers as ye do. Ye be at a freer marte than they of Fraunce or Lombardy, or other realmes whyther as youre marchaundyse repayreth, for they be tayled and retayled agayne two or thre tymes in a yere, and ye passe by a reasonable ordynaunce sette and assessed upon your marchaundyse.

These wordes or suche lyke spoken by the duke of Lancastre apeased greatly the people, who were sette to do yvell by the settynge on of other. Thus they departed at that tyme without any other thynge doynge, and the moste parte of theym were well content; and suche as wolde the contrary made no semblante therof at that tyme. The duke of Gloucestre retourned to his maner of Plasshey, and he sawe well as at that tyme he coulde nat brynge his purpose to passe, but styll he studyed howe to make trouble in Englande, and to fynde the wayes howe to renewe the warre in Fraunce: and he had of his acorde his wyfes uncle, the erle of Arundell, who desyred nothynge but warre, and they had doone so moche that they had drawen to their acorde the erle of Warwyke.

The kinge of Englande had two bretherne by his mother, one called Thomas erle of Kente, and the seconde sir Johan of Holande, a valyaunt knyght, who had to his wyfe the doughter of the duke of Lancastre: he was erle of Huntyngdon and chamberlayne with the kynge; it was he that slewe the sonne of Rycharde[1] erle of Stafforde, as ye have herde here before in this hystorie. The sayde Rycharde erle of Stafforde had a squyer to his sonne, who was with the duke of Gloucestre. This erle of Huntyngdon moste commonly was ever in the courte with the kynge his brother, and he knewe more of the dealynge of the duke of Gloucestre than any other dyd, for covertely and wysely he made enquery, and also he douted greatly the duke; for he knewe he was

[1] *Hugh.*

CAP. CCXVIII

fell and sodayne, and hyghe mynded, and sawe howe he kept his enemye aboute hym, for the dethe of the yonge Stafforde: and the peace therof was never made, but the grudge therof contynued styll. The kynge loved well his brother, and bare him against every man. And the kynge sawe well howe his uncle the duke of Gloucestre was ever contrary to hym, and was ever about to conspyre agaynst him, and to styrre the realme to rebellyon. So the kynge and his brother of Holande wolde oftentymes comune togyther. The same seasone the Frenche kyng had sent the erle of saynt Powle into Englande to se the kyng and his doughter the quene, and to norisshe love; for the truce was made in suche maner and condycion, that their subgiettes myght repayre eche to other, in dyspyte of all their yvell wyllers. The kynge and the erle of Huntyngdon made them good chere, as well for the honoure of the Frenche kynge, as for that he had wedded their suster. At that tyme the dukes of Lancastre nor of Yorke were nat with the kynge, for they began somwhat to dissymule, for they sawe well that the people in Englande beganne to murmure in dyvers places on the state and rewle that the kynge kept, and that the maters were lykely to go yvell: they thought they wolde nat be at the kinges commaundement nor at the peoples: and all this came by reasone of the duke of Gloucestre and his company. The kynge of Englande spared nat to shewe therle of saint Powle the state that Englande stode in, and howe he founde alwayes his uncle the duke of Gloucestre harde and rebell agaynst hym, and shewed hym all thynge that he knewe. Whan the erle of saynt Powle herde the kynge say in that wyse, he had great marveyle therof, and sayde howe it ought nat to be suffred, and sayd: Syr, if ye suffre this, they wyll dystroy you: it is sayd in Fraunce howe the duke of Gloucestre entendeth to nothynge, but to breake the peace and to renewe the warre agayne, and that lytell and litell he draweth the hertes of yonge men of the realme to his parte, for they desyre rather warre than peace; so that the auncyent wyse men, if the warre beganne to styrre, they shulde nat be herde nor beleved, for reason, right, nor justyce hath no place nor audyence where as yvell reygneth; therfore provyde therfore rather

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

betymes than to late; it were better ye had theym in daunger than they you. These wordes of the erle of saynte Powle entered greatly into the kynges hert, and made hym sore to muse; and after that the erle of saynt Powle was retourned into Fraunce, the kyng of Englande shewed all this mater to his brother the erle of Huntyngdon, who said to the kynge: Syr, my fayre brother of saynt Powle hath shewed you the trouth, therfore take good advyse in this mater.

And as I was enfourmed, aboute a moneth after that the erle of saynte Powle had ben in Englande and retourned into Fraunce, a paryllous fame and renome ranne upon the kynge in Englande, and in a maner there was a generall brewte that the erle of saynt Powles commynge into Englande was to treate with the kynge, that the Frenchemen myght have Calayes into their handes. This brute greatly troubled and moved the people in Englande, in so moche that certayne of London roode to Plasshey to the duke of Gloucestre, and shewed hym of that matter. The duke apeased nat their wordes, but rather augmented it more and more, sayenge howe he coulde nat do therwith; but sayd, he was sure that the Frenchemen wolde it hadde coste theym all their kynges doughters, so that they might have Calais at their pleasure. This answere set the Londoners afyre, and sayde, howe they wolde speke with the kynge, and shewe hym howe the realme was nat content. Well, quod the duke, shewe it hym in good maner, and make doute that the people wyll nat be contente; and marke well what answere he maketh, and shewe me therof the nexte tyme I speke with you, and therupon I shall gyve you counsayle what ye shall do farther. It maye well be that there be some false traytours counsayleth the kynge to the same. There is the erle Marshall, who is capytayne of Calays, who hath been two tymes in Fraunce and taryed at Parys, and he was one of the chiefe procurers in the treatie for the kynges maryage with the doughter of Fraunce. And these Frenchemen are ryght subtyle, and can drive their purpose afarre of, and lytell and lytell pursue their ententes, and wyll gyve largely to bringe about their purpose.

Accordynge to the dukes counsayle, the Londoners on a

CAP. CCXVIII

daye wente to Eltham to the kynge, at whiche tyme there was the kynges two bretherne, the erle of Kent and therle of Huntyngdon, the erle of Salisbury, and the archebysshoppes of Caunterbury and of Duvelyn his confessour, the lorde Thomas Percy, the lorde Lysle, Richarde Credon, Johan Goulofer, and dyvers other knyghtes of the kynges chambre. There these Londoners right wisely shewed the kynge their ententes in a meke humble maner, and sayde howe the brute ranne that the kynge was about to delyver up Calais into the Frenchemennes handes. The kyng had great marveile of these newes, for it touched hym nere to the hert; but right sagely he dissymuled the mater for that tyme, and apesed the Londoners, and sayd, howe all that noise was wronge, for it was nothyng so. But for trouthe, he said the erle of saynt Poule was come into Englande for none other entente but to sporte hym, and was sent thider by the Frenche kynge, to se hym and the quene his wyfe: other marchaundyse, the kynge sayde, there was none bytwene them, and that the kynge sware, by the faythe that he owed to God and to the crowne of Englande, and said howe he had great marveyle wherof suche wordes shulde ryse. Thane the erle of Salisbury sayde: Sirs, ye good men of London, go home to youre houses, and be well assured that the kynge and his counsayle wyll do nor entende to do any thynge but that that shal be for the honour and profite of this his realme of Englande. And whosoever hath fyrst brought up these wordes are yvell counsayled, and shewe well howe they wolde gladly have this realme in trouble, and to have the people to ryse agaynst the kyng, whiche thynge ye of London ought to feare, for by reason of the laste rebellyon ye were in great paryll to have been all utterly dystroyed. For whan yvell people be up and governe, justyce nor reason than hath no place. Those wordes apeased greatly the Londoners, and were contented with the kynges answere, and so retourned to the cytie of London. And the kynge taryed at Eltham ryght pensyve and full of displeasure, by reason of the wordes that he had herde, and had stylle about hym his two bretherne and other suche as he trusted beste, for he thought hymselfe natte well assured amonge his uncles. For he sawe well howe they absented

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

theymselfe fro his courte, and kepte them at home at their owne houses, so that he was halfe in doute of them, and specially of the duke of Gloucestre, and so kepte dayly aboute hym a garde of a thousande archers.

Yt was enformed the kynge of Englande of a suretie, that his uncle the duke of Gloucestre and the erle of Arundell purposed with puissaunce of people to take the kyng and the yong quene and to putte them into a castell, there to be kepte surely in an honest maner with meate and drinke and other necessaries; and also, howe there shulde be set four governours in the realme, as the duke of Lancastre and the duke of Yorke, to rewle fro the Temmys northwarde unto the ryvers of Humbre and Thyne, and of Thay, ronnyng by the cytie of Warwyke,[1] comprehendynge all the signories of Northumberlande and the boundes of Scotlande; and the duke of Gloucestre had all the rule of London and of the Londoners, and of Essexe, comprehendyng all the boundes of the see, and thider where as the ryver of Humbre entereth into the see, and also of all the portes and havyns above London to Hampton and to Cornwall; and the erle of Arundell he to have the rule of the landes movynge fro London bytwene Sussexe and Kent, Arundell, Surrey, Devonshyre, and Barkeshyre, and of all the hole signories bytwene the ryver of Thamyse and Bristowe and the ryver of Syverne, whiche departeth Englande and Wales: and they shall holde and do justyce and reason to every man. But their entencyons is, if they can fynde any reasonable waye, to move agayne and to renewe the warre bytwene Englande and Fraunce, and that if the Frenche kyng wolde have agayne his doughter, he shulde: for sithe she is but eight yeres of age, paradventure whan she cometh to xii. yeres she may repente her and refuce her mariage, bycause she was maryed in her youth; and also it was no reason to dismary her fro the heyre of Bretaygne, as it was promised; and if whan she cometh to perfyte age that she wyll nat refuce her maryage, than she must abyde by right styll quene of Englande, and to have her dowrye, but in no wyse she shulde be crowned quene; and that if the kynge dyed or she came to laufull age, than they purpose to sende her agayne into Fraunce to her father. This was shewed

[1] *Berwick.*

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

to the king, for suche wordes were spoken by dyvers Englysshemen, and specially by the Londoners, who coude nat love the kynge. And they repented them, that whan the commons of Sussexe, Kent, and Essexe were up, and came to London, in that they dyde breake their purpose; for as some of them confessed, they were in mynde to have slayne the kyng, the erle of Salisbury, the erle of Oxenforde, and all the kynges counsayle. And if they hadde so done by meanes of the rebellyon, the Londoners thanne shulde soone have made a newe heed, and by meanes of the duke of Gloucestre, to have founde some person to have had the crowne and governynge of the realme, and therby to have brought the realme into a better case thanne it was in as than. Thus the Londoners and suche other of their secte dayly murmured and had many secrete counsayls. All this the kynge was enformed of, and moost faute was layde upon the duke of Gloucestre.

King Richarde was abasshed oftentymes whan he herde and sawe suche covert hate and yvell wyll borne against hym. Alwayes he made lovynge countynaunce to his uncle of Gloucestre and to the Londoners, but it aveyled hym nothyng. On a daye the kynge sayd to his other two uncles, of Lancastre and of Yorke: Sirs, on Goddes name I requyre you to gyve me your advise and counsayls. I am dayly enformed of a suretie, that your brother myne uncle of Gloucestre, the erle of Arundell, and their complyces, are mynded to take me perforce, by the agrement of the Londoners, and purpose to close me in a castell, and to order my fyndynge by certayne porcion, and my wyfes in lykewise, who is but yonge, and to seperate her fro me, and to kepe her estate in another place. Fayre uncles, this is a cruell maner, and it ought nat to be suffred, as long as I maye withstand it. Ye have doone me homage and sworne to be trewe to me in the presence of kynge Edwarde of good memorie my grauntfather, at whiche tyme all the great prelates and lordes of this realme sware to kepe and maynteyn me as their kynge, a xx. yere paste. Wherfore, fayre uncles, for love and charyte, and by the othe and promyse that ye have made, counsayle me trewly, as ye are bounde to do. For as farre as I can ymagin, myne uncle of Glocestre

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

entendeth on none other thing but how he might renewe agayne the warre bitwene Englande and Fraunce, and to breake the peace whiche we have confyrmed, bothe you and all other of the realme, by sweryng and sealyng: and by the same composycion I am joyned in maryage to the doughter of Fraunce without thynkyng of any yvell. And ye knowe well, that whosoever dothe contrary to that he is sworne unto and hath sealed to the same, and so proved, dothe yvell and ought to be punisshed therfore bothe in body and goodes; and also ye knowe well that I forbeare myne uncle of Gloucestre as moche as I may do, and take no regarde to thretnyng, whiche myght cost me derely. Uncles, ye are bounde to counsaile me, sithe I demaunde it with reason. And whan they herde the kynge speke thus, and sawe well howe the mater sore troubled his mynde and that it touched hym nere, and also they knew well moche of his sayenge was trewe, they sayd: Sir, suffre and lette the tyme ryn and passe; we knowe well our brother of Glocestre hath the moost paryllous heed and brayne of any manne in Englande. But we knowe well he can do no more than a man maye do; if he buylde on the one syde we shall buylde on the other; as long as ye wyll be ordred by our counsaile, ye shall nat nede to care for our brother; he saythe oftentymes many thynges wherof foloweth none effecte. He all alone nor they of his counsayle canne nat breke the peace that is taken, nor can nat enclose you in any castell. We shall never suffre that, nor to be seperated fro your wyfe, for if he saye so and thinke it, he is foule abused; therfore, sir, we humbly beseche you to apeace youreselfe; every thyng shall turne well with Goddes grace. All that a man speketh commeth nat to effecte, nor all that he sayth oftentymes he can nat accomplysshe. Thus the dukes of Lancastre and Yorke apeased their nephewe kynge Richarde.

These two dukes sawe well that the busynesse of Englande began to be yvell, and parceyved that gret hatered encreased dayly bytwene the kyng and the duke of Glocestre; and to thentent that they wolde nat entremedell bytwene them, they departed fro the kynges court with all their company and servauntes, and so toke their leave of the kyng for a

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

tyme, and went to their owne. And the duke of Lancastre toke with hym his wyfe, the lady Katheryn Ruet, who hadde ben in company with the yong quene of Englande, and went a huntyng of the dere, as the usage is in Englande; and the kynge taryed about London. But afterwarde the kynges uncles repented them that they departed out of the courte, for there fell afterwarde suche maters in Englande, that all the realme was in trouble, the whiche had nat so fortuned if they had ben about the kynge; for they wolde have founde other provisyon for the mater than they dyde that counsayled the kyng. There were none of the kynges servauntes but that greatly douted the duke of Gloucestre, and wolde gladly that he had ben deed, they had nat cared howe. The gentyll knight sir Thomas Percy had ben long soverayne squyer of the kynges house, that is in Fraunce mayster and seneschall, for all the state of the kynge passed throughe his handes. He than consydring the great hatereddes that encreased bitwene the kyng and his uncle of Glocestre, and among other great lordes of Englande, with whom he was wel beloved, like a sage knight he ymagined that the conclusyons coude nat be good. Than he gave up his offyce as honorably as he coulde, and tooke leave of the kynge, and the kynge gave hym leave full sore agaynst his wyll; howebeit, he made suche excusacions, that he departed and another set in his offyce. The kyng had as than but yonge counsayle about hym, and they greatly douted the duke of Gloucestre, and oftentymes wolde saye to the kynge: Ryght dere sir, it is a perylous thyng to serve you, for we have sene suche as have served you in tymes paste, and suche as were ryght synguler in your favoure, yet they have had but small guerdone. Sir Symon Burle, who was a sage valyaunt knight, and in good favoure with my lorde your father, whome God pardone, he had great payne and traveyle for your fyrst maryage: yet your uncle the duke of Gloucestour caused hym to dye shamefully, his heed to be stryken of lyke a traytour before all the worlde, with dyvers other that he hath put to dethe, as ye knowe well: for all the puissaunce that ye were of ye coude nat save them. And, sir, we that sarve you nowe, looke for the same rewarde. For whan your uncle cometh

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

to you, the whiche is nat often, we dare nat lyfte up our eyen to loke upon any persone, he loketh so hye over us; he thynketh we do hym moche wrong that we be so nere about you as we be. Wherfore, sir, knowe for trouthe that as long as he liveth there shall be no peace in Englande, nor ye shall do no man good. Also he thretneth you and your wife to close you up in a castell, and there to be holden under subjection, and to lyve by porcion. Sir, ye be a kyng lost if ye take nat good hede to yourself: as for your wife nedeth nat to care, she is yong, and doughter to the Frenche kynge; they dare nat displease her, for moche yvell might come therby in Englande. Your uncle of Gloucestre, to thentent to make you to be behated with your people, hath sowen dyvers sclaundorous wordes upon you throughout London and in other places, sayeng howe ye be nat worthy to beare the crowne nor to holde so noble an herytage as is the realme of Englande, sythe ye have taken to your wyfe the doughter of the Frenche kyng your adversary: wherby he saythe ye have greatly febled the signorie and realme of Englande, and hath sore discoraged the hertes of the noble valyant knightes and squiers of the realme, who have alwayes valyantly contynued the warre, and yet wolde do. Thus they saye that ye have brought the realme in great paryll and adventure to be lost, affyrmyng howe it is pytie that ye have been suffred to contynue so long as ye have done. Also the Frenchemen bruteth that ye wyll put out of your armes tharmes of Fraunce, wherwith the people are nat content, and hateth you therfore; and they thynke it trewe, bycause ye were so redy and gladde to take a truce, they thynke more rather by force than by love, for the noble men of the realme, who have served and maynteyned the warres, never agreed therto. Also they saye, that ye have nat dilygently revisyted nor oversene the letters patentes, gyven, accorded, sworne and sealed by kyng Johan, somtyme Frenche kyng, and by his sonnes; the whiche graunt his children lyveng was nothyng upholden but craftely broken: and the Frenchmen founde cautels and subtelties by wrongefull wayes to renewe agayne the warre, and therby toke and usurped all the right that your predecessurs had in that quarell, and hath wonne

therby landes and countreis in Acquitany, with cyties, castelles and townes. And all this, they saye, ye take no hede of, but have loste it thoroughe your neglygence, and hath shewed but poore corage, and that ye doute your ennemyes, and have nat pursued the accydentes of the mater, and the good and juste quarell that ye had and as yet have, the whiche quarell your predecessours had as longe as they lyved: first my lorde your father, the prince of Wales and of Acquytayne, and also good kyng Edwarde your graunt-father, who toke great payne and dilygence to augment their signories. Thus, sir, the Londoners saye, and so dothe other, that a day shall come that ye shall repent you. Therfore, sir, we can no lengar hyde these wordes fro you, for they be daylye renewed.

CAP. CCXVIII

Howe the duke of Gloucestre subtelly sought to dystroye kynge Rycharde of Englande.

CAP. CCXIX

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall, by the commaundement of the kyng.

KING RICHARDE of England noted well these sayd wordes, the which was shewed hym in secretnesse; and lyke an ymaginatyfe prince as he was, within a season after that his uncles of Lancastre and of Yorke were departed out of the courte, than the kynge toke more hardynesse on hym, and said to hymselfe that fyrste it were better for hym to distroye another rather than another shulde distroye hym; thynkynge that shortely he wolde have his uncle of Glocestre in suche case, that he wolde be assured of hym that he shulde do hym no displeasure after. And bycause he coulde nat bring about his purpose alone, he dyscovered his mynde to such as he trusted best, as to therle Marshall his cosyn erle of Notyngham, and shewed hym his full mynde what he wolde do and have to be doone. The erle Marshall, who loved the kyng better than the duke of Glocestre dyde, kept the kynges purpose secrete, saving to suche as he wolde be ayded by, for he coude nat do the kynges pleasure alone. On a day the kyng in maner as goyng a huntynge, he rode to Haveryng Boure, a xx.

CAP. CCXIX

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

myle fro London in Essexe, and within xx. myle of Plasshey, where the duke of Gloucestre helde his house. After dyner the kyng departed fro Haveryng with a small company, and came to Plasshey about v. a clocke; the weder was fayre and hote. So the kyng came sodainly thyder about the tyme that the duke of Gloucestre had supped, for he was but a small eater, nor satte never long at dyner nor at supper. Whan he herde of the kynges commynge, he went to mete with hym in the myddes of the court, and so dyde the duchesse and her chyldren, and they welcomed the kynge, and the kyng entred into the hall, and so into a chambre: than a borde was spredde for the kynges supper. The kynge satte nat longe, and sayd at his fyrst commyng: Fayre uncle, cause fyve or sixe horses of yours to be sadylled, for I wyll praye you to ryde with me to London: for to morowe the Londoners wyll be before us, and there wyll be also myne uncles of Lancastre and Yorke, with dyvers other noble men: for upon the Londoners requestes I wyll be ordred accordyng to your counsayle; and commaunde your stewarde to folowe you with your trayne to London, where they shall fynde you. The duke, who thought none yvell, lightly agreed to the kynge. And whan the kyng had supped and rysen, every thynge was redy. The kynge than toke leave of the duchesse and of her children, and lepte a horsebacke and the duke with hym, accompanyed all onely but with sevyn servauntes, thre squyers and foure yeomen, and tooke the waye of Bondelay, to take the playne waye, and to eschewe Brendwode and London common hyghe waye. So they rode a great pace, and talked by the way with his uncle and he with hym, and so aproched to Stratforde on the ryver of Thamise. Whan the kyng came nere to the busshment that he had layde, than he rode fro his uncle a great pace, and lefte hym somwhat behynde hym. Than sodaynly the erle Marshall with his bande came galopyng after the duke, and overtoke hym and saide: Sir, I arest you in the kynges name. The duke was abasshed with that worde, and sawe well he was betrayed, and began to call loude after the kyng. I can nat tell wheder the kyng herde hym or nat, but he turned nat, but rode forthe rather faster than he dyde before.

CAP. CCXIX

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

Nowe lette us leave spekyng of this matter for a season, tyll we retourne therto agayne.

Ye have herde here before in this historie howe sir John of Castellmorant and sir Jaques of Helley were sente into Turkey to Lamorabaquy, fro the Frenche kyng and fro the duke of Burgoyne, and howe they had spedde. Whan they were retourned into Fraunce they were welcome to the kyng and to the duke of Burgoyne, and to the duches, bicause they brought certayne tidynges fro the erle of Nevers, and fro the lordes that were there with hym. They said to the kyng, howe they trusted that Lamorabaquy wolde gladly treat for their raunsoms; and that they sayd they knewe by some that were of his privye counsayle, For they feare lest they shulde dye in prisone, bycause they be out of their owne naturall ayre; and the Turkes thynke that by their delyveraunce they shuld have great fynaunce for their raunsome. By reason of these wordes the kynge, the duke of Burgoyne, and the duchesse his wyfe studyed nyght and day howe and by what meanes they might have their sonne and heyre delyvered, and sayde oftentymes that the journey and siege before Nicopoly had cost them over moche. For therby they hadde deed thre bretherne, bastarde knyghtes, valyaunt men, whom they entierly loved; the fyrst, the Hasell of Flaunders; the seconde, sir Loyes of Friese;[1] and the thyrde, sir Johan of Ipre. There was another, the yongest, who was styll at home. To saye the trouthe, the duches of Burgoyne, countesse of Flaunders, studyed on her syde howe to delyver her sonne; and so moche they studyed, that at laste they founde the meanes to agre with the Turkes with moche payne. But that was nat sodaynly done, for the mater was suche that it requyred great leysar, and to be gote lytell and lytell.

[1] *Briese* P.

In this same season, in the cytie of Burse, in Turkey, dyed the gentyll knyght Fraunces Anguerant, lorde of Coucy, erle of Saisons, he was a great lorde in Fraunce. For as sir Robert of Deane,[2] who was sent by the lady of Coucy, was goyng to hym warde, he herde by the waye howe he was deed, and that he herd at Vyen in Austriche. And so he returned into Fraunce, and shewed this to certayne of the lorde Coucies lynage, but nat to the good lady his wyfe,

[2] *d'Esne.*

CAP. CCXIX untyll suche tyme as the chatellayne of saynt Goubayne was sent to fetche his deed body enbaulmed into Fraunce, to be buryed in thabbey of Nogent besyde Coucy; and there he was receyved by the duchesse of Bare and the bysshop of Laon, and by dyvers other abbottes; and there this gentyll knight was buryed, in the yere of grace a thousande thre hundred fourscore and sevyntene.

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

Ye maye well knowe that the Frenche kyng and the duke of Burgoyn alwayes ymagyned howe to gette their frendes out of prison in Turkey. Sir Dyne of Responde was alwayes in their counsayls, and he sayd ever that the marchauntes Venisyans and Genowayes myght well helpe and ayde in that busynesse. For he sayd, marchauntes myght go whider they lyst, and by them myght well be knowen the dealyng of the Turkes and Tartaries with the portes and passages of the kynges and soudans[1] miscreantes, and specially they resorted to Quaire, to Alexandre, to Dammas, to Antyoche, and into the great puissaunt cyties of the Sarazins; dayly they passe and repasse, and daylye marchauntes christened hath entrecours with the Sarazins, and exchaunge one with another their marchaundyse. So the Frenche kynge and the duke of Burgoyne sought all the frendes and meanes they coulde gette to forther them, and as than hadde no desyre to make warre upon the duke of Myllayne, bycause they understode that he was gret with Lamorabaquy. On the other syde, kyng James of Cypre thought well he shulde have great thanke of the Frenche kyng and of the duke of Burgoyne, if he myght asswage the furour of Lamorabaquy, and bringe hym to some good resonable poynt for the redemynge of the lordes of Fraunce, suche as he had in prisone. And to please them, the kynge of Cypre caused a shyppe to be made of fine golde, right noble and riche, of the value well to the somme of tenne thousande ducates, whiche shyppe he sente to Lamorabaquy by his owne knightes. This shyppe was so goodlye and fayre, that it was great joye to beholde it, the whiche gyfte the Soudan toke in gree, and sente agayne to the kynge of Cypre the double in value therof. All this was anone knowen in Fraunce by marchauntes that wrote therof to Dyne of Responde, to the entente that he shulde shewe it to the

[1] *kynges soudans and* P.

Frenche kyng and to the duke of Burgoyn, to have a thanke of the kynge. CAP. CCXIX

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

This kyng of Cypre had good cause thus to do, for he was in doute of the Frenche kynges displeasure, bicause he caused to be slayne and murdered by night his brother the valyaunt kynge Peter, who dyde moche trouble to the Sarazins, and toke Saptalye and Alexandre. The Sarazins douted hym more than any other kyng or emperour christened, bicause of his valyantnesse, of the whiche dede this sayde kynge James sore repented hymselfe, and knewe well he had done yvell. And after the same dede he fledde out of Cypre, or els the Christen men wolde have slayne hym: so he entred into a galley of Gene, beyng at the porte of Nicopossie,[1] and so wente to Genes, and the Genowayes receyved hym. And some said, that he dyde that foule murdre by the entysement of the Genoways, for anone after the Genovois came with puissaunce of men of warre and galyes, and toke the cytie of Famagous and the porte, and kepte it with puyssaunce. This kynge of Cypre had a fayre yonge sonne. The Cyprience crowned this chylde kynge, and after his crownyng he lyved nat long, but dyed soone after; and after his dethe the Genovois with great puyssaunce brought this Jaques into Cypre and crowned hym kyng, and so he reigned kyng of Cypre. And the Genowayes alwayes susteyned hym agaynst all men, but they wolde never rendre up the cytie of Famagous nor the porte, but helde it styll at the tyme that the auctour wrot this hystorie. And to saye the trouthe, if the Genowayes had nat had it, the Turkes had wonne it longe before, and all the realme of Cipre, and had brought it into their obeysaunce, and by all lykelyhode had subdued the ysles of Rodes, and all other yles enclosed in the see to Venyce; but alwayes the Genoways and Venisyans resysted them. And whan they sawe that the Turkes had wonne the realme of Armony, than they toke the strong towne of Corque[2] in Hermyne on the see syde, and so helde it, so that and it had nat ben for dout of the passage and straytes of Corque and of Xere[3] before Constantyne the noble, the Turkes had sore entred into Christendome, and upon the border of the see, the whiche shulde have been great prejudyce to the ysle of

[1] *Nicosia.*

[2] *Curch (Corycus).*

[3] *Pera.*

CAP. CCXIX Rodes and to the ysles adjoynyng. Thus by these meanes the fronters of Christendome were kepte and defended.

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

Nowe let us retourne to our purpose.

This kyng Jaques of Cyper, who knewe hymselfe gylty of the deth of the kynge his brother, wherby he had the hatred of all other Crysten kynges, therfore he dyd as moche as he coude do to get agayne their love and favour, and tooke it for a great honoure that the Frenche kynge wrote fyrst to hym. For he douted him most of all, and so he had cause: for the duke of Burbone, by ryght succeſsyon of the lynage of Lusygnan, ought to be kynge there and his heyres. For thoughe this kynge Jaques was brother to the kyng Peter of Cyper, yet he had no ryght to the crowne, for he was but a bastarde. And all this knewe ryght well the Genovoys; so that whan he was made kynge, there was made a great alyaunce bytwene them, confermed nat to be broken, and the Genovoys to defende and kepe him and his heyres agaynst all other. And therby they atteygned great sygnories and fraunchesses in the realme of Ciper; and all that ever they dyd to the exaltynge of this Jaques, kynge of Cyper, was alwayes for their owne chiefe avauntage, and to be stronge against the Venycians, and to haunte and exercyse their feate of marchaundyse into the Sarazyns landes. This kinge Jaques as longe as he lyved dyd what he coulde to please the Frenche kynge, by the meanes of the Genovoys, for they wolde in no wyse displease hym. And therfore the same season this kynge Jaques ordeyned this shyppe of golde to presente Lamorabaquy, to have love and acquayntaunce with him: whiche gyft was joyfully receyved and moch praysed with the Turkes. And it was thought that the lorde Dyne of Responde was meanes therof, and wrote therin to the Genovoys, for in this maner and otherwayes he laboured all that he myght for the delyveraunce of the erle of Nevers and of the other lordes of Fraunce.

Whan the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse his wyfe sawe that Lamorabaquy began to fall to treatie for the Crysten prisoners, the newes therof was greatly to their pleasure, and apoynted a sage valyaunt knyght of the countie of Flaunders, called syr Gylberte of Linrenghen,[1]

[1] *Leeuwerghem.*

who was soverayne of Flaunders under the duke and duchesse. CAP. CCXIX
And than they sent for syr Jaques of Helley, bycause he knewe the wayes and passages, and desyred hym to accompany syr Gylberte to treate with Lamorabaquy for the delyveraunce of the Crysten prisoners, and promysed hym that his payne shulde be well consydred and rewarded. Syr Jaques promysed them so to do: so these two knyghtes departed, and rode so longe that they came into the realme of Hungery, and so drewe to the kynge, for they had letters to hym. The kyng receyved them joyously for love of the Frenche kynge, and also he knewe well syr Jaques of Helley. There they shewed the kyng the cause of their commynge out of Fraunce, and howe they were sente into Turkey to treate for the delyveraunce of the erle of Nevers and the other lordes of Fraunce, if Lamorabaquy wolde gyve them the herynge. The kynge sayde it was well done to redeme them if they myght be put to raunsome, and sayd in the assayenge therof they coulde lese nothynge. Besydes that the kinge offred them his body and goodes to ayde theym in all maners; wherof these two knyghtes thanked hym. To entre into this treatye with Lamorabaquy, or they coulde come therto, these knightes had moche payne and made great dilygence; for fyrst syr Jaques of Helley was fayne to go to Lamorabaquy to requyre a saveconducte for his companyon syr Gylbert to come into Turkey. And whan he had ateyned it, than he returned into Hungery, and so they rode than into Turkey. The soverayne of Flaunders was receyved of Lamorabaquy and of his men ryght nobly, and was herde speke, and so lytell and lytell they entred into their treatie. The same tyme there haunted into Turkey a marchaunt Genovoy of the isle of Sio, under the obeysaunce of the Genovoys. This marchaunt was named Bartylmew Pologrine, and he was well beloved in Turkey, and namely with Lamorabaquy. Syr Dyne of Responde beynge at Parys, to thentent that this treatie myght have the better expedicyon, he wrote letters to this sayde marchaunt of the isle of Sio, for they knewe eche other. And to the entent to please the Frenche kynge, the duke of Burgoyne and the duches and other ladies in Fraunce, suche as had their husbandes and frendes in prison in Turkey, and in trust to

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

CAP. CCXIX

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

be well rewarded for his good wyll, he wrote, that whatsoever ende was made for their redempcyon, that he wolde become dettour for the somme of money: and that as soone as they were delyvered and come into the power of the Venyciens, and that he might be certifyed therof, that incontynent he wolde come hymselfe to Venyce, and se the ransomes payed and delyvered. By these wordes, written by syr Dyne of Responde, the sayde marchaunt Genovoye enclyned to his desyre, and on the truste to be well rewarded of the Frenche kynge, for he thought to suche a kyng it was good to lay eare. And also, as I was enfourmed, the kynge of Cyper, at the desyre of the Frenche kynge and the duke of Burgoyne, he sente men of his specyall counsayle into Turkey. And in lykewyse syr Mathelyn and the lorde of Damyne,[1] two great barones in Grece, and in good favoure with Lamorabaquy, traveyled greatly to avaunce this treatie, to thentent to do pleasure to the Frenche kynge; for without suche meanes the mater shulde never have been brought aboute, bycause Turkey is a great countrey and yvell for men to traveyle in that hath nat ben accustomed therto. Whan Lamorabaquy was ones condyscended to entre into this treatie, than it was ordeyned by his counsayle that all the Chrysten prisoners shulde be brought togyder into the cytie of Burse, and there to conclude their treatie. So the prisoners were brought thyder, who were in nombre a xxv.; but in their commynge thyder, the Turkes that brought them dyd yvell entreate theym and bete them forwarde, for they were but easely horsed, they coulde nat go but a pace: the Turkes bete them bycause they sawe they shulde be delyvered, wherwith they were sore dyspleased.

[1] *Algido.*

Whan these knightes were thus brought into the cytie of Burse in Turkey, than they that were sent thyder fro the Frenche kynge and fro the duke of Burgoyne, fro the kynge of Cypers, and fro the Genovoys and Venycyens, receyved these prisoners gentylly, so that they were more at their ease than in the prisone that they were in before; howebeit, they were kept ever so strayte that they coulde nat have the thyrde parte of their wylles. Lamorabaquy moste specyally herde ever the soveraygne of Flaunders, for syr Jaques of Helley hadde enfourmed hym howe he was one

of the chyefe of counsayle with the duke of Burgoyne. Lamorabaquy was in a castell besyde Burse, and thyther came the sayde messangers. At laste it was agreed that these xxv. prisoners shulde pay the somme of two hundred thousande ducates, for the whiche somme the lordes of Mathelyn[1] and Damyne in Grece and the marchaunt Genovoy of Sio became dettours for the same, and taryed in pledge with Lamorabaquy: and the erle of Nevers sware and bounde himselfe to the sayd marchauntes, that as sone as he came to Venyce nat to departe thens tyll the money were payed. Thus concluded this treatie; but or it was all concluded the erle of Ewe was so sycke and feble by the alteracyon of the ayre and course meates, that he dyed at Longe[2] in Grece, where he was kept prisoner, wherof all his company were ryght sory, but they coulde nat amende it. Thus syr Phylyppe of Arthois, erle of Ewe and constable of Fraunce, after he was deed was enbawmed, and so brought into Fraunce, and buryed in the churche of saynt Laurence of Ewe. Whan Lamorabaquy was contented with the marchaundes bondes for the det of the sayd somme, the soveraygne of Flaunders and sir Jaques of Helley tooke their leave to retourne into Fraunce, and Lamorabaquy was well contente therwith, and ordeyned that these two knightes shulde have of the somme that he shuld receyve twenty thousande ducates, to be rebated of the hole some. For this kyng Basaache consydered the payne and traveyle that they had endured, and specyally the soveraygne of Flaunders was greatly in his favour. These two knyghtes thanked the kynge of his gyft: than they toke their leave of hym, and afterwarde of the Frenche knyghtes and lordes. Whan they were departed fro the kynge they came to the cytie of Burse, and than departed and lefte the erle of Nevers and the lordes of Fraunce styll in the cytie of Burse, for they taryed for the lordes of Mathelyn and Damine, who shulde come thyder by see to receyve them into their galees. And these two knyghtes toke a galee passenger to sayle to Mathelyn: at their departynge fro the porte the wether was fayre and temperate, but whanne they were abrode in the see the wynde chaunged, and had a marveylous great tempest, so that the soveraigne of Flaunders, by reason of sore traveyle

CAP. CCXIX

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

[1] *Mytilene.*

[2] *Haulteloge.*

CAP. CCXIX

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

in that tempest, he fell sore sycke on the see, and dyed or they came to Mathelyn, wherof syr Jaques of Helley was right sory, but there was no remedy: and so sayled forthe in a galee of Venyce, and passed by Rodes, and alwayes as he went he publysshed the redempcyon of the lordes of Fraunce, wherof they of Rodes were ryght joyfull. At last this knyght came into Fraunce, and shewed the kynge and the other lordes and ladyes howe he had spedde, wherof the kynge and other were right joyfull, and thanked the knyght of his traveyle and payne he had taken in that journey.

Whan the redempcyon of these lordes and knyghtes of Fraunce was at a poynt, than Lamorabaquy thought or they departed to have them in his company, and that they shulde be more at large and better entreated than they were before, as it was reason, sythe they were no lenger prisoners; he thought they shulde se parte of his puyssaunce and state, whiche was, as it was shewed me, marveylous great and sumptuous, and kepte moche people dayly aboute hym. Thus he sent of the noble men of his house to bring them to his presence, to whom he made good chere, and had every thynge delyvered them of the ordinary of his courte, acordynge to the usage of the countrey; and every daye the kynge talked with the erle of Nevers by a truchman, and greatly he honoured the erle of Nevers, for he sawe well he was lyke to be a great man in Fraunce, and sonne to a great lorde, wherof he was well enfourmed, the whiche he founde true, by reason of the great sute that was made for their redempcyon, and by the great somme of money that they agreed to paye. The erle of Nevers and his company had great marveyle of the great state that he kept: he and his people laye ever in the felde, for no towne coulde suffyce them. The spence of his howseholde and charge of meate and drinke was marveyle to consydre fro whence it shulde come, but that the countrey is so hote that the people be of sobre dyet, and use moche spycery, and specyally suger and gotes mylke, wherof they have great haboundaunce, the whiche is common drinke of the Sarazyns: and they have plenty of bredde, made of a grayne called mylle. He had ever aboute hym a seven thousande fawconers and as many hunters. So it was on a daye he wente a hawkynge, and

had a flyght with a fawcon at an egle, in the presence of the erle of Nevers, the whiche flyght pleased nat Lamorabaquy, wherwith he was sore dyspleased; and as it was shewed me, for the same faute there was at the poynte a two thousande fauconers to have loste their heedes, bearyng them in hande that they were nat dylygent in kepynge of his hawkes. Another tyme, in the presence of the erle of Nevers, a woman came to complayne to the kynge, desyringe to have ryght and justyce upon a servaunt of his, sayenge: Syr kynge, I come to you as to my soveraygne; I complayne me of a servaunt of your chambre, as it is shewed me: he is come this same day into my howse, and the mylke of a gote that I had for me and my chyldren he hath dronken it agaynst my wyll; and, syr, I said to him, that if he wolde do me that wronge I wolde complayne to you; and as soone as I sayde so, he gave me two great blowes, and wolde nat forbeare for all that I spake in your name; therfore, syr kynge, do me justyce, as ye are sworne to do to all your people. The kinge marked well the womans wordes, and so caused his servaunte to come afore hym and the woman also, and than he caused the woman to renewe her complaynt. The servaunt began to excuse hym, and sayd that he knewe nothynge of that matter. The woman spake wysely, and affyrmed her wordes to be trewe. Than the kynge sayde: Woman, advyse the well, for if I fynde thy wordes untrewe, thou shalte dye an yvell dethe. Syr, quod she, I am content; for if my wordes were nat true, what nede me to come into your presence? Do me justyce, I desyre none other thyng. Thou shalt have justyce, quod the kynge, for I have sworne so to do to every man and woman. Than the kynge caused the man to be taken, and caused his bely to be opened, to se if he had eaten or dronken the mylke or nat, and there he founde that he had dronke the mylke, for it was nat turned to digestyon. And whan the kyng sawe that the womans wordes were trewe, he said to her, Thou haddest good cause to complayne; go thy way quyte, thou art well revenged of the trespase that was done to the. And she had a good recompence, and the man deed. This judgement the lordes of Fraunce sawe and herde.

CAP. CCXIX

Howe the duke of Glocestre was taken by the erle Marshall.

CAP. CCXX

Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce, and of the isles they founde by the waye.

WHAN the erle of Nevers and the other lordes of Fraunce, who had ben taken prisoners at the batayle before Nycopoly in Turkey, whan they had sene a season the state and maner of Lamorabaquy, and that he was content of every thynge, and understode that the lorde of Mathelyn and the lorde of Damyne, and the marchaunt of Sio were come to Burselle in Turkey, than he gave them leave to departe. So they came all togyther before Lamorabaquy, excepte the erle of Ewe and the lorde of Coucy, who were bothe deed: thus they toke their leave, and thanked hym of his curtesies. Than Lamorabaquy said to therle by a truchman: Johan, I knowe well thou arte a great lorde in thy countrey, and sonne to a great lorde; thou art yonge, and peradventure shall beare some blame and shame that this adventure hath fallen to the in thy fyrste chyvalry; and to excuse thyselfe of this blame and to recover thyne honour, peradventure thou wylt assemble a puyssaunce of men, and come and make warre agaynst me: if I were in doute or feare therof, or thou departed I shulde cause the swere by thy lawe and faythe that never thou nor none of thy company shulde beare armure or make warre agaynst me; but I wyll nother make the nor none of thy company to make any suche othe or promesse, but I wyll that whan thou arte retourned and arte at thy pleasure, rayse what puyssaunce thou wylte, and spare nat, but come agaynst me; thou shalt fynde me alwayes redy to receyve the and thy company in the felde in playne batayle; and this that I say, shewe it to whome thy lyste, for I am able to do dedes of armes, and ever redy to conquere further into Crystendome. These hygh wordes the erle of Nevers understode well, and so dyd his company; they thought on it after as longe as they lyved. Than they tooke their leave,

and they were conducted with a great nombre under the leadynge of Aslybathe and Surbasaache, and so delyvered to the lordes of Mathelyn and Damyne, who were cause of their delyveraunce; and whan their galees were redy they entred, and their conducte retourned to their kynge. So they sayled tyll they came to the porte of Mathelyn, where they were receyved with great joye.

CAP. CCXX
Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce.

The lady of Mathelyn was ryght honourable and gentle, and as well assured of herselfe as any lady in Grece, for in her youth she had ben brought up in the emperour of Constantyne the nobles courte, with the lady Mary of Burbone, where she had lerned moche norture, for in Fraunce the lordes and ladyes be more honourable than in many other countreys. This lady was right joyouse to se in her house the erle of Nevers and syr Henry of Bare, sir Guy of Tremoyle, and the other; she receyved them ryght honourably with great joy, and dyd what she coude to do them pleasure. First, she newly aparelled all the lordes and knyghtes of Fraunce with shyrtes, gownes, and other aparell of fyne damaske, acordynge to the usage of Grece, and all other, every man after his degre. The lady spared nothyng on them, wherfore they gave her great thanke, and greatly praysed her estate and ordre: in lykewyse they thanked and praysed the lordes of Mathelyn and of Damyne, who made them good chere and honourable. Anone tydynges of their delyveraunce was knowen at the Rodes, wherof the great mayster of the Roodes and all the knyghtes there were ryght joyfull, and they determyned to arme forth two galees, and to sende for theym to come into the isle of Rodes, and so they dyd; and in the one galee they sette syr Jaques of Brassemont,[1] a Burgonyon marshall of the Rodes. So longe they sayled and rowed, that they aryved at Mathelyn. The marshall was well receyved of every man and of the lady of Mathelyn. Than these lordes and other refresshed them there a foure dayes, and on the fyfte daye their galees were redy. Than the erle of Nevers tooke leave of the lady of Mathelyn, and thanked her greatly and the lordes also; and the erle of Nevers sayd, that he was bounde for ever to owe them his good wyll. The lady answered wysely to them all. So they entred into the galees in the porte of Mathelyn,

[1] *Baufremont.*

CAP. CCXX

Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce.

and had wynde and wether at wyll, and sayled so longe that without daunger or dommage they came and aryved in the isle of the Rodes, in the same place where as all galees do aryve commynge fro Cyper or fro Barut,[1] and fro other partes of the see Orientall. There were many of the knyghtes of the Roodes, who be or ought to be men of valyaunt corage, for they beare the whyte crosse, in signyfieng of the crosse of Christ, who dyed and toke payne for the redempcyon of all Crysten people. And nere hande daily these knyghtes have skrymysshes and assawtes to ayde and sustayne the Chrysten faythe agaynst the myscreauntes, wherfore these knyghtes ought to be valyaunte men, and nourysshed in the warre.

[1] *Barne* P.

Whan the erle of Nevers and his company were come into the isle of Rodes, the great mayster and the great priour of Acquytanye, who was there, receyved the Frenchemen honourably, and offred to lende them golde and sylver to paye their small charges and costes; whiche offre the erle of Nevers and his company toke for a great curtesy, and hertely thanked them, for they had great nede therof. The great priour of Acquytanie, a right valyaunt knyght, lente to the erle of Nevers a thyrty thousande frankes in redy money; and syr Reygnere Potte, stewarde with the erle of Nevers, and the lorde of Rocheforde of Burgoyne, receyved the money. I thynke it was generally for them all, that every man shulde have parte, but the erle became dettour for the money. Thus they taryed in the isle of Rodes a good seasone to refresshe theym, and to sette every thynge in good ordre, for the ayre was more attemperate there than wheras they had ben in Turkey. And as they taryed thus at Rodes, abydynge for the galees of Venyce, a syckenesse toke syr Guy of Tremoyle, lorde of Seully, of whiche syckenesse he dyed there, and was buryed in the churche of saynte Johan in the Rodes, and the lordes of Fraunce dyd his obsequy ryght reverently, and were ryght sorye of his dethe, but there was no remedy. The erle of Nevers knewe well that the duke of Burgoyne wolde be sore dyspleased of his deth, bycause he had always founde hym sage and of good counsayle. At the laste there aryved the galees of Venyce, wherof the Frenchemen were ryght joyous: than they tooke

their leave of the lordes of the Rodes. Thus departed the erle of Nevers, sir Henry of Bare, Boucyquaute, Guillyam of Tremoyle, the lorde of Rocheforde, and all other. The patrones of the galees, to do them pleasure, were contente to suffre them to refresshe theym in the isles bytwene Venyce and Rodes. Fyrste they came to Modon,[1] a fyve hundred myle fro the Roodes, and there they refresshed them; it parteyned to the Venycyens. And fro Modon they sayled with wynde and wether at wyll, and so came to the isle of Calefo,[2] and there refresshed theym; and fro thence to the isle of Garre, and there taryed, and than they came to the isle of Chyfolignie,[3] and there landed, and founde a great nombre of ladyes and damosels, who had the sygniorite of that isle. They receyved the Frenchemen with great joye, and brought them to passe the tyme aboute the isle, whiche is ryght fayre and pleasaunte: and suche as knowe the condycions of that isle, affyrmeth that the fayry and the nympes be moche conversaunt there. Some of the marchauntes of Venyce, and Geane, and of other landes, suche as have aryved there, and taryed there a seasone to eschewe the daunger of the see, have said that they have sene some of the fairy there, and have proved their wordes to be trewe. The erle of Nevers and his company were right joyouse of the company of these ladyes, and ryght joyously the ladyes receyved them, and sayd howe their commynge thyder dyd all the isle great honoure, bycause they were noble knyghtes and men of honoure, for there hath nat acustomed none other to be conversaunt amonge them but marchauntes. This isle is nat all onely enhabyted with women, but there be men amonge them, but the women have the soveraynte and chefe rule there. They are worke-women in sylke worke, and make clothes of sylke, so subtelly and so well, that there is none lyke them; nor the men of the isle canne nat make it, but they cary them out to sell where they thynke to have most profyte, and the women abyde styll in the isle, and they honour the men for the sayde cause, and they have the profyte therof. The isle is of that condycion that no man dare aproche it to do there any dommage, for who so ever dothe are perysshed, and that hath ben sene and proved, and therfore these

CAP. CCXX

Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce.

[1] *Methone.*

[2] *Corfu.*

[3] *Cephalonia.*

[4] *woman* P.

CAP. CCXX

Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce.

ladyes endure ever in peace, and dought no man. Also they are marveylous swete, gentle, amyable, and humble, and when they wyll, they speke with the fayry, and be in their company.

Whan the erle of Nevers and his company had refresshed them in this isle of Chyfoligne aboute a fyve dayes, than they toke leave of these ladyes, and lefte amonge these ladyes parte of suche as they had that they myght forbeare, so that the ladyes gave them great thanke at their departynge, and so they sayled to a lande called Raguse, and there they rested; and fro thens to Clarence, a hundred myle fro Venyce. And whyle they were there, thyther came a squyer of Haynalt of great recommendacyon, borne in the towne of Mons, he was called Brydoll; he came fro the Holy Sepulcre, and fro Quayre, and fro saynt Katheryns mounte; and whan he came to Clarence, the Frenchmen made him good chere, bycause he was borne in Haynalt, for the countesse of Nevers was doughter to the erle of Heynalte, and also bycause he had ben in farre countreys, and they demaunded of him newes fro those parties, and also of the state of the kynge of Cyper. He aunswered to every thynge ryght wysely.

Whan the erle of Nevers had refresshed hym there a season, than he sayled forthe and came to the porte of Pareuse.[1] The great galees coude go no further to come to the porte of Venyce. Than within a certayne space they tooke other small shyppes passengers, and so came to Venyce, and there were receyved with great joye, and they thanked God that they were come thyder in savegarde, and out of the handes of the myscreauntes, for they were ones in feare never to have come out of their handes. Than every man wente to his logynge which was prepared for them, for their commynge thyder was knowen before: their servauntes were come thyder and prepared for them redye agaynst their commyng. The erle of Nevers founde there redy parte of his servauntes, sente thyder by the duke of Burgoyne his father, and the duches his mother. Also there was redy syr Dyne of Responde, bycause of their raunsome. Than clerkes were sette to write letters, and messangers were sente forthe to gyve knowledge to their frendes of their

[1] *Parenzo.*

comynge. These newes was anone knowen over all. The duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse ordeyned for the state of their sonne, as vessell, and plate of sylver and golde, aparell, and stuffe of housholde: all this was sent to Venyce on sommers, and the lorde of Angyers, and syr Jaques of Helley, dyd convey all this stuffe, and so came to Venyce. And all the other lordes and knyghtes frendes dyd sende thyder in lyke maner; and ye maye beleve well that this was nat doone without great coste, for there was nothynge spared; and also they laye at Venyce at great coste and charge, for Venyce is one of the derest townes in the worlde for straungers to lye in. Thus these lordes kept their estates there, and therle of Nevers was more charged than any other, as it was reasone, for he was the chiefe there. The duke of Burgoyne, and the duchesse sette all their ententes for the delyveraunce of their sonne, for they desyred greatly to se theym, and so dyd many other, and the duke sayd that without ayde of his men and good frendes that were in his landes, as well in Burgoyne, as in Arthoys, and in Flaunders, he coulde nat tell howe to atteyne to the somme of money that Lamorabaquy shulde have for his sonnes raunsome, and to beare the costes that dayly grewe by that occasyon. For though their raunsomes drewe but to two hundred thousande floreyns, all thynges consydred, their other charges drewe to as moch, as they sayde that had the receyte and delyveraunce therof. The duke tooke counsayle where this money shulde be reysed, for the duke coulde nat breke nor mynysshe his estate, nor it was nat his mynde to do. Than it was determyned that the ryche men in all his good townes shulde be taxed, and specyally they of Flaunders, bycause they were ryche, by reason of their marchaundyse. This taxacyon was sette forwarde, and whan they of Gaunt were called curtesly to the mater, they aunswered and sayd that they wolde gladly helpe to ayde their enherytour with the somme of fyfty thousande florayns. In lykewyse they of Bruges, and of other good townes in Flaunders, were redy to ayde their lorde. The duke and duchesse thanked them curtesly: in lykewise so dyde they of Arthoise and of Burgoyne. Also the Frenche kynge ayded well for his parte; and also it

CAP. CCXX
Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce.

CAP. CCXX
Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce.

had cost hym great riches in sendynge of presentes and knightes into Hungry and Turkey; howebeit, he was well contente therwith, syth his cosyns and his knyght Bouciquaut were come to Venyce in suretie.

Therle of Nevers laye thus styll at Venyce, for his entent was nat to departe thens tyll every thynge was payed and discharge. For the furnysshing of this fynaunce sir Dyne of Responde toke great payne, to the entente to pleace the Frenche kynge and the duke of Burgoyne; in suche busynesse he was subtyle and wyse. Thus these Frenche lordes and knyghtes sported them eche with other. The same season there felle in Venyce a great mortalyte, and it began in the moneth of Auguste, and dured without ceassynge tyll saynt Andrewes tyde, wherin dyed moche people. And there dyed sir Henry of Bare, eldest sonne to the duke of Bare, and herytoure, by his wyfe, of all the lorde of Coucyes landes, excepte the ladyes dowrye. Thus in the same season, bothe the ladies of Coucy were widowes, and their husbandes deed, the whiche was great dommage. His body was enbaulmed and caryed into Fraunce, and buryed in Parys, as I beleve, and there his obsequy was done solempnely. To flye and eschewe fro this deth at Venice, the erle of Nevers went and taryed at Trevuse, with all his estate, and there taryed a four monethes with all his company.

Thus the erle of Nevers beynge at Trevuse, it was shewed the kyng of Hungry by them of the Roodes, howe the Frenche lordes were agreed with Lamorabaquy, to paye for their sommes two hundred thousande florens. Than the kyng sent letters by a bysshoppe, and certayne knightes, to them of Venice, in the favour of the Frenche knyghtes. And also they were charged to saye certayne wordes to therle of Nevers, as ye shall here; for whan they came thider they said to hym: Sir, we are sent hider fro our soverayne lorde the kyng of Hungry your cosin, who saluteth you by us: and here be letters that he hath sente unto you, and he understandeth howe ye are delyvered fro the handes of the Turkes his adversaries for certayne raunsome, the whiche otherwyse ye coude nat have ben delivered, wherof he is right joyouse. And, sir, the kynge knoweth well that your

CAP. CCXX
Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce.

treatie coude nat have ben made without great cost and charge, for besyde that ye lost in the batayle, your raunsome and other charges hath ben and is dayly great; wherfore, sir, the kyng sayth if he myght ayde you with any thyng he wolde gladly do it, for he thynketh himselfe bounde therto, as well by lynage or otherwyse: but sir, he and his toke suche dommage at the daye of the batayle before Nichopoly, as ye knowe well, and also his revenues of his realme for this yere and the next be in a maner as lost; but whan he hath recovery therof, and is of power, he saythe he wyll so purvey for you, that ye shal be wel content with hym, and thus to do he is of good wyll. And, sir, to thentent that ye shall gyve credence to his promise and sayeng, he hath in the cytie of Venyce of yerely revenewes, sevyn thousande ducates; and sir, he is content that this be solde to the Venycience, and that of the money that shall ryse therof, that ye shulde use it and ayde yourselfe therwith as ye wolde do of your owne goodes: and sir, of this we shall delyver quitaunces to the Venicyence; we have authorite so to do. This offre greatly pleased the erle of Nevers and his counsayle, and the lorde of Rocheforde answered and said howe the erle and all his company thanked greatly the kynge of Hungry in that he wolde sell or laye to gage his enherytaunce for to ayde them: sayeng howe his offre was nat to be refused nor forgotten, desyring to take a lytell counsayle in the mater, and so they dyde. Within a brefe tyme after, it was shewed to the kyng of Hungeries ambassadours in the behalfe of the erle of Nevers, that it shulde nat be convenyent that the kyng of Hungry shulde sell or ley to pledge his enherytaunces, for other mennes causes; but if so be the ambassadours wolde do so moche as to shewe to the Venicyence that they wolde do so moche as to lende therle of Nevers a certayne somme of florence, to helpe to paye the erles by charges, and to paye agayne to the priour of saynt Johns, in Acquitayne, the xxx. thousande florens that he lent to them in the isle of the Rodes, in thus doyng, they saide, they wolde highly thanke the kynge of Hungry and his counsayle. The ambassadors saide they wolde do their best, and assaye the Venicyence what they wolde do.

CAP. CCXX Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce.

Whan the Venycience were moved in this mater, they answered but coldly, and said they wolde take counsayle, and gyve answere within fyftene dayes; at whiche tyme they answered, as I was enformed, by one that was by at the answere gyveng, that if the kyng of Hungry wolde selle his hoole realme, the Venycience shulde be redy to bargayne with hym, and pay hym in redy money. But, they said, as for so lytell a thynge as sevyn thousande ducates by yere, they coulde make no price nor valewre therof, nother to by nor to sell, wherfore they said they wolde nat medell in that small mater. This was the answere that the Venycience made. Some thought and ymagined, that this answere was made by waye of dissymulacion, and that thoughe the kynge of Hungry made this offre, yet by agrement the Venicyens made that answere. Thus the mater abode styll, and the kyng of Hungry styll in his possessyon of his revenewes. Thane the kynges ambassadours departed fro Venyce, and retourned into Hungry, and the erle of Nevers abode styll at Trevuse, bycause of the mortalyte in Venyce.

Ye have herde here before howe the lorde Philyppe of Arthois, erle of Ewe, and constable of Fraunce, dyed in the cite of Burse, in Turkey, of whose dethe all his frendes were sorie, and specially the Frenche kyng, for he loved hym entierly. His office was suche that it myght nat longe be vacant, wherupon all the lordes of Fraunce assembled togider to take advyse who shuld be made constable. The most parte of the counsaile agreed on the valyant knight sir Loys of Sanxere, who had ben long marshall of Fraunce, and was the same tyme. He was in the parties of Languedoc, and so was sente for, and incontynent he came to Paris, and ther was made constable. Than was voyde the office of the marshall: than the kyng sayd, none shulde have that office, but al onely his knyght sir Bouciquaut; every man agreed therto, for he was well worthy. Whan he was chosen he was at Venyce, but shortely after he came to Paris. For the raunsoms ones payde, all the lordes and knightes of Fraunce returned home. So sir Bouciquaut was marshall of Fraunce. Therle of Nevers drewe to the duke of Burgoyn his father, and to the duches his mother;

he had great chere made hym of them and of other, as it was reason, for he came fro a longe voyage and a peryllous. He was well receyved in all his fathers countreis, as in Flaunders, in Arthoys, in Burgoyne, and in all other places parteynyng to his fathers and to his enherytaunce. CAP. CCXX Howe the lordes of Fraunce returned by see to Venyce.

CAP. CCXXI

Howe after the returne of the lordes of Fraunce, the Frenche kyng entended what he myght to set a concorde and peace in the Churche.

THERLE of Nevers thus returned into Fraunce, he abode about the duke his father, and visyted his landes and signories. Than he had desyre to go to se the Frenche kyng, and the duke of Orlyaunce, who receyved hym with great joye. The kyng and the duke of Orlyaunce had great appetyte to here therle speke, and to here of the newes of Turkey, and of all his adventures, and of the state of Lamorabaquy. Therle answered wisely, and complayned nothing of Lamorabaquy, but said he had founde hym ryght curtesse, and howe that he was well entreated. And he forgat nat to shewe the kyng and the ladies, howe at his departyng Lamorabaquy said to hym, that he was borne in this worlde to do dedes of armes, and to conquere ever more and more; and how that he wolde nat commaunde them whan they were prisoners that they shulde no more beare armes against hym, but said he wolde rather have them come agayne the seconde, thirde, or fourthe tyme, if nede were, if the dedes of armes so required. And also he said howe his entent was to se Rome, and to make his horse eate otes uppon saynt Peters aulter. And also he sayde, howe our Cristen faythe was nothyng worth, but corrupted by the heedes that ought to governe them, wherat the Turkes make but a mocke. Wherfore he sayd, it shulde be the distruction of Christendome, and that the tyme was as than come. And dyvers of the Turkes and Sarazins sayde, that their kyng Lamorabaquy was borne to be lorde of all the worlde, and this they of Turkey, of

CAP. CCXXI

Howe the Frenche kyng entended what he myght to set a concorde and peace in the Churche.

Tartarye, of Perce, of Alexandre, and of other parties of the Sarazins landes, sayde. They knewe it well that it shulde be so by reasone that the Christen men were abused upon ii. Popes, wherby the Christen men were nat all of one accorde, but differedde, some belevyng on the one Pope, and some upon the other: and the Sarazins had great marveyle, howe the heedes of Christendome in every realme wolde suffre it. These wordes of the erle of Nevers made the Frenche kyng and other lordes greatly to muse. And some sayd howe the Sarazins had good reason to laugh and mocke at Christendome, bycause they suffred the prelates of the churche to medell so moche: therfore some sayde, it was tyme to abate their pompes, and to bringe them to reason. The clerkes of the unyversite of Paris who traveyled to lerne, coude nat come to any preferment of any benifyce, by reason of the scisme in the churche, and of the two Popes. Wherfore they wolde gladly that the people shulde murmure agaynst them, and were ryght gladde that the erle of Nevers sayde, that the Turkes made a great derision therof; and sayd howe that without the Frenche kynge and the kynge of Almaygne founde some remedy, every thynge shulde be worse and worse: and to saye the trouthe, suche as helde them as neutre, they thought hadde taken the best waye, and so every man ought to do, if they wolde bring the churche into good case. Also it was secretely shewed the Frenche kyng, by suche as he loved, and suche as loved his helthe, howe that it was the commen opinyon in the realme of Fraunce, that he shulde never have perfitely his helth, unto the tyme that the churche were brought in another estate. And also they shewed the kynge, howe that kynge Charles his father, whan he laye in his dethe beed, charged his counsayle in conscyence, and had great dout that he was sore abused in those two Popes. Than the Frenche kynge answered them and sayd: Whan the kyng my father dyed, I was but yonge, and I have beleved hyderto suche as have counsayled me: if there be folly, it is in them and nat in me: but sythe we be nowe thus[1] enformed in the matter, we shall provide for the remedy, and that shal be well sene.

[1] *this* P.

CAP. CCXXI

Howe the Frenche kyng entended what he myght to set a concorde and peace in the Churche.

The Frenche kynge marked the mater more profoundely thane ever he dyde before, and sayd to them of his counsayle, howe he wolde provyde for the mater, and spake therof to his brother the duke of Orlyaunce, erle of Bloyes and of Valois, who agreed anone to the kynges wyll. In lykewise so dyde the duke of Burgoyne, for though he obeyed pope Clement, yet he had never ferme beleve on hym. But the prelates of the realme of Fraunce, and specially Guy of Roy, archebysshoppe of Reyns, the archebysshoppes of Sens, and of Rouen, and the bysshoppe of Ostune,[1] they had brought the duke to beleve on pope Clement. Thane it was advysed by the kynges secrete counsayle that if they purposed to bringe the churche to rest and peace, to have the accorde of Almayne. Than was there sente suffycient ambassadours and clerkes of bothe lawes, as maister Philyppe of Playes[2] was one, into Almayne, to the kyng of Boesme and of Almayne, who wrote hymselfe kyng of Romayns. This mater went so forwarde, that a day was sette that the kyng of Almayne and his counsaile, and the Frenche kyng and his counsayle, shulde mete personally at the cyte of Reynes. This mater was done secretely, bicause the prelates, cardynalles, archebysshoppes, and bysshoppes, shulde nat breke their purpose that they were about. They made it be noysed that the metyng of these two kynges and their counsayls at Reynes was for non other purpose but to treate for a maryage to be had bytwene the sonne of the marques of Blanquebourge,[3] brother to the kyng of Almayne, and the doughter of the duke of Orlyaunce. And so by reason and under colour of that mater, they wolde common of other.

[1] *Autun.*

[2] *Pierre Playon.*

[3] *Brandenburg.*

In this same season dyed at Nesves,[4] in Heynaulte, the lorde Guye of Chastellone, erle of Bloyes, and brought to Valencennes, and buryed at saynt Fraunces, in the Freres Mynours, in a chapell called the chapell of Orthais. He had done moche coste in the closynge of the sayd Freres, and whan he dyed he was so in dette, that the countesse Mary of Namure forsoke al his goodes, and durst nat take on her the admynistracyon of his testament, but retourned to her dowrie of the lande of Chinay, and of Beaumonde, and his other herytages went to the heyres. The duke of

[4] *Avesnes.*

CAP. CCXXI

Howe the Frenche kyng entended what he myght to set a concorde and peace in the Churche.

Orlyaunce hadde the countie of Blois, for he had payed whyle the erle Guye lyved, two hundred thousande crownes of Fraunce; and the landes of Hollande, Zelande, and Heynalte, wente to the duke Aubert of Bavyere, erle of Heynaulte. And the lande of Davesnes, of Landrecier, and of Lonnon[1] in Terreasse, fell to Johan of Bloyes, called John of Bretaygne; and if the erle had nat solde the countie of Blois, the sayd Johan of Bretaygne shulde have been his heyre therof. Consydre what a dommage a lorde or any other may do to his heyre, by gyveng credence to yvell counsayle: God forgyve hym.

Nowe lette us retourne to the busynesse of Englande.

[1] *Louvion.*

CAP. CCXXII

Of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre, and of the erle of Arundell, and howe the kynges uncles and the Londoners toke the mater.

YE have herde here before of the covert hates that was bytwene kynge Rycharde of Englande, and his uncle Thomas duke of Gloucestre, whiche the kynge wolde beare no lengar, but sayd, and also was counsayled, rather to distroye another man than hymselfe. And ye have herde howe the kyng was at Plasshey, and by crafte and coloure, brought hym out of his owne house to London; and by the waye about x. or a xi. of the cloke in the nyght, therle Marshall arested hym in the kynges name. And for all that he cryed after the kynge, yet the kynge made a deafe eare, and rode on before, and so the same nyght the kynge laye at the towre of London, but the duke of Gloucestre was otherwise lodged: for by force he was put into a barge, and out of the barge into a shyppe that laye in the Thamise, and the erle Marshall with hym and all his company, and dyde so moche, that the nexte day by nyght they came to Calais, without knoledge of any man, excepte the kynges offycers of the sayd towne.

Ye maye well knowe whane the takynge of the duke was knowen at Plasshey, by the duchesse and her chyldren, they

CAP. CCXXII

Of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre, and of the erle of Arundell.

were sore troubled and abasshed, and thought well that the matter went nat well. The duchesse demaunded counsaile, what was best to do, of sir Johan Laquyham. The knight answered, that it was best to sende to his bretherne, the dukes of Lancastre and of Yorke, that they myght fynde some meanes to apeace the kynges dyspleasure; for he sayde, he thought that the kyng wolde nat displease them. The duchesse dyd as the knyght counsayled her, and she sente incontynent messangers to these two dukes, who were farre asondre, who whanne they herde therof were sore displeased, and sente worde agayne to the duchesse that she shuld be of good conforte; for they sayd they knew well the kyng wolde nat entreat hym but by laufull judgement, for otherwise they coude nat suffre it: but as thanne they knewe natte where he was. The duchesse and her chyldren were somwhat conforted with their answere. The kynge the nexte daye wente fro the towre of London to Eltham, and there taryed. The same night was brought to the towre of London as prisoners, the erle of Arundell, and the erle of Warwyke, wherof they of the cytie of London had great marveyle, and made therof great murmurynge, but none durst saye nay agaynst the kynges pleasure. But all maner of people, knightes, squyers, burgesses of good cyties and townes of Englande, said: We have very well suffred: the duke of Lancastre, and the duke of Yorke, bretherne to the duke of Gloucestre, they maye provyde for this whanne it please them; we thynke they wolde well have provyded for the mater, if that they hadde knowen the kynges entent agaynst their brother of Glocestre, but bycause they were nat dilygent in the cause, the matter is come yvell, and lyke to have an yvell conclusyon.

Whan the duke of Glocestre was brought to the castell of Calys, than he feared hymselfe greatlye, and said to the erle Marshall: For what cause am I brought out of Englande hyder to Calais? Me thynke ye holde me as a prisoner. Lette me go abrode and se the fortresse aboute. Sir, quod the marshall, that ye desyre I dare nat do it, for I have the charge upon you on payne of my life. The kynge my soveraygne lorde is a lytell myscontente with you, wherfore ye muste take pacyence here for a seasone, tyll

CAP. CCXXII

Of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre, and of the erle of Arundell.

I here other newes, and that shal be shortely by Goddes grace. For sir, as helpe me God, I am right sorie for your trouble if I myght remedy it; but sir, ye knowe well I am sworne to the kynge, wherfore I must obey, and so wyll I do, for savynge of myne honoure. The duke coude have none other aunswere, but by that he sawe he feared greatly his lyfe. And on a daye he desyred a preest that sange masse before hym, that he myght be confessed, and so he was at good leysar before the sacrament with devout herte, and cryed God mercy, and was sore repentaunt of all his synnes. And in dede it was tyme so for hym so to do, for his dethe was nerer to hym than he was ware of. For as I was enfourmed, whan he hadde dyned and was aboute to have wasshen his handes, there came into the chambre foure men, and caste sodaynlye a towell aboute the dukes necke, two at the one ende and two at the other, and drewe so sore that he fell to the erthe, and so they strangled hym and closed his eyen. And whan he was deed they dispoyled hym, and bare hym to his beed, and layde hym bytwene the shetes all naked, and his heed on a softe pyllowe, and covered with clothes furred; and than they yssued out of the chambre into the hall, well determyned what they wolde saye, and sayde openly, how a palveysye hadde taken the duke of Gloucestre the same night sodaynly, and so dyed. These wordes anon were abrode in the towne of Calais: some beleved theym and some natte. Within two dayes that the duke was thus deed, the erle Marshall appareled hymselfe in blacke, bycause he was his nere cosyn, and so were many other knyghtes and squyers that were in Calays. His dethe was sooner knowen in Fraunce and in Flaunders than in England. The Frenchemen were gladde therof, for there was a common brute that there shulde be no good peace bytwene Fraunce and Englande, as long as he lyved; and in all treaties bytwene Fraunce and Englande, he was evermore harder and obstynater thanne any other of his bretherne, wherfore they cared nat for his dethe. In lykewise many men in Englande, bothe knyghtes, squyers, and other officers of the kynges, who were in feare of hym, bycause of his crueltie, all suche were gladde of his dethe. They toke to recorde his cruell dedes, by the duke of Irelande, whom he

had exyled out of Englande; also of the deth of that valyant knight sir Symon Burle, and of sir Robert Trivylien, sir Nicholas Bramble, sir Johan Standysshe, and dyvers other. The dukes dethe was but lytell regarded in Englande, excepte but with suche as were of his opinyon. Thus this duke dyed in Calais; his body was enbaumed and seared in leed and covered, and so sente by see into Englande; and the shyppe that caryed hym arryved at the castell of Hadley, upon Thamyse syde, and fro thens caryed by chariot symply to his owne place at Plasshey, and there buryed in the churche whiche the sayde duke had founded in the honoure of the Hooly Trynite, wherin were twelve chanonnes to synge divyne servyce.

CAP. CCXXII

Of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre, and of the erle of Arundell.

Ye maye well knowe that the duchesse of Gloucestre, and Affren[1] his sonne, and his two susters, were sore disconfyted whan they sawe the duke brought thyther deed. The duchesse had double sorowe, for Richarde, erle of Arundell, her uncle, was beheeded openly by the kynges commaundement in Chepesyde. There was no lorde durst speke to the contrary, the kynge beyng presente at the same justyce doynge. It was done by the erle Marshall, who hadde to wyfe the doughter of the sayde erle of Arundell, and yet he bounde his eyen hymselfe. The erle of Warwyke was in great daunger to be beheeded; but the erle of Salisbury, who was in the kynges favour, desyred the kynge for his lyfe, and so dyde dyvers other barons and prelates in Englande. The kynge enclyned to their requestes, so that he myght be banysshed, and putte in suche a place as he shulde natte come fro, for the kynge wolde nat clerely forgyve hym. He sayde he had well deserved to dye, bycause he was of counsayle with the duke of Gloucestre, and with the erle of Arundell, to have broken the peace and truce taken bitwene Fraunce and Englande. For the whiche artycle the kyng sayd, they had deserved to dye, for the peace was taken bytwene the parties on suche condycion, that who so ever dyde breake it, shulde be worthy to dye. The erle of Salisbury, who had ben the erle of Warwykes companyon dyvers tymes, in excusyng of hym, said: Howe he was an olde man, and was deceyved[2] by the duke of Gloucestre, by his fayre wordes; wherfore he sayd, that he

[1] *Humphrey.*

[2] *desyred* P.

CAP. CCXXII

Of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre, and of the erle of Arundell.

dyde was natte of his owne mocyon, but by theirs, affyrming howe there was never none of the Beauchampes that ever dyd trayson agaynst the crowne of Englande. Thus the erle of Warwyke for pytie was respyted fro dethe; he was banysshed into the ysle of Wyght. And it was sayde to hym: Erle of Warwyke, ye have deserved to dye as well as the erle of Arundell, but for the great servyce that ye have done in tyme past to kynge Edwarde, and to the prince his sonne, and to the crowne of Englande, as well on this syde the see as beyonde, hath done you great ayde, for the kyng hath pyte on you, and hath graunted you your lyfe. But it is ordayned by judgement, that ye shall go into the ysle of Wight, and lyve there as longe as ye can, and shall have suffycient of your owne to maynteyne there your estate soberly, but ye may never departe thens. The erle toke this punysshement aworthe, and thanked the kyng and his counsayle for savyng of his lyfe, and so made hym redy to go thyder at the daye apoynted; in the whiche ysle was space sufficient for a lorde to kepe his estate, envyroned with the see. Thus passed forthe these judgementes in Englande at that season, whiche multiplyed dayly worse and worse, as ye shall here after.

Whan the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre was knowen by the dukes of Lancastre and of Yorke, incontinent they knewe well that the kynge their nephue had caused hym to be slayne and murdered at Calays. As than these two dukes were nat toguyder: eche of them were at their owne places; they wrote eche to other to knowe what were best to do, and so they came to London, for they knewe well that the Londoners were nat content with the dethe of the duke their brother. Whan they mette there toguyder, they tooke counsayle, and sayde suche dedes ought nat to be suffred, as to putte to dethe so hyghe a prince, as was their brother, for ydell wordes and false reportes. For they sayd, though he spake oftentymes of the breakyng of the peace yet he never brake it, and bytwene sayenge and doyng is great difference, for by reason of wordes he ought nat to deserve dethe by suche cruell punycion. These two dukes were in the case to have put all Englande to great trouble, and there were ynowe redy to counsayle them therto, and

CAP. CCXXII

Of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre, and of the erle of Arundell.

specially them of the erle of Arundelles lynage, and of the erle of Staffordes, whiche was a great kynred in Englande. The kyng as than was at Eltham, and had sente for all suche as helde of hym in chiefe, and he had redy assembled toguyder about London, in Kent and Essexe, mo than ten thousande archers; and sir Johan Hollande his brother was with hym, and therle Marshall, and the erle of Salisbury, and a great nombre of lordes and knyghtes, and the kyng sent to them of London, that they shulde nat receyve the duke of Lancastre. They answered and sayd: they knewe no cause that the duke hadde done, why they shulde refuce hym. The duke of Lancastre was at London, and the erle of Derby his sonne, and also the duke of Yorke, and his sonne Johan, erle of Rutlande. The kyng loved the erle of Rutlande beyonde measure, who dissymuled the dethe of his uncle the duke of Gloucestre, and shewed howe he wolde gladly se a good peace bytwene the parties, and said howe he knew well that his uncle dyde wronge oftentymes agaynst the kynge. The Londoners in lykewyse consydred the great myschiefe that myght fall in Englande, by the discencyon bytwene the kynges uncles and the kyng, and their alyaunces: also they consydred, syth the myschefe was fallen of the duke of Gloucestres dethe, that there was no recovery therin. They knewe well it was bycause the duke of Gloucestre had been to lavesse of his tonge, and wolde have styrred the realme to have broken the truce bytwene Englande and Fraunce, wherfore suche as were wyse men in the cytie dissymuled the mater, and thought it was no tyme to amende it as than: they feared the puyssaunce of Fraunce, and lesynge of their marchaundyse: than [they] beganne to treate and went as a meane bytwene the kynge and the duke of Lancastre, who was in many imagynacions, for the dethe of his brother troubled him sore. Also he sawe howe his nephue kynge Rycharde was alyed by mariage with the Frenche kyng. Also the duke of Lancastre had ii. of his doughters out of the lande, one quene of Spayne, another quene of Portugale, by whome he thought he shulde have great ayde[1] if he made warre agaynst his nephue kynge Rycharde. All thynges consydred the duke chaunged his courage, at the desyre of the Londoners, and of other

[1] *qui povoient tres grandement mains valloir des Francois si il esmouvoit guerre.*

CAP. CCXXII

Of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre, and of the erle of Arundell.

prelates of Englande, who were meane bytwene the kyng and hym, and by their meanes the kynge was agreed with the duke, and peace made. With that the kynge promysed fro thens forwarde to be governed by the duke of Lancastre, and to do nothyng but by his counsayle and advyse, whiche promesse the kynge nothynge fulfylled, but was counsayled by yonge and wylde counsayle, whiche was to his hurte and great dommage, as ye shall here after in this hystory.

Thus the kyng of Englande had peace with his uncles, bycause of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre. Than he beganne to reygne more fiersly than he dyd before; the kynge went and lay in Essex, where as the duke of Gloucestre had the chiefe rule, whiche ought to have pertaygned to Affren, his sonne and heyre; but the kynge toke all, for the ordynaunce in Englande was, the kynge to have the warde of all herytours chyldren orphelyns under the age of xxi. yeres, and than they to have their herytages. Thus the kynge tooke the wardeshyppe of his cosyn, the duke of Gloucestres herytour, and the kynge tooke the possession and profyte of all the dukes lande, and kepte the chylde with hym; and the duchesse of Gloucestre and her two doughters were with the quene. The duke of Gloucestre by enherytaunce was constable of Englande; the kynge toke that offyce fro the right heyre, and gave it to his cosyn the erle of Rutlande. The kynge than kept greater state than ever he dyd, nor there had nat ben no kynge before in Englande that spente so moche yerely by a hundred thousande nobles as he dyd. In lykewyse the kynge had with hym the heyre of the erle of Arundell, who was beheeded at London. And bycause a knyght that was belongyng to the duke of Gloucestre, called Cerbe,[1] spake at a tyme certayne wordes agaynst the kynge and his counsayle, he was taken and beheeded. Syr Johan of Quynghay[2] was in great parell, but whan he sawe that the maters went so dyversely as they dyd, he dyssymuled as moche as he might, and departed fro the duchesse of Gloucestres house, and wente and dwelt in other places.

[1] *Corbet.*

[2] *Lakingheath.*

In those dayes there was none so great in Englande that durst speake agaynst any thynge that the kyng dyd or

wolde do: he had counsayle mete for his appetyte, who exhorted hym to do what he lyst. The kynge kept styll in his wages ten thousande archers night and day, that wayted on him, for he reputed hymselfe nat perfytely sure of his uncles, nor of the lygnage of Arundell.

CAP. CCXXII
Of the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre, and of the erle of Arundell.

CAP. CCXXIII

Of the great assemble that was made in the cytie of Reyns, as well by the emperour as of the realme of Fraunce, on the state of Holy Churche.

THE same seasone there was a great assemble of gret lordes in the cytie of Reynes, what of lordes of the empyre and of Fraunce, to the entent to bring the churche to a peace and reste. For the Frenche kynge dyd so moche, that at his request his cosyn the kynge of Almayne came to the cytie of Reynes,[1] with his counsayle. And bycause they wolde nat have it brewted that they assembled there all onely for the mater bytwene the Popes, the one at Rome, and the other at Avygnon, they made it to be noysed that they came thyder to treate for a maryage of the sonne of the marques of Blancquebourge, with the doughter of the duke of Orlyaunce: this marques was brother to the kynge of Almayne. The Frenche kyng lay at the archebysshoppes palayes, and there was with hym the dukes of Orlyaunce, Berrey, and Burbon, therle of saynt Powle, and dyvers other hygh barones and prelates of Fraunce. And whan the kinge of Almayne entred into the cytie, all the lordes and prelates, and kynge Charles of Naver, who was in lykewyse there, went to mete with hym, and receyved hym honourably. Fyrste, they brought hym to Our Lady churche, and after into the abbey of saynt Remy, there the kynge of Almayne laye, and his lordes aboute hym. And it was ordeyned by the Frenche kinge, that what so ever the kynge of Almayne spent shulde be at the Frenche kynges cost: the Almayns had every day delyvered theym ten tonne of herynge, for it was in Lent tyme, and eyght hundred carpes, besyde other fysshes, whiche was a great charge.

[1] *Rheims.*

CAP. CCXXIII

Of the great assemble that was made in the cytie of Reyns.

Whan the kyng of Almayne came first to the Frenche kynge, all the lordes went for hym to saynt Remy, and so brought him to the kynges palays. Whan these two kynges mette they made great honoure eche to other, and great reverence, and specyally the Frenche kynge: for Almayns of nature are rude and grose manered, without it be to take their profyte, therto they be experte and redy ynough. All the lordes of Fraunce and of Almayne toke acquayntaunce eche with other, with lovyng wordes and countinaunce. And the Frenche kynge made the kynge of Almayne, and his company, a great dyner; at one table there sate, fyrst, the patryarke of Jherusalem, than the king of Almayne, and the Frenche kynge, and the kynge of Naver, there sate no mo at that table: at the other tables sate the lordes and prelates of Almayne: no lorde of Fraunce sate that day, but sarved. To the kynges borde the meate was brought by the dukes of Berrey, and of Burbone, the erle of saynt Powle, and by other great lordes of Fraunce. The duke of Orlyaunce set every man downe. Vessell of golde and sylver ranne plentuously through the palays, as though it had ben but of wode or erthe; it was a sumptuous dyner. And as I was enfourmed the Frenche kynge gave to his cosyn the kyng of Almayne all the vessell and plate of golde and sylver that was served that day in the palays at the dresser or elswhere, and all other hangynges and habylymentes in the hall and chambre, wherunto the kynge retrayed after dynner, and spyces and wyne taken. This gyft was praysed and valewed to two hundred thousande florayns; and more over there was gyven to the other Almayns great gyftes and goodly presentes of vessell and plate of golde and sylver, wherof the straungers that were there had great marveyle of the state and puyssaunce and great ryches of the realme of Fraunce. These kinges thus abydynge in the cytie of Reynes, their counsayles mette togyther dyvers tymes on the maters that they came thyder for, as well for the maryage of the duke of Orlyaunces doughter with the marques of Blancquebourges sonne, as for the reformacyon of the churche. At laste the maryage was concluded and openly publysshed through the cytie, but as for the mater consernynge the Popes, there was nothynge

CAP. CCXXIII

Of the great assemble that was made in the cytie of Reyns.

knowen therof out of the counsayle, for all that was concluded in the counsayle was kept secrete. Afterwarde I was enfourmed, how it was agreed that maister Peter Daylly, bysshop of Cambraye, shulde go in legacyon fro the Frenche kynge, and fro the kynge of Almayne, to Rome, to hym that was called pope Bonyface, that he shulde submyt hymselfe to have a newe electyon of a Pope, and in lykewyse to the other Pope at Avygnon. And if so be that any of them wolde nat agree therto, to abyde the ordre of these two kynges, he to be dysgrated, and all ryghtes of the churche to be kepte fro hym; and the Frenche kynge to comprise to his agrement his sonne in lawe the kynge of Englande, and the kynge of Scottes, kynge Henry of Spayne, kynge Johan of Portugale, kynge Charles of Naver, and the kyng of Aragon: and the kinge of Almayne, shulde compryse his brother Loys kynge of Hungery, and all the realme of Boesme, and Almayne, to Pruce. And it was ordeyned that whan this bysshop of Cambrey was retourned fro the sommonyng of these two Popes, than he to go into all the sayd realmes their alyes. Thus these two kynges sware to holde without varyacyon or let. Thus ended their counsayle at that tyme. The kynges and lordes departed amyably, and every man tooke leave and departed and went home.

At this counsayle at Reynes the duke of Burgoyne was nat, nor wolde nat be, for he sayd before that it was but a payne, and a thynge loste to gyve any thynge to the Almayns, for they kepe no promesse nor covenaunt; howebeit, for all the dukes wordes there was nothynge left, for the mater went forthe as ye have herde. And anon after, the bysshop of Cambraye made hym redy, and tooke his waye to Rome. Also the Frenche kynge sent a great ambassade into Englande to se the kyng and the quene, and to shewe them of this mater, and so they dyd. And whan they retourned they shewed the Frenche kynge howe the kynge of Englande wolde take the same way that the kynge of Almayne, and the Frenche kynge wolde do. So they were all concluded, if nede were, to be as newter. Thus this mater stode in this case. Kynge Charles of Naver who was in Fraunce to se the kynge his cosyn, trustyng to recover

CAP. CCXXIII

Of the great assemble that was made in the cytie of Reyns.

his herytage of Normandy, and of the countie of Ewrus, the whiche the Frenche kynge had taken fro hym, as ye have herde here before, but he coulde nat attayne therto by no meanes, what so ever he shewed or sayd. And whan the kynge of Naverre sawe that he lost his payne, and labored in vayne, he toke the mater in great dyspleasure, and toke his leave as sobrely as he coulde, nat well contente with the Frenche kynge nor with his counsayle, and so retourned into the realme of Naverre.

Nowe lette us leave speakynge of them, and speke of other accydentes that fell in Englande, wherby folowed so great yvell, that the lyke hath nat ben written of in this hystory: here foloweth the entre and begynnynge of the mater.

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utteraunce the erle of Derby, sonne to the duke of Lancastre, in the presence of the kynge and his counsayle.

KINGE RICHARD of Englande hadde a condycion, that if he loved a man, he wolde make hym so great and so nere him that it was marveyle to consydre, and no man durste speke to the contrary; and also he wolde lightly beleve soner than any other kynge of remembrance before hym. And suche as were nere aboute hym and in his grace tooke no ensample of other that had ben great with the kyng before them, as the duke of Irelande, who was put out of Englande, and also syr Symon Burley, who by reason of suche counsayle as he gave to the kynge he was beheeded, and syr Robert Trevylyan, and syr Nycholas Bramble, and other, that had been of the kynges counsayle, wherfore they suffred dethe; for the duke of Gloucestre dyd all his payne to dystroy them, and yet fynally he loste his lyfe, as ye have herde: wherof suche as were than aboute the kynge was nothynge sory. Wherby some that were aboute the kynge rose into suche pride that it was marveyle, and in so moche that they coulde nat coloure nor hyde it,

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utterraunce the erle of Derby.

and specyally the erle Marshall, who was as great in the kynges favoure as myght be; and to the entente to please the kynge and to flatter hym, he made the kynge beleve that he was a trewe, faythfull, and a secrete servaunt, and that he coulde nat endure to here any worde spoken agaynst the kynge, and tolde the kynge many thynges to have the kynges love. Howebeit, often tymes a man thynketh to be avaunced, and is pulled backe; and so it fortuned of the erle Marshall; I shall shewe you howe.

Ye muste knowe that the erle of Derby and the duke of Gloucestre deed had to their wyves two susters, doughters to the erle of Hereforde and of Northamton, constable of Englande: so the chyldren of the erle of Derby and the duke of Gloucestre were cosyn germayns by their mother syde, and within a degre as nere of kynne by their fathers syde. To say trouth, the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre was ryght dyspleasaunt to many great lordes of Englande, and often tymes they wolde speke and murmure therat whan they were togyder. And the kynge than was so hygh uppon the whele that no man durste speke but the kynge knewe it, for he had caused to be spoken abrode in the realme, that whatsoever he were that spake any wordes of the duke of Gloucestre or of the erle of Arundell, he shulde be reputed as a traytour, wherfore the people durst nat speke. And on a day the erle of Derby and the erle Marshall communed togyder of dyvers maters; at last amonge other they spake of the state of the kynge and of his counsayle, suche as he had about hym and beleved them. So that at the last the erle of Derby spake certayne wordes which he thought for the best, wenynge that they shulde never have ben called to rehersall, whiche wordes were nouther vylenous nor outragyous, for he sayde thus: Saint Mary, fayre cosyn, what thynketh the kynge oure cosyn to do? Wyll he drive out of Englande all the noble men? Within a whyle there shal be none left: it semeth clerely that he wylleth nat the augmentacyon of his realme. The erle Marshall gave none aunswere, but dissimuled the mater, and toke it that he spake agaynst the kynge, and thought in hymselfe that the erle of Derby was ryght lykely to make great trouble in Englande, bycause he was so great with the Londoners, and

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utterance the erle of Derby.

the dyvell was redy to styrre his brayne, and that thynge that shall fall can nat be eschewed.

So he thought to shewe this mater to the kynge, whan noble men shulde be presente. And on a day to please the kynge, he sayde: Ryght dere syr, I am of youre lygnage, and ame your lyege man and marshall of Englande; wherfore, sir, I am bounde to you by myne alliegeaunce, and othe sworne, my handes in yours, that I shulde be in no place hearynge any thynge contrarye to your mageste royall, and shulde kepe it secrete: I ought to be reputed as a false traytour, whiche I wyll nat be, for I wyll trewly acquyte me agaynst you and all the worlde. The kynge loked on hym, and demaunded and sayd: Why say you these wordes; we wyll know it. My right redouted soverayne lorde, quod the erle Marshall, I saye it bycause I canne nat suffre any thynge that shulde be prejudyciall or agaynst your grace. Syr, cause the erle of Derby to come before you, and than I shall shewe you more. Than the erle of Derby was sente for, and the kynge commaunded the erle Marshall to stande up, for he was on his knee whyle he spake to the kynge. And whan the erle of Derby was before the kyng, who thought none yvell, than the erle Marshall sayde: Syr erle of Derby, I say to you, ye have thought yvell and spoken otherwyse than ye ought to do agaynste your naturall lorde the kynge of Englande, whan ye sayde that he was nat worthy to holde lande or realme, seynge without lawe or justyce, without counsayle of any of his noble men, he distourbeth his realme, and without tytell or good reason putteth out of his realme and dystroyeth them who ought to ayde and susteyne him; wherfore here I cast my gage, and wyll prove with my body agaynst yours, that ye are an yvell false traytour. The erle of Derby was sore abasshed with those wordes, and stepte backe a lytell and stode styll a season without demaundynge of his father or of any other what aunswere he shulde make. Whan he had studyed a lytell, he stept forthe with his cappe in his hande, and came before the kynge and the erle Marshall, and sayd: Erle Marshall, I saye thou arte an yvell and a false traytour, and that I shall prove, my body agaynst thyne, and in that quarell here is my gauge. Therle Marshall, whan he

herde howe he was apealed, shewed howe he desyred the batayle. With that the erle of Derby aunswered and sayde: I sette your wordes at the kynges pleasure, and other lordes that be here, and I tourne your wordes to a mocke and myne to be true. Than eche of these erles drewe to their company and lygnage, so that the manner of takynge of wyne and spyces was lette passe, for the kyng shewed hymselfe to be right sore displeased, and so entred into his chambre, and left his two uncles without and all their chyldren, and the erles of Salysbury and Huntyngdon his bretherne. Than anone after, the kynge sent for his uncles, and entred into his chambre. Thanne the kynge demaunded of them what was best to do in this mater. Syr, quod they, cause your constable to come before you, and than we shall shewe you our opynyons. Than the erle of Rutlande, who was constable, was sente for, and whan he was come, than he was commaunded to go to the erle of Derby and to the erle Marshall, and to take suretye of theym, that they go nat out of the realme of Englande without the kynges lycence. The constable dyd as he was commaunded, and than retourned agayne to the kynges chambre.

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utter-aunce the erle of Derby.

Ye maye well knowe this matter greatly troubled the courte, and many lordes and knyghtes were sore dyspleased of that adventure, and secretly they greatly blamed the erle Marshall, but he made as though he had set nothyng by the mater, his hert was so proude and presumptuous. Thus the lordes departed for that day. The duke of Lancastre, whatsoever countynaunce he made, he was sore displeased with these wordes, and he thought the kynge shulde nat have taken the mater as he dyd, but shulde rather have tourned it to nothynge, and so thought the moste parte of all the lordes of Englande. The erle of Derby went and lay at London, and helde his estate at his owne lodgynge; and there were pledges for him, the duke of Lancastre his father, the duke of Yorke, the erle of Northumberlande, and dyvers other lordes: and the erle Marshall was sente to the towre of London, and there helde his estate. These two lordes made provysyon, for that was necessary for them for their batayle. The erle of Derby sent his messangers

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utterance the erle of Derby.

into Lombardy to the duke of Myllayne syr Galeas, for to have armure at his pleasure. The duke agreed to the erles desyre, and caused the knight that the erle had sent thyder, whose name was Fraunces, to se all the dukes armorye. And whan the knyght had chosen suche as he lyked, than the duke furthermore for love of the erle of Derby, he sent four of the best armorers that were in Lombardy to the erle into Englande with the knight, to the entent that they shulde arme and make armure acordynge to the erles entente. The erle Marshall on his parte sent into Almayn and into other places to provyde him for that journey. The charge of these two lordes was greate, but the erle of Derby was at moost charge. The erle Marshall, whan he beganne that busynesse, he thought to have had more ayde of the kynge than he had, for suche as were nere aboute the kynge sayd to him: Syr, ye have nothyng to do to medle bytwene these two lordes; dyssymule you the mater, and let them deale; they wyll do well ynough. Sir, ye knowe well the erle of Derby is well beloved in the realme, and specyally with the Londoners, and if they se that ye shulde take parte with the erle Marshall, ye were lyke to lose their love therby for ever. The kynge understode well their wordes, and knew well it was trewe: he than dissymuled the mater as moche as he coulde, and suffred them to make their provysyon where they lyst.

The newes spredde abrode in dyvers countreys of the defyaunce bytwene the erle of Derby and the erle Marshall: many men spake therof in dyvers maners, and specyally in Fraunce. They sayd: Lette theym alone, the knyghtes of Englande are over proude; at length they wyll dystroy eche other, for it is the worste nacyon in the worlde under the sonne, for in that realme dwelleth the moste presumptuous people that canne be. Other there were that spake more soberly, and sayde: that the kynge of Englande shewed no wysdome, nor was nat well counsayled, whanne for wylde wordes he to suffre suche two noble men of his blode to enterprise armes in defyaunce. He shulde rather whan he herde the wordes fyrste, have sayde to them bothe: Ye are two lordes of my blode and lygnage, wherfore I commaunde you bothe to be in peace, and lette nouther hate nor

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utterraunce the erle of Derby.

rancoure engendre bytwene you, but be frendes, lovers, and cosyns togyther; and if this lande canne nat contente you, go into what countrey ye wyll, and seke adventures of armes there. If the kynge had sayde those wordes, and apeased these lordes thus, than he had done wysely. The duke of Lancastre was sore dyspleased in his mynde to se the kynge his nephewe mysse use hymselfe in dyvers thynges as he dyd. He consydred the tyme to come lyke a sage prince, and somtyme sayd to suche as he trusted best: Our nephue the kynge of Englande wyll shame all or he cease: he beleveth to lyghtly yvell counsayle who shall distroy hym; and symply, if he lyve longe, he wyll lese his realme, and that hath been goten with moche coste and travayle by our predecessours and by us; he suffreth to engendre in this realme bytwene the noble men hate and dyscorde, by whom he shulde be served and honoured, and this lande kepte and douted. He hath caused my brother to dye, whiche is one thynge to be noted, and the erle of Arundell, bycause they shewed hym trouthe: but he wolde nat here them nor none other that wolde counsayle hym agaynst his appetyte. He canne nat better dystroye his realme than to put trouble and hatred bytwene the noble men and good townes. The Frenchemen are right subtyle; for one myschiefe that falleth amonge us, they wolde it were ten, for otherwyse they canne nat recover their dommages, nor come to their ententes, but by our owne meanes and dyscorde bytwene ourselfe. And we se dayly that all realmes devyded are dystroyed; it hath been sene by the realme of Fraunce, Spayne, Naples, and by landes of the churche, as we maye se dayly by the two Popes, whiche is and shall be to their dystructyon; also it hath been sene by the countrey of Flaunders, howe by their owne meanes they are distroyed; also presently it is sene by the lande of Frece, with whome our cosyns of Haynalt are in warre, and howe the Frenchemen[1] amonge theymselfe are dystroyed; in lykewyse amonge ourselfe, without God provyde for us, we shall dystroy our selfe; the apparaunce therof sheweth greatly. Nowe the kynge suffereth that my sonne and heyre shall do batayle for a thynge of nought, and I that am his father maye nat speake to the contrary, for myne owne honoure and for my sonnes, for my sonne

[1] *Frisons.*

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utterraunce the erle of Derby.

hathe the body of a knyght mete to entre into armes agaynst the erle Marshall; howbeit, take the best therof, they shall never love agayne togyder as they dyd before. Thus said the duke of Lancastre.

All the seasone that these two lordes dyd provyde to do dedes of armes at utteraunce the duke of Lancastre came never at the kyng, nor but lytell at his sonne, and that he dyd for a polycy. For the duke knewe well that his sonne was marveylously well beloved in Englande, both with noble men and with other, and specyally with the Londoners, for they had promysed and sayd to hym: Syr, be ye of good comforte in this busynesse, for howesoever the matter tourne, ye shall scape with honour, whether the kynge wyll or nat, or all the marmosettes aboute hym, for we knowe well this mater is made and conveyed by envy, to the entente to drive you out of the realme, bycause ye be well beloved with many men. And if so be that ye departe in trouble, ye shall entre agayne with joye, for ye ought rather to rule than Rycharde of Burdeaulx: for they that wyll seke out the profoundenesse of the mater, maye well knowe fro whence ye came, and fro whence he came, wherby they maye knowe that ye be more nerer to the crowne of Englande than Rycharde of Burdeaulx, though we have made to hym faythe and homage, and have helde hym for our kyng more thanne this twenty yere. But that was by favour and purchase of his grauntfather good kynge Edwarde, who douted of this poynte that we nowe speke of; and on a tyme great question was made bytwene kyng Edwarde your grauntfather by youre father syde, and duke Henry of Lancastre your grauntfather by your mother syde, the Lady Blaunche of Lancastre; but the lordes of Englande that than reygned apeased the matter. For kynge Edwarde was so valyaunt a man, and so happy in all his enterprises, that he had the love of all his people poore and riche; nor also your grauntfather of Lancastre wolde nothynge to the kynge but well and good, and served the kynge in his tyme nobly and trewly, so that he is as yet to be recommaunded. These maters well consydred by kynge Rycharde, he myght well repente hym that he is no better governed than he is. Suche wordes these Londoners spake: thoughe they knewe

but lytell of the trouth, that they spake was of a synguler favoure. The erle of Derby receyved their wordes well aworthe, and dayly prepared for the batayle, and he desyred his frendes to be at that journey, and so every man prepared hymselfe, accordynge to the erles desyre.

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utterraunce the erle of Derby.

The kynge all the season that these two lordes prepared for their batayle he had many ymagynacyons, whether he shulde suffre them to fyght or nat. Thoughe he were kynge of Englande, and more douted than any other kynge before hym, yet nyght and daye he kept about hym a garde of two thousande archers, who were payed their wages wekely: for the kynge trusted nat greatly in theym that were nexte of his blode, excepte his brother the erle of Huntyngton, and the erle of Salisbury, and the erle of Rutlande, his cosyn germayne, sonne to the duke of Yorke, who was well in the kynges favoure, and certayne knightes of his chambre: as for all other he cared lytell for. Whan the day aproched that these two lordes shulde do their dedes of armes as they hadde promysed, and had every thynge redy prepared, than on a daye, certayne of the kynges counsayle came to the kynge, and demaunded what was his entencyon that these two lordes shulde do, and sayde: Sir, wyll ye suffre theym to fyght? Ye truelye, quod the kyng; why shulde they nat? We wyll se their dedes of armes: paradventure we shall knowe therby that we knowe nat as yet, and shulde be right necessary to knowe, to the entente we shulde provyde for it. For there is none so great in Englande but if he displease me I shall cause hym to make me amendes; for if I shulde any thynge submytte me to my subjettes, they wolde soone overcome me: and I knowe for certaygne that some of theym of my blode have hadde dyvers treatyse toguyder agaynste me and myne estate, and the moost princypall of them was the duke of Gloucestre, for in all Englande was natte a worse hedde agaynst me than he was. Nowe I shall have peace fro hense forwarde, for I shall do well ynough with all the other; but, sirs, I praye you shewe me why ye make this demaunde to me. Sir, quod they, we are bounde to counsayle you; and, sir, we often tymes here wordes spoken that ye canne nat here, for, sir, ye be in youre chambre, and we abrode in the countrey or in

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utterraunce the erle of Derby.

London, where many thynges be spoken whiche greatlye toucheth you and us also. Sir, it were tyme to provyde remedy, and so ye muste do. Sir, we counsayle you for the best. Howe so? quod the kynge; speke further and spare natte, for I wyll do every thynge parteynyng to reason, and minyster justyce in my realme. Sir, quod they, the renoume ronneth throughout Englande, and specially in the cytie of London, whiche is the soveraygne cytie of youre realme; they saye ye are cause of this enterprice bytwene these two lordes, and that ye have sette the erle Marshall to fyght with the erle of Derby. The Londoners and dyvers other noble men and prelates of the realme saye howe ye take the ryght waye to distroye your lygnage and the realme of Englande. Whiche thynge they saye they wyll natte suffre. And if the Londoners rise agaynste you, with suche noble men as wyll take their parte, ye shall be of no puyssaunce to resyst theym; and also they have you in a marveylous suspecte, bycause ye be alyed by maryage with the Frenche kynge, wherby ye be the worse beloved of all youre people. And, sir, knowe for certayne, that if ye suffre these two erles to come into the place to do batayle, ye shall nat be lorde of the felde, but the Londoners and suche lordes of their parte wyll rule the felde, for the love and favoure that they beare to the erle of Derby: and the erle Marshall is soore hated, and specially the Londoners wolde he were slayne. And thre partes of the people of Englande saye, that whan ye harde the wordes fyrst bytwene these two erles, that ye shulde have done otherwyse than ye dyd, and that ye shulde have broken the quarell, and have sayd: Sirs, ye are bothe my cosyns and lyegmen, therfore I commaunde you to kepe the peace fro hensforthe: and shulde have taken the erle of Derby by the hande and have ledde hym into youre chambre, and have shewed hym some signe of love. And bycause ye dyde nat thus, the brute ronneth that ye beare favour to the erle Marshalles partie, and are agaynst the erle of Derby. Sir, consyder well these wordes that we shewe you, for they be trewe: sir, ye had never more nede of good counsayle than ye have nowe. Whan the kynge herde these wordes, he chaunged countynaunce, the wordes were so quickely spoken. Therwith the kynge

CAP. CCXXIIII

Howe the erle Marshall in Englande apealed by gage of utterraunce the erle of Derby.

tourned fro them, and leaned out at a wyndowe, and studyed a certayne space, and than he tourned agayne to them that had spoken to hym, who were the archebysshoppe of Yorke, and the erles of Salisbury and of Huntingdon his bretherne, and thre other knightes of his chambre. Than he sayde to them: Sirs, I have well herde you, and if I shulde refuce your counsayle, I were greatly to blame; wherfore, sirs, consyder what is beste for me to do. Sir, quod one of theym that spake for all, the matter that we have spoken of is ryght peryllous; ye muste dissymule the mater if ye wyll have youre honour saved and to make peace; and, sir, ye ought rather to entertayne the generaltie of your realme than the ydell wordes of two knyghtes. But, sir, the brute thoroughe out all the realme of Englande is, howe the erle Marshall hathe greatlye trespassed, and hath renewed to many yvell thinges, and daylye reneweth, and the realme taketh all his wordes in vayne, and saith, how that by his ydell wordes he wolde reise a processe agaynst the erle of Derby, and to bringe the lande into trouble: first, they say it were better that he abode the payne, and the erle of Derby to be quyte. Sir, we thynke, that or they shulde arme them to mete togyder, that ye shulde sende to them and cause them to be bounde to abyde youre ordynaunce in this enterprise; and whan they be surely bounde to abyde youre sentence, than ye maye gyve theym this judgemente: that within fyftene dayes after, the erle Marshall to avoyde the realme, without any truste ever to retourne agayne; and therle of Derby in lykewyse to avoyde the realme, and to be banysshed for tenne yere. And whan he shall departe the realme, to please the people withall, release foure yere of the tenne, and so let hym be banysshed for sixe yere without pardone. This is the counsayle, sir, that we wyll gyve you; for, sir, in no wyse let them be armed one agaynst another, for the inconvenyentes that maye fall therby. The kynge studyed a lytell, and sayde: Sirs, ye counsayle me trewly, and I shall folowe your counsayle.

CAP. CCXXV

Howe kynge Richarde gave sentence, wherby he banysshed out of Englande therle of Derby for x. yere, and the erle Marshall for ever.

ANONE after that this counsayle was gyven to the kynge, he assembled great nombre of prelates and grete lordes of Englande, and they came to hym to Eltham; there was his two uncles, the duke of Lancastre and the duke of Yorke, the erles of Northumberlande, of Salysbury, and of Huntyngton. Than the kynge sente for the erle of Derby and the erle Marshall, and sette eche of them in a severall chambre. The kynge shewed howe he wolde be a meane bytwene them, and howe their wordes hadde greatly displeased hym, and that they were suche that ought nat lyghtly to be pardoned, wherfore he wolde in all poyntes they shulde submytte themselfe, and to abyde his ordynaunce in that behalfe. Than he ordayned the constable of Englande and foure other great lordes to go to the erle of Derby and to therle Marshall to take their bondes to abyde the kynges ordynaunce.

These lordes came to the sayd erles, and shewed them the kynges pleasure, and how the kynge wolde take the matter on hym: so they bounde themselfe to abyde the kynges order. Than the kynge sayde: I ordaygne and commaunde that the erle Marshall, bycause he hath brought this realme into this trouble, by reason of his wordes, wherin he canne nat make profe, that he ordayne himselfe to avoide this realme of Englande, and goo dwell in what place he lyste out therof, and that he be banysshed in suche wyse that he never retourne agayne. And also I ordayne, that the erle of Derby our cosyn, bycause he hathe displeased us, and that he is the chiefe cause of the banysshment of therle Marshall, that within this fyftene dayes he avoyde the realme of Englande, and to be banysshed for tenne yeres without retournynge, excepte we repeale hym agayne, the whiche shall alwayes lye in our pleasure.

CAP. CCXXV

Howe kynge Richarde banysshed out of Englande therle of Derby for x. yere, and the erle Marshall for ever.

This sentence greatly contented the lordes that were there present, and they sayde: The erle of Derby maye well ynoughe go and sporte hym out of the realme for two or thre yeres. He is yonge ynoughe; thoughe he have been sore traveyled in his dayes in farre countreis, as into Pruce, and to the Holy Sepulchre, to Cayre, and to saynt Katheryns mount, so he may do yet, goo some other voyages to passe the tyme if he lyste; he knoweth wyll ynoughe whider to go; he hath two susters, one quene of Spaygne, the other quene of Portugale; he maye well passe the tyme with them, and also as nowe there is no warre. Whan he cometh into Spaygne he maye move theym to make warre upon the Sarazyns, and to make a voyage into Granade, wherby he maye better enploye his tyme than abydynge in Englande, or elles he maye goo into Heynalte to his brother and cosyn the erle of Ostrevaunt, who wyll receyve hym with great joye and retaygne hym, for he hathe warre with the Fresons; and in Haynaulte he maye dayly here newes out of Englande and fro his children: he can natte go amysse goo where he wyll; and the kynge maye repeale hym agayne by good meanes whan it shall please hym, for he is one of the fayrest floures in his garlande; he shall nat be longe absente, if the kynge purpose to have the love of his people. But the erle Marshalle is in a farre worse case, for he is banysshed without hope for ever to retourne agayne; and to saye the trouthe, he hath well deserved it, for all this myschiefe is come by hym and by his wordes. Thus dyvers knyghtes and squyers of Englande talked toguyder one with another the same daye that the kynge gave the sayde jugement.

CAP. CCXXVI

Howe the erle of Derby departed fro London to go into Fraunce, and the erle Marshall went into Flaunders and so into Lombardy.

WHAN these two erles sawe what sentence the kynge had gyven theym, they were ryght sore pensyve, and good cause why. The erle Marshall sore repented hym of that he had said and done, for whan he began the mater he thought otherwyse to have ben borne out by the kynge than he was: for if he hadde knowen as moche before he wolde never have begon the matter. Whan he sawe there was no remedy, he made hym redy, and made his exchaung fro London to Bruges, and so came to Calays, where as he had been capitayne, and there toke his leave and so went to Bruges, and there taryed a fyftene dayes, and than to Gaunt, and so to Maynges,[1] and finally to Colloigne.

[1] *Malines.*

Lette us leave spekyng of hym, and speke of the erle of Derby, who prepared hymselfe in lykewise to departe out of Englande, accordyng to the kynges sentence.

Whan his daye of departure aproched he came to Eltham to the kynge, where as the duke of Lancastre his father was, and the duke of Yorke with them, the erle of Northumberlande, and sir Henry Percy his sonne, with a great nombre of other knyghtes and squyers of Englande, suche as loved hym, and were soore displeased of the fortune that he muste avoyde the realme. These lordes came thyder to se what ende the kynge wolde make in the mater, of whose commyng the kynge made semblaunt to be right joyfull, and made them great chere, and helde a great court. Also there was the erle of Salisbury, and the erle of Huntyngton, brother to the kyng, who hadde to his wyfe the duke of Lancastres doughter, and suster to the erle of Derby. These two lordes came to therle of Derby; I knowe nat if they dissymuled or nat At the erles departynge the kynge humyled hym greatly to his cosyn of Derby, and said: As Godde helpe

CAP. CCXXVI

Howe the erle of Derby departed fro London to go into Fraunce.

me, it right greatly displeaseth me the wordes that hath been bytwene you and the erle Marshalle; but the sentence that I have gyven is for the beste, and for to apease therby the people, who greatly murmured on this matter; wherfore, cosyn, yet to ease you somwhat of your payne, I release my judgement fro tenne yere to syxe yere. Cosyn, take this aworthe, and ordayne you therafter. The erle answered and sayd: Sir, I thanke your grace, and whan it shall please you ye shall do me more grace. All the lordes that were there were well contented with the kynge as for that tyme. Than every man departed, and some went to London with the erle of Derby. The erle made all his provisyon at Dover to passe to Calays. And the erle beyng at London or his departure was counsayled by his father for to go streight to the Frenche kynge and to his cosyns in Fraunce; and accordynge to his fathers counsayle so he dyde, or elles he wolde have gone to the erle of Ostrevaunt his brother and cosyn. Whan the erle departed fro London, there were in the stretes mo thanne fourtie thousande men, wepyng and cryeng after hym, that it was pytie to here; and some said: O gentyll erle of Derby, shall we thus leave you? This realme shall never be in joye tyll ye retourne agayne. But the daye of retourne is very longe, for envy, falsehed, and trayson hath putte you out of this realme, where as ye ought to abyde rather than many other, for ye are of suche lynage, and of so noble blode, that none ought to be compared to you. And gentyll erle, why shalle we leave you? ye never dyde nor thought yvell.

Thus men and women pituously spake. He was nat conveyed out of the cytie with instrumentes, but with lamentable wepynges. And some sayd secretely: Consyder the order of these people, what displeasure they take for a small occasyon. Whosoever wolde styrre the Londoners to ryse agaynst the kyng, he might than go seke further, and flye out of the realme rather than the erle of Derby. But it is as nowe no tyme, sithe the duke of Lancastre his father suffreth it, we must nedes suffre it. The mayre of London and a great nombre of the chiefe burgesses accompanyed therle of Derby out of the cytie. Some rode to Dartforde and some to Dover, and sawe hym take shippyng, and than

CAP. CCXXVI

Howe the erle of Derby departed fro London to go into Fraunce.

they retourned. And the erle of Derby, or he came to Calais, he hadde sent a knight and an heraulde to the Frenche kyng, and to his brother the duke of Orlyaunce, and to the kynges uncles, the dukes of Berrey, of Burbon, and of Burgoyn, to knowe the kynges pleasure if he wolde suffre the erle to abyde at Parys, and to kepe there his house, and to pay for every thyng that he or his men shulde take. To this request the Frenche kynge and his uncles lightly agreed, and shewed that they were right joyfull of his commynge, and said, howe they were ryght sorie of the erles trouble. These messangers returned to Calais, and founde the erle redy there. The Frenche kynge sent sir Charles of Hangers to open all the cyties and townes bytwene Calais and Paris, to receyve therle and his company. Thus the erle of Derby departed fro Calays, and toke the waye to Amyence, and in every place he was well receyved.

CAP. CCXXVII

Howe the lorde Guillyam, erle of Ostrevaunt, sente to his cosyn therle of Derby certayne messangers; and howe therle came to Paris, and howe he was receyved.

THE erle of Ostrevaunt beyng at Quesnoy, assone as he knewe that his cosyn the erle of Derby was passed the see, and was come to Calais, he ordayned sir Auncell of Trassagetes[1] and sir Fierebras of Vertayne to ride to Calais, and to desyre the erle of Derby to come into Heynaulte to sporte hym and to abyde there a season, promysynge hym to have good chere. These two knyghtes departed fro Quesnoy, and rode to Cambrey and to Bapames, or they herde newes that the erle was departed fro Calais, and hadde taken the waye to Amyence and so to go to Parys. These two knyghtes mette hym by the waye; they spake with hym and dyde their message, so that the erle thanked them, and also his cosyn that had sent them to

[1] *Trasignies.*

him. And than he excused hymselfe, and sayd howe he had made his provisyon to go into Fraunce as at that tyme to the Frenche kynge and to his cosyns of Fraunce, but he wolde nat renounce the curtesy that his cosyn of Heynalt had shewed hym. Than these two knightes departed and retourned, and shewed therle of Ostrevaunt what they had sene and done: and therle of Derby and his company rode so long that he aproched nere to Parys. Whan the kyng and the duke of Orlyaunce and his uncles knewe that the erle of Derby came to Paris, he prepared his chambers in his place of saynt Poule richely to receyve therle, and caused all lordes to issue out of the cytie to receyve hym, and the kyng taryed at the house of saynt Poule. First mette hym the duke of Berrey and the duke of Orlyaunce, and than the duke of Burgoyne and the duke of Burbon, and other noble prelates, lordes, and knightes: at the metyng there was frendly chere, and so in good order they entred into Paris with great joye. The same daye one great mysfortune fell: there was a squyer named Boniface mounted on a great coursar, whiche horse rose upright upon his hynder fete and fell backewarde, and the squyers hedde lyght upon the stones, that his hedde clove asonder and so dyed: of whose dethe the duke of Orlyaunce was ryght sorie, for he loved hym entierly, and so dyde the lorde of Coucy in his dayes, for he brought hym into Fraunce out of Lombardy.

CAP. CCXXVII

Howe the erle of Ostrevaunt sente to therle of Derby certayne messangers.

Thus they came to the house of saynt Poule, where the kynge was, who receyved the erle nobly; and therle was sage and wyse, and knewe moch of that parteyned to honour: he made his reverence, and acquaynted hym with the kynge after good maner so moche that he greatly pleased the kynge, and for good love he gave the erle his devyse to weare, the whiche the erle receyved joyfully. The wordes that were bitwene them I can nat tell, but all was well. And after takyng of spyce and wyne, the erle toke leave of the kyng, and than went to the quene in the same house, and she made hym joyouse chere: than after the erle departed and toke his horse to go to his lodgyng, and so was conveyed thyder. Thus passed the tyme, and the lordes of Fraunce dyde often tymes kepe hym company, and caused hym to passe the tyme with sportes and otherwyse, to the

CAP. CCXXVII

Howe the erle of Ostrevaunt sente to therle of Derby certayne messangers.

entent he shulde thynke the season the shorter, bycause he was out of his owne nacion.

Nowe lette us leave spekyng of the erle of Derby, and somwhat speke of the ordynaunce of the churche of the two Popes, Benedic beyng at Avignon, and Bonyface at Rome.

CAP. CCXXVIII

Howe the treatie that had been at Reynes bitwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Almaygne, concernyng the unyte of the churche, was folowed; and howe the bysshoppe of Cambray was sent by the sayd kynge to Rome and to Avygnon, to them that wrote themselfe Popes, to thentent that they shulde depose themselfe fro their papalytes, and submyt them to the order of these two kynges.

YE have herde here before howe the kyng of Almayne, and the kyng of Fraunce, and the lordes of thempire and their counsails had ben at the cytie of Reynes, and there they had dyvers secrete counsayls; and their entencion was to bring the churche into a parfyte unite. For to folowe the way that the churche helde as than, the errour was to great. And also ye have herde howe mayster Peter de Ailly, bysshoppe of Cambrey, was sent in legacion to Rome to speke with pope Boniface. He spedde hym so in his journey that he came to Foundes,[1] and there founde pope Boniface, and to hym he delyvered his letters of credence, dyrected fro the kynges of Almaygne and of Fraunce. The Pope receyved them and the bysshoppe right mekelye: the Pope knewe well parte of his message: than the bysshoppe declared the cause of his commynge. Whan the Pope hadde well herde hym, he sayde howe the answere laye nat all onely in hym, but also in all the cardynalles that had chosen hym Pope; but he said, whan he hadde spoken with them by delyberate counsayle, than he wolde make suche an answere that he trusted to content

[1] *Fondi.*

CAP. CCXXVIII

Howe the treatie that had been at Reynes, concernyng the unyte of the churche, was folowed.

them. This aunswere was suffycient for that tyme. The bysshoppe dyned that daye in the Popes palyce, and certayne cardynalles with hym. Than after the Pope departed fro Foundes and went to Rome, and there the Pope assembled a convocacion of the cardynalles in his palyce besyde saynt Peters churche: in this consistorie there were none but the Pope and his Cardynalles. And there the Pope shewed the request that the kynge of Almaygne and the Frenche kyng had made hym by the bysshoppe of Cambrey, and there he demaunded counsaile what answere he shuld make. There were thane many reasons alledged, for it semed right contrary to the cardinalles to put downe that they hadde made; they sayde it shulde be greatly to their shame and rebuke. Than they said to the Pope: Holy father, to cause these kynges to be in a good hope that ye wyll obey to them, ye must somwhat dissymule the mater, and saye howe ye wyll gladly obey to all thynge that the kynge of Almaygne, the kyng of Hungry, and the kyng of Englande wyll counsayle you unto: so that he that is in Avignon, who writeth hymselfe pope Benedic, whom the Frenche kyng and the Frenchmen upholde in his errour, that he depose hym of the name of papalyte; and than whersoever it shall please the sayde kynges to apoynt a conclave, ye wyll be redy and all your bretherne the cardynalles. This counsayle pleased well pope Boniface. This was the speciall and general aunswere that the bysshoppe of Cambrey had. And whan the Romayns understode that the kynges of Almaygne and of Fraunce had sente to their Pope their ambassade to have him to leave his papalyte, anone there multiplyed great murmuracion through the cytie of Rome. And the Romayns douted greatly to lese the Popes siege, whiche was yerely to them a gret profyte. For all pardons that shulde be two yere after, the vantage therof shulde growe to the cytie of Rome. And agaynst that pardone they had made great provisyon, wherfore they douted lest it shulde have ben loste, whiche shulde greatly have ben to their prejudyce. Than the moost notablest persones in Rome assembled togyder, and came to the Pope and shewed hym more signe of love than ever they hadde done before, and sayd: Holy father, ye are the trewe Pope,

CAP. CCXXVIII

Howe the treatie that had been at Reynes, concernyng the unyte of the churche, was folowed.

therfore lese nat your herytage and patrimony of the churche, the whiche was saynt Peters: take never counsayle to the contrarye, but abyde styll as Pope, for who so ever be against you, we shal abyde with you, and jeoparde oure bodyes and goodes to defende you in youre right. The Pope aunswered and sayd: My welbeloved chyldren, be of good confort, and be well assured that I wyll abyde as Pope, for any treatie of kynge or kynges to the contrary. Thus the Romayns were contented and apeased, and retourned to their houses. The Popes answere was alwayes to the bysshoppe of Cambrey, that whan he parceyved clerely that Benedic deposed hymselfe, than he said, he wolde be ordred by the sayde kynges. So the bysshoppe retourned and came into Almaygne, and founde the kyng at Convalence,[1] and there he shewed the answere that he had at Rome. Than the kyng of Almaygne sayde: Well, shewe all this to our brother and cosyn the Frenche kynge, and as he ordreth hymselfe, so shall I order me, and all the Empyre; but as farre as I can se, he must begyn fyrst; and whan he hath putte downe his Pope, than we shall putte downe ours. Than the bysshoppe departed fro the kyng, and rode tyll he came to Parys, wher he founde the Frenche kyng. And there the bysshoppe shewed his aunswere, whiche was kept secrete, tyll the kyng had assembled toguyder more nombre of noble men and prelates of his realme, by whome he wolde be counsayled howe he shulde procede further.

[1] *Coblentz.*

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme, with the Universyte of Paris, to take counsayle howe they shulde order pope Benedic, at Avygnon.

WHAN the Frenche kyng had herde the aunswere of pope Bonyface at Rome, and howe the kynge of Almayne in lykewyse aunswered, how that first pope Benedyc muste be put downe: that done, than he wolde make a convocacyon of prelates and noble men of his

realme, and come to Parys. There were certayne prelates in Fraunce, as the archebysshop of Reins, syr Guy of Roye, and the archebysshoppes of Rone and Sens, and the bysshoppes of Parys, of Beavoys, and of Auxer, they had sore susteyned the opynyons of pope Benedyc, at Avygnon, and specyally of Clement, bycause he was avaunced by their meanes;[1] these syxe prelates were nat called to the kynge in this counsayle, but other prelates and the Unyversyte of Parys. And whan the bysshop of Cambray had shewed before them all, howe he had spedde at Rome, and the aunswere that pope Bonyface and his cardynals had made hym, and the aunswere of the kynge of Almayne, than they entred into counsayle, and it was agreed that the Unyversite shulde have the greatest voyce. Than it was determyned by the Unyversite, that the kyng shulde sende syr Bouciquaut his marshall into the partyes of Avignon, and to do so moche by treatie or otherwyse, that Benedic shulde leave his papalyte and to ordeyne hymselfe in all poyntes by the kyng and his counsayle, and that the churche in all the lymytacions in the realme of Fraunce shulde be as newter, tyll the churche were brought into parfyte unyte; and that doone, than every thynge to returne to the true right. This counsayle was thought good, and was accepted of the kynge and all other. Than the marshall of Fraunce, and the bysshop of Cambray, were ordeyned to go to Avignon. They departed fro Parys, and rode tyll they came to Lyons, on the ryver of Rosne, and ther they two departed asondre, for it was ordeyned that the marshall shulde tary there styll tyll he herd tydynges fro the bysshoppe, who rode forthe and so came to Avygnon. There were some of the cardynalles that knewe well wherfore he came, but they dissymuled the mater to knowe what pope Benedic wolde say. Whan the bysshop of Cambraye had refresshed hym at his lodgynge, and had chaunged his apparell, than he wente to the Popes palayes. And whan he came in the Popes presence he made his reverence, but nat in such wyse as he ought to have doone, if he had taken hym as Pope, as other men dyd; and yet he made hym bysshoppe of Cambray, but that promocyon he had by the meanes of the lordes of Fraunce. Than the bysshoppe of Cambray, who was well

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

[1] *il les avoit avanchiés.*

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

langaged, bothe in Laten and in Frenche, spake and shewed howe he was sent thyder fro the French kynge, and fro the kynge of Almayne, and so beganne his proces. And whan the bysshoppe came to the utteraunce of the mater, howe the Pope shulde resygne and depose hymselfe fro the papall dygnyte, and that he that was at Rome shulde do likewyse, with those wordes the Pope beganne to chaunge colour, and lyfte up his voyce, and sayd: I have endured great payne and traveyle for the churche, and by good election I was created Pope, and nowe to depose myselfe, that shall I never do during my lyfe; and I wyll that the Frenche kynge knowe that for all his ordynaunce I wyll do nothynge therafter, but I wyll kepe my name and papalyte tyll I dye. Syr, quod the bysshoppe of Cambray, savyng your grace, I toke you for more prudent than I nowe fynde you; fyrste demaunde counsayle of your bretherne the cardynalles, and than make aunswere, for you alone can nat make no resystence agaynst them if they agree to this opynyon, nor ye are nat able to resyste the puyssaunce of the kynges of Fraunce and Almayne. Than two cardynalles that were there, such as the Pope had made before, they parceyvynge the mater nat lykely to do well, rose and sayd to the Pope: Holy father, the bysshoppe of Cambray speketh well; syr, we desyre you do herin after his counsayle. Well, quod the Pope, I am contente. So they departed for that tyme, and the bysshop went to his lodgynge, and went nat to se any cardynals, but dyssymuled hymselfe. The nexte day betymes the bell sowned to the consistory, and than there was a convocacyon of all the cardynalles that were at Avygnon: they all assembled at the palays, and entred into the consistory, and thyder was called the bysshop of Cambraye, who in Laten shewed at length his message, and the cause of his commyng thyder. Whan he had sayd, than he was aunswered, howe the Pope shulde take counsayle to answere, and in the meane tyme he to departe out of the house, and so he dyd; and in the meane season Benedic and his cardynalles counsayled togyder, and were longe debatynge of the mater: and many thought it herde and a contrary mater to put downe that they had created. Than the cardynall of Amyence spake and sayd: Lordes, whether we wyll or nat,

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

it must behove us to obey the Frenche kynge, and the kinge of Almayne, sythe they be conjoyned togyder, for without them we can nat lyve; howebeit, we shulde do well ynough with the kyng of Almayne, if the Frenche kynge wolde take our parte: but it is otherwyse, for he commaundeth us to obey, or els he wyll stoppe fro us the fruites of our benefyces, without the whiche we can nat lyve. Trewe it is, holy father, that we have created you as Pope, on the condycion that to your power ye shulde ayde to refourme the churche, and to bring it into parfyte unyon; and this ye have alwayes sayd and mayntayned; therfore syr, aunswere atemperately, and in suche maner as we may prayse you, for syr, ye ought better to know your owne corage than we. Than dyvers other of the cardynalles sayd: Syr, the cardynall of Amyence sayeth well and wysely, wherfore syr, we pray you all in generall, that ye wyll speke, and shewe us what ye wyll do. Than Benedyc aunswered and said: The unyon of the churche I desyre, and I have taken great payne therin, but syth God of his devyne grace hathe provyded for me the papalyte, and that ye have chosen me therto: as longe as I lyve I wyll be Pope, and I wyll nat depose myselfe nouther for kyng, duke, erle, nor other treatie, nor by no processe nor meanes, but that I wyll abyde Pope. Than the cardynals rose up all togyder with great murmurynge; some sayd he had spoken well, and some sayd contrary. Thus they dyffered and were in dyscorde; the most parte departed out of the consystory, and toke no leave of the Pope, and retourned to their lodgynges; some, suche as were in this Popes favour, taryed styll with hym. Whan the bysshoppe of Cambray sawe howe they departed in suche maner, he knewe well they acorded nat well, and therwith avaunced hymselfe, and entred into the consystory, and so came to the Pope whyle he sate styll in his see, and without doynge of any great reverence sayde: Syr, gyve me myne aunswere; sythe ye have had your counsayle aboute you, ye ought to gyve me myne aunswere that I may retourne. This pope Benedic who was in great dyspleasure for the wordes that the cardynall of Amyence had spoken, sayd: Bysshoppe of Cambray, I have counsayle of dyvers of my bretherne the cardynals, who hath created me into the dignyte papall, and

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

have receyved all the solempnytyes therto belongyng, and am writen and named Pope by all my subgiettes, and as Pope I wyll abyde as longe as I lyve: I wyll nat do the contrary, to dye in the payne, for I have doone no cause why to lese it. And saye to our sonne of Fraunce, that hyther unto I have taken him as a good catholyke prince, but nowe by synister meanes if he wyll entre into great errour, he wyll repente it. I praye you to say to hym fro me, that he be well advysed howe he enclyneth to any thynge that shulde trouble his conscyence. Therwith this Benedic rose out of his chayre, and went into his chambre, and certayne cardynalles with hym, and the bysshoppe of Cambray retourned to his lodgynge, and dyned sobrely, and than after toke his horse and passed the bridge of Rone, and came to Vile Nefe, and at nyght lay at Baignoulx,[1] whiche partaygned to the realme of Fraunce: and he understode that syr Boucyquaut, marshall of Fraunce, was come to Porte Saynt Andrewe, a nyne leages fro Avygnon. The nexte day thyder came the bysshoppe of Cambray, and shewed hym the aunswere of Benedic. Whan the marshall understode that this pope Benedic wolde nat obey the kynge his maysters ordynaunce, he sayd to the bysshop: Syr, ye are best to retourne into Fraunce, ye have no more to do here, and I shall execute that I am commaunded to do by the kynge and his uncles. The next daye the bysshoppe departed and toke the way to Albenoys and to Pyne,[2] and the marshall set clerkes awarke to write, and sente for knyghtes, squyers, and men of warre, through all the countrey of Vivrays,[3] of Vyvieres, and Auvergne, to Mountpellyer, for he had commyssyon so to do by the king; and also he sent to the seneschall of Beaucayre, that he shulde close all the passages as well by the ryver of Rone as by lande, to the entent that nothynge shulde entre into Avignon. He wente hymselfe to the Pownte Saynt Esperyte, and closed there the passage over the ryver of Rone, that nothynge shulde entre that way into Avygnon. Thus the marshall dayly gathered men of warre, and many came to serve hym, some for obeysaunce, and some to pyll and robbe theym of Avygnon. There came to hym syr Raymonde of Thourayne, and the lorde de la Both,[4] the lorde of Tornon, the lorde of Mon-

[1] *Bagnols.*
[2] *Puy.*
[3] *Velay.*
[4] *Voulte.*

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

claue, and the lorde Duses, so that the marshall had a great nombre of men. Than the marshall sent an haraulde to defye pope Benedic in his palays, and all the cardynals that wolde take his parte. This was harde tydynges to the cardynals, and to them in the cytie of Avygnon, for they knewe well they coulde nat longe susteyne the warre agaynst the puyssaunce of the Frenche kynge. Than they determyned to go and speake with the Pope, and so they dyd, and shewed hym howe they coulde nat nor wolde nat susteyne the warre agaynst the Frenche kynge: for they sayd they must lyve and have their marchaundyse to go as well by lande as by ryver. This Benedyc aunswered folysshly and sayd: Syrs, your cytie is stronge and well provyded: I wyll sende for men of warre to Gennes, and into other places, and to my sonne the kynge of Aragon, that he come and serve me, whiche I am sure he wyll do, for he is bounde therto for two causes, he is of my lygnage, and also he ought to be obeysant to the Pope. Sirs, ye are abasshed of to lytell a cause, go your wayes and kepe and defende your towne, and I shall kepe my palays. Other aunswere the cardynals and the men of the cytie coulde nat have of this Benedyc. So every man retourned home. This Benedic had of longe tyme purveyed his palays with wyne, corne, larde, oyle, and of all other thinges parteynynge to a fortresse; and also he was of his person hygh and cruell, and wolde nat be abasshed for a lytell thynge. The marshall of Fraunce departed fro Pount Saynt Spyrite, and passed with all his company by the towne of Orenge, by consent of the prince of Orenge, and so entred into the countre of Venyce, whiche was lande parteygnynge to the churche, the whiche anone was overrynne: and the men of warre passed at the bridge of Sourgues, and so they were lordes of all the ryver; and the marshall taryed in the towne of Sourgues, with a gret nombre of menne of warre to kepe the towne and passage, and also the garysone of Noves, whiche partayned to the Pope. Than the marshall went and lodged at saynt Verayne, nere to Avignon, and his men therabout: and dayly came thyder men of warre, so that the cytie of Avignon was closed in before and behinde by lande and by the ryver, so that nothynge coulde entre nor issue without leave.

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

For at the towne of Nove,[1] without Avygnon, whiche partayned to the realme of Fraunce, was the seneschall of Beaucayre, with fyve hundred men, and kepte the entre on that syde, and the marshall of Fraunce, with two thousande men was on the other syde of Avignon, and he sent to theym of the cytie that without they wolde obey and open their cytie, that he wolde burne all their vynes and houses abrode in the countrey aboute to the ryver of Durense. That sommonynge greatly abasshed the men and women within the cytie, for their herytages laye without Avignon unto the ryver of Durense. Than they went to counsayle without knowledge of the Pope, and they called to their counsayle certayne cardynals, as the cardynall of Amyence, of Poictours, of Newcastell, of Vivyers, and dyvers other. Than suche as had moste to lose shewed these cardynalles howe the marshall of Fraunce had thretened them to brinne their vynes and their howses, and all this had caused the Frenche kynge, agaynst whome they coulde nat resyste, for his puyssaunce was so nere them. And all thynges consydred, they sayde they were better to obey to the Frenche kynge, than to holde their paryllous opynyons, for of Benedyc they coulde have no ayde nor comforte; and they demaunded of these cardynalles if they wolde joyne and take their parte. The cardynals said they were content to take their wayes, for vitayles beganne to fayle theym, and also their benefyces were in the realme of Fraunce, whiche they sayd they wolde nat wyllyngly lese. So they entred into treatie with the marshall of Fraunce, the whiche toke suche effecte, that all the men of warre entred into the cytie of Avignon, and it was apoynted to besiege the palays: their covynaunt was to do no hurte nor dyspleasure to the cardynalles, nor to none of their men, nor to the hole body of the towne. This to do the marshall promysed. So they entred into Avignon, and lodged at their ease and lybertie, and than all the passages as well by lande as by water were opened, to the entent that all maner of vytayle myght come to the cytie.

Whan he that wrote himselfe pope Benedyc, beynge closed in his palays, sawe that the cardynals and the men of the cytie had made a treatie with the marshall of Fraunce without his counsayle or advyse, he was therwith

[1] *Villeneuve.*

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

sore dyspleased; howebeit, he sayd that he wolde nat submytte hymselfe, to dye in the payne, and so he kepte hymselfe close in his palais, which was as stronge a place as any in the worlde, and most easyest to be kepte, so that it be well vytayled. This Pope had sent letters to the kynge of Aragone instantly to socoure hym in his nede, and to sende him men of warre that he myght be able to resyst the marshall of Fraunce: also he sente the kynge worde in his letter, that if he coulde get hym thens fro Avignon, he wolde go and kepe his see apostolyke in Aragon, at Parpygnon, or at Barcelone. The kynge of Aragon sawe well the Popes letters, but he made no force of them, and sayd to his counsayle that were aboute hym: What, weneth this preest that to susteyne hym and his argumentes, I shall enterpryse to make warre agaynste the Frenche kyng to ayde hym? Than I might well be reputed a fole. Syr, quod his counsayle, ye say trouthe, ye have no nede to medle in that mater, for syr, ye may be sure the Frenche kynge hath suche counsayle aboute hym, that he wolde make no warre agaynst hym without a juste cause; lette the clergy alone, for if they purpose to lyve, the prelates must obey the great lordes under whome their rentes and revenues are, they have longe kept them in peace. And also syr, the Frenche kynge had writen to you allredy, desyringe you to determyne you and your countrey to be newter, as he is and wyll be: and syr, ye were beste so to do, for my lady the quene who is the Frenche kynges cosyn germayne, is content so to be, and so is the moste parte of your realme, and the clergy in lykewyse, and specyally Catelone and Spayne; and syr, we thynke it is the best opynion, for if all Cristen kynges do nat the same, the churche shall never come to unyte by reasone of two Popes. Thus the kynge of Aragon and his counsayle devysed togyder, and pope Benedic was styll in his palays, trustynge to have ayde of the kynge of Aragon, but he was dysceyved. And the marshall of Fraunce was within the cytie of Avygnon, and the palays was so kept that none coulde issue out nor entre in. They lyved with that store they had, for of vytayles they had suffycient for two or thre yere, but they lacked woode to make fyre withall, and to sethe their

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

meate, whiche made theym abasshed. Every weke the marshall herde newes fro the Frenche kynge, and the kynge fro hym, and the kynge commaunded hym that he shulde nat departe thens tyll he had atchyved his enterprise. Thus the Pope coude nat issue out of the palays, there was suche watche layde on hym.

The conclusyon was, whan this Benedyc sawe that he was so straytely kepte, and that fyre fayled hym, and other provysions dayly dyscreased, and sawe that no conforte nor ayde came to hym fro no parte, at laste he yelded, at the request of certayne of the cardynalles; and the treatie was thus: that he shulde nat departe out of Avignon, tyll there were made an unyon in the churche: and a certayne garde was sette aboute hym, and the cardynalles and ryche men of Avignon bounde themselfe to kepe this Benedyc so strayte, that they shulde rendre accompte of hym agayne, outher quycke or dede. Suche cardynals as had their benefyces in Fraunce tooke great payne to make this treatie and composycion, for they sayde all with one accorde, that they wolde abyde with the Frenche kynge. Thus this busynesse ended at that tyme, and every man departed, and the marshall went to Parys, and anone after he ordeyned him to go into the realme of Hungery, for the kynge of Hungery had written to the Frenche kynge howe Lamorabaquy assembled great puyssaunce of men of warre, of Turkes, Arabyes, Tartaryes, and Suryens, and of dyvers other of his secte, to fyght with hym. The erle of Derby the same season beynge at Paris, in the house of Clyssone, nere to the temple, was wyllynge to go into Hungery, whiche shulde be the lesse coste to the Frenche kynge: for he had every weke redy payed him fyve hundred crownes of golde. And the erle thought hymselfe moche bounde to the Frenche kynge for that grace: and whan that tydynges came fro the kynge of Hungery into Fraunce, the erle of Derby entended well to that mater, and thought in hymselfe that voyage to be ryght honourable for hym to passe his tyme there, wherby he shulde the lightlyer forget the tyme of his trouble: and spake to them of his specyall counsayle, and they counsayled hym to go in that voyage, so that he knewe fyrst the duke of Lancastre, his fathers, pleasure in that behalfe. Than

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

the erle sent one of his knyghtes, called Dinorth,[1] into Englande, to knowe his fathers pleasure. This knyght came into Englande, and founde the duke of Lancastre at a castell, a twenty myle fro London, called Hertforde: there he shewed hym his sonnes entente. And whan the duke understode the mynde of the erle his sonne, and the good wyll that he had to go into Hungery, to passe the tyme of his banysshment, he was ryght well content, and sayd to the knyght: Syr, ye be welcome, your wordes and my sonnes lettre requyreth counsayle, ye shall rest you here with us a season, and in the meane whyle we shall take advyse; and in the whyle ye may go and se my sonnes chyldren, for ye muste beare tydynges of them to their father. Syr, quod the knyght, ye say true. So this knyght, syr Dynorth, taryed a season in Englande.

[1] *Dymoke.*

Nowe had the Frenche kinge good occasyon to write to the kynge of Almayne, and to his counsayle, in what case he had brought pope Benedic and the cardynalles. The kynge than sent thyder a noble ambassade, as the patryarke of Jherusalem, syr Charles of Hangers, and other knightes, and they founde the kynge at Strawbourgh, and dyd their message, wherwith the kynge and his counsayle were well content, and sayd howe they wolde determyne on that matter: but they said, they wolde gladly that the kyng of Englande shulde take the same waye, the whiche they feared shulde be herde to do. With this aunswere the ambassadours retourned into Fraunce, and shewed the kynge what they had doone and sene. The Frenche kynge than to thentent to bring his purpose to passe, sente agayne into Englande to kynge Rycharde, and the messangers shewed the kynge the cause of their commynge. The kynge gave good herynge to the mater, but as than he had nat the prelates of the realme nor the clergy with hym, nor were nat so plyable to folowe his pleasure, as they in Fraunce to folowe the pleasure of their kynge, and this he shewed to the Frenche kynges messangers: howebeit, he sayde he wolde do his devoyre, and so he dyd. And so the messangers returned into Fraunce. And kynge Rycharde on a daye at Westmynster assembled all his prelates and clergy of Englande, and whan they were there the kynge shewed wysely

CAP. CCXXIX

Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

the dyfference that was in the churche, and howe the Frenche kynge by delyberacyon and advyse of counsayle, and by consent of the unyversite of Parys, and other clerkes, he was determyned to be newter, and in lykewyse so are the kynges of Spaygne, of Scotlande, of Aragone, and of Naver, and howe that all Almayne, Boesme, and Italy, were of the same opynyon. In lykewyse the kynge of Englande desyred that his realme shulde folowe the same. Whan the prelates and the clergy, who knewe nothynge why they were sent for, herde that mater, they had great marveyle, and were sore abasshed. Some stode styll and spake no worde, and some began to murmure, and sayde: Our kynge is become Frenche, he entendeth to nothynge but to dyshonour and distroy us, but he shal nat. What, wolde he bringe us out of our beleve? He maye do so moche that he shall have yvell therof. Let us nat folowe this opynion, sythe the Frenche kynge taketh that waye; lette hym holde hymselfe newter, and let us holde styll our beleve, and lette no man put it fro us, without there be greater apparaunce of a surer foundacyon, than we se as yet. Whan kyng Rycharde sawe the dyfference and murmurynge of the clergy, he caused the bysshoppe of London to demaunde of all the clergy what was best to do. They all aunswered that the matter was so great, that therin requyred great counsayle and delyberacyon: and so they departed, and every man went to his lodgynge. And whan the Londoners knewe the cause of that assemble, and the request that the kynge had made, they were than sore troubled agaynst the kyng. For the people of Englande were so fermely set on the belevynge on the Pope at Rome, that they wolde nat leave it, and sayde howe that Rycharde of Burdeaulx wolde distroy them all if he be let alone: his herte is so Frenche that he canne nat hyde it: but a daye wyll come to paye for all, that he shall repente hym and all suche as gyve hym suche counsayle. What so ever the kynge sayd to have his people newter, they wolde in no wyse agree therto. And the Frenche kynge was nat well content with his sonne kynge Rycharde, in that he had nat incontynent caused his realme to have been newter; but to saye the trouth, the kynge was nat to blame therin. And also suche accydentes fell soone

after, the whiche were so great and horryble that the lyke hath nat ben sene in all this hystorye upon no kynge Crysten, except of noble kynge Peter of Lusygnen, kyng of Cyper and Jherusalem, whome his owne brother and the Cypriens martyred.

CAP. CCXXIX
Howe the Frenche kyng assembled the prelates and other noble men of his realme.

CAP. CCXXX

Of the aunswere of the duke of Lancastre to the knyght sent to hym fro his sonne the erle of Derby, and howe the duke of Lancastre dyed.

WHAN sir Dinorth, whom the erle of Derby had sente into Englande to his father the duke of Lancastre, and had his answere of the duke, and had vysyted all the erles landes, and had sene his chyldren, four sonnes and two doughters, than he toke his leave and retourned into Fraunce. His aunswere was, howe that the duke wolde nat counsayle the erle his sonne to go into Hungery: but whan he was wery of beynge in Fraunce, than rather to go into Castell to the kynge there, and to his suster, and if he lyste to go further, than to go and vysite his other suster the quene of Portugale. The erle redde his fathers letters two tymes over, and studyed theron a season. And syr Dinorth shewed him that the physicions and surgyons in Englande sayd surely, howe that the duke his father had on hym a paryllous sycknesse, whiche shulde be his dethe. These wordes gretly letted the erle to take on hym any maner of voyage, but so taryed styll at Parys, and often tymes he went and sawe the Frenche kyng, the duke of Orlyaunce, and the kynges uncles, and alwayes they made hym good chere, so that he was moche bounde to them. And he sayde to the kynge: Syr, ye do me so moche honoure and curtesy, and shewe me so great sygne of love, that I knowe nat in all my lyfe dayes howe to deserve it; but if ever I come in Englande my lady the quene your doughter to my power shall have my servyce. I thanke you, cosyn, quod the kynge. So it fell that aboute the feest of Crystmasse, duke Johan of Lancastre, who lyved in great

CAP. CCXXX

Of the aunswere of the duke of Lancastre to the knyght sent to hym fro the erle of Derby.

dyspleasure, what bycause the kynge had banysshed his sonne out of the realme for so litell a cause, and also bycause of the yvell governynge of the realme by his nephewe kynge Rycharde: for he sawe well that if he longe perceyvered and were suffred to contynewe, the realme was lykely to be utterly loste: with these ymagynacyons and other, the duke fell sycke, wheron he dyed, whose dethe was greatly sorowed of all his frendes and lovers. The kyng, by that he shewed, toke no great care for his dethe, but sone he was forgotten. Than certayne of the noblemen of Englande sawe well howe the realme feblysshed, sythe the duke of Lancastre was deed; and the duke of Gloucestre his brother slayne, and the erle of Arundell; and the erle of Derby banysshed, who ought than to be duke of Lancastre by ryght succession. Than some sayde: Nowe we shall se what the kynge wyll do: it is tyme nowe that he repeale home agayne his cosyn of Derby, and to pardone hym his yvell wyll, though he have no cause to be dyspleased with hym: it were tyme he came and entred into his landes as duke of Lancastre. Suche wordes ranne abrode in the realme in dyvers places, and specyally in the cytie of London, where the erle of Derby was a hundred tymes better beloved thanne the kynge; howebeit, for all the wordes and murmuryng that the kyng and his counsayle knewe of, yet he dyd nothynge therafter, but clene the contrary. He was yvell counsayled, for if he had incontynent after the dethe of the duke of Lancastre sente for the erle of Derby, and at his commynge have frendely welcomed hym home, and have called hym duke of Lancastre, and have taken hym as greatest personage in Englande nexte hymselfe, and have sayde howe he wolde be governed in all poyntes after his advyse and counsayle, and to do nothynge without his advyse, than the kynge had done well, and lykely to have contynued his estate as kynge of Englande, and had nat receyved the yvell fortune that fell to hym shortly after, as ye shall here after.

CAP. CCXXXI

Howe the dethe of the duke of Lancastre was knowen in Fraunce; the kyng of Englande wrote in maner of joye to the Frenche kynge therof, and wrote nothyng therof to therle of Derby, who was the dukes sonne.

TIDYNGES of the duke of Lancasters dethe came into Fraunce, and kyng Rycharde of Englande in maner of joye wrote therof to the Frenche kyng, and nat to his cosyn therle of Derby; howebeit, the erle knewe it as soone as the Frenche kynge, or soner, by suche men as he had in Englande. Than the erle apparelled hym and all his men in blacke, and caused his obsequy to be done right honorably, at the whiche was the Frenche kyng, and his brother the duke of Orlyaunce, and all the kynges uncles, with a great nombre of prelates and great lordes of Fraunce. For the erle of Derby was wel beloved with every man, and many were right sorie of his trouble, for he was a pleasaunt knight, and an honest person, curtesse and swete, and meke to every man; and every man that sawe hym said howe the kyng of Englande was nat well counsayled, that he repealed hym nat home agayne. And truely to saye trouthe, if the kynge of Englande had wysely regarded the mater, and had ben well counsayled, the mater had nat tourned agaynst hym as it dyde. For the erle of Derby, after the dethe of his father, was right enherytoure to be duke of Lancastre, and to have ben the seconde persone of the realme, and by whom all the busynesse of the realme shulde chiefely have passed. Also the kynge and his counsayle ought to have consydred, howe often tymes the people of Englande hadde styrred and murmured agaynst hym, and shulde have knowen howe he was nat very wel beloved of the people, nor of some knightes, and other; and how that in the duke of Gloucesters dayes, he was often tymes in daunger of his persone; as whan the Londoners and the counsaylles of dyvers good townes in Englande came to hym to Eltham, and there made their

CAP. CCXXXI

Howe the dethe of the duke of Lancastre was knowen in Fraunce.

requestes that all subsidies and aydes gyven and graunted within twentie yere, shulde have ben frustrate and fordone, or els they were determyned by the consent of the duke of Gloucestre, and other noble men of the realme, to have taken the kynge, and to have sette another to have reygned in his place, and to have putte the kyng and the quene into a place, and so to have hadde meate and drinke as long as they had lyved; in so moche that the duke of Gloucester hadde desyred a nephewe of his, sonne to the doughter of the duke of Clarence, who was called Johan erle of Marche, that he wolde have taken on hym the charge and governyng of the realme, and that they wolde have made hym kyng: but the same erle excused hymselfe honestly therfro. All these thynges were apeased and layde downe, by the wyse sadde meanes and prudence of the sayde duke of Lancastre, father to this sayd erle of Derby.

If kyng Richarde had wysely consydred all these maters, he had reigned in gretter prosperite than ever he did before. Kyng Richarde knewe all this well ynough, and so by yvell counsayle the kynge caused by colour of love the duke of Gloucestre to be taken and ledde to Calays, where he was strangled and murdered, wherof great brute was throughe out all the realme with great grudge and murmuracyons, so that it was at the poynt to have deposed the sayde kyng Richarde. Howebeit, the duke of Lancastre, lyke a sage and a prudent prince, for all that the duke of Gloucestre was his brother, and that the murderyng of hym touched hym nere to his herte, all thynges consydred, and that he coude nat recover agayne his brother, wisely and amiably he apeased all these maters, and the kynge his nephue more feared in Englande than he was before. All this the kynge ought to have consydred, and specially howe therle of Derby was better beloved with the people, than any other man within the realme; all these thynges wysely considred after the dethe of the duke of Lancastre, the kyng shulde have repealed therle of Derby agayne into the realme. But the kyng had no mynde so to do, for he dyd clene the contrary: for incontynent he sente his offycers into all the duke of Lancasters landes, and toke the profites therof to hymselfe, and sayd, that as longe as therle of Derby stode as a

CAP. CCXXXI

banysshed man, that he nor none of his shulde receyve any revenues of any landes within the realme of Englande. And moreover, wherof the kyng was greatly blamed of suche as loved the erle and his chyldren, the kyng gave awaye landes parteynynge to the herytage of the duchy of Lancastre to some of his servauntes, suche as asked them. For the whiche cause, many knyghtes and other in Englande spake and said: The kyng sheweth well that he oweth no good wyll to his cosyn the erle of Derby, sythe he wyll nat repeale hym home agayne, and suffre his landes to be gyven awaye, where as therle and his chyldren shulde be great membres in Englande, and a good staffe for the kyng to leane by. But he dothe the contrary, for he driveth hym awaye, and so wyll kepe hym in this daunger, and worse if he coude, for he hath taken to hymselfe his heritage, and causeth his offycers to medell with the dukes landes, as thoughe they were his owne; and if the poore tenauntes complayne of the injuryes done to them in their lordes absence, they can nat be harde, there is none that wyll do them right. Also it is but a small token of love that the kyng beareth to the erle of Derby, and to his chyldren, for their herytage of Lancastre, whiche shulde come to them by right enherytaunce, discended fro their grandame the lady Blanche, doughter to duke Henry of Lancastre; the kyng gyveth parte therof away where as it pleaseth hym. And suche landes as shulde fall to them by the right of the lady their mother, who was doughter to the erle of Hereforde and Northampton, and constable of Englande, the kynge gyveth parte therof at his pleasure. This is to moche done against all ryght and reason, and to the displeasure of all the noble men of Englande; this can nat longe endure unamended. Thus the prelates, noble men, and commons in Englande communed and murmured.

Howe the dethe of the duke of Lancastre was knowen in Fraunce.

In lykewise in the realme of France, suche men of honour as herde spekynge of this mater, and hadde sene the erle of Derby at Parys, hadde great marveyle therof, and sayd one to another: As we thynke, the kynge of Englande hath takenne to great a displeasure with his cosyn the erle of Derby, who is the greattest man in England next hymselfe; he is a gracious knyght, curtesse, meke, and tretable, and a

CAP. CCXXXI

Howe the dethe of the duke of Lancastre was knowen in Fraunce.

man good to be spoken unto. The kyng of Englande knoweth some other thynge by hym than we do, or elles the kynge is yvell counsayled. And it is marveyle, that the Frenche kynge and his brother the duke of Orlyaunce, and the kynges uncles, do nat attemper the mater, for the erle is daylye amonge theym. They shulde fynde best provisyon in this case, for the kynge of Englande wyll do more for them than for any men, bicause he hath maried the Frenche kynges doughter; but sythe they do nothynge therin, it is best we holde oure peace and lette it passe. As for the Frenche kynge and his brother and his uncles, they thought nothyng but good. They honoured and loved greatly the erle of Derby, and desyred moche his company, and they sawe well he was a wydower and to marry, and that the duke of Berrey hadde a doughter, a wydowe of two husbandes, she was but yonge, of a xxiii. yere of age, and was named Mary; her fyrst husbande was Loys of Bloys, who died yonge, and her seconde husbande was the lorde Philyppe of Arthoys, erle of Ewe, who died in his returne in Hungry, as ye have herde here before. This maryage was at a poynt to have concluded, for they in Fraunce knewe well that the duke of Lancastre was a great enherytoure in Englande, and the Frenche kynge was well pleased therwith, bycause his doughter was quene of Englande. For he thought that the company of those two ladyes togyder shulde be great pleasure to them bothe, sythe they were so nere of blode, and therby the two realmes of Fraunce and Englande shulde be the surer conjoyned toguyder in love and peace, whiche was trewe, if it myght have been accomplysshed. But kyng Richarde of Englande and his counsayle brake all that mater, for the fortunes of this world whiche are marveylous, nor a thynge that shall be canne nat be eschewed. The whiche fortune of this kynge Richarde was so marveylous, that it is harde to thynke theron. The kynge myght well have remedyed the mater if he had wolde, but that that shall be, shal be. I shall shewe you what I Johan Froissarte, auctour of this hystorie, herde whanne I was but yonge in Englande, in a place called Bercamstede, whiche as at that tyme parteyned to the prince of Wales, father to this sayde kynge Rycharde:

it was in the yere of grace, a thousande, thre hundred, threscore and two.[1] And bycause the same tyme the Prince and the Princes shulde departe out of Englande to go into Acquitayne to kepe their estate there, kyng Edwarde his father, and quene Phillyppe my maistres, and Lyon duke of Clarence, Johan duke of Lancastre, and the lorde Edmonde, who was after erle of Cambridge, and duke of Yorke, and their chyldren, were come to the said maner place, to se the Prince and Princes or they departed. And as than I was of the age of xxiiii. yere, and one of my said lady the quenes clerkes of her chambre. And as I satte on a benche I herde a knyght talkyng and devysinge among dyvers ladyes and damoselles of the quenes, and sayde to them: There is a booke in this countrey called the Brust, and many men saye, it is full of marveylous prophycies: but accordynge to that booke, the realme and crowne of Englande shulde nat retourne to the prince of Wales, nor yet to the duke of Clarence, nor that they shulde be kynges of England, though they were sonnes to kyng Edwarde; but this knyght sayd, that accordyng to that boke, the crowne of Englande shulde come to the house of Lancastre. The same season whan this knyght spake these wordes, this sayd Henry erle of Derby was nat borne, nor yet sevyn yere after. But yet in my dayes the same wordes tooke effecte, for I sawe after the same Henry erle of Derby kynge of Englande.

CAP. CCXXXI

Howe the dethe of the duke of Lancastre was knowen in Fraunce.

[1] 1361.

CAP. CCXXXII

Of a treatie of a maryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berries doughter, and howe kyng Rycharde of Englande dyde lette it by the erle of Salisbury.

AS soone as kyng Rycharde kyng of Englande herde of the treatie of the maryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berryes doughter, and that the parties were nere hande accorded, he toke those newes to great dyspleasure, and sayd to the erle of Salisbury, in

CAP. CCXXXII

Of a treatie of a maryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berries doughter.

whom he had great affyaunce: Ye must ordayne you to go into Fraunce with letters of credence to our father in lawe the Frenche kynge, and to our frendes his brother and uncles, and shewe them fro us, that in no wyse they conclude any treatie or alyaunce of maryage with suche a traytour as is the erle of Derby, who wolde betray his naturall soverayne lorde. And for the remynaunt of the mater ye are wyse ynough: do so therin that I maye can you thanke, and that the maryage maye be broken. The erle of Salisbury sayde: Sir, I shall do ryght well your commaundement. But sir, if it myght be broken by some other meanes, or by some other persone, I requyre youre grace it maye so be. Sir, quod the kynge, excuse you natte, for I wyll and also I praye you do this message, and whatsoever shall fall therof, I shall sustayne you. Well, sir, quod the erle, sithe ye commaunde me so specially, and that I se the mater toucheth you nere, I shall do it, thoughe I be lothe therto. Ye shall go, quod the kynge, and make haste, or this alyaunce be concluded. Than the erle prepared for his departure. The letters of credence written and sealed, he departed fro the kynge, who was at that tyme at Leades, and the quene also. The erle made haste and came to Dover, and so toke the see, and arryved at Calays, and there founde the erle of Huntyngton, who was capitayne of Calais, and brother to the kynge. The erle shewed unto hym all his busynesse, and so taryed nat longe at Calays, but roode to Amyence, and so to Parys, and all the waye that he rode he hadde good chere, and was lodged at the Whyte Horse. And whan he had chaunged him he wente to the kynge and to the quene, and to the other lordes, and delyvered his letters of credence. Whan the kyng had reed the letters, he toke the erle aparte and demaunded what was his credence. The erle at length shewed his charge, and named the erle of Derby traytour agaynst his naturall lorde. Whan the Frenche kyng herde those wordes, he was in great displeasure, for he loved so the erle of Derby, that he wolde here none yvell spoken of him, and toke the letters of credence agayne to the erle of Salisbury, and sayd: Erle, we beleve you well ynoughe, but our sonne of Englande is to sore moved agaynst oure cosyn of Derby, and we mar-

CAP. CCXXXII

Of a treatie of a maryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berries doughter.

veyle greatly that his yvell wyll contyneweth so longe, for we thynke he shulde be the better furnysshed if he were about hym, and to be nexte of his counsayle. Sir, quod the erle of Salisbury, I do but as I am commaunded. That is trewe, quod the kyng; we are nat displeased with you, and paradventure our sonne of Englande knoweth more than we do; do your message as ye were charged. And so he dyde, and to the duke of Berrey also. The duke gave none aunswere therto, but wente to the kyng and demaunded of hym what newes he hadde out of Englande. The kynge shewed hym all, as the erle of Salisburye had sayde. Upon those newes the kyng and his uncles assembled togyder secretely. Than the Frenche kynge sayd: The kynge of Englande by lykelyhode douteth greatly therle of Derby, or elles paradventure he knoweth suche thynges as we knowe nat, nor can nat come to oure knowledge. And we ought rather to owe our favoure to the kynge of Englande thanne to the erle of Derby, sythe the kynge is joyned with us by maryage. And he wyll take it in great disdayne sythe we be enfourmed of his pleasure, if we shulde do the contrary, and marry the erle of Derby to the countesse of Ewe. It behoveth us rather to dissymule and kepe these newes secrete, tyll the erle of Salisbury be retourned. Upon this poynt the kyng and his uncles rested.

Whan the erle of Salisbury had done his message, he tooke his leave and departed. The Frenche kynge was more displeased with his commyng than joyfull, for he delyvered agayne the erle of Salysbury his letters of credence, and wolde nat kepe them, he loved so well the erle of Derby; who knewe of the erle of Salysburies beynge at Parys, but he sawe hym nat, for he was departed without spekyng with him, and retourned to Calays, and so into Englande, and shewed the kynge of Englande howe he hadde spedde. Whan the erle of Derby knewe that the erle of Salisbury was departed fro Parys, without spekynge with hym, in his mynde he was soore displeased, and thought the matter went nat well. Than his counsayle sayde to hym: Sir, shortely ye shall parceyve some other maters, that ye have nat herde of as yet, thoughe it be kepte privye fro you. These Frenchmen are wyse and close. It maye

CAP. CCXXXII

Of a treatie of a maryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berries doughter.

be so, that the kyng of Englande, and suche as be of his secte are displeased with that the Frenche kynge maketh you so good chere as he dothe; and paradventure it is spoken in Englande, howe ye shulde mary the duke of Berryes doughter, whiche pleaseth nat the kynge of Englande, and therfore he wyll do what he can to breke that maryage; and if it be so, ye shall shortly here therof.

Looke, as they ymagined so it was. For within a moneth after the erle of Salisbury was departed fro Parys, suche of therle of Derbies parte as had the treatie of the sayde maryage in hande, they spake agayne of the mater to the duke of Berryes counsayle, who had their charge what they shulde answere. They sayd: Sirs, whan my lorde the erle of Derby is in the kynges presence, and the duke of Orlyaunce and his uncles presente, than lette my lorde the erle of Derby speke hymselfe, for we can saye no more to the mater. Therle of Derby, who thought none yvell, but thought those wordes hadde ben spoken to the entent to have proched nerer to the poynt, for the kynge and his counsayle made hym as good chere thanne as ever they dyde before: the erle thought to speke in the mater, whan he sawe convenyent tyme. And on a daye whanne he sawe the kyng and the lordes togyder, he began to speke of this maryage. Than the duke of Burgoyne, who hadde the charge to aunswere hym, sayde: Cosyn of Derby, we have nothynge to do to gyve in maryage oure cosyn to a traytour. With that worde the erle of Derby was greatly abasshed, and chaunged colour, and sayd: Sir, I am here in the kynges presence, I wyll answere to this: I was never traytour nor never thought trayson, and if there be any person that wyll charge me with trayson, I am redy to answere, nowe or whan it shall please the kynge here beyng present. Nay, cosyn, quod the kyng, I beleve ye shall fynde no man in Fraunce that wyll chalenge youre honoure: for the wordes that myne uncle hath spoken came out of Englande. Than the erle kneled downe and sayd: Sir, I beleve it well; but God defende me and all my frendes, and confounde all myne ennemyes. The Frenche kynge toke up the erle and sayd: Cosyn, apeace yourselfe, every thynge shall tourne to the best. And whanne every thynge is agreed and at peace,

thanne we maye well speke and treate of maryage; but fyrst ye must take possession in the duchy of Lancastre; for that is the usage in Fraunce and in dyvers countreis on this syde the see, that if a lorde shall marry by the consent of his soveraygne lorde, he must endowe his wyfe. And therwith they had spyces and wyne, and cessed of that communycacion, and every man departed to their owne lodgynges.

CAP. CCXXXII

Of a treatie of a maryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berries doughter.

Whan the erle of Derby was come to his lodgyng he was sore displeased, and nat without a cause; whan he, who was reputed one of the trewest knyghtes of the worlde, in the presence of the Frenche kyng, who loved hym well, and had shewed him many curtesies, shuld be reputed as a traytour, and that those wordes shulde come out of Englande, and brought by the erle of Salisbury. He was therwith in a great malencoly. His counsayle apeased hym as well as they coude, and sayd: Sir, he that wyll lyve in this worlde must endure somtyme trouble. Confort you for this tyme and be pacient, and paraventure herafter ye shall have great joye and glorie. And, sir, of al the lordes on this syde the see, the Frenche kyng loveth you best; and we se well he wolde enploye his payne to bringe you to joye. And, sir, ye ought to gyve him and his uncles great thanke in that they kept this mater secrete tyll the erle of Salisbury was departed. Yea, sirs, quod the erle, I thynke it had ben better it had ben shewed me in his presence, that I myght have made a sufficient excuse before the kyng and all the lordes: thus I shall abyde styll in blame tyll the mater be otherwyse declared. Sir, quod they, all trespasses can nat be amended at the fyrst daye. Sir, suffre; let the tyme ryn; we beleve your busynesse in Englande dothe better than ye be ware of. The love that is in the hertes of the people in Englande towardes you with their good prayers, by the grace of God, shall shortely delyver you out of all daungers. This they sayd to reconfort their lorde, who was sore disconforted, and their sayeng was soner trewe than they were ware of.

Anone it was knowen in Englande howe therle of Salisbury had ben in Fraunce with the Frenche kynge and his uncles, and borne letters thyder, conteynyng howe the erle

CAP. CCXXXII

Of a treatie of a maryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berries doughter.

of Derby was falsely perjured and a traytour. Of the whiche dyvers noble men and prelates were sore troubled, and were nothynge contente with the erle of Salisbury, and said generally that he was soore to blame to take on hym the charge to beare into Fraunce any suche wordes upon as trewe a man as lyved: A daye will come that he shall repent the tyme that ever he spake the worde. Ye maye well knowe the Londoners were greatly displeased, and murmured agaynst the kyng and his counsayle, and sayd: A, gentyll knight, erle of Derby, great envy is there agaynst you: it is nat suffycient for the kynge and his counsayle to drive you out of the realme, but also to accuse you of trayson, to putte you to the more shame and rebuke. Well, every thynge muste have his tourne. Alas, quod the people, what faulte or trespasse hath your children done, that the kynge taketh thus awaye fro them their herytage, whiche ought to be theirs by ryght successyon? This thynge can nat longe abyde in this case without chaunge, nor we can nat suffre it. Thus anone after the retourne of the erle of Salisbury out of Fraunce, kyng Richarde caused a justes to be cryed and publysshed throughe out his realme, to Scotlande, to be at Wynsore, of xl. knyghtes and xl. squyers, agaynst all commers, and they to be aparelled in grene with a whyte faucon, and the quene to be there, well acompanied with ladyes and damosels. This feest thus holden, the quene beyng there in gret noblenes, but there were but fewe lordes or noble men; for mo than two partes of the lordes and knightes and other of the realme of Englande had the kyng in suche hatered, what for the banysshyng of the erle of Derby, and the injuryes that he had done to his chyldren, and for the dethe of the duke of Gloucestre, who was slayne in the castell of Calais, and for the dethe of the erle of Arundell, who was beheeded at London: the kynred of these lordes came nat to this feest, nor but fewe other. And at the same feest the kynge ordayned to go into Irelande, to enploy his men in that voyage; and so he departed, and lefte the quene with her trayne styll at Wyndsore; and the kynge rode to Bristowe, and there made all his provysion, and he had ten thousande knightes and squiers and ten thousande archers. Whanne

the Londoners knewe that the kyng was goyng in that voyage they began to murmure, and said amonge themselfe: Nowe gothe Richarde of Burdeaux the waye to Bristowe, and so into Yrelande, whiche wyll be to his distruction. He shall never retourne agayne with joye, no more than dyde kynge Edwarde the Seconde, his great grauntfather, who was folysshely governed by to moche belevyng of the Spensers. In lykewise Rycharde of Burdeaulx hath beleved so moche yvell counsayle, that it can nat be hydden nor suffred any lengar.

CAP. CCXXXII
Of a treatie of a maryage bytwene the erle of Derby and the duke of Berries doughter.

CAP. CCXXXIII

Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go into the marchesse of Irelande.

THERE were many knightes and squyers in the kynges company that shulde go with hym into Irelande that were nat content with hym, and wente in maner with an yvell wyll, and sayd often tymes one to another: Our kynge governeth hymselfe folisshely, and beleveth yvell counsayle. Suche wordes were so multiplyed, that the lorde Henry Percy and sir Henry his sonne spake certayne wordes, whiche came to the kynges knowlege and to his counsayle. And it was sayd to the kyng: Sir, the wordes ought nat to be suffred, that the erle of Northumberlande and his sonne hath spoken, for it is to sette your subjettes against you: it must behove you to correcte all these rebelles one after another, wherby they that be greattest shall doute you, and take ensample. That is trewe, quod the kyng; but than what is beste to do. Sir, quod they, they be nat here with you, but they ought to come. And whan they be come, call them before you, and than by the erle of Salisbury and by some other, as it shall please you, lette it be rehersed to them the yvell wordes that they have spoken against you and your counsayle. Than shall you here what answere they wyll make, and therupon ye maye take advyse, wheder ye wyll correcte them by prison or otherwyse. Well, sirs, quod the kynge,

CAP. CCXXXIII

Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go into the marchesse of Irelande.

ye say well; this shal be done. The erle of Northumberlande and his sonne had good frendes in that armye, so that some of them knewe the kynges entent; and they sent suche worde to the erle and to his sonne, that they shulde natte come in the kynges presence, nor to go in that journey; for they hadde worde that if they dyde, it shulde nat be for their welthe, but to their great dommage, for the kynge was sore enformed against them. Whan they had this warnynge, they stopped their commyng to the kyng, and nat without good cause: for they were shewed that and if they came, they shulde be in jeopardye of their lyves. Whan the kynges counsayle sawe that therle and his sonne came nat, they sayd to the kyng: Sir, nowe ye may se whyder we dyde enforme you of the trouthe or nat. Ye maye se therle and his sonne disdayneth to serve you, for they wyll nat come at youre commaundement, and that shall ye se if ye sende for them. And I shall sende for them, quod the kyng. Than letters were written and sente by notable messangers to therle and to the lorde Henry Percy his son. The content of the letters was, that incontynent without delaye upon the sight of those letters, that they shulde come to the kyng and do their duetie, as they were bounde to do. These messangers journeyed so longe, that they came to a fayre castell of the erles, standyng on the fronter of Scotlande. The messanger acquyted hym well in doynge of his message, as he was commaunded. Therle reed his letters at length, and than shewed them to his sonne. Than they toke advise to make the messanger good chere, and to write agayn to the kynge in excusynge of themselfes, howe they coulde nat come out of their countrey as at that tyme, and howe that the kyng had men ynowe to acomplysshe his journey besyde them. The messangers retourned to the kynge, and delyvered the erles lettre. The kynge redde it, the whiche answere was nothynge pleasaunt to the kynge nor to his counsayle; and thanne for this cause and for other thynges that were layde to the erles charge and to his sonnes, they were openly banysshed the realme of Englande, tyll the kynge dyd repeale them agayne. This was publysshed throughout all the cyties and good townes of Englande, and specyally in London, wherof the Londoners

had great marveyle, nor they coulde nat knowe justly for what cause it was, for the erle and his sonne were reputed for noble and as valyaunt men as any within the realme. Some sayd: It commeth by some of the kynges counsayle that hateth them, whiche counsayle wyll distroy the kyng at last; peradventure the erle and his sonne have spoken some wordes upon the kynge and his counsayle, for the yvell governynge of the realme, and coulde nat be herde though they said the trouth, and for their true sayeng nowe they be punisshed; but we thinke herafter they wyll be punysshed that nowe judge them. Thus the Londoners and other spake of this mater. The erle had a brother, a valiaunt knight, sir Thomas Percy, who had of a longe tyme done many noble servyces to the kynge of Englande. Whan the erle knewe that he and his sonne were banysshed the realme, he toke it for an unreasonable punysshment without cause. Than he sente for all his frendes in the countrey, suche as he coulde get togyther, for many of his lygnage were with the kynge to go into Irelande. The erle toke counsayle of them what was best to do sythe the kynge had banysshed hym without cause. Than he was counsayled to sende into the realme of Scotlande, and to desyre the king there that he and his sonne might abyde peasably in Scotlande tyll the kynge of Englande were apeased of his dyspleasure. Thus therle sent to kynge Robert of Scotlande, and the kyng and the erle Archambalt Duglas and the other lordes of Scotlande condiscendyd lyghtly to the erles desyre, and sent the erle worde howe they shulde be gladly receyved, and also if they neded of fyve or syxe hundred speares, if they were signyfied of the tyme, they shulde be redy to serve them. This message pleased greatly the erle and his lygnage, and so the erle taryed styll in his countrey amonge his frendes, for kynge Rycharde and his counsayle had so moche to do in shorte season after, that they had no layser to do any dyspleasure to the erle nor to his sonne, as ye shall here after in this hystory.

CAP. CCXXXIII

Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go into the marchesse of Irelande.

Kinge Rycharde thus beynge aboute Bristowe, than the state generally of all men in Englande began to murmure and to ryse one agaynst another, and mynystrynge of justyce

CAP. CCXXXIII

Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go into the marchesse of Irelande.

was clene stopped up in all courtes of Englande, wherof the valyaunt men and prelates, who loved reste and peace, and were glad to paye their duetyes, were greatly abasshed. For there rose in the realme companyes in dyvers rowtes, kepynge the feldes and hygh wayes, so that marchauntes durste nat ryde abrode to exercyse their marchaundyse for doute of robbynge. And no man knewe to whome to complayne to do them ryght, reasone, and justyce, whiche thynges were ryght prejudyciall and dyspleasaunt to the good people of Englande, for it was contrary to their accustomable usage. For all people laborers and marchauntes in Englande were wonte to lyve in rest and peace, and to occupy their marchaundyse peasably, and the laborers to labour their landes quyetly; and than it was contrary. For whan marchauntes rode fro towne to towne with their marchaundyse, and had outher golde or sylver in their purces, it was taken fro them, and fro other men, and labourers out of their houses. These companyons wolde take whete, ootes, bufes, muttons, porkes, and the pore men durste speke no worde. These yvell dedes dayly multyplyed so, that great complayntes and lamentacyons were made therof throughout the realme, and the good people sayde, The tyme is chaunged upon us fro good to yvell, ever sythe the dethe of good kynge Edwarde the Thyrde, in whose dayes justyce was well kepte and mynystred. In his dayes there was no man so hardy in Englande to take a hen or a chekyn, or a shepe, without he had payed trewly for it; and nowe a dayes all that we have is taken fro us, and yet we dare nat speke; these thinges canne nat longe endure, but that Englande is lykely to be lost without recovery. We have a kynge nowe that wyll do nothyng; he entendeth but to ydelnesse and to acomplysshe his pleasure, and by that he sheweth, he careth nat howe every thynge gothe, so he maye have his wyll. It were tyme to provyde for remedy, or els our enemyes wyll rejoyse and mocke us. Our kynge hath sette his brother the erle of Huntyngdon at Calais. Therby peradventure may be made some yvell treatie and bargayne for the towne of Calays with the Frenchemen, and rendre into their handes that thynge that is most necessary for the realme of Englande; for if Calays were rendred to

CAP. CCXXXIII

the Frenchemen, Englande was never so abasshed as it shulde be than, and good cause why, for than shulde be lost the chiefe key of Englande.

Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go into the marchesse of Irelande.

Thus multyplyed the lamentacyons and murmurynge in Englande, and the prelates and other ryche men of the realme came to London to dwell, there to be in the better suretie. They of the lygnages of suche lordes as the kynge had put to dethe and banisshed the realme, they were gladde of all this, and wolde that more trouble had ben in the realme. And the cytezins of London, who were ryche, and lyved by their marchaundyse, as well coraunt by see as by lande, and kepte therby great estate, and by ensample of them all the remnaunt of the realme lyghtly folowed, they sawe well that as great myschiefe was lykely to folowe in the realme, as was sometyme in kynge Edwarde the Secondes dayes, whan the lorde Spencer caused the kynge to put out of the realme the quene Isabell and Edward her sonne, and wolde have distroyed them, and wyste nat why, and so were out of the realme more than thre yere; but fynally, whan the men in Englande, and specyally the Londoners, sawe howe that the kynge was so asotted on this syr Hugh Spenser, they provyded for a remedy: for they sente secretly to the quene Isabell, that if she coulde get thre hundred men of warre, and to come into Englande, she shulde fynde the greatest parte of the realme and the Londoners redy to receyve her, and to put her in possessyon of the realme. Wherupon the quene founde the lorde Johan of Haynalt, lorde of Beaumont and of Chymay, and brother to the erle Guillyam of Haynalte, who what for love and pytie toke on him the vyage to brynge the quene and her sonne into Englande with four hundred men of warre, and so aryved in Englande: and by the ayde of the Londoners the quene atchyved her enterprise, for without their ayde it wolde have ben hard to have come to passe. And so kynge Edwarde was taken at the castell of Bristowe, and set in prisone in the castell of Berkley, and suche as favoured him slayne and put to execusion, and Edwarde his sonne crowned kynge at Westmynster. All this the Londoners ryght well remembred, for they that were yonge herde this reported of their elders, and some founde it in writynge, and they sayd

CAP. CCXXXIII

Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go into the marchesse of Irelande.

secretly one to another: Our fathers and antecessours of olde tyme provyded for these great mischiefes, and we thinke there was never greater cause than nowe at this present tyme. For suffer this kyng Rycharde to have his wyll and he wyll waste and dystroy all, for sythe he was kynge there hath nat been in Englande suche prosperyte as was before. He sheweth nat that the prince of Wales shulde be his father, for if he had, he wolde have folowed his condicions, and have taken great pleasure in his prowes, and nat to lyve in reste and ease as he dothe: for he loveth nothynge but sporte and ydelnesse with ladyes, and to be alwayes in their company, and to beleve men of small reputacion, and to gather great rychesse, and distroy the realme, whiche thynges ought nat to be suffred. And bycause that valyaunt man the duke of Gloucestre sawe clerely that the maters in Englande went nat as they shulde do by right, and sawe howe dayly it was worse and worse, and bycause he spake playnely therof, the traytours that be about the kinge caused hym to be murthered, and in lykewyse the good erle of Arundell; and have driven out of the realme that valyaunt yonge knight Henry of Lancastre, erle of Derby, by whome the realme myght and ought to be counsayled and susteyned, and by his four sonnes that he hath. And yet for more crueltie, besyde the dommage that they cause the father to suffre out of the realme, they dysenheryte the chyldren. And the herytage that was their auntes, the lady dame Blanche of Lancastre, is dayly gyven awaye to them that are nat worthy to have theym. And also bycause the erle of Northumberlande and his sonne the lorde Henry Percy have somwhat spoken acordyng to reasone, kynge Rycharde hath banysshed them. It is well apparaunt, that within a shorte tyme there shall never a valyaunt man be lefte in the realme, wherfore all wyll rynne to nought, without remedy be founde shortely. And we thynke the best remedy were to sende for the erle of Derby, who leseth his season in Fraunce, and whan he is come, lette hym have the governaunce of the realme, that he may refourme all yvell, and bringe it into good state; and lette them be punysshed that have deserved; and let Richarde of Burdeaux be taken and sette in the towre of London, and all his fautes put in

writynge in artycles, of the whiche there wyll be founde a great nombre: and by that tyme they be examyned, it shall be sene clerely that he is nat worthy to beare a crowne, nor to kepe a realme, for his owne dedes shall confounde hym.

CAP. CCXXXIII
Howe kynge Richarde ordayned to go into the marchesse of Irelande.

CAP. CCXXXIIII

Howe the archebysshop of Caunterbury was sente into Fraunce to the erle of Derby, fro the Londoners and other counsayls of Englande, to have him to returne into Englande.

THUS the Londoners communed togyder, and nat al onely they, but also in dyvers other places of the realme; but the chyefe murmuracyon that the people were in, was by the first settynge on of them of London. For the commons of London were as chefe, and by them lyghtly all other commons wolde be ruled. And upon the myschiefe that they sawe apparaunt in Englande, they had dyvers secrete counsayles togyther, and with them certayne prelates and other knyghtes of the realme. And they concluded to sende into Fraunce for the erle of Derby, and were determyned whan he were come to shewe hym the yvell governynge of kynge Rycharde, and to put to hym the crowne and governynge of the realme of Englande, and so to make hym kynge and his heyres for ever, so that he wyll kepe the realme in all good usages. Than it was thought that he that shulde go in that message must be a wyse man and of good credence, for they thought it shulde be a great mater to gette the erle of Derby out of Fraunce: for they said that for any symple wordes of a meane messanger, or for any letters, he wolde gyve no faythe therto, but rather thynke it shulde be to betraye hym. Than the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury, a man of honoure and prudence, was desyred to do that message, who for the common profyte of the realme acorded to go at their desyres, and ordeyned for his departure so wysely that none knewe therof but suche as ought to knowe it. And so he toke

CAP. CCXXXIIII

Howe the archebysshop of Caunterbury was sente into Fraunce to the erle of Derby.

a shyppe at London, and but seven all onely with hym, and so past without any parell, and came to Sluse in Flaunders, and fro thens to Ardenbourge, and so to Gaunte, to Andwarpe,[1] to Athe in Brabant, and to Conde, and so to Valencennes, and there toke his lodgynge at the signe of the Swanne in the market place, and there taryed a thre dayes, and refresshed himselfe. He rode nat lyke no bysshop, but lyke a monke pylgryme, and dyscovered to no man what he was nor what he entended to do. The fourth day he departed, and toke a man to be his guyde to Parys, sayenge howe he wolde go a pylgrymage to saynt More. He dyd so moch that he came thyder where as the erle of Derby was, at a place called Vyncetour[2] besyde Parys. Whan the erle of Derby sawe the bysshop of Caunterbury comynge to hym, his herte and spyrites rejoysed, and so dyd all suche as were aboute him, for he thought well than to here some newes oute of Englande. The bysshoppe shewed nat as than the cause of his commynge, but dissymuled bycause every man shulde nat knowe his entent, and therfore to cover his busynesse, he sayd openly, he was come on pylgrymage to saynt Mors. All suche as were aboute the erle thought it had ben so. Whan the bysshop sawe his tyme he toke aparte the erle of Derby alone into a chambre, and closed the dore to them. Than the bysshop shewed the erle the debylyte of the realme of Englande, and of the desolacyon therof, and howe justyce had no place to reygne for faute of a good kinge, and howe certayne valyaunt men and prelates, with the Londoners and other in generall, had devised a remedy, and for that cause he was sente thyder to hym, to desyre him to retourne into Englande, and they wolde make hym kynge, bycause that Rycharde of Burdeaulx had doone and consented to be done so many yvell dedes that all the people sorowed it, and are redy to ryse agaynst hym. And therfore, syr, nowe is the tyme or never for you to seke for your delyveraunce and profyte, and for the welth of your chyldren: for if ye entende nat to helpe yourselfe and theym also none other wyll. For Rycharde of Burdeaux gyveth to them of his chambre and to other dayly parte of your enherytaunce and of your chyldrens, of the whiche many valyaunt men and

[1] *Oudenarde.*

[2] *Bicêtre (l'ostel que on dist de Vincestre).*

CAP. CCXXXIIII

Howe the archebysshop of Caunterbury was sente into Fraunce to the erle of Derby.

the Londoners were sore dyspleased therwith, if they coude amended it, but they durst never speake tyll nowe. But bycause the kynge hath yvell used hymselfe agaynst you and agaynst your uncle the duke of Gloucestre, who was taken by nyght and conveyed to Calays and there murdered, and the erle of Arundell beheeded without tytell of any good reason, and the erle of Warwyke exyled, and you banysshed, and thus the realme of Englande is nere dysheryted of all noble men, by whome the realme shulde be susteyned: and also the kynge hath banysshed the erle of Northumberlande and the lorde Percy his sonne, bycause they spake somewhat agaynst the kynges governaunce and his counsayle. Thus they dayly encrease in doynge yvell, and none dare speke agaynst it; great parte of the realme have pytie therof. And therfore they desyre you to slepe no lenger, but to take leave of the Frenche kynge and retourne into Englande; there shall you be receyved with joye. And all this that I have sayd they wyll fyrmely upholde, for they desyre to have none other kynge but you, ye are so well beloved in the realme.

Whan the erle had herde the bysshops wordes at length, he was nat hasty in gyvenge of aunswere, but leaned out at a wyndowe lokynge downe into a gardeyne, and studyed a certayne space, and had many imagynacions. At last he tourned hym to the archebysshop and sayd: Syr, your wordes causeth me to study. Lothe I wolde be to take on me this enterprise, and lothe I wolde be to leave it. For I knowe well that it wyll be longe or I canne retourne into Englande, without it be by the same meanes as ye have declared. Lothe I wolde be to enclyne to your wordes, for the Frenche kynge here and the Frenchmen do to me, and have done, and wyll do, if I lyst here to tary, all the honour and curtesye that I canne desyre. And if so be by reasone of your wordes, and promesse of the Londoners, my good frendes, that I shulde apply and agree to their wylles and desyre, and that therby kynge Rycharde shulde be taken and dystroyed, I shulde in that case beare great blame, wherof I wolde be ryght lothe, if any other meanes might be founde. Sir, quod the bysshoppe, I am sent hyther to you in hope of all goodnesse; call to you your counsayle, and

CAP. CCXXXIIII

Howe the archebyshop of Caunterbury wassente into Fraunce to the erle of Derby.

shewe them what I have sayd, and I shall also shewe them the cause of my commynge, and I thynke they wyll nat counsayle you to the contrary. That shall I do, quod the erle, for suche a weyghty mater requyreth counsayle. Than the erle called to hym his counsayle suche as he trusted best. Whan they were before hym, than the erle caused the bysshop to shewe them all the mater, and the cause of his comynge thyder. Than the erle demaunded counsayle what was beste for hym to do. They all aunswered with one voyce: Syr, God hathe taken pytie of you: howesoever ye do, refuse nat this bargayne, for ye shal never have a better: and surely whosoever wyll enquyre of your lygnage, and fro whence ye dyscended, ye are of the ryght stocke and generacyon of saynt Edwarde, somtyme kynge of Englande. Syr, thanke the Londoners your good frendes, who wyll helpe to delyver you out of daunger, and have pytie on your chyldren, and of the desolacyon of the realme of Englande. And, syr, remembre well what wronges and injuryes this Rycharde of Burdeaux hath done to you and dothe dayly; for whan the maryage bytwene you and the countesse of Ewe was nere at a poynte, dyd nat the erle of Salysbury breke it, and called you traytoure in the presence of the Frenche kynge and other lordes? Whiche wordes are nat to be pardoned, but ye ought to desyre howe to be revenged. Sir, if ye wyll nat helpe yourselfe, who shulde helpe you? Syr, take good advyse herin.

CAP. CCXXXV

Howe the erle of Derby toke leave of the Frenche kyng, and went to his cosyn the duke of Bretaygne.

WHANNE the erle herde his counsaylours so ernestly counsayle him, his spyrites opened and sayd: Syrs, I wyll do as ye wyll have me, for to have your counsayle was the entente that I sent for you. Syr, quod they, ye saye well; and, syr, we counsayle you trewly to our power, and as the matter requyreth. Than

CAP. CCXXXV

Howe the erle of Derby toke leave of the Frenche kyng.

as secretly as they coude they ordeyned for their departure. Than it was devysed howe they might passe the see, or any knowledge therof shulde come into Englande. They devysed that of two wayes they muste take one; outher to go into Haynalte and into Holande, and there take the see at Dordright, or els to go into Bretaygne to the duke, and there to take the see, and so to lande at Plummouth, or where as God wolde in Englande. All thynges consydred, they sayd the best way shulde be by Bretaygne, and than they sayd to the erle: Syr, go and take your leave of the Frenche kynge, and thanke hym of the curtesy that he hath shewed unto you, and take leave of the duke of Orlyance, and of the kynges uncles and other, and thanke theym all of the good chere they have made you, and desyre of the kinge to have conducte to go into Bretaygne, sayenge that ye wyll go se the duke your cosyn, and to tary there a season with hym. The erle acorded to their counsayle, and whan he was redy he wente to Parys to the kynge, as he was acustomed to do, for ever whan he came there was no dore closed agaynst him. At this last tyme he spake wysely to the kynge, and shewed hym howe he wolde go and sporte hym a season in Bretayne, and to se the duke, whome he called his uncle, for he had had to his wyfe his fathers suster, doughter to kynge Edwarde. The Frenche kynge thought nothyng but well, and so gave hym lyghtly leave. Than the erle desyred to have conducte to bringe hym thyder. He graunted his desyre. So to make shorte, the erle ordeyned all his busynesse by great wysdome, and toke his leave of all the lordes of Fraunce, suche as were there as than, and he gave great gyftes to the kynges offycers, and to offycers of armes, and to mynstrelles; and in the howse of Clysson he made a supper to all suche as wolde come to hym. And the nexte daye he toke his horse and departed fro Parys, and issued out at the gate of saynt Jaques, and toke the way to Estampes. A knight of Beawsey did guyde hym, called syr Guy of Baygneux. So longe they rode that they came to Blois, and there they taryed an viii. dayes, for the erle had sente a knyght and his haraulde into Bretayne to sygnyfie the duke of his commynge, as reason was.

CAP. CCXXXV

Howe the erle of Derby toke leave of the Frenche kyng.

Whan duke Johan of Bretaygne knewe that his nephewe the erle of Derby was commynge thyder, he was therof ryght joyfull, for he loved alwayes the duke of Lancaster and all his bretherne, and sayde to the knight that brought him worde, who was called Gillyam de la Pierre: Sir, why dothe our nephewe tary by the way, that he cometh nat hyther streyght? The knyght excused the erle as well as he myght. Well, quod the duke, I sawe no man this seven yere that I wolde be gladder to se than my nephewe the erle of Derby; retourne to hym and cause hym to come, for he shall fynde my countrey redy open to receyve hym. Of that aunswere the knyght was gladde, and retourned as shortely as he coulde, and came to Bloys, and shewed the erle and his counsayle the dukes aunswere. The next day they rode forthe, and had payed for every thynge. And in the erle of Derbyes company was syr Peter of Craon, who was banysshed out of the realme of Fraunce, and all his castelles, rentes, and revenues seased for the somme of a hundred thousande frankes, judged to the duchesse of Anjou, quene of Napoles, by proces of the lawe. Thus the erle of Derby came to Nauntes, and there founde the duke, who receyved him nobly and all his company. Than syr Guy le Bayneux retourned into Fraunce, and the erle taryed with the duke of Bretaygne, who made hym as good chere as coulde be devysed. And all this seasone the bysshoppe of Caunterbury was styll with the erle and his counsayle. The duke spared nothynge upon the erle nor upon his men, but shewed them all the love of the worlde, and yet the duke knewe well the dyspleasure that kynge Rycharde had agaynste the erle, wherof he had pytie. Whan the erle consydred the dukes good wyll and favoure, he dyscovered to hym parte of his busynesse, as touchynge the duchy of Lancastre, and suche herytages as the duke his father had in possessyon whan he dyed, and desyringe therin to have the dukes counsayle, sayenge that he was nat repealed agayne by the kynge, but gyveth dayly away parte of his enherytaunces: wherby he shewed the duke, that many noble men and prelates in Englande were nat well contente with the kynge, and the realme therby in great dyfference, in so moche that dyvers noble men and the Londoners had

sent to hym to have hym to come into Englande, promysynge that they wolde make his peace with the kynge, and set hym in his herytage. Whan the duke herde that, he sayd: Fayre nephue, where as be many wayes, the best ought to be chosen. By the kynge ye are in a harde case; ye demaunde counsayle, and I wyll counsayle you to gyve credence to your frendes in Englande; the Londoners are myghty and puyssaunt; they, and by the ayde of other prelates, lordes, and knyghtes of the realme shall bringe the kynge to agre to their desyres. And, nephewe, I shall ayde you with shyppes and with men of warre to resyste the daungers upon the see. Of that offre the erle thanked the duke of Bretayne.

CAP. CCXXXV

Howe the erle of Derby toke leave of the Frenche kyng.

CAP. CCXXXVI

Howe the erle of Derby aryved in Englande, and howe he was receyved of the Londoners.

THUS the duke of Bretaygne and the erle of Derby were lovyngely concluded togyder, and the erle taryed there a certayne space, and made as though he wolde have taryed styll there, and in the meane seasone the erle made his provysyon at Wannes. And whan all thynge was redy, the duke and the erle came thyder, and whan the wynde served the erle of Derby and his company tooke the see; he had with hym thre shyppes of warre to conducte hym into Englande, and the further they sayled the better wynde they had, so that within two dayes and two nyghtes they aryved at Plummouth in Englande, and issued out of their shyppes, and entred into the towne lytell and lytell. The bayly of Plummouth, who had charge of the towne under the kynge, had great marveyle whanne he sawe so moche people and men of warre entre into the towne. But the bysshop of Caunterbury apeased him, and sayd howe they were menne of warre that wolde do no harme in the realme of Englande, sent thyder by the duke of Bretaygne to serve the kynge and the realme. Therwith the bayly was contente, and the erle of Derby kept hymselfe so privy in a chaumbre, that none of the towne knewe hym.

CAP. CCXXXVI

Howe the erle of Derby aryved in Englande.

Than the bysshoppe of Caunterbury wrote letters sygned with his hande to London, sygnyfienge the commynge of the erle of Derby, and sente them by a suffycyent man in post, who tooke fresshe horses by the waye, and came to London the same daye at night, and passed over the bridge and so came to the mayres lodgynge, who as than was a bedde. And as sone as the mayre knewe that a messanger was come fro the bysshop of Caunterbury, he rose out of his bedde and made the messanger to entre into his chambre, who delyvered hym a lettre fro the bysshoppe of Caunterbury. The mayre redde it and rejoysed greatly of those newes, and incontynent he sente of his servauntes fro house to howse, princypally to suche as were of counsayle of sendynge for the erle of Derby. They were all gladde of that tydynges, and incontynent there assembled togyther of the moste notablest men of the cytie to the nombre of two hundred, and they spake togyder, and helde no longe counsayle, for the case required it nat, but they sayd: Lette us apparell ourselfe and go and receyve the duke of Lancastre, sythe we agreed to sende for hym; the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury hathe well doone his devoyre, seynge he hath brought hym into Englande. Than they dyd chose certayne men to go abrode to publysshe the erles commynge to lordes, knyghtes, and squyers, suche as were of their party. And mo than fyve hundred of the Londoners tooke their horses, and they had so great desyre to go forthe that they were lothe to tarye one for another. The erle of Derby taryed nat longe at Plummouth, but the nexte daye as soone as their horses were unshypped they rode towardes London. And all that season sir Peter of Craon and the Bretons were styll with the erle. The mayre of London and they that hadde the governyng of the cytie, were the fyrst that mette the erle in the feldes, and humbly receyved him, and ever as they rode forwarde they mette more people. The fyrst daye they came and laye at Guyldforde, a fyve and twentie myle fro London. The next day a great nombre of the men, women, and chyldren of London and the clergy came to mete with the erle, they had suche desyre to se hym. And whan they came into his sight they cried, Welcome noble erle of Derby and duke of Lancastre; God sende you joye, welthe, and

prosperyte. Sithe ye wente out of Englande the realme hath ben in no prosperyte: nowe we truste ye shall bringe us into a reasonable estate, for we have lyved in great displeasaunce and desolacyon, by the meanes of Richarde of Burdeaux and his counsayle: and specially he ought moost chefe to be blamed. For a kynge that shulde governe a realme and people ought to have suche discrecyon to knowe gode and yvell asondre, otherwise he is nat worthy to governe a realme; and this Rycharde of Burdeaux hath done contrary, whiche shal be well knowen and proved upon him. With suche wordes and other the people brought the erle to London. The mayre rode cheke and cheke by hym, whiche was great pleasure for the people to se; and the mayre sometyme sayde to the erle: Sir, beholde howe the people rejoyse of your commyng. That is trewe, quod the erle: and alwayes as he rode he enclyned his heed to the people on every syde. Thus the erle was brought to his lodgynge, and every man departed tyll after dyner. Than the mayre and the notable men of the cite, and dyvers other lordes and knyghtes, prelates, bysshoppes, and abbottes, suche as were in London cam to se the erle. Also the duchesse of Gloucestre and her two doughters came to se therle, who were his cosyn germayns. Affren[1] their brother was with kynge Richarde, more for feare thanne for love. With these ladyes was the countesse of Arundell and her chyldren, and also the countesse of Warwyke, with dyvers other ladyes, suche as were at London. The people of London were so joyfull of the erles comyng, that there was no more workynge in London that daye than and it had ben Easter daye.

CAP. CCXXXVI

Howe the erle of Derby aryved in Englande.

[1] *Humphrey.*

To come to a conclusyon of this busynesse: The people toke counsayle and advyse to ryde agaynst the kynge, whom the Londoners named Richard of Burdeaux, kynge without tytell or honour. For the vyllaynes of London hadde the kyng in suche hate, that it was payne for them to here spekynge of hym, but to his condempnacion and distruction: for they hadde treated the erle of Derby to be their kynge, and he was moche ordred by their counsayls. The erle of Derby toke on hym to be kyng, and so to endure for ever he and his heyres; and therto the Londoners dyde swere and

CAP. CCXXXVI

Howe the erle of Derby aryved in Englande.

seale, and promysed that all the resydue of the realme shulde do the same, so solempnely that there shulde never questyon be made therof after. Also they promysed hym to aide and to assyste hym alwayes. These promyses and boundes ones taken and concluded, than it was ordayned that xii. hundred men of London, well armed, shulde ryde with the erle towardes Bristowe, and to do so moche, that Richarde of Burdeaux myght be taken and brought to London, and than to take advyse what shulde be done with hym, and to be judged by the lawe and by the thre estates of the realme. Also it was ordayned, to make the lesse brute and sclaundre, that the men of warre of Bretaygne, suche as were come thyder with the erle, shulde be retourned home agayne. For it was sayde howe they hadde men ynoughe to do their dedes without them; so that the erle had all the Bretons before hym, and thanked them of their servyce that they hadde done hym, and gave them great rewardes so that they were well content, and so retourned to Plummouthe to the shyppes and so into Bretaygne.

Nowe lette us speke of the erle of Derby, who ordayned to ryde to Bristowe.

The erle of Derby was cheife of that armye, as reason was, for it touched hym most nerest. Thus he departed fro London, and as he rode, the countrey fell into hym. Tidynges came into the kynges host of the commyng of the erle of Derby and of the Londoners. Many knyghtes, squyers, and other knewe it or the kynge hadde knowledge therof, but they durst nat speke therof. Whan the tidynges spredde more abrode, suche as were next the kyng were in great feare, for they knewe well the kynge and they bothe were lykely to fall in paryll, bycause they hadde so many ennemyes in the realme; and suche were than their ennemyes, that hadde made good face before. For many knightes, squyers, and other, suche as hadde served the kyng before, departed fro the courte without any lycence. Some wente home to their owne houses, and some toke the nexte waye they coude streyght to the erle of Derby to serve hym. As soone as Affren of Gloucestre, and Rycharde, sonne to the erle of Arundell, knewe that the erle of Derby and the Londoners were commynge, they gote their men toguyder

and departed, and rode streyght to the erle of Derby, whome they founde beyonde Oxenforde, at a towne called Soucetour.[1] Therle of Derby hadde great joye whanne he sawe his cosyns, and demaunded of the state of the kynge, and howe they were departed fro hym. They aunswered and sayde: Sir, at our departynge we spake nat with hym: for as soone as we knewe of your commynge, we lepte on our horses and departed to come to serve you, and to ayde to revenge the dethe of our fathers, whome Richarde of Burdeaulx hathe caused to be slayne. Sirs, quod the erle, ye be ryght welcome; ye shall ayde me and I shall helpe you. For it is behovable that oure cosyn Rycharde of Burdeaux be brought to London: so have I promysed to the Londoners, and I wyll kepe my promyse, for therto they wyll ayde me. And we have men ynowe to fyght with hym if nede be; and if he wyll have batayle he shall have it.

CAP. CCXXXVI

Howe the erle of Derby aryved in Englande.

[1] *Cirencester.*

CAP. CCXXXVII

Howe tidynges came to kyng Richarde of the commynge of the erle of Derby with great puyssaunce.

IT was sayd to the kynge, whan the mater coude no lengar be hydde: Sir, advyse you well; ye have nede of good counsayle shortely, for the Londoners and other cometh agaynst you with great puissaunce, and hath made therle of Derby your cosyn their chefe capitayne; they have gote hym out of Fraunce. This hath nat been done without great treatie. Whan the kynge herde that, he was sore abasshed, and wyste nat what to saye, for all his spyrites trymbled: for than he saw well the maters were lykely to go yvell agaynst hym, without he coude gette puyssaunce to resyst them. Than the kynge sayd: Sirs, make all our men redy, and sende througheout my realme for ayde, for I wyll nat flye before my subjettes. Sir, quod they, the mater gothe yvell, for your men do leave you and flye awaye; ye have loste the one halfe, and all the rest are sore abasshed,

CAP. CCXXXVII

Howe tidynges came to kyng Richarde of the commynge of the erle of Derby.

and leseth countynaunce. Why? quod the kyng; what will ye that I shall do? Sir, leave the felde, for ye are nat able to kepe it, and gette you into some stronge castell tyll sir Johan Hollande your brother come, who is advertysed of all this mater; and whanne he is come he shall fynde some remedy, outher biforce of armes or elles by treatie, at leest to bring you into some better case than ye be in at this present tyme. For if ye kepe the felde, paradventure some wyll forsake you and go to hym. To this counsaile the kyng agreed. At that tyme the erle of Salisbury was nat with the kyng; he was in his countre. Whan he herde howe the erle of Derby with the Londoners and great puissaunce rode agaynst the kyng, he ymagined that the matter was in paryll for hym and for the kynge, and for suche as the kyng had ben counsayled by; so he sate styll to here other tidynges. Also the duke of Yorke was nat with the kyng, but his sonne the erle of Rutlande was alwayes with the kyng, for two causes; the one was, kyng Richarde loved hym entierly; and another was, bycause he was constable of Englande; therfore by right he ought to be with the kynge. Whan the kyng had supped, newe tidynges came agayne to hym, sayeng: Sir, it is tyme to take advise howe ye wyll order yourselfe; your puyssaunce is nat sufficient agaynst them that cometh agaynst you; it cannat aveyle you to make batayle agaynst them. It behoveth you to passe this daunger by sadde advyse and good counsayle, and by wysedome apease them that be your yvel willers, as ye have done or this tyme, and than correcte them after at leysar. There is a castell a xii. myle hens, called the castell of Flynte, whiche is stronge. We counsayle you to go thider, and close you within it tyll ye here other newes fro the erle of Huntyngton your brother, and fro other of your frendes, and sende into Irelande for socours. And the Frenche kyng your father in lawe, whan he knoweth of your nede, he wyll conforte you. The kyng folowed that counsayle, and apoynted them that shulde ride with hym to the castell of Flynt; and he ordayned his cosyn erle of Rutlande to tary styll at Bristowe, and that they shulde be redy to sette forwarde whan he sent to them, and that he was of power to fyght with his enemyes.

The nexte day the kynge, with suche as were of his household, rode to the castell of Flynte, and entred into the castell without makynge any semblaunt to make any warre, but to abide there and to defende the castell if they were assayled.

CAP. CCXXXVII
Howe tidynges came to kyng Richarde of the commynge of the erle of Derby.

CAP. CCXXXVIII

Howe kyng Richarde yelded himselfe to the erle of Derby to go to London.

THE erle of Derby and the Londoners had their spies goyng and commyng, who reported to them al the state of the kyng. And also the erle knewe it by suche knyghtes and squyers as daylye came fro the kynges parte to therle, who had sure knowledge that the king was gone to the castell of Flynt, and had no company with him but such as were of his owne housholde, and semed that he wolde no warre, but to scape that daunger by treatie. Than therle determyned to ryde thyder, and to do so moche to have the kyng outher biforce or by treatie. Than the erle and all his company rode thyder, and within two myle of the castell they founde a great vyllage: there the erle taryed and dranke, and determyned in hymselfe to ryde to the castell of Flynt with two hundred horse, and to leave the rest of his company styll there. And he sayde he wolde do what he coude by fayre treatie to entre into the castell by love and nat perforce, and to bring out the kynge with fayre wordes, and to assure hym fro all paryll, excepte goynge to London, and to promise hym that he shall have no hurte of his body, and to be meane for hym to the Londoners, who were nat content with hym. Therles devyse semed good to them that harde it, and they sayd to hym: Sir, beware of dissymulacion: this Rycharde of Burdeaux muste be taken outher quycke or deed, and all the other traytours that be about hym and of his counsayle, and so to be brought to London and sette in the towre; the Londoners wyll nat suffre you to do the contrary. Than the erle sayde: Sirs, feare nat, but all that is enterprised shall

CAP. CCXXXVIII

Howe kyng Richarde yelded himselfe to the erle of Derby to go to London.

be accomplysshed; but if I can gette hym out of the castell with fayre wordes, I wyll do it; and if I canne nat, I shall sende you worde therof, and than ye shall come and laye siege about the castell. And than we wyll do so moche by force or by assaute, that we wyll have hym quicke or deed, for the castell is well prignable. To those wordes accorded well the Londoners. So the erle departed fro the army, and rode with two hundred men to the castell, where as the kyng was among his men right sore abasshed. The erle came ridyng to the castell gate, whiche was faste closed, as the case requyred. The erle knocked at the gate. The porters demaunded who was there. The erle answered, I am Henry of Lancastre; I come to the kynge to demaunde myne herytage of the duchy of Lancastre; shewe the kynge this fro me. Sir, quod they within, we shall do it. Incontynent they went into the hall and into the dongyon where as the kyng was, and suche knyghtes about hym as had long tyme counsayled hym. Than these newes were shewed to the kyng, and sayd: Sir, your cosyn of Derby is at the gate, who demandeth of you to be set in possessyon of the duchy of Lancastre his enherytaunce. The kynge than regarded suche as were aboute hym, and demaunded what was best to do. They said: Sir, in this request is none yvell; ye maye let hym come into you with xii. persons in his company, and here what he wyll saye. He is your cosyn, and a great lorde of the realme; he maye well make your peace and he wyll, for he is greatly beloved in the realme, and specially with the Londoners, who sente for hym into Fraunce; they be as nowe the chefe that be agaynst you. Sir, ye must dissymule tyll the mater be apeased, and tyll the erle of Huntyngton your brother be with you. And it cometh nowe yvell to passe for you that he is at Calais, for there be many nowe in Englande that be rysen agaynst you, that and they knewe that youre brother were aboute you, they wolde sytte styll and durst nat displease you. And yet he hathe to his wyfe the erle of Derbyes suster: by his meanes we suppose ye shulde come to peace and concorde. The kyng agreed to those wordes, and said: Go and let hym come in with xii. with hym and no mo. Two knyghtes went downe to the gate, and opyned

CAP. CCXXXVIII

Howe kyng Richarde yelded himselfe to the erle of Derby to go to London.

the wycket and issued out and made reverence to the erle, and receyved hym with gracious wordes, for they knewe well that they hadde no force to resyst them, and also they knewe well the Londoners were sore displeased with them. Therfore they spake fayre, and sayde to the erle: Sir, what is your pleasure? The kyng is at masse; he hath sente us hyder to speke with you. I saye, quod therle, ye knowe well I ought to have possessyon of the duchy of Lancastre; I am come in partie for that cause, and also for other thynges that I wolde speke with the kynge of. Sir, quod they, ye be welcome; the kyng wolde be gladde to se you and to here you, and hath commaunded that ye come to hym all onely with xii. persones. The erle answered: It pleaseth me well. So he entred into the castell with xii. persones, and than the gate closed agayne, and the rest of his company taryed without.

Nowe consyder what daunger therle of Derby was in, for the kyng than myght have slayne hym and suche as were with hym, as easely as a byrde in a cage; but he feared nat the mater, but boldelye went to the kyng, who chaunged colours whan he sawe the erle. Than the erle spake aloude, without makynge of any great honour or reverence, and sayd: Sir, are ye fastynge? The kyng answered and sayd Yea, why aske you? It is tyme, quod the erle, that ye had dyned, for ye have a great journey to ryde. Why, wheder shulde I ryde, quod the kynge? Ye must ryde to London, quod therle, wherfore I counsayle you eate and drinke, that ye maye ryde with the more myrthe. Than the kynge, who was sore troubled in his mynde, and in a maner afrayde of those wordes, sayde: I am nat hungry; I have no luste to eate. Than suche as were by, who were as than gladde to flatter therle of Derby, for they sawe well the mater was lyke to go dyversly, sayde to the kynge: Sir, beleve your cosyn of Lancastre, for he wyll nothyng but good. Than the kyng sayd: Well, I am content; cover the tables. Thanne the kynge washed and satte downe and was served. Than the erle was demaunded if he wolde sytte downe: he sayde No, for he was nat fastynge.

In the mean season whyle the kyng satte at dyner, who dyde eate but lytell, his hert was so full that he had no

CAP. CCXXXVIII

Howe kyng Richarde yelded himselfe to the erle of Derby to go to London.

lust to eate, all the countrey about the castell was full of men of warre: they within the castell myght se them out at the wyndowes, and the kynge whan he rose fro the table myght se them hymselfe. Than he demaunded of his cosyn what men they were that appered so many in the feldes. Therle aunswered and sayde: The moost parte of them be Londoners. What wolde they have? quod the kyng. They wyll have you, quod therle, and bringe you to London, and putte you into the towre; there is none other remedy, ye can scape none otherwyse. No, quod the kyng, and he was sore afrayde of those wordes, for he knewe well the Londoners loved hym nat, and sayde: Cosyn, can you nat provyde for my suretie? I wyll nat gladly putte me into their handes, for I knowe well they hate me, and have done long, though I be their kynge. Than therle sayd: Sir, I se none other remedy but to yelde yourselfe as my prisoner; and whan they knowe that ye be my prisoner they wyll do you no hurte; but ye must so ordayne you and your company to ryde to London with me, and to be as my prisoner in the towre of London. The kyng, who sawe hymself in a harde case, all his spyrites were sore abasshed, as he that douted greatly that the Londoners wolde slee hym. Than he yelded hymselfe prisoner to the erle of Derby, and bounde hymselfe, and promysed to do all that he wolde have hym to do. In lykewise all other knightes, squyers and offycers yelded to the erle, to eschewe the daunger and paryll that they were in; and the erle than receyved them as his prisoners, and ordayned incontynent horses to be saddled and brought forthe into the courte and the gates opyned. Than many men of armes and archers entred. Than the erle of Derby caused a crye to be made: on payne of dethe, no man to be so hardy to take away any thyng within the castell, nor to laye any handes upon any persone, for all were under the erles savegarde and protection; whiche crye was kept, no man durst breke it. The erle had the kyng downe into the courte talkyng toguyder, and caused all the kynges hole housholde and estate to go forwarde, as of custome they had done before, without chaungyng or mynisshynge of any thyng. Whyle every thyng was a preparyng, the kyng and the erle communed toguyder in

CAP. CCXXXVIII

Howe kyng Richarde yelded himselfe to the erle of Derby to go to London.

the court, and were well regarded by the Londoners. And as it was enformed me, kynge Rycharde had a grayhounde called Mathe, who alwayes wayted upon the kynge, and wolde knowe no man els; for whansoever the kynge dyde ryde, he that kept the grayhounde dyde lette hym lose, and he wolde streight rynne to the kynge and fawne upon hym, and leape with his fore fete upon the kynges shulders. And as the kyng and the erle of Derby talked togyder in the courte, the grayhounde, who was wont to lepe upon the kyng, left the kynge and came to the erle of Derby, duke of Lancastre, and made to hym the same frendly countinaunce and chere as he was wonte to do to the kyng. The duke, who knewe nat the grayhounde, demaunded of the kyng what the grayhounde wolde do. Cosyn, quod the kyng, it is a gret good token to you, and an yvell signe to me. Sir, howe know you that? quod the duke. I knowe it well, quod the kyng: the grayhounde maketh you chere this day as kynge of Englande, as ye shal be, and I shal be deposed: the grayhounde hath this knowledge naturally; therfore take hym to you, he wyll folowe you and forsake me. The duke understode well those wordes, and cherisshed the grayhounde, who wolde never after folowe kyng Rycharde, but folowed the duke of Lancastre.

So every man lepte a horsbacke and departed fro the castell of Flynt, and entred into the feldes. Thus duke Henry of Lancastre, who was no more called erle of Derby but duke of Lancastre, rode by the kyng and oftentymes talked togider, and men of warre before and behynde in great nombre, and all suche as were of the kynges courte rode toguyder in a company. That night they laye about Oxenforde. The duke of Lancastre ledde kyng Richarde by no castelles nor good townes, for feare of styring of the people, but alwayes kepte the feldes. Than the duke gave lycence to a great nombre of his people to departe, and sayd: Sirs, ye maye departe, for we have that we desyre; the kynge can nat flye nor scape fro us: we and our owne company shall bring hym to London, and putte hym in savegarde in the towre, he and all his are my prisoners, I may bringe them whider I wyll. Therfore sirs, go your wayes home tyll ye here other newes. They dyde as the

CAP. CCXXXVIII

Howe kyng Richarde yelded himselfe to the erle of Derby to go to London.

duke commaunded them, who toke the way to Wyndsore, and came thyder, and moost parte of the Londoners retourned to London, and other to their owne places. The duke of Lancastre departed fro Wynsore, and wolde nat ride by Colbroke, but toke the way by Shene, and so came to dyner to Chersay. The king had desyred the duke that he shulde nat bringe hym London waye, nor through the cytie, and therfore they tooke that waye. As soone as they had the kynge thus in their handes, they sente notable persones to the yong quene, who was at Ledes in Kent. And they came to the lady Coucy,[1] who was seconde persone there next to the quene, and sayd to her: Madame, make you redy, for ye must departe hens: and at your departyng make no semblant of displeasure before the quene, but saye howe your husbande hath sent for you, and for your doughter also. This that we saye, loke that you do accomplysshe on payne of your lyfe, nor axe ye no questyons no further. And ye shal be conveyed to Dover, and there have a shyppe that shall bring you to Boloyne. The lady who douted those wordes, for she knewe well Englysshe men were cruell and hasty, said: Sirs, as God wyll I am redy to do as ye wyll have me. Anone she made her redy, and horses were provyded for her and for her company. So all Frenche men and women departed, and they were conveyed to Dover, and at the next tyde they toke shippyng, and had good wynde, and so arryved at Boloyne.

[1] *Courcy.*

CAP. CCXXXIX

Of the state of quene Isabell of Englande, and howe she had all newe persones apoynted to wayte upon her, and howe kyng Richarde was sette in the towre of London.

AS for the state of the quene was so tourned and broken, for there was lefte nouther man, woman, nor chylde of the nacion of France, nor yet of Englande, suche as were in any favour with the kyng: her house was newly furnisshed with ladyes and damoselles, and other offycers

and servauntes; they were charged all, that in no wyse they shuld nat speke of the kynge, nat one to another. Thus the duke of Lancastre departed fro Chertsay, and rode to Shene, and fro thens in the nyght tyme they conveyed the kyng to the towre of London, and suche other knightes and squyers as the kyng wolde. The nexte mornyng whan the Londoners knewe that the kynge was in the towre, they were gretly rejoysed, but there was great murmuring among them, bycause the kyng was conveyed thyder so secretely. They were angry that the duke had nat brought hym throughe London openly, nat to have done hym honor, but shame, they hated hym so sore. Beholde the opinyon of commen people, whan they be up agaynst their prince or lorde, and specially in Englande; amonge them there is no remedy, for they are the peryloust people of the worlde, and most outragyoust if they be up, and specially the Londoners, and in dede they be riche and of a great nombre. There was well in London a xxiiii. thousande men in harnesse complete, and a xxx. thousande archers, and they were hardy and hygh of corage: the more blode they sawe shedde, the lesse they were abasshed.

CAP. CCXXXIX

Of the state of quene Isabell of Englande.

Nowe lette us somwhat speke of the erle of Rutlande, constable of Englande, sonne to the duke of Yorke, who was taryed at Bristowe, and the lorde Spenser with hym, who had his suster to wyfe. Whan they knewe that the castell of Flynte was gyven up, and the kynge taken and brought to London, thane they thought surely the matters wente nat well for the kynge. Therfore they thought no lengar to tary there, and gave leave to al their men of warre to departe, and the erle of Rutlande, and the lorde Spenser, rode toguyder with their owne servauntes to Hull,[1] in the marchesse of Wales, a fayre manner of the lorde Spensers, and there they taryed tyll they herde other tidynges. And the duke of Yorke laye styll in his castell, and medled with nothynge of the busynesse of Englande: no more he dyde before, he toke ever the tyme aworthe as it came. Howbeit, he was sore displeased in his mynde, to se suche difference within the realme, and bytwene his nephues and blode.

[1] *Henley.*

Nowe let us retourne to speke of kynge Richarde.

Whan the duke of Lancastre had set his cosyn kyng

CAP. CCXXXIX

Of the state of quene Isabell of Englande.

Richard in the towre of London, and certayne of his counsaylours, and had sette sure kepynge on them, the fyrst thyng than that the duke dyde, he sent for the erle of Warwyke, who was banysshed and commaunded to lye in the ysle of Wyght, and discharged hym clene therof. And secondly, the duke of Lancastre sent to therle of Northumberlande, and to the lorde Percy his sonne, that they shulde come to hym, and so they dyde. After he enquered and sought out to have the foure companyons that had strangled his uncle the duke of Gloucestre in the castell of Calais; they were so well sought out, that they were all taken: they were sette in prisone aparte in London. Than the duke of Lancastre and his counsayle toke advyse what shulde be done with kyng Richarde, beyng in the towre of London, where as kyng Johan of Fraunce was kept, whyle kynge Edwarde wente into the realme of Fraunce. Than it was thought that king Rycharde shulde be put fro all his royalte and joy that he hath lyved in, for they sayd, the newes of his takynge shulde sprede abrode into all realmes crystened. He had been kynge xxii. yere, and as than they determined to kepe him in prisone. Than they regarded what case the realme stode in, and dyd put all his dedes in artycles to the nombre of xxviii. Than the duke of Lancastre and his counsayle went to the towre of London, and entred into the chambre where kynge Rycharde was, and without any reverence makynge to hym, there was openly redde all the said artycles, to the whiche the kynge made none aunswere, for he sawe well all was true that was layde to his charge, savynge he sayd, All that I have doone passed by my counsayle. Than he was demaunded what they were that had gyven counsayle, and by whome he was most ruled. He named them, in trust therby to have ben delyvered himselfe in accusynge of them, as he had doone before tyme, trustynge therby to scape, and to bringe them in the daunger and payne; but that was nat the mynde of them that loved hym nat. So as at that tyme they spake no more but departed, and the duke of Lancastre went to his lodgynge, and suffred the mayre and the men of lawe to procede. They went to the Guyldhall, where as all the maters of the cytie were determyned, and than moche people assembled there. Whan

CAP. CCXXXIX
Of the state of quene Isabell of Englande.

they sawe the governours of the cytie go thyder, they thought some justice shulde be done, as there was in dede, I shall shewe you howe: Fyrste, the artycles that were made agaynst the kynge, the whiche had been redde before hym in the towre, were redde agayne there openly. And it was shewed by hym that redde them, howe the kynge hymselfe denyed none of them, but confessed that he dyd theym by the counsayle of four knightes of his chambre, and howe by their counsayle he had put to dethe the duke of Gloucestre, and the erle of Arundell, sir Thomas Corbet, and other, and howe they had longe encyted the kynge to do those dedes. Which dedes, they sayd, were nat to be forgyven, but demaunded punycion; for by them and their counsayle the justyce of right was closed up through all the courtes of Englande, Westmynster, and other, wherby many yvell dedes folowed, and companyes and rowtes of theves and murderers rose and assembled togyther in dyvers parties of the realme, and robbed marchauntes by the wayes, and poore men in their houses, by whiche meanes the realme was in great parell to have ben lost without recovery. And it is to be ymagyned that fynally they wolde have rendred Calais, or Guysnes, or bothe, into the Frenchmennes handes. These wordes thus shewed to the people made many to be abasshed, and many beganne to murmure and sayd: These causes demaunde punycion, that all other may take ensample therby, and Rycharde of Burdeaux to be deposed: for he is nat worthy to beare a crowne, but ought to be deprived fro all honour, and to be kept all his lyfe in prison with breed and water. Though some of the villaynes murmured, other said on hygh: Sir mayre of London, and ye other that have justyce in your handes to mynyster, execute justyce: for we wyll ye spare no man, for ye se well the case that ye have shewed us demaundeth justyce incontynent, for they are judges upon their owne dedes. Than the mayre and other of the governours of the lawe went togyther into the chambre of judgement. Than these four knyghtes were judged to dye, and were judged to be had to the foote of the towre, where as kynge Rycharde was, that he might se them drawen alonge by the dyke with horses eche after other, throughe the cytie into Chepesyde, and than there

CAP. CCXXXIX

heedes stryken of there, and sette upon London bridge, and there bodyes drawen to the gybet, and there hanged.

Of the state of quene Isabell of Englande.

This judgment gyven they were delyvered to execucyon. For the mayre of London, and suche as were deputed to the mater, wente fro the Guyldhall to the towre, and toke out the four knyghtes of the kynges, whose names were called sir Bernarde Brokas, syr Marclays, mayster John Derby, receyvour of Lyncolne, and mayster Stell,[1] the kynges stewarde. Eche of them were tyed to two horses, in the presence of them that were in the towre, and the kynge might well se it out at the wyndowes, wherwith he was sore discomforted, for all other that were there with the kynge loked to be in the same case, they knewe them of London so cruell. Thus these four knyghtes were drawen one after another alonge through the cyte tyll they came into Chepe, and there on a fysshers stall their heedes were stryken of and set upon London bridge, and their bodyes drawen by the shulders to the gybet, and there hanged up. This justyce thus doone, every man went to their lodgynges. Kynge Rycharde knowyng himself taken, and in the daunger of the Londoners, was in great sorowe in his herte, and rekened his puyssaunce nothynge: for he sawe howe every man was agaynste hym, and if there were any that ought hym any favour, it laye nat in their powers to do hym any ayde, nor they durste nat shewe it. Suche as were with the kynge sayde: Syr, we have but small trust in our lyves as it may well apere; for whan your cosyn of Lancastre came to the castell of Flynte, and with your owne good wyll ye yelded you to hym, and he promysed that you and twelve of yours shulde be his prisoners and have no hurte, and nowe of those twelve, four be executed shamefully, we are like to passe the same way. The cause is these Londoners, who hath caused the duke of Lancastre your cosyn to do this dede, had hym so sore bounde to them that he muste do as they wyll have hym. God dothe moche for us, if he suffre that we myght dye here our naturall deth, and nat a shamefull dethe; it is great pytie to thynke on this. With those wordes kyng Rycharde began tenderly to wepe and wringe his handes, and cursed the houre that ever he was borne, rather than to have suche an ende. Suche as were aboute hym had great pytie, and

[1] *Shelley.*

CAP. CCXXXIX

Of the state of quene Isabell of Englande.

recomforted hym as well as they might. One of his knyghtes sayd: Syr, it behoveth you to take comforte; we se well, and so do you, that this worlde is nothyng, the fortunes therof are marveylous, and somtyme tourne as well upon kinges and princes, as upon poore men. The Frenche kynge, whose doughter ye have maryed, canne nat nowe ayde you, he is to farre of: if ye myght scape this myschefe by dyssimulacyon, and save your lyfe and ours, it were a good enterprise: peradventure within a yere or two there wolde be had some recovery. Why, quod the kynge, what wolde ye that I shulde do; there is nothynge but I wolde be glad to do it to save us therby. Syr, quod the knyght, we se for trouthe that these Londoners wyll crowne your cosyn of Lancastre as kyng, and for that entent they sent for hym, and so have ayded hym and do; it is nat possyble for you to lyve, without ye consent that he be crowned kynge. Wherfore syr, we wyll counsayle you, to the entent to save your lyfe and ours, that whan your cosyn of Lancastre commeth to you to demaunde any thynge, than with swete and treatable wordes say to hym howe that ye wyll resygne to hym the crowne of Englande, and all the ryght that ye have in the realme, clerely and purely into his handes, and howe that ye wyll that he be kynge; therby ye shall greatly apease him and the Londoners also; and desyre hym effectuously to suffre you to lyve and us also with you, or els every man a parte, as it shall please him, or els to banisshe us out of the realme for ever; for he that leseth his lyfe, leseth all. Kynge Rycharde herde those wordes well, and fyxed them surelye in his herte, and sayd he wolde do as they counsayled hym, as he that sawe hymselfe in great daunger. And than he sayd to them that kepte hym, howe he wolde gladly speke with his cosyn of Lancastre.

CAP. CCXL

Howe kynge Rycharde of Englande resigned the crowne and the realme into the handes of the erle of Derby duke of Lancastre.

IT was shewed the duke of Lancastre howe Richarde of Burdeaux desyred to speke with hym. The duke in an evenynge toke a barge and went to the towre by water, and went to the kynge, who receyved hym curtesly, and humbled hymselfe greatly, as he that sawe hymselfe in great daunger, and sayd: Cosyn of Lancastre, I regarde and consydre myne estate, whiche is as nowe but small, I thanke God therof. As any more to reygne or to governe people, or to beare a crowne, I thinke it nat; and as God helpe me I wolde I were deed by a naturall dethe, and that the Frenche kinge had agayne his doughter. We have had as yet no gret joye togyder, nor syth I brought her into Englande, I coulde never have the love of my people as I had before. Cosyn, all thynges consydred, I knowe well I have greatly trespassed agaynst you, and agaynst other noble men of my blodde; by dyvers thynges, I perceyve I shall never have pardone nor come to peace, wherfore with myne owne free and lyberall wyll, I wyll resygne to you the herytage of the crowne of Englande, and I requyre you take the gyfte therof with the resignacyon. Whan the duke herde that, he sayd: Syr, it is convenyent that parte of the thre estates of the realme be called to these wordes, and I have sent allredy for some noble men, prelates, and counsaylours of the good townes of Englande, and I truste they wyll be here within these thre dayes, suffycient of them for you to make a dewe resygnacion before them, and by this meanes ye shal greatly apease many men within the realme. For to withstande suche enormyties and yvels as have ben used in the realme for faute of justyce, who had no place to reygne, I was sent for fro beyond the see: and the people wolde crowne me, for the renome rynneth through Englande, that I have more ryght to the crowne than ye have. For whan our grauntfather kynge Edwarde

CAP. CCXL

Howe kynge Rycharde of Englande resigned the crowne and the realme into the handes of the erle of Derby.

the Thyrde dyd chose and make you kynge, the same was as than shewed hym, but he loved so his sonne the prince, that none coude breake his purpose nor opinyon, but that you shulde be kynge. And if ye wolde have folowed the steppes of your father the prince, and have beleved his counsayle, as a good sonne ought to have done, ye myght have ben styll kyng, and have contynued your estate. But ye have alwayes done the contrary, so that the common renome rynneth through Englande, and in other places, that ye were never sonne to the prince of Wales, but rather sonne to a preest or to a chanon; for I have herde of certayne knightes that were in the princes howse, myne uncle, howe that he knew well that his wyfe had nat truely kepte her maryage. Your mother was cosyn germayne to kynge Edwarde, and the kynge beganne to hate her, bycause she coulde have no generacion; also she was the kynges gossyp of two chyldren at the fonte; and she that coulde well kepe the prince in her bandon by crafte and subtylte, she made the prince to be her husbande, and bycause she coulde have no chylde, she douted that the prince shulde be devorsed fro her; she dyd so moch that she was with chylde with you, and with another before you. As of the fyrst I can nat tell what to judge, but as for you bycause your condicyons have ben sene contrary fro all nobles and prowes of the prince, therfore it is sayd that ye be rather sonne to a prest or to a chanon; for whan ye were gotten and borne at Burdeaux, there were many yonge preestes in the princes house. This is the brute in this countrey, and your workes have well folowed the same, for ye be alwayes enclyned to the pleasure of the Frenchmen, and to take with them peace to the confusyon and dyshonoure of the realme of Englande. And bycause myne uncle of Gloucestre and the erle of Arundell dyd counsayle you truly and faythfully to kepe the honour of the realme, and to folowe the steppes of your auncestours, ye have traytoursly caused them to dye. As for me I have taken on me to defende your lyfe as longe as I may for pytie, and I shall pray the Londoners and the herytours of them that ye have slayne and banysshed, to do the same. Cosyn, I thanke you, quod the kynge, I truste more in you than in any other. It is but ryght that ye so shulde do, for if I had

CAP. CCXL

Howe kynge Rycharde of Englande resigned the crowne and the realme into the handes of the erle of Derby.

nat ben, ye had ben taken by the people and deposed with great confusyon, and slayne, by reasone of your yvell workes. Kynge Rycharde herde well all the dukes wordes, and wyst nat what to saye agaynst it, for he sawe well that force nor argumentes coulde nat aveyle him, but rather mekenesse and humilyte: wherfore he humbled hym, and prayed the duke to save his lyfe.

Whan the duke of Lancastre had ben at the towre two houres with kynge Rycharde, and had shewed hym parte of his fautes, than he retourned. And the next day he sent forthe mo commaundements into all parties of the realme, to cause noble men and other to come to London. His uncle the duke of Yorke came to London, and the erle of Rutlande his sonne, the erle of Northumberlande, and the lorde Thomas Percy his brother; the duke of Lancastre made them good chere: thyder came also great nombre of prelates and abbottes. And on a day the duke of Lancastre acompanyed with lordes, dukes, prelates, erles, barones, and knyghtes, and of the notablest men of London, and of other good townes, rode to the Towre, and there alyghted. Than kynge Rycharde was brought into the hall, aparelled lyke a kynge in his robes of estate, his septer in his hande, and his crowne on his heed. Than he stode up alone, nat holden nor stayed by no man, and sayde aloude: I have been kynge of Englande, duke of Acquytany, and lorde of Irelande, aboute xxii. yeres, whiche sygnory, royalte, cepter, crowne, and herytage, I clerely resygne here to my cosyn Henry of Lancastre: and I desyre hym here in this open presence, in entrynge of the same possessyon, to take this septour: and so delyvered it to the duke, who toke it. Than kynge Rycharde toke the crowne fro his heed with bothe his handes, and set it before hym, and sayd: Fayre cosyn, Henry duke of Lancastre, I gyve and delyver you this crowne, wherwith I was crowned kyng of Englande, and therwith all the right therto dependyng. The duke of Lancastre tooke it, and the archebysshop of Caunterbury toke it out of the dukes handes. This resygnacion thus done, the duke of Lancastre called a notary, and demaunded to have letters and wytnesse of all the prelates and lordes there beynge present. Than Rycharde of Burdeaux re-

tourned agayne into the chambre fro whence he came. Than the duke of Lancastre and all other lept on their horses, and the crowne and ceptour were put in a cofer and conveyed to the abbey of Westmynster, and there kept in the treasory. And every man wente to their lodgynges, and abode tyll the day of parliament and counsayle shulde be at the palays of Westmynster.

CAP. CCXL
Howe kynge Rycharde of Englande resigned the crowne and the realme into the handes of the erle of Derby.

CAP. CCXLI

Of the coronacyon of kyng Henry duke of Lancastre, by the consent of the realme, and the maner of the feest.

IN the yere of our Lorde God a thousande, thre hundred, fourscore and nynetene, the last daye of Septembre, on a Tuysday, began a parlyament at Westmynster, holden by Henry duke of Lancastre, at whiche tyme there was assembled prelates and clergy of the realme of Englande a great nombre, and also dukes, erles, and barones, and of every towne a certayne. Thus the people assembled at Westmynster, there beynge presente the duke of Lancastre; and there the same duke chalenged the realme of Englande, and desyred to be kynge by thre reasones: Fyrst, by conquest; secondly, bycause he was heyre; and thyrdly, bycause Rycharde of Burdeaux had resygned the realme into his handes by his free wyll, in the presence of certayne dukes, erles, prelates, and barones, in the hall within the towre of London. These thre causes shewed, the duke of Lancastre requyred all the people there present, as well one as other, to shewe their myndes and ententes in that behalfe. Than all the people with one voyce sayd, that their wylles was to have him kynge, and howe they wolde have none other but hym. Than the duke agayne sayd to the people: Sirs, is this your myndes? And they all with one voyce sayde: Ye, Ye. And than the duke sate downe in the syege royall, whiche seate was reysed up in the hall, and covered with a clothe of estate, so that every man myght well se hym sytte. And than the people lyfted up their handes a hygh, promysing hym their faythe and allegyaunce. Thanne the parlyament

CAP. CCXLI Of the coronacyon of kyng Henry duke of Lancastre.

concluded, and the day was taken for his coronacyon o saynt Edwardes day, the Monday the xiii. day of Octobre at whiche tyme, the Saturday before his coronacyon, h departed fro Westmynster, and rode to the towre o London with a great nombre. And that night all such squyers as shulde be made knyghtes the nexte day, watched who were to the nombre of xlvi.; every squier had his own bayne by himselfe: and the next day the duke of Lancastr made theym all knyghtes at the masse tyme. Than had they longe cotes with strayte sleves, furred with mynyve lyke prelates, with whyte laces hangynge on their shulders And after dyner the duke departed fro the towre t Westmynster, and rode all the way bareheeded, and aboute his necke the lyvery of Fraunce. He was acompanyed with the prince his sonne, and syxe dukes, syx erles, and xviii. barons, and in all, knyghtes and squyers nyne hundred horse. Than the kynge had on a shorte cot of clothe of golde, after the maner of Almayne, and he wa mounted on a whyte courser, and the garter on his lef legge. Thus the duke rode through London with a grea nombre of lordes, every lordes servaunt in their mayster lyverey; all the burgesses and Lombardes marchauntes i London, and every craft with their lyverey and devyse Thus he was conveyed to Westmynster. He was in nombr a syxe thousande horse, and the streates hanged as he passe by: and the same day and the next there were in Londo rynnynge seven cundyttes with wyne, whyte and reed That nyght the duke was bayned, and the next mornyng he was confessed, and herde thre masses as he was acustome to do, and than all the prelates and clergy came fro West mynster churche to the palays, to fetche the kynge wit procession. And so he went to the churche a procession and all the lordes with hym in their robes of scarlet, furre with menyver, barred of their shulders, acordynge to thei degrees; and over the kynge was borne a clothe of estate o blewe, with four belles of golde, and it was borne by fou burgesses of the portes, as Dover, and other. And on ever syde of him he had a sword borne, the one the sworde o the churche, and the other the sworde of justyce; the sword of the church his sonne the prince dyd beare, and the sword

of justyce therle of Northumberlande dyd beare, for he was as than constable of Englande, for the erle of Rutlande was deposed fro that offyce: and the erle of Westmerlande, who was marshall of Englande, bare the ceptour. Thus they entred into the churche about nyne of the clocke, and in the myddes of the churche there was an hygh scaffolde all covered with reed, and in the myddes therof there was a chayre royall, covered with clothe of golde. Than the kyng satte downe in that chayre and so sate in estate royall, savynge he had nat on the crowne, but sate bareheeded. Than at four corners of the scaffolde, the archebysshop of Caunterbury shewed unto the people howe God had sent them a man to be their kyng, and demaunded if they were content that he shulde be consecrated and crowned as their kynge. And they all with one voyce sayd Yea, and helde up their handes, promysynge him faythe and obeysaunce. Than the kynge rose and wente downe the scaffolde to the hygh auter to be sacred, at whiche consecracyon there were two archbysshoppes, and ten bysshops, and before the aulter ther he was dispoyled out of all his vestures of estate, and there he was anoynted in vi. places, on the heed, on the brest, and on the two shulders behynde, and on the handes. Than a bonet was set on his heed, and whyle he was anoyntynge, the clergy sange the latyny, and suche servyce as they synge at the halowing of the fonte. Than the kinge was aparelled lyke a prelate of the churche, with a cope of reed sylke, and a payre of spurres, with a poynte without a rowell. Than the sworde of justyce was drawen out of the shethe and halowed, and than it was taken to the kyng, who dyd put it agayne into the sheth: than the archebysshop of Caunterbury dyd gyrde the sworde about hym. Than saynt Edwardes crowne was brought forthe, whiche is close above, and blessed, and than the archebysshop dyd sette it on the kynges heed. After masse the kyng departed out of the churche in the same estate, and went to his palays, and there was a fountayne that ranne by dyvers braunches whyte wyne and reed; than the kyng entred into the hall, and so into a privy chamber, and after came out agayne to dyner. At the fyrst table sate the kynge; at the seconde the fyve peres of the realme; at the thyrde the valyaunt men of London; at the

CAP. CCXLI
Of the coronacyon of kyng Henry duke of Lancastre.

CAP. CCXLI

Of the coronacyon of kyng Henry duke of Lancastre.

fourth the newe made knightes; at the fyft the knyghtes and squiers of honour. And by the kyng stode the prince holdynge the sworde of the churche, and on the other syde the constable with the sworde of justyce, and a lytell above the marshall with the ceptour; and at the kynges borde sate two archbysshops, and xvii. bysshoppes. And in the myddes of the dyner there came in a knight, who was called Dinereth,[1] all armed upon a good horse rychely aparelled, and had a knyght before hym bearyng his speare, and his sworde by his syde and his dagger. The knyght toke the kyng a lybell, the whiche was red: therin was conteyned that if there were outher knight, squyer, or any other gentylman, that wolde say that kyng Henry was nat rightfull kyng, he was there redy to fyght with him in that quarell, before the kynge, or where as it shulde please hym to apoynte. That byll was cryed by an haraulde in syxe places of the hall, and in the towne. There was none that wolde chalenge hym. Whan the kynge had dyned he toke wyne and spyces in the hall, and than went into his chambre. Than every man departed and went to their lodginges. Thus the day passed of kynge Henryes coronacyon with great joy and feest, whiche endured all the next day. The erle of Salysbury was nat at this solempnyte, for he was in sure prison, and the kinges counsayle, and dyvers other noble men, and the Londoners wolde that his heed shulde have ben stryken of openly in Chepe: for they said he had well deserved it, for bearynge of letters and credence fro Rycharde of Burdeaux, to the Frenche kyng, and there to reporte openly that kynge Henry was a false traytoure, whiche faute they sayd ought nat to be pardoned. Kyng Henry was more gentyll than so, for he had some pytie on hym, for therle excused hym, and sayd that he dyd was by the kynges commaundement, and by the settyng on of the four knyghtes that were beheeded. Kinge Henry beleved well the erles wordes, but his counsayle wolde nat beleve it, but said, and so dyd the Londoners, that he shulde dye, bycause he had deserved deth. Thus the erle of Salysbury was in prison in great daunger of his lyfe. And syr Johan Holande erle of Huntyngdon, capytayne of Calais, was well enfourmed of the hole mater, and howe his brother kyng Rychard was taken and in prisone in the towre of

[1] *Dymoke.*

London, and had resygned his crowne and all, and howe Henry of Lancastre was kinge of Englande. This erle of Huntyngdon, whatsoever dyspleasure he had for the trouble of his brother, yet wysely he consydred the tyme and adventures, and sawe well that he was nat able to withstande all the power and puyssaunce of the realme. Also the countesse his wyfe, who was cosyn germayne to kynge Henry, sayd: Syr, it must behove you to passe your displeasure pacyently and wysely, and do nat that thynge wherby ye shall have dommage: for the kyng may do you moche good, and ye se that all the realme enclyneth to hym; if ye shewe any dyspleasure to hym warde, ye are but lost; wherfore syr, I requyre you, and I counsayle you to dyssimule the matter, for as well kynge Henry nowe is your brother, as kyng Richarde was: therfore syr, stycke and leane to him, and ye shall fynde hym your good lover, for there was never a rycher kynge in Englande than he is; he may do to you and to your chyldren great good. The erle herde well the wordes of his wyfe and beleved her, and enclyned hym to kynge Henry, and offred hym humble obeysaunce, and promysed hym faythe and trouthe. The kyng receyved hym and had great joy therof, and he dyd so moche with meanes of his frendes, that the erle of Salysbury was taken to grace, and his excusacyons accepted, and was clene pardoned.

CAP. CCXLI Of the coronacyon of kyng Henry duke of Lancastre.

CAP. CCXLII

How newes of the taking of kyng Rycharde was knowen in Fraunce by the commyng thyder of the lady of Coucy, and howe the Frenche kynge was dyspleased.

WHAN the lady of Coucy[1] was aryved at Bouloyne, she hasted her to go to Parys. Great murmurynge there was in Fraunce of the sodayne incidentes that were fallen in Englande: they knewe somwhat by marchauntes of Bruges, but whan the lady of Coucy aryved, than the trouth was knowen. She went firste to her husbandes house,

[1] *Couroy.*

CAP. CCXLII

How newes of the taking of kyng Rycharde was knowen in Fraunce.

as it was reason. Anon the Frenche kynge herde word howe the lady of Coucy was come to Parys. Than th kynge sent for the lorde of Coucy, who had ben all nygh with his wyfe. Whan he was come the kynge demaunde of the state of kynge Rycharde of Englande, and of th quene his doughter. The lorde durst nat hyde the troutl fro hym, but shewed hym playnely every thynge, as his wyf had shewed hym, whiche newes were sore dyspleasaunt t the Frenche kynge, for he knewe well the Englysshmen wer sore and harde men to apease; and so with dyspleasure th Frenche kynge retourned agayne into his olde sicknes o fransey, wherof the nobles of the realme were sore displeased but they coude nat amende it. Than the duke of Burgoy said, I thought never otherwyse: for it was a maryag without good reasone, the whiche I sayd playnly ynoug whan the mater was fyrst spoken of, but as than I coud nat be herde: for I knewe well the Londoners never love parfytely kynge Rycharde. All this myschefe is engendre by the duke of Gloucestre. It is tyme nowe to take hed what the Englisshmen wyll do. Sythe they have taken thei kyng and put him in prison, by all lykelyhode they wyll pu hym to dethe, for they never loved him, bycause he loved n warre, but peace; they wyll crowne to their kynge the duk of Lancastre, he shall so bynde hymselfe to them, tha whether he wyll or nat, he shall do all that they wyll. An sayd moreover, Nowe shall be sene what they of Burdeau wyll do, for there he was borne, and was well beloved witl them, and also with them of Bayon, and of Dax, and in al the lymytes of Burdeloys. It were good that the constabl of Fraunce, sir Loys of Sanxere, were signyfyed of thi mater, and that he drewe hym to the fronters there, an with him syr Raynolde of Barroys, of Barreys,[1] and othe barones and prelates, and to treate with them, and m brother the duke of Berrey to go into Poictou, and to draw to the fronters of Xaintes, of Blaves, and of Mirebell wherby if they of Burdeaux wyll any thynge entende to ou treaties, that they may be receyved, for nowe shall we hav them or never. As he devysed it was ordeyned, the which was a substanciall devyce. For whan they of Burdeaux, o Bayon, and of Dax, understode that their kynge Rychard

[1] *Regnault d'Espaigne, le Barrois des Barres et aucuns barons.*

CAP. CCXLII

How newes of the taking of kyng Rycharde was knowen in Fraunce.

was taken and sette in the towre of London, and duke Henry of Lancastre crowned kyng, they had gret marveyle therof, and in the begynnyng wolde nat beleve it, but lytle and lytle they knewe the trouth therof. Than the sayd thre townes were closed and no man suffred to issue out nor to entre in: they were sore troubled and sorowfull, and specyally the cytie of Burdeaux, for kynge Rycharde was norysshed amonge them, therfore they loved hym. And whyle he was kynge, if any of Burdeloys came to hym they were well receyved, and alwayes the kinge was redy to fulfyll their desyres. Wherfore they sayd whan they knewe the trouth: Ah, Richarde, gentle kyng, ye were as noble a man as ever reigned in any realme: this trouble the Londoners have caused, for they coulde never love you, specyally sythe ye were alyed by maryage with the Frenche kyng; this myschiefe is so great that we can nat suffre it: they have holden you kynge this xxii. yere, and now to condempne you to the dethe; for sythe ye be in prison, and have crowned the duke of Lancastre, they wyll surely put you to deth. So they of Burdeloys made great lamentacyons, in so moche that the seneschall of Burdeaux, a ryght valyaunt knyght of Englande, wrote letters, therin conteynynge the wordes and lamentacyons of them of the cytie of Burdeaulx, of Bayon, and of Dax: also he wrote howe they were nere at the poynte to yelde up their townes to the Frenche kyng. He sent this lettre by a trusty servaunt of his by the see, who had good wynde, and aryved at Cornewayle in Englande, and than he rode so longe that he came to London; there he founde kynge Henry, and delyvered his letters, which were dyrected to the kynge and to the Londoners. They were opened and reed, and the kynge and the Londoners toke counsayle upon that mater. They of London aunswered lyke theym that were nothyng abasshed of that tydynges, but sayde: As for these townes wyll never tourne Frenche, for they can nat lyve in their daunger, nor they canne nat suffre the extorcyon and pollinge of the Frenchmen: for under us they lyve franke and free, and if the Frenchemen shulde be lordes over them, they shulde be taxed and tayled and retayled two or thre tymes in a yere, the whiche they are nat nowe accustomed unto, whiche shulde be a harde

CAP. CCXLII

How newes of the taking of kyng Rycharde was knowen in Fraunce.

thyng nowe for them to begynne. Also these thre cyties are closed in rounde about with great lordes, who are good Englysshe, and longe have been, as the lorde Pyviers,[1] the lorde Musydent, the lorde Duras, the lorde Landuras, the lorde Copane, the lorde Rosem, the lorde Logeren, and dyvers other barones and knyghtes, by whome they shulde have warre at their handes, for they shuld nat issue out of their cities but they shulde be taken. For all the seneschalles wrytynge, we have no doute that they shulde become Frenche; howebeit, good it is to sende thyder some valyaunt wyse man that is beloved amonge theym, some such as hath governed there or this, and that is the lorde Thomas Percy. Thus as it was devysed it was acomplysshed: he was desyred to go thyder, and to take hede of that countrey. He fulfylled the kynges commaundement, and made hym redy to departe; it was about Christmasse, at whiche tyme the wyndes be sore and jeoperdous; he toke shyppynge in Cornewayle. He had with him two hundred men of armes and four hundred archers, and with hym was his nephue Hugh Hastynges, Thomas Colevyll, Gyllyam Lysle, Johan Graily, bastarde sonne to the Captall of Beufz, Guillyam Traicton, Johan Dambreticourt, and divers other, and also the bysshop of London, and mayster Rycharde Doall.[2] They taryed tyll it was mydde Marche or they toke the see. And or they came to Burdeaux the duke of Burbon was come to the cytie of Dagen, to treate with theym of Burdeloys; and he dyd so moche by his fayre wordes and good assuraunce, that the counsayles of Burdeaux, of Bayon, and of Dax, were sent to the cytie of Dagen. The duke receyved them frendly, and gave them fayre wordes and many promyses, and shewed them that if they wolde turne Frenche, and be under the obeysaunce of the Frenche kynge, whatsoever they wolde demaunde shulde be graunted them, and sealed perpetually to endure. Many thynges they promysed and sware to seale, and to kepe for ever. They aunswered: Whan they were retourned agayne into their cyties they wolde shewe all this to the people, and so take counsayle, and than gyve answere. Thus they departed fro Dagen and fro the duke of Burbon, and retourned to their townes, and shewed all this to the people. But all tourned to nothynge, for the

[1] *Pommieres.*

[2] *Rohale.*

CAP. CCXLII

How newes of the taking of kyng Rycharde was knowen in Fraunce.

comynaltyes of the sayde cyties consydred the busynesse, and knewe well howe the realme of Fraunce was vexed and troubled with tayles and fowages and shamful exaccions, all to get money. Than they sayd: If the Frenchemen governe over us, they wyll bringe us to the same usage; yet it is better for us to be Englysshe, for they kepe us franke and free. If the Londoners have deposed kynge Rycharde and crowned kinge Henry, what is that to us? We have and shall have alwayes a kynge, and we understande that the bysshop of London and syr Thomas Percy shortely wyll be here; they shall enfourme us of the trouthe; we have also more marchaundyse of woll, wyne and clothe with the Englysshemen than with the Frenchmen: let us be ware we make no treatie, wherby we shulde repent us after. Thus the treatie with the Frenche was broken and lefte of. Than anone after, the bysshop of London and the lorde Percy, with their charge of men of warre, aryved at Burdeaux, wherof moche people were greatly rejoysed, and some displeased, suche as had rather have been Frenche than Englysshe. All these Englysshe lordes were lodged togyther in the abbey of saint Andrewe, and whan they sawe their tyme, they shewed to the people the state of Englande, and the cause why they were sent thyder. And they dyd so moche that every thynge was apeased both there and in all other places, for harde it was to have caused them to have tourned Frenche.

Than it was determyned by the counsayle of Fraunce, sithe the kyng was in sycknesse by reason of the displeasure that he toke for the deposyng of his sonne in lawe kynge Rycharde, that they shulde sende some notable wyse personage into Englande to knowe the state of the quene. To do this message was apoynted syr Charles de la Brethe and Charles of Hangers, who, as they were commaunded, departed fro Parys and came to Boloygne and there taryed, for they had sent an haraulde to kynge Henry: for without assuraunce they durst nat go, for all the truce that was bytwene bothe realmes. Kynge Henry, who thought hymselfe moche bounde to the Frenche kynge, for the chere that he hadde in Fraunce, toke counsayle and concluded, and so the haraulde was answered, that it was the kynges pleasure

CAP. CCXLII

How newes of the taking of kyng Rycharde was knowen in Fraunce.

that they and their company shulde come into Englande, and to come the streyght way to the kyng, and nat to ryde out of the way without lycence. The haraulde retourned to Boloyne, and shewed what he had done; wherwith they were content, and so shypped their horses, and toke the see and aryved at Dover, where they founde redy a knyght of the kynges howse, who receyved theym: they had sene hym before with kyng Henry in Fraunce, wherby they were soner acquaynted. So they taryed at Dover tyll their horses were unshypped, and than they rode to Caunterbury. And wheresoever they bayted or lay, their hostes were payed: at laste they came to Eltham, and there they founde kyng Henry and parte of his counsayle. The kinge made them good chere for the love of the Frenche kynge. Than they shewed the kyng the cause of their comynge. The kynge aunswered and sayde: Sirs, ye shal go to London, and there I wyll be within this foure dayes and assemble my counsayle, and than ye shall have aunswere of your demaunde. That daye they dyned with the kynge, and after dyner they rode to London, and the sayde knyght of the kynges styll with them, who sawe them well lodged. The kinge acordyng to his promyse came to Westmynster, and these Frenche knyghtes had knowlege of the kynges commynge thyder, and made them redy to go whan they shulde be sent for. The kynge had his counsayle with hym, and than it was devysed what answere they shulde have. Than they were sent for, and than it was shewed them, that where as they desyred to se the quene, their desyre shulde nat be denyed, so that they wolde swere and promesse that nouther they nor nonne of their menne shulde speke any worde of that was fallen upon king Rycharde. For it was said to them, that if they dyd, they shulde rynne in great dyspleasure of the people, and be in great parell of their lives. The two knightes sayd they wolde in no wyse breake the ordre that they had sette, but obey their commaundement. They sayd, whan they had ones sene and spoken with her, than they wolde retourne and departe. Anon after, the erle of Northumberlande brought theym to Haveringe of the Bowre to the yonge quene, who was there as than, and with her the duches of Irelande, doughter to

CAP. CCXLII

How newes of the taking of kyng Rycharde was knowen in Fraunce.

the lorde Coucy, and the duchesse of Gloucestre with her doughters, and other ladyes and damoselles. The quene receyved them swetely, and demaunded of them howe the Frenche kinge her father dyd and the quene her mother. They sayde, Well, and so communed with her a gret season. They kepte well their promesse, for they spake no worde of kynge Rycharde. Than they tooke leave of the quene and retourned to London: than shortely after they wente to Eltham to the kynge, and there dyned; and the kyng gave them fayre presentes and jowelles, and ryght amyably they toke their leave of the kynge, who sayd to them: Syrs, ye may say whan ye come into Fraunce, that the quene of Englande shall have no hurte nor trouble, but shall alwaies kepe her estate as to her belongeth, and shall enjoy all her right, for as yet she shall nat knowe the mutacyons of the worlde. Of these wordes spoken of the kynges mouth the two knyghtes were well content, and so departed and lay at Dertforde, and the next day at Osprynge, and so to Caunterbury, and than to Dover. And all their costes and charges commynge and goynge the kynges offycers payed. Than they tooke the see, and aryved at Boloyne and so to Parys, and there founde the kyng and the quene, and shewed them all that they had sene and herde.

Nowe let us somwhat speake of Englande.

CAP. CCXLIII

Howe certayne lordes in Englande rose up wit an army to have delyvered kyng Rycharde, an to have dystroyed kyng Henry; and howe the were slayne.

DIVERS questyons and argumentes were made i Englande amonge noble men and counsayls of th good townes, that Richarde of Burdeaux was dee and slayne, wherfore men spake no more of hym, for well h had deserved it.[1] To these poyntes kyng Henry answere and sayd: Nay, quod he, I have pytie of his dethe; I wyl never consent therto: to kepe hym in prisone is suffycient I have warranted his lyfe, and I wyll kepe my promyse Suche as wolde have had hym deed sayd: Sir, we se well y have pytie on hym, but ye do for yourselfe a perylou thyng; for as long as he is alyve, though he have wyllyngl resigned to you the crowne of Englande, and that every ma hath receyved you as kyng, and have made to you fayth and homage, yet it can nat be but that there be in th realme some that loved hym, and as yet do, who wold lightly ryse against you, if they might se any lykelyhode o his delyveraunce. Also the Frenche kynge is sore displease for his trouble; he wolde soone be revenged yf he myght and he is of great puyssaunce, with suche ayde as he may fynde in Englande. The kynge aunswered and sayde: A longe as I se nat the contrary, or that the Frenche kyng wyll take no parte agaynst me, I wyll kepe my promyse This aunswere that the kynge made had nere hand have ben to his owne distructyon. The erle of Huntyngton sir Johan of Hollande, brother to kyng Richarde, whc hadde to wyfe kynge Henryes suster, could nat forgett the adventure of his brother; no more coude the erle o Salisbury: and they had at Oxenforde secrete counsayl toguyder. And they devysed how they might delyve kynge Richarde out of the towre and distroye kyng Henry and bring a trouble agayne into the realme. They devysed

[1] *que Richart de Bourdeaulx fuist mort, par quoy on ne pensast plus sus luy, car bien l'avoit deserwy.*

CAP. CCXLIII

Howe certayne lordes in Englande rose up with an army to have delyvered kyng Rycharde, and to have dystroyed kyng Henry.

to make a justes of twentie knyghtes and twentie squyers to be holden at Oxenforde, and howe they wolde desyre the kyng to be there prively: and whyle he shulde be syttynge at the table to slee hym. For they had devysed to have hadde men ynowe to have perfourmed their ententes; and they had redy a preest called Madalyn,[1] who was a syngar in kynge Rychardes chapell, to have putte hym in the kynges appareyle, for he was lyke kynge Rycharde in favoure. And than they wolde have made the people to have beleved that kynge Richarde hadde been delyvered, and returned into his fyrst state, and thanne to have sente worde of their dede to the Frenche kynge, that he shulde incontynent have sente into Englande some socoure to them by the erle of saynt Poule or by some other. As they had devysed so they dyde begynne. They caused a feest at Oxenforde to be proclaymed of twentie knyghtes and twentie squyers, well accompanyed with ladyes and damoselles; they hadde also on their partie the yonge erle of Kente, nephue to sir Johan Hollande, and also another great lorde, the lorde Spensar: and they beleved to have hadde on their partie the erle Johan of Rutlande, because kynge Henry had put hym out of the offyce of the constableshyppe of Englande; but he fayled theym; for some sayde, by hym they were bewrayed. This feest provyded for, than the erle of Huntyngton came to Wyndsore, where the kynge was, and humbly made his reverence, as he that thought to have disceyved the kynge with swete wordes, and to have gote hym to have come to this feest: the whiche to do he desyred the kyng effectuously. And the kyng, who thought none yvell, graunted hym so to do; wherof the erle was ryght joyouse, and departed fro the kynge and toke his leave, and sayde to the Chanon Robsarde: Sir, appareyle you to come to our feest; I promyse the, if I mete the there in the felde, I shall gyve the a fayre encountre with my speare. Than sir Johan Robsarde sayd: Sir, if the kyng come to your feest, ye shall nat fayle to fynde me there. Than the erle strake his hande in his, and thanked hym, and so passed forthe. Dyvers knightes and squyers prepared themselfes to be at that feest: all the armorers in London were sette a worke to trymme men in their

[1] *Maladyn* P.

CAP. CCXLIII

Howe certayne lordes in Englande rose up with an army to have delyvered kyng Rycharde, and to have dystroyed kyng Henry.

harnesse for the justes. Suche as were of the kynges counsayle sayde to hym: Sir, ye have nothynge to do there; ye shall nat come there by our advyse: we have herde certayne wordes in murmuryng, the which are nat very pleasaunt nor agreable: we shall knowe more shortely. The kynge beleved their counsaile, and so came nat at that feest, nor none of his knyghtes, nor but fewe came thyther of suche as they wolde have slayne.

Whan the erle of Salisbury, the erle of Huntyngton, and the erle of Kente, and the lorde Spensar sawe that they hadde fayled of their entente, and that they coude nat have the kyng as they wolde, than they counsayled toguyder and sayde: Lette us go to Wynsore and styrre up the countre, and we shall putte Madalyn in estate royall, and ryde with hym, and make the people beleve that it is kynge Rycharde, who is delyvered out of prisone: all suche as shall se hym wyll beleve it, and all suche as here therof, and thus we shall distroy our ennemyes. As they devysed so they dyde, and assembled togyder, so that they were a fyve hundred men one and other: and they dyd putte this Madalyn in appareyle royall, and made hym to ryde with theym, and so rode towardes Wyndsore, where kynge Henry was. Godde dyde ayde kynge Henry, for tidynges came to hym howe the sayd lordes were commynge with a great nombre to Wynsore to slee hym, and howe they were men ynowe to wynne the castell, and howe they had made Madalyn in vesture lyke a kyng to ryde with them, and made the people beleve that kynge Rycharde was delyvered: And moche people beleveth it, and some saye they have sene him, and beleve verily that it is he; wherfore, sir, get you hens incontynent and ryde to London, for they are commynge streyght hyder.

The kynge beleved their counsayle, and so he and all his men lepte on their horses and departed fro Wyndsore and rode towardes London. And the kynge was nat farre gone but that these lordes came to Wyndsore, and entred in at the gates of the castell, for there was none to saye theym naye. Thanne they wente sertchynge fro chambre to chambre, and in the chanons houses, wenyng to fynde the kynge, but they fayled. Whanne they sawe it wolde nat

be, they were right sore displeased, and than departed fro Wynsore, and lay that nyght at Colebroke; and they made moche people to go with them, what by force and by treatie, sayeng, howe kynge Rycharde was in their company: some beleved it and some nat. Kyng Henry, who douted of trayson, hasted hym in his journey, and came to the towre of London by a secrete waye. Than he went to Richarde of Burdeux, and sayd: I have saved your lyfe with moche payne, and nowe ye wolde murder me by your brother and other, but this enterprice shall be yvell for you. Richarde of Burdeaux excused hym greatly, and sayd: As God myght helpe hym and save his soule, he knewe nothynge therof, nor he wolde never desire other estate than he was in. Thus the mater stode. Than kyng Henry sent for the mayre of London, and for other of his speciall frendes, and than he shewed them all the mater as it was. The Londoners had great marveyle therof, and said: Sir, ye must sende for your men and go agaynst them betymes, or they multiply any further: we have made you kynge, and so ye shall contynue, whosoever have envy therat. Than letters were written in hast, and messangers sent forthe into all partes. The kyng wrote to his constable, the erle of Northumberlande, and to his marshall, the erle of Westmerlande, and to all other knyghtes and squyers into Essexe, and into other places where as he thought to have ayde of men: suche as herde therof came to the kyng as fast as they might.

CAP. CCXLIII

Howe certayne lordes in Englande rose up with an army to have delyvered kyng Rychardo, and to have dystroyed kyng Henry.

Than the erles of Huntyngton and of Salisbury, and other of their affynyte, toke counsayle and advyse to drawe towardes London: for they sayde it coude nat be none otherwyse but that some of the Londoners loved kynge Rycharde, and all such, they said, wolde come to take their parte. Than they departed fro Colbrooke, and went and lodged at Braynforde, a sevyn myle fro London; but there was never a Londoner that came to them, but drewe all into their cytie. Whan these lordes sawe that, the nexte mornynge they tooke the way to saynt Albons, and there lodged, and taryed there a day; and fro thens they went to Barcamstede. Thus they went about the countre, and styll made to be reported that this Madalyn was kyng

CAP. CCXLIII

Howe certayne lordes in Englande rose up with an army to have delyvered kyng Rycharde, and to have dystroyed kyng Henry.

Richarde, and so came to a good towne called Suscettour,[1] where there was a baylye sette there by kynge Henry, who had the kepyng of the towne and the countrey thereabout. Whan these lordes were come to Suscettour, they lodged there one nyght in reste and peace, for the bayly was nat strong ynough to fyght with them, therfore he dissymuled as well as he myght. And the nexte mornynge the erle of Salisbury and the lorde Spensar departed fro the erle of Huntyngton and fro the erle of Kent, and sayd howe they wolde ride further to get and to turne mo men to their opinyon, and to go and se the lorde Bercley, and to ryde along by the ryver of Syverne. They were yvell counsayled whan they departed one fro another, for they were so moche the weaker. The erle of Huntyngton began to treate with the bayly and with the men of Suscettour, and shewed them howe kynge Richarde was delyvered, and howe that the Londoners had delyvered hym, and that he shulde be there within two dayes after. The bayly, who had assembled a good nombre of them of the countrey, sayde that the contrarye was trewe, and howe that he had such tidynges fro kyng Henry and fro the Londoners, that he wolde execute their comaundement. Whan therle of Huntyngton herde those wordes he chaunged colour, and sawe well he was disceyved. Than he entred into his lodging and armed hym, and caused his men to do the same, and thought to conquere those villayns by batayle, and to sette the towne a fyre, therby to abasshe the people. The baylye of the towne on the other parte hasted hym, and assembled all his men in a certayne place, and he was with archers and other a two thousande men, and the lordes had nat past a thre hundred men; howebeit, they came oute of their lodgynges and began the batayle, and archers shotte on both partes, so that many were hurte. Than the bayly with his great nombre came upon them without sparynge, for he had speciall comaundement fro kynge Henry, that he shulde outher take them quicke or deed, if he myght overcome them. So finally the erles menne were fayne to withdrawe into the houses; than the bayly and his men envyroned their lodgynges on all partes, and specially where the two erles were, and made there suche assautes that they entred per-

[1] *Cirencester.*

force: there were many hurte and slayne. Therle of Huntyngton defended hymselfe valyauntly as longe as he myght; but there were so many agaynst hym, that there he was slayne, and with hym the yonge erle of Kente, for whom great sorowe was made in dyvers partes of Englande: for he was a fayre yonge man, and was there in maner agaynst his wyll, but his uncle and the erle of Salisbury brought hym therto. The men of Suscettour, who were fierse agaynst them, strake of their heedes, and sent them by a messanger to the mayre of London, therwith to rejoyce the kyng and the Londoners. Therle of Salisbury and the lorde Spensar came to a lyke conclusyon, for certayne knightes and squiers of the kynges toke them where they were, and strake of their heedes and sente them to London; and many such as were with them alyed were putte to execucion, bothe knyghtes and squyers. After that the realme was in good rest and peace.

CAP. CCXLIII

Howe certayne lordes in Englande rose up with an army to have delyvered kyng Rycharde, and to have dystroyed kyng Henry.

CAP. CCXLIIII

Howe the Frenche kyng reysed up an army to sende upon the fronters of Englande.

WHAN Easter was come, the yere of our Lorde God M. four hundred, the Frenche kyng, his brother, his uncles, and his counsaile understode howe certayne Englysshmen of armes and archers shulde passe the see and come to Calais and to Guynes, to Hammes, and to those fronters. Than there was a commaundement made throughe Fraunce, that every knight and squyer shulde be redy to leape a horsbacke, and to go thider as they shulde be sente; specially Bolonois and the see syde was well provyded for.

The same tyme Johan of Bretayne died, and behynde he lefte two sonnes and a doughter. The eldest sonne shulde have maried the Frenche kynges seconde doughter, for he might nat have theldest, bycause she was maryed into Englande to kynge Richarde. This treatie of maryage fyrst for the eldest doughter of Fraunce with the heyre of

CAP. CCXLIIII

Howe the Frenche kyng reysed up an army to sende upon the fronters of Englande.

Bretayne was concluded at Tourse in Tourayn, but aft warde by the kinges consent and his counsaile, and thentent to marry her the more richely, that mariage w broken with Bretayne, and she maried into Englande. A dyvers lordes in Fraunce said and feared that no go shulde come therof; but than they concluded for t seconde doughter. Than after the dethe of the duke Bretaine, it was advised that the duke of Orlyaunce, wi a certayne nombre of men of warre, shulde drawe to t marches of Bretayne to speke with the Bretons, and wi the counsaylours of good townes, to know what they wol do with their heyre, and to desyre them to delyver him be kept in the house of Fraunce. The duke of Orlyaun dyd acording to this devyse, and with a certayne nomb came to Ponthorson and there rested, and sente worde his commyng to the lordes of Bretaigne. Than prelat lordes, and counsaylours of the good townes, in the nai of the thre estates of the countre assembled togider, a were determyned what aunswere to make, and so they ca to Pounthorson to the duke of Orlyaunce, and there th made their answere all after one sorte. And that was, th said, howe that their yonge lorde and heyre of Bretayr they wolde kepe hym themselfes in his owne countre. Th the duke of Orlyaunce, seyng it wolde none otherwise be, toke bondes of the grettest lordes in Bretayne, suche as h chefe charge of the countre, that they shulde delyver hy to the Frenche kyng whan the childe shulde come to h age. These writynges made and sealed, than the du departed and returned into Fraunce, and shewed the kyr his brother howe he had spedde.

It was well knowen in Englande howe the Frenche kyr hadde furnysshed his garysons, cyties, good townes, a castels, on the fronters of Picardy and Bolonois, and ho the Frenchmen had closed so the passage over the wat of Somme, that no marchandyse, corne, nor other thyr shulde nat passe Abvyle. Nor the marchauntes of En lande, who were wont to go into France with the marchaundise, durst no more come there, nor the Frenc marchauntes durste nat come into Englande, so that t fronters on bothe parties were in gret ruyne and desolacio

and yet they made no warre togyder, for they had no commaundement so to do. Than it was said to kyng Henry: Sir, advyse you well; it semeth by the Frenchmen they wyll make you warre; they make great provisyon for shyppes at Harflewe; and capitayns of their armye is the erle of saynt Poule and sir Charles de la Breth. And it were to suppose, that if the erles of Huntyngton and of Salysbury were alyve, and all suche as be dedde, the Frenchmen than wolde soone passe over the see, on trust to have great alyaunce and ayde in Englande. But, sir, as longe as Richarde of Burdeaux is alyve, you nor your realme shal be at no suretie. I beleve that ye saye is trewe, quod the kyng; but as for me, I wyll nat cause hym to be slayne, for I have so promysed hym, and I wyll kepe my promyse, without I parceyve that he worke trayson agaynst me. Well, sir, quod they of his counsaile, it were better for you that he were deed rather than alyve; for as longe as the Frenchemen knowe that he is lyveng, they wyll enforce them to make you warre, and wyll hope alwayes to bring him agayne into his former estate, bycause of his wyfe the Frenche kynges doughter. The kyng gave none aunswere, but departed fro them as than, and lefte his counsayle communyng togyder, and the kynge wente and toke a faucon on his hande, and passed over that mater.

CAP. CCXLIIII

Howe the Frenche kyng reysed up an army to sende upon the fronters of Englande.

CAP. CCXLV

Of the dethe of kyng Rycharde of Englande; and howe the truse bytwene England and Fraunce was renewed; and also of the deposicion of pope Benedic at Avignon.

IT was nat longe after that true tidynges ran thorough London, howe Richarde of Burdeaulx was deed; but howe he dyed, and by what meanes I coulde nat tell whan I wrote this cronycle. But this kynge Rycharde deed was layde in a lytter and sette in a chayre, covered with blacke baudkynne, and foure horses all blacke in the

CAP. CCXLV Of the dethe of kyng Rychardo of Englande.

chayre, and two men in blacke leadyng the chayre, and four knyghtes all in black folowyng. Thus the chare departed fro the towre of London, and was brought along throughe London fayre and softely tyll they came into Chepesyde, where as the chefe assembly of London was, and there the chare rested the space of two houres. Thyder came in and out mo than xx. M. persons, men and women, to se hym where as he laye, his hedde on a blacke quisshen and his visage open. Some had on hym pytie and some none, but sayd he had long ago deserved dethe. Now consider well ye great lordes, kynges, dukes, erles, barons, and prelates, and all men of great lynage and puissaunce; se and beholde howe the fortunes of this worlde are marveylous, and turne diversly. This kyng Richarde reigned kynge of Englande xxii. yere in great prosperite, holdyng great estate and signorie: there was never before any kyng of Englande that spente so moche in his house as he dyd, by a C. M. florens every yere: for I, sir John Froissart, chanon and treasourer of Chinay, knewe it well, for I was in his court more than a quarter of a yere togider, and he made me good chere, bycause that in my youthe I was clerke and servaunt to the noble kynge Edwarde the Thirde his grauntfather, and with my lady Philyp of Heynault, quene of Englande, his grandame. And whan I departed fro hym it was at Wynsore; and at my departynge the kyng sent me by a knight of his, called sir John Golofer, a goblet of sylver and gylte, weyeng two marke of silver, and within it a C. nobles, by the which I am as yet the better, and shal be as long as I lyve; wherfore I am bounde to praye to God for his soule, and with moche sorowe I write of his dethe. But because I have contynued this historie, therfore I write therof to folowe it. In my tyme I have sene two things; though they differ, yet they be true. I was in the cytie of Burdeaux, and sytting at the table whan kyng Richarde was borne, the whiche was on a Tuisday aboute x. of the clocke. The same tyme there came there as I was sir Richarde Pountchardon, marshall as than of Acquytayne, and he said to me: Froissart, write and put in memorie that as nowe my lady princesse is brought abeed with a fayre son on this twelfe daye, that is the day of the

thre kynges, and he is son to a kynges son, and shall be a kyng. This gentyll knight said trouthe, for he was kynge of Englande xxii. yere. But whan this knyght sayd these wordes, he knewe full lytell what shulde be his conclusyon. And the same tyme that kynge Richarde was borne, his father the prince was in Galyce, the whiche kyng Dompeter had gyven hym, and he was there to conquere the realme. Upon these thyngs I have greatlye imagined sythe; for the fyrst yere that I came into Englande into the servyce of quene Philyppe, kynge Edwarde and the quene and all their chyldren were as than at Barcamstede, a maner of the prince of Wales beyonde London. The kynge and the quene were come thyder to take leave of their sone the Prince and the Princesse, who were goyng into Acquitayne. And there I herde an ancient knyght devyse amonge the ladyes, and sayde: There is a booke which is called le Brust; and it devyseth that the prince of Wales, eldest son to the king, nor the duke of Glocestre, shuld never be kyng of Englande; but the realme and crowne shuld returne to the house of Lancastre. There I, Johan Froissart, auctour of this cronycle, consydring all these thynges, I say these two knyghtes, sir Richarde Pountcardon and sir Bartylmewe of Bruels,[1] sayd both trouthe. For I sawe, and so dyde all the worlde, Rycharde of Burdeaux xxii. yere kyng of Englande, and after the crowne retourned to the house of Lancastre, and that was whan kyng Henry was kyng, the which he had never ben if Richarde of Burdeaux had dalte amyably with him; for the Londoners made hym kyng because they had pytie on hym and on his chyldren.

CAP. CCXLV
Of the dethe of kyng Rycharde of Englande.

[1] *Burghersh.*

Thus whan kynge Richarde had layne two houres in the chare in Chepesyde, than they drave the chare forwarde. And whan the foure knyghtes that folowed the chare afote were without London, they lept than on their horses, which were there redy for them. And so they rode tyll they came to a vyllage called Langley, a xxx. myle from London, and there this kyng Richarde was buryed; God have mercy on his soule.

Tydinges spredde abrode howe kyng Richarde was deed; he taryed[2] every daye for it, for every man myght well con-

[2] *on n'en attendoit autre chose.*

CAP. CCXLV

Of the dethe of kyng Rycharde of Englande.

sydre that he shulde never come out of prisone alyve. His dethe was long kepte and hydde fro his wyfe. The Frenche kynge and his counsayle were well enformed of all this, and the knightes and squyers desyred nothyng but the warre, and that they myght ryde upon the fronters. Howebeit, the counsayls, as well of the one realme as of the other, toke their advyse, and thought it best to upholde styll the truse that was taken before; they thought it more profitable than the warre. And a new treatie was devysed to be in the marches of Calais, bycause the Frenche kyng was nat in good case, nor had nat been sythe he knewe of the trouble that kyng Richarde was in. And yet his sicknesse doubled whan he knewe that he was deed, so that the duke of Burgoyne had the chefe rule of the realme; and he came to saynt Omers and to Burbourc, where the duke of Burbone was, and sir Charles de la Brest, and Charles of Hangeers, and Johan of Castell Morant; and of prelates, the patriarke of Jerusalem, and the bysshoppes of Paris and of Beavoyes. And on the Englysshe partie there was the erle of Northumberlande, the erle of Rutlande, the erle of Devonshyre, and the lorde Henry Percy, the erles sonne, and Yvan of Fitzwaren; and prelates, there were the bysshoppes of Wynchester and of Ely. The Frenchemen demaunded to have agayne delyvered the yong quene of Englande, but the Englysshemen wolde in no wyse delyver her, but sayd she shulde lyve styll in Englande upon her dowrie; and that though she had lost her husbande, they wolde provyde for her another, that shulde be fayre, yong, and gentyll, with whom she shuld be better pleased than with Richard of Burdeaux, for he was olde, and this shuld be the prince of Wales, eldest sone to kyng Henry. To this the Frenchmen wolde nat agre, for they wolde nat consent therto without licence of the kyng her father, who as than was nat in good poynt, for he was farre out of the way; no medysyn coude helpe hym. So that mater was layde aparte, and the treatie of truse went forwarde in suche wyse that by consent of both parties they sware and were bounde to kepe the truse xxvi. yere more, to the four yeres that it had endured, the whiche in all was xxx. yere, accordynge to the fyrst covenant: and upon this, writinges were made and sealed

by procuracyons of bothe kyngs. This done every man returned to their own countreis.

CAP. CCXLV
Of the dethe of kyng Rycharde of Englande.

I have nat as yet shewed you what became of therle Marshall, by whom fyrst all these trybulacyons began in the realme of Englande; but nowe I shall shewe you. He was at Venyce, and whan he knewe that kynge Henry was kynge, and kynge Rycharde taken and deed, he toke therof so great dyspleysure and sorowe, that he layde hym downe on his bedde and fell in a fransy, and so dyed. Suche mischevousnesse fell in those dayes upon great lordes of Englande.

And in the yere of our Lorde God a thousande four hundred, one lesse, pope Benedic at Avignon, who had ben susteyned long by the Frenchemen, was as than deposed. And in lykewyse so was the kynge of Almaygne, for his yvell dedes: for the electours of the empyre and all the dukes and barons of Almaygne rose agaynst hym, and sente hym into Boesme, where as he was kyng. And they chose another, a valyaunt and a wyse man to be kyng of Almayne, and he was one of the Bavyers, and was called Robert of Heleberge;[1] and he came to Coloygne, where he was crowned with the crowne of Almayne; for they of Ayes wolde nat open their towne to hym, nor the duke of Guerles wolde nat be under his obeysaunce. This newe kynge of Almaygne promysed to bring the churche to a unyte and peace. Howebeit, the Frenche kynge and his counsayle treated with the Legeoys, who helde with the Pope at Rhome. And they dyde so moche by the meanes of sir Baudwyn of Mount Jardyne, who governed a great parte of the bysshoprike of Liege, who was a knyght of the Frenche kynges; so that by his meanes, at the desyre of the Frenche kyng, the countrey of Liege tourned to become neuter; so that the Legeois sente to Rome for all the clergy that were there of their countrey to come by a certayne day, or els to lese all their benefyces in the countrey. Whan they herde that, they returned fro Rome and came to Liege. And pope Bonyface, who lost moche by that transmutacion, sente a legate into Almaygne to preche amonge them, to cause them to retourne agayne to his parte; but the legate durst nat passe Cologne, and sent letters to

[1] *Heidelberg.*

CAP. CCXLV Of the dethe of kyng Rycharde of Englande.

Liege. Whanne those letters were reed, the messanger aunswered, that on payne of drownyng he shulde no n come on suche message. For they sayd, As many messan as cometh with any suche message shal be drowned in ryver of Moeuze.

FINIS TOTIUS FROISSART.

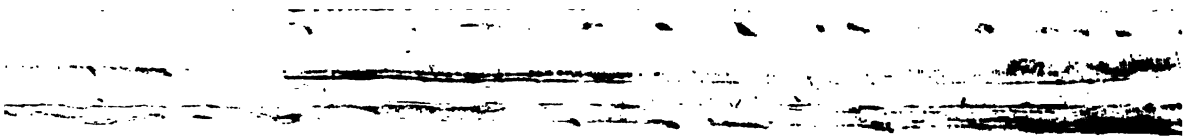
Thus endeth the thirde and fourthe boke of sir J Froissart, of the cronycles of Englande, Fraunce, Spay Portyngale, Scotlande, Bretaygne, Flaunders, and other pla adjoynynge: Translated out of Frenche into matern Englysshe, by John Bourchier knyght, lorde Berners, depu generall of the kynges towne of Calais and marches of same. At the hyghe commaundement of our moost redou soverayne lorde kyng Henry the eight, kyng of Engla and of Fraunce, and hyghe defender of the Christen fayt etc. The whiche two bokes be compyled into one volu and fynysshed in the sayd towne of Calais the x. day Marche, in the xvi. yere of our sayd soverayne lor raigne. Imprinted at London in Fletestrete, by Rychar Pynson, printer to the kynges moost noble grace. And ended the last day of August: the yere of our Lorde God M.D.xxv.

Cum privylegio a rege indulto.

INDEX

BY

R. W. CHAMBERS



SYR JOHN FROISSART

INDEX

ABERDEEN (Berdane, *Berners*), assembly of Scots at; v. 207—.
Aberdeen, William Deyn, bishop of; taken at Neville's Cross i. 314.
Abingdon, sir Thomas; iii. 22, 34; v. 213; at Otterburn 224.
Abydos, the lord of; vi. 280—.
Achon. *See* Apchon.
Ackerman, François; iii. 301—, 342, 404, 414, 452, 481—; iv. 26—, 35—, 72; death 309—.
Acy, Jean la Personne, vicomte d'; at Poitiers i. 375; ii. 425, 456; iii. 142, 361—; v. 253, 269.
Referred to by Froissart as vicomte d'Aulnay.
Africa, crusade in, under the duke of Bourbon; v. 358—, 396—.
Agen, Raymond de Salg, bishop of; ii. 184.
Aghorisses, le sire d'; ii. 189—, 265—, 280, 299, 301, 351, 368—, 391—, 416—; iv. 60, 308.
Not identified by Kervin de Lettenhove.
Agimont, Louis d'; i. 168.
Aguillon, captured by English; i. 251; besieged 268—; siege raised 305.
Aineval. *See* Esneval.
Aire, Jean d'; one of the six burgesses of Calais; i. 330.
Akerman. *See* Ackerman.
Albrecht (Albrest, Albreth, *Berners*) of Germany; ii. 8.
Albret, Bernard Ezy, comte d'; i. 393.
Died 1358.
Albret, Arnaud Amanieu, comte d'; ii. 76, 106, 164, 173, 182—, 209—; marriage 228—; 240, 264, 339, 348—, 442, 476; iii. 361—, 410; iv. 138—, 225.
Died 1401. Son of Bernard Ezy.
Albret, Bernard or Bérard d', sire de Géronde; ii. 189, 209, 281, 351, 367, 476; iv. 105.
Albret, Charles d'; ii. 246; v. 324; vi. 216—, 387, 400.
Died 1415. Son of Arnaud Armanieu.
Albret, Perducas d'; ii. 112—, 154, 169—, 190, 209, 262—, 280—, 351, 475—; iii. 36, 234, 243, 343; death 344.
Albuquerque, Sancho of. *See* Sancho, Don.
Alençon, Charles, comte d'; i. 119, 156, 170, 181; death, at Crécy, 297-300.
Alençon, Pierre, comte d'; at Poitiers, 'the yong erle of Alencon'; i. 366—; ii. 74, 100, 251, 336—, 375, 396—, 425, 429; iii. 19; iv. 364—.
Died 1404. Son of Charles, comte d'Alençon.
Alençon, Robert. *See* Perche, Robert d'Alençon, comte de.
Alessandria, comte d'Armagnac slain before; v. 449—.
Alfonso XI., king of Castile. *See* Castile.
Aljubarotta, battle of; iv. 186—, 273—.
Alphonse, Étienne; i. 413.
Amboise, Pierre, sire d'; iii. 171—.
Amboise, Engorgié d'; v. 402.
Brother of Pierre, sire d'Amboise.
Ambreticourt. *See* Aubrecicourt.
Amiens, Edward III. does homage to Philip of Valois at; i. 78—; ii. 4;

negotiations at, between England and France vi. 34—.
Amiens, Jean de la Grange, cardinal, bishop of; ii. 451, 456; iii. 72.
Amposta, châtelain d'; at Poitiers i. 373, 387.
Amurath, Bajazet, known as Amurath Baquin, sultan of Turkey. *See* Turkey.
Ancenis, the lord; i. 75. *See* Aubigny, sire d'.
Ancenis, sire d'; i. 230; ii. 129—, 479.
Ancenis, Guillaume d'; iv. 478—.
Andeiro, João Fernandez, count of Ourem; iii. 219, 284, 287; iv. 244—, 253—.
Andewarpe. *See* Audenarde.
Andrehen. *See* Audrehem.
Andrehen, the castle of. *See* Wondelghem.
Angain, Sir Thomas; iii. 138.
Angiers (Hangiers), le sire d'; i. 289.
Anglais, le bourg. *See* Bourg Anglais.
Angle, Guichard. *See* Huntingdon, Guichard d'Angle, earl of.
Angle, Jean d'; ii. 401.
Angoulême; surrenders to the English i. 259; besieged by duke of Normandy 268-71.
Anjou, Louis, duke of; i. 353; at Poitiers 361—; ii. 96, 121, 143—, 220, 245-55, 261, 294, 335—, 348, 359—, 375, 428—, 441—, 456; campaign in Gascony 473—; 506; iii. 11, 70—, 154—, 266, 278—, 484; death 485; iv. 110, 123—.
Died 1384. Second son of king John.
Anjou, Marie de Châtillon, duchess of; iv. 15, 16; v. 138, 173, 288-91, 456; vi. 177, 187-9.
Died 1404. Wife of Louis.
Anjou, Louis, duke of. *See* Naples, Louis d'Anjou, king of.
Anne of Bohemia. *See* England, Anne of Bohemia, wife of Richard II., king of.
Annequin, Baudouin de Lens, seigneur d'; i. 317; ii. 12, 43, 50, 109—; death, 120.
Master of the crossbows 1360.
Died 1364.
Anthon, Hugues de Genève, sire d'; ii. 57.
Antin, seigneur d'; iv. 97, 126,
Antin, Pierre d'; iv. 97, 99—, 123, 373.
Antoing, Henri d'; i. 111, 138,
Died 1345.
Antoing, Hugues de Melun d'; i 154, 205-12, 464; iii. 122.
Died 1405.
Antoing, Henri de Melun d'; 97—; v. 361, 404—; slain Nicopolis, vi. 240.
Died 1397. Son of Hugues Melun, above.
Anvaing, Thierri d'; iii. 322—.
Anxell, earl of. *See* Tello, Don.
Aparte. *See* Appert.
Apchier, Guérin, sire d'; at Poit i. 375; ii. 31, 340; iii. 62.
Apchon, Guillaume, sire d'; Poitiers i. 375; ii. 31, 340.
Apchon, Louis, sire d'; v. 116.
Appert, sir John; ii. 423, 445, 45
Aragon, Peter IV., king of (13 87); undertakes crusade (13 i. 89; ii. 151—, 170—, 181, 220 380; iv. 370.
Aragon, John I., king of (1387-9 iv. 370—; v. 290.
Son of Peter IV. above.
Aragon, Martin, king of (1395-141 vi. 331—.
Son of Peter IV. above.
Aragon, Yolande de Bar, wife John I., king of; iv. 370; v. 2 vi. 63.
Aragon, Raymond d'; v. 265.
Araines, Lionnel d'; ii. 449; 179—.
Archiac, Foulques d'; ii. 93.
Archpriest, the. *See* Cervol Arnaud de, known as l'arciprêtr
Archyer, lord of. *See* Apchi Guérin, sire d'.
Arcy, sire d'; ii. 367, 370.
Ardembourg, surprised by Ach mann; iv. 27—.
Ardres, capture of by French; 275, 463—.
Argenton, Aimeri d'; at Poiti i. 375.
Argenton, Geoffroi d'; ii. 278, 2 323, 350, 364—, 373, 383, 4 412; v. 181.

Armagnac, Jean, comte d'; i. 119, 156; ii. 76, 164, 184, 189, 202, 209, 214, 229—, 240, 261—, 275, 339, 341, 348—; iv. 95—.
First count of the name. Died 1373.

Armagnac, Jean, comte d'; ii. 442.
Second count of the name. Died 1381. Son of preceding.

Armagnac, Jean, comte d'; v. 76—, 110, 363, 442-55.
Third count of the name. Died 1391. Son of preceding.

Armagnac, Bernard, comte d'; v. 251, 444.
Died 1418. Son of Jean II.

Armenia, Leon de Lusignan, king of; iv. 226—, 354—; vi. 115.

Arminacke. *See* Armagnac.

Armoises (Armoyes, *Berners*), Charles des; v. 287.

Armoises, Philippe des; ii. 19.

Armynacke. *See* Armagnac.

Arras, council of, i. 170; riots at i. 353, 355.

Arsyn, 'the town of'; i. 288.
A mistranslation: '*Et deffendu sus le hart que nuls ne fourfesist riens à la ville, d'arsin ni d'aultre cose.*'

Artevelde, Jacob van; i. 94—, 122—, 132, 148, 150-2; death 260-5.

Artevelde, Philip van; iii. 214—, 255—; death 395.

Arthies, Philippe d'; ii. 126.

Artigue, Aymenion de l', chief of 'companions'; ii. 79, 154, 209, 262, 267, 276, 281.

Artois, Robert, comte d'; i. 28—, 77; exiled from France 813-['wherofe the erle of Artoyse was cause'; a mistranslation of '*Dont la conté d'Artois estoit cause, que li dis Messires Robers voloit avoir gaagnié*'; 'sir Robert, erle of Artoyse,' for Robert d'Artois, by error of Berners, p. 82]; in England 84—, 91; 106, 109, 118; at Sluys 148, 150-2; 166, 170; death 218-24.

Artois, Charles d'; i. 353, 375 (called James by Berners), 378.
Brother of the earl of Eu.

Artois, Jean, Philippe, d'. *See* Eu, Jean, Philippe, d'Artois, comte d'.

Artois, Philippe de Bourgogne, comte d'. *See* Bourgogne.

Artois, Marguerite, comtesse d'; iii. 102.

Arundel, Edmund Fitz-Alan, earl of (1285-1326); i. 34-6.

Arundel, Richard Fitz-Alan, earl of; i. 225; in France (campaign of 1346) 276—; ii. 165, 414.
Died 1376. Second earl of the name. Son of Edmund, earl of Arundel.

Arundel, Richard Fitz-Alan, earl of; iii. 27; iv. 22, 52, 308, 390; v. 5—, 149, 177—, 245-7, 262-3; vi. 128, 140, 261—; arrest and death 297—.
Died 1397. Third earl of the name. Son of Richard (II.), earl of Arundel, who died 1376.

Arundel, John Fitz-Alan, known as John of Arundel, ii. 461; iii. 11.
Brother of above. Marshal of England; perished at sea, 1379.

Arundel, Thomas Fitz-Alan, earl of Arundel and Surrey; vi. 362.
Died 1415. Called by a mistake of Froissart's '*Richard*, son to the earl of Arundel.'

Arundel, William of; vi. 128.

Arundel, sir John; iii. 28—, 109; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 352.

Arzac, Raymond; iv. 170.

Aseton, sir John; ii. 345, 499; iii. 13. *See also* Asweton.

Ashton, sir Robert; ii. 492—; iii. 34.

Asnede. *See* Azevedo.

Assneton. *See* Aseton.

Asweton, sir William; iii. 477.
Perhaps Swinton.

Athènes, Gaulthier de Brienne, duc d'; i. 119, 134, 350—; at Poitiers 364; death 376.

Atreman. *See* Ackerman.

Aubenton, sack of; i. 128—.

Auberoche, capture and siege of; i. 243—.

Aubeterre, Robert, sire d'; ii. 189.

Aubière, Louis d'; v. 116, 330-41, 372-80.

INDEX

Aubigny, sire d' (Ancenis, *Berners*); i. 75, 269; at Crécy 295, 301.
Aubrecicourt, Nicolas or Colard d', seigneur de Buignicourt; i. 29—.
Not Eustace, as glossed.
Aubrecicourt, Nicolas or Colard d'; ii. 54, 131; iv. 308.
Probably a son of Nicolas d'Aubrecicourt, seigneur de Buignicourt.
Aubrecicourt, Eustache d'; i. 358; at Poitiers 369, 371—; ii. 8, 18—, 28, 44, 52, 131—, 154—, 169, 189, 273—, 281, 299, 333—, 351; death 363.
Died about 1373. Son of Nicolas d'Aubrecicourt, seigneur de Buignicourt.
Aubrecicourt, François; ii. 363.
Son of Eustache d'Aubrecicourt.
Aubrecicourt, Jean d'; iii. 131, 180—; iv. 288, 318—, 398, 404, 405, 475; v. 51—, 65, 150; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 342—; vi. 386.
Son of Nicolas d'Aubrecicourt, second on list.
Aubriot, Hugues; iii. 264.
Aucer. *See* Auxerre.
Audeley, sir James; in France (campaign of 1346) i. 277—; at Poitiers 369—; ii. 38, 45, 221, 278, 284, 293; death 295.
Died 1386.
Audeley, sir Peter; in France (campaign of 1346) i. 277—; at Poitiers 369—; ii. 8, 16, 28.
Brother of sir James Audeley.
Audenarde; besieged by men of Ghent iii. 98—, 330—; captured by Ackerman 453—; retaken 481—.
Audrehem, Arnoul d'; i. 103, 304, 343, 354—; at Poitiers 364, 372; ii. 19, 26, 94, 122, 154—, 197, 201-23, 291.
Died 1370.
Aufemont, le sire d'; v. 402.
Aulnay, vicomte d'. *See* Acy, Jean la Personne, vicomte d'.
Aumale, Jean d'Harcourt, comte d'; at Crécy i. 300.
Wounded, but not, as Froissart says, killed at Crécy. He became subsequently comte d'Harcourt. *See* Harcourt, Jean v., comte d'.
Aunay, Jean la Personne, vicomte d'. *See* Acy, vicomte d'.
Aunoy, Philippe, le Gallois d'; iii. 179—.
Auray; siege of i. 200-7; battle and siege of ii. 128—; retaken by the French 469—.
Austin, sir John; ii. 263, 426.
Auterive, Olivier d'; iii. 116, 120.
Auterive, Roger d'; iii. 81—.
Autun, Nicolas de Coulon, bishop of; v. 269.
Auvaugour. *See* Avaugour.
Auvergne, Jean, comte d', also comte de Boulogne; ii. 31, 340.
Died 1374. First count of the name.
Auvergne, Jean, comte d', also comte de Boulogne; iii. 19, 363—.
Son of Jean I.
Auvergne, Eléonore de Comminges, comtesse de Boulogne et d'Auvergne; iv. 131.
Auvergne, Gui d', called cardinal de Boulogne; i. 333, 346—; ii. 90.
Brother of count Jean I. Archbishop of Lyons. Died 1373.
Auvergne, Godefroi d', called de Boulogne; ii. 30, 261, 340.
Brother of count Jean I.
Auvergne, Jean, comte de Clermont, and dauphin d'Auvergne (1324-51); i. 119, 166, 267-9.
Auvergne, Béraud, comte de Clermont and dauphin d'; ii. 30, 74, 258—, 375, 396—, 416, 425, 429, 450; iii. 19, 363—, 449; v. 77—, 129, 203, 333, 360 (the erle of Auvergne); 363 (dolphin of Auvergne and therle of Clermounte); v. 402 (again as two persons); 430.
Died 1400.
Auvergne (Daulphin, Dolphyn, *Berners*), Hugues d'; ii. 261, 268, 340, 375.
Second son of Béraud I., dauphin d'Auvergne.
Auvergne (Daulphin, Dolphyn, *Berners*), Robert d'; ii. 30—; v. 372-80.
Third son of Béraud I.

Auvilliers, Pierre d'; ii. 406.
Auxerre, Jean de Blangy, bishop of; i. 170.
Auxerre, bishop of; i. 408.
Auxerre, Jean de Chalon, comte d'; i. 119, 134, 206; death at Crécy 301.
Second count of the name.
Auxerre, Jean de Chalon, comte d'; ii. 106, 109—, 122—.
Died about 1361. Third count of the name.
Auxerre, Jean de Chalon, comte d'; ii. 221.
Fourth count of the name. Died 1379.
Auxerre, Louis d'; ii. 127.
Died 1398. Son of Jean III.
Avaugour, Guillaume, sire d'; i. 232.
Avaugour, Guillaume d'; ii. 129—, 423, 447.
Avernesquyn. *See* Erskine.
Avignon; 'companions' in the neighbourhood of ii. 86—; Louis of Naples visits the pope at v. 288—; Charles VI. visits 291—.
Aymery, John; iv. 155.
Azay, Gui d', seneschal of Toulouse; ii. 174—.
Azevedo, Lopo Dias de (Posdiche de Asnede, Dassue); v. 46.

BACON, GUILLAUME DE; i. 232.
Bacon, a free-lance; i. 334-5.
Bacquehem. *See* Baquehem.
Bacs (Batsch), bishop of; iv. 44.
Other MS. readings are Bassières and Vassieul (whence Berners' Wasselure).
Badefol, Seguin de Gontaut, sire de; ii. 79, 85, 88.
Chief of 'companions.'
Badefol, Ernaudon de; ii. 265, 287, 288; iv. 213—.
Bastard brother of Seguin de Badefol.
Badefol, Bernardet de; ii. 265, 287, 288.
Bastard brother of Seguin de Badefol.
Badefol, Antoine or Thonnet; ii. 341.
Son of Seguin de Badefol.
Badefol, Hugues de; i. 250—.
Bageran, Naudon de, chief of 'companions'; ii. 79, 85, 154, 169, 178, 190, 209, 227, 262, 276, 351; v. 110.
Bageraut. *See* Bageran.
Bagha (Baghes, Balgette, *Berners*), Raymond de; iii. 36, 40; iv. 376—; v. 290.
Bahucet, Pierre. *See* Behucet, Nicolas.
Baide, Alain; v. 413.
Baie, la (de Bourgneuf); defeat of Flemings in ii. 377.
Baighes, Raymonde de. *See* Bagha.
Bailleul, Edward. *See* Balliol, Edward.
Bailleul, Gauvain de; ii. 55, 154, 205-12, 235, 449, 464.
Bailleul, Guillaume de; i. 143, 158-60.
Bailleul, Jean de; iv. 16.
Bailleul, Pierre de; iv. 14, 15.
Bailleul, Robert de; i. 158—.
Baillol, Edward. *See* Balliol.
Baissi, Jean de; i. 144.
Bajazet, emperor of Turkey. *See* Turkey.
Ball, John; iii. 224—.
Balliol, Edward; i. 87; at Neville's Cross 313.
Balyngham. *See* Lelinghen.
Banaster, Sir Thomas; ii. 54, 189, 222, 263, 280, 299, 327; iii. 109.
There is a Thomas Banaster, squire to the earl of Derby, whose identity with the above is doubtful.
Bangher, Donnage. *See* Vagor, Dominge.
Bannockburn, battle of; i. 21; v. 233.
Bansiers, le sire de. *See* Bousies.
Baquehem, Arnould de; i. 106—; at Buironfosse 118, 143; 152, 165.
Bar, Yolande de, queen of Aragon. *See* Aragon.
Bar, Henri, comte de; i. 119, 156.
Died 1344. Fourth count of the name.
Bar, Robert, duc de; iii. 142.
Son of Henri, comte de Bar, above.

INDEX

Bar, Henri de; v. 204; vi. 185, 194; taken prisoner at Nicopolis 236—; 246, 285, 287; death 290.
Son of Robert, duc de Bar, above.
Bar, Philip de; v. 360, 402—; vi. 185, 194; killed at Nicopolis, 236.
Second son of Robert, duc de Bar.
Bar, Pierre de; ii. 19, 456.
Barbançon, Jean, sire de; i. 143; ii. 270.
Barbavara; i. 108, 146—.
Admiral of the French fleet.
Barbays (i. 143). *See* Marbais.
Barbazan, Monault de; iv. 105, 118—, 212, 414.
Barbe, Olim; v. 78, 121-2, 179, 369, 374-5.
Chief of 'companions.'
Barbenoyre. *See* Barbavara.
Barde. *See* Barthe.
Baréges, Bertrand de; iv. 110, 170, 185, 191, 197.
Barfleur; taken by the English i. 279.
Barkley, the lorde (i. 119). *See* Berkeley, Thomas de.
Barlier, viscount of. *See* Bellière.
Baron, Sir William. *See* Bacon.
Baronaige, Jean de; iii. 322—.
Barres, Jean, known as le Barrois des; iii. 142, 164—, 192, 369; iv. 289, 295—, 301—, 397, 433, 475; v. 51, 176; vi. 54, 81—, 137, 384.
Barsyes, Bastien and Candrelier de; i. 165.
Barthe, Géraud, vicomte (called by Froissart sire) de la; i. 236, 247.
Died 1352.
Barthe, Jean, vicomte (called by Froissart sire) de la; ii. 190, 229, 253—, 267, 339, 442; iii. 222, 253, 269, 288; vi. 134.
Died 1398. Son of Géraud above.
Bartlett, the lord of; i. 277.
Froissart has 'le sires de Sully, le sires de Bercler.' Bartlett apparently stands for the second of these, Berkeley, *q.v.*
Bascle. *See* Le Bascle.
Bassett, Ralph, lord B. of Drayton; i. 119.
Died 1343.
Bassett, Ralph, lord B. of Drayto in France (campaign of 1346) 277—, 328, 358-69; ii. 290, 4 442; iii. 109, 130, 167—; iv. 2
Died 1390. Grandson of p ceding.
Bassoues, castle of; taken iv. 213-
Bastefoll. *See* Badefol.
Bastell, the Moyne of. *See* Bazeil le Moine de.
Bastes (i. 165). *See* Barsyes.
Bastweiler, battle of; v. 96.
Bataillier. *See* Batillier.
Batefoll. *See* Badefol.
Bath, John Harewell, bishop of; 229, 249.
Batillier, Naudon; ii. 79, 154.
Chief of 'companions.'
Baudresen. *See* Bautersem.
Bauffremont, Jacques de; vi. 285.
Baume, Étienne, known as le Gall de la; i. 108, 135-9, 182.
Master of the Crossbows. R ferred to (i. 182) by an er of Berners as one of t Genoese leaders.
Bautersem, Gérard van der Heyde seigneur de; i. 113; ii. 34.
Bautersem, Henri de, sire de Berghe ii. 34.
Baux, Agot des; i. 252—.
Bavaria, Stephen, duke of; iv. 30- vi. 202.
Bavaria, Frederic of; iii. 439, 443- iv. 31—.
Bavaria, Lewis of, emperor of G many. *See* Germany.
Baveux. *See* Le Baveux.
Bayeux, Miles de Dormans, bish of. *See* Beauvais, bishop of.
Bayeux, Nicolas du Bosc, bishop v. 273.
Bayona, surrender to John of Gaun iv. 339—.
Bayonne; Peter the Cruel at 161—; town besieged by t Spaniards iii. 12; duke of La caster at v. 76, 154—.
Bazeilles, le Moine de; i. 295-6.
Beamont, the lord of (i. 124). S Bosmont.
Beannoys, sir Robert of. *See* Bea manoir, Jean de.

Béarn, Gaston, comte de; iv. 133—.
Béarn, Pierre de; iv. 104—, 145—, 413.
Bastard brother of Gaston-Phébus.
Béarn, Florence de Biscaye, wife of Pierre de; iv. 146.
Béarn (Arnaud Guillaume de); iv. 413.
Bastard brother of Gaston-Phébus.
Béarn, Pierre Arnaud de; ii. 443; iii. 7; iv. 97, 123—.
Cousin of Gaston-Phébus.
Béarn, Jean de; iv. 97, 123—, 373.
Brother of Pierre Arnaud.
Béarn, Jean de; iv. 128.
Son of Pierre Arnaud.
Beaucaire, seneschal of; i. 269—; ii. 174—; vi. 330.
This office was held by Enguerrand d'Eudin, Charles d'Hangest, and Guillaume Roland.
Beauchamp, sir John; i. 119; at Sluys 148; in France (campaign of 1346) 277—.
Died 1360. Second son of Guy de Beauchamp, earl of Warwick.
Beauchamp, sir Lewis; i. 99, 119; in France (campaign of 1346) 277—.
Identity doubtful.
Beauchamp, sir William; ii. 189, 207-9, 338, 351, 368, 434; iii. 222, 253, 269, 288, 421, 437; iv. 287; v. 273.
Died 1411. Younger son of Thomas de Beauchamp, earl of Warwick.
Beauchamp, Thomas de. *See* Warwick, Thomas de Beauchamp, earl of.
Beauchamp, Roger de; in France (campaign of 1346) i. 277—; 339; ii. 314.
Died 1380.
Beauchamp, Edward de; iii. 179—.
Son of Roger de Beauchamp.
Beauchamp, sir John de, lord Beauchamp; iv. 312; v. 14, 20—, 37; death 39.
Died 1388. Son of Richard Beauchamp of Holt.
Beaufort, sir John; v. 402; vi. 190.
Eldest son of John of Gaunt and Catherine Swynford; subsequently earl of Somerset. Died 1409.
Beaufort, Henry; vi. 190.
Second son of John of Gaunt and Catherine Swynford; subsequently bishop of Lincoln and Winchester. Died 1447. Confused with Thomas, below.
Beaufort, sir Thomas; vi. 190.
Third son of John of Gaunt and Catherine Swynford; subsequently duke of Exeter. Died 1427.
Beaufort, Roger de; ii. 268, 350—.
Beaujeu, Édouard de; i. 121, 149, 160, 267-9; at Crécy 295; 301, 326.
Died 1351.
Beaujeu, Guichard de; i. 365—(Richard of Beauyeu); 375 (James of Beauyeu); 376 (name correctly given).
Brother of Édouard de Beaujeu, above.
Beaujeu, Robert de; ii. 83, 84.
Brother of Édouard de Beaujeu, above.
Beaujeu, Louis de; ii. 83.
Brother of Édouard de Beaujeu, above.
Beaujeu, Antoine de; ii. 106—, 122, 126, 154, 157, 261, 268, 275, 329, 340, 375.
Son of Édouard de Beaujeu.
Beaulieu, Guillaume de; ii. 471—; iii. 59.
Beaumanoir, Jean de; i. 215 (Robert de Beannoys); ii. 134.
The third of the name: Froissart calls him Robert.
Beaumanoir, Jean de; ii. 396, 407-9, 418, 447; iii. 9, 128; iv. 447—.
Fourth of the name. Died 1386.
Beaumont, Jean de Hainault, sire de; i. 29—, 43—, 65, 91—, 106—; at Buironfosse 118; 124, 128—, 141—, 150, 160—, 170; son killed in a tournament 217; 226, 266, 281; at Crécy 299-301; 324, 327.

INDEX

Beaumont, Louis de Brienne, vicomte de; ii. 106, 109—; death 119.
Killed at the battle of Cocherel, 1364.
Beaumont, Alain de; ii. 418—, 475, 478; vi. 173.
Beaumont, Henry, viscount; i. 37.
Beaumont, Sir John; iii. 420—; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 342—; vi. 145.
Great-grandson of preceding. Sometimes called by Froissart, in error, 'Henry.'
Beaumoys (i. 408). *See* Beauvais.
Beau Revoyr, the lord of. *See* Beaurieu, Sanche de.
Beaurieu, Florent de Beaumont, known as Sanche de; i. 136, 143, 165.
Beausault, Jean de Montmorency, sire de; i. 75.
Beausault, Jean de Montmorency, sire de; ii. 12.
Died 1375. Son of Jean, above.
Beautresen. *See* Bautersem.
Beauvais, Colard, le châtelain de; i. 344.
Beauvais, Guillaume, le châtelain de; ii. 55, 449.
Son of Colard. Died 1390.
Beauvais, Jean de Marigny, bishop of (1313-47); i. 79, 170, 267, 287.
Beauvais, Philippe d'Alençon, bishop of; i. 408.
Beauvais, Miles de Dormans, bishop first of Bayeux, then of Beauvais (1376-87); ii. 451; iii. 348; death iv. 477.
Beauyeu, James of (i. 375). *See* Beaujeu, Guichard de.
Beawyeu (Richard of). *See* Beaujeu, Guichard de.
Bécherel, siege of; ii. 423—, 445, 450.
Behayne. *See* Bohemia.
Behucet, Nicolas; i. 108, 146.
Called by Froissart 'Pierre.'
Bele, John la (i. 17). *See* Le Bel, Jean.
Belgrattchi (Brehappe, *Berners*), Corbodas of; vi. 197—.
Bellebrune, Baudouin de; i. 304, 332 (Bardon de Belborne).
Belleperche, capture of, ii. 290—, 329—.
Belleperche, Herbert de; iii. 366.
Bellière, vicomte de la; iii. 13, 27, 369; iv. 210, 289, 434; v. 51.
Belperch. *See* Belleperche.
Belyer. *See* Bellière.
Benac, Raymond de; iv. 105.
Benedict XII., XIII. *See under* Popes.
Benon, castle taken by French; ii. 412-13.
Béquisy, Luc de; ii. 4, 25.
Berdane. *See* Aberdeen.
Bergerac; taken by the earl of Derby i. 237—; siege of ii. 473—.
Bergerant. *See* Bageran.
Berghes, Arnould de Wesemaele, sire de; i. 113; at Buironfosse 118.
Berguettes, Jean de; ii. 154, 205-12; iii. 219.
Berkeley, Thomas de; i. 119, 277 (Barlett), 339.
Berkeley, Maurice de; at Poitiers i. 369—; 377.
Berlaymont, Fastré de; ii. 442.
Berlaymont, Jean de; iii. 203.
Berlette, Jean de; iv. 14, 15.
Bernage. *See* Baronaige.
Bernecque, le sire de; iv. 197.
Bernier, Jean, of Valenciennes; i. 137.
Bernier, sir Thomas; iii. 144.
Bernoys, Perrot. *See* Fontaines, Pérot de, known as Le Béarnais.
Berry, Jean, duke of; at Poitiers i. 361—; ii. 74, 96, 100, 241, 251, 261, 268, 335-49, 375, 396—, 409, 416, 422; iii. 19, 154, 335, 362—, 439—, 465; iv. 130, 352—, 358—, 378, 457; v. 111, 135, 154-8, 171—, 203; marriage with Jeanne de Boulogne 268-71; 294—, 333-4, 371-95; vi. 21-9, 53, 60—, 226-30, 251.
Died 1416.
Berry, Jeanne d'Armagnac, duchess of; v. 135.
First wife of Jean, duc de Berry.
Berry, Jeanne de Boulogne, duchess of; negotiations for marriage to duke of Berry v. 251-4; 268-71;

vi. 6; intercedes for Bureau de la Rivière 86; 97—, 101.
Second wife of Jean, duc de Berry.
Berry, Jean de, comte de Montpensier; marriage to Marie (*i.e.* Catherine de France) and her death v. 135.
Son of the duke of Berry.
Berry, Catherine de France, wife of Jean de Berry, comte de Montpensier; marriage (1386), and death (1388) v. 135.
Froissart by mistake calls her Marie.
Berry, Marie de; iii. 493; v. 135; vi. 1, 163, 340.
Daughter of the duke of Berry and Jeanne d'Armagnac. She married (1) Louis de Blois; (2) Philippe d'Artois, comte d'Eu; (3) Jean, duc de Bourbon, and died in 1434.
Berry, Thomas of. *See* Erskine, sir Thomas.
Bertencourt. *See* Betencourt.
Berthout, Florent; marries his daughter to the duke of Guelderland v. 82—.
Bertrame, the marshal. *See* Bertrand, Robert, baron de Briquebecq.
Bertrand, Robert, baron de Briquebecq; i. 116, 151, 200.
Bertuell. *See* Breteuil.
Berwick; captured by the Scots and retaken by the English ii. 492—.
Bétencourt, le sire de; v. 402.
Béthune, Jean de; iii. 433.
Bétisac; v. 291; trial and death of 311-18.
Bette, Simon; iii. 120, 208; death 260—.
Beu, Guillaume de; at Nicopolis vi. 236.
Beufz, Beusz. *See* Buch.
Beuill. *See* Bueil.
Beverhoutsveld, battle of; iii. 313.
Beverley, sir John; iv. 287, 325.
Biscay, Don Tello, count of. *See* Tello, Don.
Biset, William; ii. 492—.
Bisset, sir Thomas; i. 268.
Black Prince, the, Edward, Prince of Wales, known as. *See* Wales.
Blainville, Jean, known as Mouton de; ii. 126, 423, 445, 450, 464; iii. 20, 361—; v. 195, 238, 263.
Blaisi, Jean de; iii. 473.
Blanchetaque, battle of; i. 291—.
Blandeau, William. *See* Blondel, Guillaume.
Blanquebourg. *See* Brandenburg.
Bleville, Colinet de; i. 354 (Olyver Doubles).
Blois, Gui, comte de; i. 119.
First of the name. Died 1342.
Blois, Louis, comte de; i. 156, 170, 181, 200; death at Crécy 300.
Died 1346. Son of Gui I. above.
Blois, Louis, comte de; ii. 74.
Died 1372. Eldest son of Louis de Blois, above.
Blois, Jean, comte de; ii. 270; v. 88, 100; death, 89.
Died 1381. Second son of count Louis I. He claimed the duchy of Guelderland in right of his wife, daughter of Renaud II. of Guelderland and Sophia Berthout.
Blois, Gui, comte de; ii. 74 (hostage in England in place of his brother Louis; Berners mistranslates); 100, 251, 270, 336, 340, 349, 449; iii. 363—, 401—, 443, 485, 493; iv. 86, 442; v. 89, 104, 134, 171, 203, 274; sells the county to duke of Touraine vi. 28-32; 92; death 295.
Died in 1397. Patron of Froissart. Second count Gui; third son of count Louis I.
Blois, Marie de Namur, wife of Gui, comte de; vi. 28-32, 295.
Blois, Louis de, known also as Louis de Châtillon; iii. 493; v. 104; marriage with Marie de Berry 135; death vi. 1.
Died 1391. Son of count Gui II.
Blois, Marie de Berry, wife of Louis de. *See* Berry, Marie de.
Blois, Charles de. *See* Brittany, duke of.
Blondel, Guillaume; i. 137.
Blondel, Jean; ii. 293-4.
Boccanegra, Ambrose; ii. 386—; iii. 12.

INDEX

Boele, Jean; iii. 96—, 104—, 113—, 193—; death 197.
Bohemia, John of Luxembourg, king of; i. 73, 77 (called by a mistake of Froissart's 'Charles'); 78; undertakes crusade 89 (called first 'Loys' (?=li roys) by mistake of Berners, or Verard, lower on same page 'Charles'); 94 (Charles); 119, 156-9, 281; at Crécy 298-9.
Bohemia, Charles, king of. *See* Germany, Charles, emperor of.
Bohemia, Wenceslas, king of. *See* Germany, Wenceslas, emperor of.
Bohemia, Anne of. *See* England, Anne of Bohemia, wife of Richard II., king of.
Bohemia, Wenceslas of. *See* Brabant, Wenceslas, duke of.
Bois Ruffin, Pierre de; ii. 125.
Bois, Henri du; i. 340.
Bolayne. *See* Pont Vallain.
Boloyne. *See* Boulogne.
Boloyne, Godefroi de. *See* Auvergne, Godefroi d'.
Boloyn, John of. *See* Auvergne, Jean, comte d'.
Bond, sir Nicholas; ii. 196, 211, 280.
Boniface IX. *See under* Popes.
Bonne-Lance, Jean; v. 111, 115-8, 330-41.
Bonnemare, Guillaume de; i. 415; ii. 7.
Bordeaux; return of Prince of Wales to after Poitiers i. 386; Prince of Wales holds parliament at ii. 164; jousts at, before the seneschal iv. 378—; before the duke of Lancaster v. 263—; attempts to persuade town to turn French unsuccessful vi. 384—.
Bordeaux, archbishop of; ii. 184; iv. 372.
Bordes, Guillaume des; ii. 261-6, 277, 301, 325-8, 407, 436—, 464, 469—; iii. 58—, 361—; vi. 71, 105.
Bordes, Jean des; iv. 370.
Bordes, le seigneur des; iv. 197, 281.
Borgneval, Bernard, sire de; at Buironfosse i. 118.
Borgneval, Roland, sire de; v. 105, 189-92.
Borne, Waleran de Fauquemont, sire de; ii. 311, 317.
Bornesell. *See* Bournazel.
Borrow, Alain; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 355.
Bos, Tristan du; i. 402; iii. 348.
Bosmont (Beamont, *Berners*), Jean de Coucy, sire de Bosmont et de Vervins (Breme, Bremus, *Berners*); i. 124, 128—.
Bossche, Pierre van den; iii. 96—, 113—, 193—, 255—, 398—, 435; iv. 73—, 309, 392-3.
Boucinel, Jean; iii. 188—.
Bouciquaut, Jean le Meingre, known as; i. 137, 358; ii. 94, 99—, 122-8, 147.
The elder Bouciquaut. Died 1368.
Bouciquaut, Jean le Meingre, known as; iv. 370; v. 65-6; taken prisoner in Guelderland 235; 287; jousts at St. Inglevert 299-300; 308-9, 342-58, 413; vi. 40, 137, 185; taken at Nicopolis 236—, 246—, 287—, 325.
The younger Bouciquaut. Died 1421.
Boue, John de la (i. 124). *See* Bove.
Boulant, Renaud de; ii. 34.
Boulewas, sir John; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 342—.
Boulogne, pilgrimage to; ii. 73.
Boulogne, comtes de. *See* Auvergne, comtes de.
Boulogne, Godefroi de. *See* Auvergne, Godefroi de.
Boulogne, Guy, cardinal of. *See* Auvergne, Gui de Boulogne, cardinal de.
Boulogne, Philippe de Bourgogne, comte d'Artois et de Boulogne. *See* Bourgogne.
Boulogne, Jeanne de. *See* Berry, duchess of.
Bouquentin, le sire de; i. 238, 243.
Bourbon, Jacques de. *See* Marche, Jacques de Bourbon, comte de la.
Bourbon, Louis de Clermont, duke of; i. 77—.
The first duke of Bourbon. Died 1341. Berners (i. 79) speaks of 'the lorde Loys of Clere-

mont'—'the duke of Burbon' as if of two persons.
Bourbon, Pierre, duke of; i. 119, 156, 170, 181, 200, 267-70, 324-7; at Poitiers 364; death 376.
Died 1356. Son of Louis, above.
Bourbon, Isabelle, duchess of; ii. 290—, 332—, 337.
Wife of Pierre, duke of Bourbon.
Bourbon, Louis, duke of; ii. 74, 96, 100, 252, 329, 332-49, 363, 375, 396—, 409, 416, 425, 429; iii. 142, 154, 439—; iv. 18, 47, 389, 435, 455; v. 49-72, 203, 297—; leads crusade to Africa 360-2, 396—, 418, 430; vi. 60—, 228.
Son of Pierre de Bourbon and Isabeau de Valois. Died 1410.
Bourbon, Jacques de, known as Jacques de la Marche; ii. 464; iii. 363.
Bourbourg, English under Sir Hugh Spenser besieged in, and captured; iii. 451-62.
Bourch, Aymenion de; ii. 372.
? Edmund de Burgh.
Bourchier, Robert; i. 219, 294.
Bourchier, sir John; ii. 137—, 343; iii. 109, 130, 484; iv. 73, 84.
Bourchier, sir Bartholomew; iii. 133.
Bourdeille, siege of; ii. 265, 276, 286—.
Bourdes. *See* Bordes.
Bourduelle (Bourdonnell, *Berners*), Albrest, chief of 'companions'; ii. 79.
Bourg Anglais, le; v. 79, 80, 122.
Bourg la Reine; ii. 54, 55.
Bourge. *See* Burgh.
Bourgnevall. *See* Borgneval.
Bourgogne, Eudes, Philippe, duc de; Marguerite de Flandre, duchesse de. *See* Burgundy, Eudes, Philippe, duke of; Marguerite de Flandre, duchess of.
Bourgogne, Philippe de, comte d'Artois et de Boulogne; i. 206, 267 (therle of Arthoys, and of Colayne, *i.e.* Boulogne); death 305.
Generally referred to as count of Boulogne; son of duke Eudes de Bourgogne.
Bourgogne, Jean de; ii. 126.
Perhaps identical with the sire de Sombernon.
Bourgogne, Marguerite de. *See* Ostrevant, Marguerite de Bourgogne, comtesse d'.
Bournazel, Pierre Conrart, seigneur de; iii. 51.
Bours, le sire de; v. 402.
Bours. *See* Bourch.
Bousies, le sire de; i. 141.
Bousies, Baudouin, sire de; ii. 435—.
Bouteville; surrenders to the French iii. 47-8.
Boutillier, Guillaume le. *See* Le Boutillier, Guillaume.
Boves, Jean de; i. 124, 128—; ii. 438.
Boyes. *See* Bois.
Boys, Pierre du. *See* Bossche, Pierre van den.
Boyssey, John of. *See* Baissi, Jean de.
Brabant, John III., duke of; i. 82, 93, 101—, 110; at Buironfosse 118, 143, 150-1.
Died 1355.
Brabant, Jeanne, duchess of; ii. 270; iii. 302—, 486—, iv. 30—; v. 96—, 194, 199, 234; vi. 130.
Daughter of Jean III. Married Wenceslas of Bohemia. Died 1406.
Brabant, Wenceslas of Bohemia, duke of; ii. 108, 121; iii. 109, 259, 274; death 465; iv. 136; v. 90—(Bastweiler); death 100.
Son of John, king of Bohemia.
Brabant, le haze de; i. 197—, 203, 236.
Bradestane, sir Thomas; at Sluys i. 148; in France (campaign of 1346) 277; at Poitiers 369; iv. 288.
Braga, archbishop of; iv. 396, 403.
Braganza; duke of Lancaster at iv. 406—; jousts held at 419.
Braine, Pierre, comte de Dreux et de; i. 134.
Braine, Simon, comte de Braine et de Roucy; ii. 74.
Brandenbourg, Louis v., duke of Bavaria, marquis of; i. 106; at Buironfosse 118; 150-2.

INDEX

Brandenbourg, Sigismund of Luxembourg, marquis of; iv. 45; vi. 304.
Son of the emperor Wenceslas of Luxembourg. Froissart calls him 'Henry' by mistake.
Braque, Nicolas; ii. 99, 459; at Lelinghen v. 273.
Braquemont, Braque de; iii. 58—; iv. 58, 290, 295.
Froissart calls him 'Robert': his real name was William.
Braquemont, Jean de; v. 51.
Brother of Braque de Braquemont.
Braule, sir Nicholas. *See* Brembre, sir Nicholas.
Bray, Jacques de; ii. 262, 267, 276, 281, 336, 379.
Breches, Bartholomew of. *See* Burghersh.
Breda, le sire de; i. 118.
Brederode, Thierry de; iii. 100.
Brembre, sir Nicholas; iii. 243; iv. 312; v. 14, 20, 30—; death 39.
Brembre, sir Robert; iii. 251.
Probably a mistake for Nicholas Brembre.
Breme, the lord of. *See* Bosmont, Jean de Coucy, sire de Bosmont et de Vervins (Breme, *Berners*).
Brest, sieges of; ii. 428—; iv. 210—, 292—.
Bresuell. *See* Briffeuil.
Bretagne, Jean de; iii. 276; iv. 382—, 444; v. 138; becomes comte de Penthièvre vi. 25-7; 175, 296, 358; death 395.
Eldest son of Charles de Blois. Died 1403.
Bretagne, Gui de; iii. 276; death iv. 382.
Second son of Charles de Blois.
Bretat, Alphons. *See* Hurtado.
Breteuil, le bourge de; ii. 79, 85, 169, 178, 190, 209, 227, 262, 267, 276, 351.
Chief of 'companions.'
Brétigny, treaty of; ii. 55—.
Breuil, Guillaume du; ii. 181.
Brice, sir Hugh. *See* Broit, sir Hugh.
Briffeuil, Alard, sire de; i. 143.
Briffeuil, sire de; ii. 154, 205, 210, 212; iii. 99, 211.
Brignais, battle of; ii. 81—, 85; iv. 152.
Brimeu, Jean de; iii. 136.
Brine Costeret (O'Brien); vi. 150—.
Brionne, Hugues de; ii. 403.
Briquebec, Robert Bertrand, baron de; i. 344.
Briquet, sir Robert; ii. 79, 85, 123-4, 154, 169, 189; knighted 196; 209, 227, 262, 276, 361; iv. 158; v. 437—.
Chief of 'companions.'
Bristol (Bristowe, *Berners*); Edward II. at i. 34—; Richard II. at v. 23—.
Bristowe, John; i. 258, 267.
Brittany, Jean III., duke of; i. 119, 156; death 171.
Brittany, Charles de Blois, duke of; i. 156, 171-230 *passim*; taken prisoner by English 321-4; 334, 395; ii. 70; battle of Auray, and death 127—; canonised 142; iv. 380, 381.
Brittany, Jeanne, wife of Charles de Blois, duke of; i. 171, 324.
Brittany, Gui of, Jean of (sons of Charles de Blois). *See* Bretagne, Gui de, Jean de.
Brittany, Jean (IV.) de Montfort, duke of; i. 171—; death 185.
Died 1345. Brother of Jean III., above.
Brittany, Jeanne de Flandre, countess of Montfort and duchess of; i. 171—, 197; at siege of Hennebont 198-222 *passim*; 321—.
Brittany, Jean (V.) de Montfort, duke of; affianced to an English princess i. 197—; ii. 70, 128—, 144—, 149, 263, 354, 417, 425—, 434, 444, 451—, 456-59, 468; iii. 51—, 106—, 127—, 159—; makes peace with French king 185—; 442—, 465; iv. 210, 383—, 442—; v. 1—, 137-40, 145-9, 156-63, 170-7, 197-8, 436, 461; vi. 17-21, 24-8; with Pierre de Craon 44-56; war with Olivier de Clisson 105—; reconciliation 171-7; 230, 358.
Died 1399. Son of Jean de Montfort, above.

Brittany, Jean (VI.), duke of; vi. 27—, 145, 159, 174.
Died 1442. Son of Jean (V.) de Montfort.
Broc. *See* Broit.
Brocas, Bernard; vi. 374.
Broes. *See* Broit.
Broit, sir Hugh; ii. 427, 430, 440; iii. 14, 131; iv. 109—.
MSS. of Froissart have Broe, Bree, Broec, Brye, Byre.
Brosse, taken by the English; ii. 278.
Broton, sir Peter; iii. 140, 144.
Bruce, Robert, David. *See under* Scotland, kings of.
Bruges, negotiations at, between England and France; ii. 449—; alliance with Ghent iii. 94; battle of Beverhoutsveld, and capture of town by men of Ghent 313; surrender to the French 400.
Brunes. *See* Burghersh.
Bruniquel, Roger de Comminges, vicomte de; i. 247.
Bruniquel, Raymond de Comminges, vicomte de; ii. 267, 339.
Brunnes. *See* Buerghersh.
Brunswick, Otho of; iii. 68—; iv. 238.
Brunswick, duke of; i. 344.
Bruquedent, Simon and Jean de; i. 98-9.
Bryan, Guy de; ii. 377; v. 13.
Bryan, William; iii. 131.
Buch, Jean de Grailly, captal de; at Poitiers i. 363—; relieves Meaux 406; ii. 7, 55, 102-5; at Cocherel 108—; 121, 149, 164, 188—, 208-14, 254, 275, 281-9, 330, 340—, 350, 367, 371, 383, 391, 396, 405—, 413; death, 462-3.
Buchan, de Comyn, earl of; at Neville's Cross i. 313.
Buck, Jean, admiral of the Flemish fleet; iv. 391—.
Buckingham, Thomas of Woodstock, earl of. *See* Gloucester, Thomas, duke of.
Bucy, Simon de; i. 389, 401.
Budde. *See* Bude.
Bude, Silvestre; ii. 181, 221, 369, 379; iii. 63—; death 71.
Bueil, Jean de; ii. 265, 277, 301-5, 436—, 450, 475; iii. 152, 281; iv. 478—; v. 1—, 203.
Bueil, Pierre de; ii. 475-8; iii. 281; iv. 125.
Son of Jean de Bueil.
Buironfosse, Philip of Valois at; i. 116—.
Bulle. *See* Boele.
Burgh, sir John de; ii. 423, 450, 455, 470.
Burghersh (Bries, *Berners*), sir Bartholomew; in France (campaign of 1346) i. 277.
Died 1355.
Burghersh (Bruwes, Brunnes, *Berners*), sir Bartholomew; i. 358; at Poitiers 369-79; ii. 44-8, 99; vi. 399.
Died 1369. Son of Bartholomew de Burghersh above. Took prisoner at Poitiers the sire de Pompadour and Baudouin d'Annequin. Berners mistranslates '*La fu pris messires Baudouins d'Annekins et le Signeur de Pompadour de messire Biétremieu de Brues.*'
Burgundy, Eudes, duke of; i. 77, 156, 181, 267, 324, 327.
Died 1349; fourth of the name. In i. 267 Berners mistranslates his original, which runs: '*Li dus Oedes de Bourgogne . . . et messires Phelippes de Bourgogne, ses fils, contes d'Artois et de Boulogne.*
Burgundy, Philippe, called de Rouvre, duke of; ii. 57.
Died 1361; first of the name. Grandson of Eudes IV.
Burgundy, Philippe de France (le Hardi), duke of; at Poitiers i. 361—; taken prisoner, 382; ii. 98, 107; becomes duke 121—; marriage 272—; 291, 296—, 310—, 335, 409, 416, 451, 456, 463, 472—; iii. 19; mediation in Flanders, iii. 102—, 142—, 154, 333—, 439—, 465, 486—; iv. 40, 67—, 457—; v. 106, 171—, 203, 236, 294—; vi. 29, 60—, 76—, 110—, 178—, 225-30, 245—, 276—, 305, 344.
Fourth son of king John of

INDEX

France. Created duke of Burgundy 1363. Died 1404. Married Marguerite de Flandre, widow of Philippe de Rouvre.
Burgundy, Marguerite de Flandre, wife of Philippe de Rouvre and Philippe de France, dukes of; iii. 492; v. 294; vi. 76-7, 102, 178—.
Burgundy, Jean, count of Nevers, subsequently duke of Burgundy. *See* Nevers.
Burley, sir Richard; ii. 132—; v. 19, 44—; death 61.
Nephew of sir Simon Burley.
Burley, sir John; iii. 31, 59, 188, 221.
Burley, sir Simon; ii. 160, 193, 265-6, 334-7, 351; iii. 108, 478; iv. 312, 351; v. 14—.
Buthe. *See* Vucht.
Butler, sir John; v. 402.
Buxhull, sir Alan; ii. 99, 292, 325, 343, 360-2, 377, 450.
Buz. *See* Buch.
Bysette, Ernaut; iv. 118—.

CABESTAN. *See* Gabestan.
Cabroles, Robert de; v. 402.
Cadoudal, Guillaume de; i. 197—, 208, 222.
Cadoudal, Garnier, sire de; i. 323.
Cadsand, battle of; i. 98-9.
Caen, battle and sack of; i. 283-5.
Cahors, becomes French; ii. 269.
Cahors, Raoul de; i. 342.
Calais; siege of i. 304—; battle before 337-40.
Calam, le sire de; v. 401.
Calatrava, Don Pedro Moniz, grand master of the order of; ii. 156, 214; iii. 295.
Calençon. *See* Chalençon.
Calonne, Blanchart de; iii. 210, 482.
Calverley, sir Hugh; ii. 131—, 154, 157, 169, 186, 198, 209, 213, 263 276, 312, 318, 361, 434, 459, 463; iii. 56, 109, 130, 167—, 420—, 446; iv. 308.
Calverley, sir Hugh; iii. 131-7; iv. 288.
Illegitimate son of sir Hugh Calverley, above.
Cambray, siege of; i. 109—; n of the 'children of Burgoyn brated at iii. 487—.
Cambray, Guillaume d'A bishop of (1336-42); i. 107-
Cambray, Pierre André, bis (1347-68); ii. 43.
Cambray, Pierre d'Ailly, bis (d. 1425); vi. 305, 322.
Cambridge, Edmund, earl o York, Edmund, duke of.
Cambridge, John of; iii. 253, Subsequently earl of Camb Son of Edmund, earl o bridge and duke of Executed 1415.
Camoys, sir Ralph; ii. 196, 20
Camoys, sir Thomas; iii. 1 in Spain v. 64; 149.
Campagne, Arnaud, bourg de 150, 159.
Campaygne. *See* Caupenne.
Campestan, Peter. *See* Gabe Pierre de.
Campremy, le sire de; ii. 55; 364.
Camus, le bourg; ii. 85, 154, 209, 227, 262, 276, 336; iv. 1
Canny, Raoul de; ii. 1, 124, 347,
Canoll. *See* Knolles.
Cantemell. *See* Chantemerle.
Canterbury, taken by Wat T iii. 227; sir Simon Burley w to remove shrine of St. Thom Dover, 351—; Froissart at Ca bury and his journey to Lo vi. 131-4.
Canterbury, John Stratford, a bishop of (1333-48); at Nev Cross i. 313.
Canterbury, Simon of Sudb bishop of London (1362-75) archbishop of Canterbury (1375- ii. 451, 456; iii. 227; death 2
Canterbury, William Courtney, bi of London (1375-81) and a bishop of Canterbury (1381- iii. 419; iv. 436; v. 5—, 19, 39—.
Canterbury, Thomas Montagu, a bishop of (v. 21), an erro William Courtney, archbisho Canterbury, above.

Canterbury, Thomas Arundel, bishop of Ely (1374-88), archbishop of York (1388-96) and Canterbury (1396-1414); v. 11 (the chaunceler); vi. 267; invites Henry of Lancaster to England 353—; 378.
Cantiron, Jean de; at Otterburn v. 218, 228.
Caraman, Arnaud d'Euze, vicomte de; i. 236, 247; ii. 76, 164, 189, 209, 229, 253—, 267, 276, 339, 442.
Carasse. *See* Coarasse.
Carbenaux, Jean de; ii. 19.
Carbeston, the lord of; ii. 259, 263.
Carcassone, seneschal of; ii. 174—.
Gerard de Rousillon was seneschal of Carcassone in 1342.
Cardeillac, le bourg de; iv. 98, 121, 123.
Carentan; taken by the English i. 279; besieged by the French iii. 9—.
Carhaix; taken by Charles de Blois i. 211.
Carlouet. *See* Kerlouet.
Carma, sir John of; v. 402.
Carmaing, Carman, the earl of. *See* Caraman, Arnaud d'Euze, vicomte de.
Carouge, Jean, sire de; iv. 364; vi. 40.
Carpentras, bishop of. *See* Rouen, Guillaume de Lestrange, bishop of Carpentras and archbishop of Rouen.
Carra, Martino de la; ii. 186, 193, 207-15, 224; iii. 2, 7.
Caruet. *See* Charuel.
Carvoll. *See* Cervoles.
Casalis, Bertrand de; ii. 322.
Cassebegne. *See* Gaesbeck, le sire de.
Cassel, battle of; i. 72-3; battle between men of Cassel and English invaders under Sir Hugh Spenser iii. 431—; town taken by French 446—.
Castel, Gasis du. *See* Chastel, Garsis du.
Castelbon, Roger Bernard de Foix, vicomte de; i. 237-8, 243.
Castelbon, Roger Bernard de Foix, vicomte de; ii. 76, 164; iii. 7, 31, 36, 44; iv. 127.
Son of above.
Castelbon, Giraude de Navailles, vicomtesse de; iv. 375—.
Wife of Roger Bernard II.
Castelbon, Matthieu de Foix, vicomte de, subsequently comte de Foix. *See* Foix.
Castell Morant. *See* Chateaumorand.
Castelmoron, taken by the earl of Derby; i. 257.
Castelnau, Raymond Bernard de; i. 237-8, 243; iii. 141, 269, 288, 420—; vi. 134.
Castelnau, Jean de; iii. 140, 222, 252, 269, 288, 291, 420—; at Otterburn v. 218, 228, 233.
Brother of Raymond-Bernard.
Castel, Tanguy of the. *See* Chastel, Tennegui du.
Castile, Alfonso XI., king of (1312-50); ii. 152.
Castile, Peter IV. (the Cruel), king of; ii. 151—; knighted by the Prince of Wales 196; 198; at Najera 207, 211, 215, 216; 217—; refuses to redeem his promises to the Prince 222—; 233—; battle of Montiel 234—; death 238-9; remains transferred to Seville v. 266-8.
Son of Alphonso XI.; reigned 1350-69.
Castille, Blanche de Bourbon, wife of Peter the Cruel, king of Castile; ii. 152.
Daughter of Pierre I., duke of Bourbon.
Castile, Constance of. *See* Lancaster, Constance of Castile, duchess of.
Daughter of Peter the Cruel. Married John of Gaunt.
Castile, Isabel of. *See* York, Isabel of Castile, duchess of.
Daughter of Peter the Cruel. Married Edmund, duke of York.
Castile, Henry of Transtamare, king of; ii. 152—, 191—; at Najera 204—, 213, 220—; returns to Spain 225; to Castille 231—; battle of Montiel 234—; regains crown on death of Peter the Cruel 237—, 338, 379, 381, 386, 395; iii. 12, 43; death 44, 48.
Bastard brother of Peter the Cruel; reigned 1369-79.

INDEX

Castile, John I., king of; ii. 395; iii. 31—; crowned 44; 49—, 218—, 293—; iv. 91—, 170—; at Aljubarrota 189—; invades Portugal 263—, 429—; v. 49—, 165-70; death 441.
Son of Henry of Transtamare; reigned 1379-90.
Castile, Henry III., king of; v. 166; betrothed to Katherine of Lancaster 247; 260-2; crowned 441.
Son of John I.; reigned 1390-1406.
Castile, Catherine of Lancaster, queen of; v. 153, 169, 247, 262, 266.
Wife of Henry III. Died 1418.
Castillon, siege of; ii. 481—.
Castro, Fernando de; ii. 156, 158, 233, 236, 238-9; iii. 12.
Cator, Joachim; iii. 149—.
Caumont, Jean, sire de; i. 235, 369; ii. 164, 189, 209, 351, 367.
Caumont, Alexandre de; i. 257.
Brother of Jean de Caumont, above.
Caumont, Antoine de; i. 258.
Brother of Jean de Caumont, above.
Caumont, sire de; v. 265-6 (his son and brother joust at Bordeaux).
Caumont, l'Hermite de; i. 358.
Caumont, Guillaume de; v. 202.
Caumoyse, William of, hostage for king David; i. 394.
Unidentified. Possibly Cunningham.
Caupene, Raymond, sire de; vi. 134.
Caupene, le bourg de; v. 78—, 122, 179.
Raymond Guillaume de Caupene. 'Called Arnaldon.'
Cavency. *See* Chavency.
Cayeu (Caieux), Jean de; i. 151.
Cendrins, sir William; iii. 22, 34, 41.
Cervoles, Arnaud de, known as l'archiprêtre; at Poitiers i. 366—; 399; ii. 83-4, 109—, 121-6.
Chalençon, Guillaume sire de; at Poitiers, i. 375; ii. 30, 261, 268, 340, 375.
Châlon, Jean de; i. 156, 267; ii. 22.
Châlon, Louis de; ii. 83-4, 109—, 122, 126.
Died 1366.
Châlons; ii. 15—.
Châlons, le visdame de; i. 124; death 128—.
Châlons, bishop of; slain at Poitiers i. 376.
Chambly, Philippe, known as Grismuton de; i. 376.
Chambly, Jean, known as le Hase de; ii. 55.
Chamerolles, castle of, taken; ii. 125.
Chamont. *See* Caumont.
Champaigne, Alain de; v. 402.
Champeneyse, John; iii. 473—.
Champenon, sir Walter of (v. 401). *See* Châtillon, Gautier de.
Chandos, sir John; i. 111, 119; at Sluys 148; in France (campaign of 1346) 277—; 359, at Poitiers 368—.
Chandos, sir John; ii. 38, 45, 72-7, 92-7, 101; at Auray 128—; 160, 167, 171-2, 180-98, 206—, 212-14, 223, 231, 254, 267, 275-84, 289, 295, 298—; death 317—; 325; iv. 116; v. 6.
Chandos the herald; ii. 284, 288, 299, 332.
Chantemerle, Thibaut, known as Taupin de; vi. 41—, 62.
Chaponval, Jean, known as Chaponnet de; ii. 247—, 326.
Chappes, Gui de; ii. 45.
Chargney. *See* Charni.
Charité-sur-Loire; ii. 123, 127.
Charles V., Charles VI., kings of France. *See* France.
Charles IV., of Luxembourg, emperor of Germany. *See* Germany.
Charni, Geoffroi de; i. 151, 230, 317, 326; attempt on Calais 336-41; at Poitiers 364, 379.
Died 1356.
Charni, Geoffroi de; iii. 135, 297, 473; iv. 22, 58; v. 402.
Died 1398. Son of Geoffroi de Charni, above.
Chartres, Edward III. at; ii. 51—.
Chartres, bishop of; i. 79.
Chartres, Philippe or Guillaume de; ii. 124.
Charuel, Ivain or Jean. *See* Kerlouet.

Chastaulxe. *See* Chastel.
Chastel(Chastaulxe,*Berners*),Philippe du; i. 41.
Chastel, Tennegui du; i. 322—.
Chastel, Garsis du; ii. 79, 169, 189, 209, 379; iv. 110—.
Chastelbon. *See* Castelbon.
Chastellerault. *See* Chatellerault.
Chastellon. *See* (1) Castelbon; (2) Châtillon.
Chateaumorand, Jean de; iii. 164—, 180—; iv. 289, 295, 301—, 434; v. 286-7, 401; vi. 41—, 62, 81, 137, 244—, 400.
Chateau-Vilain, Jean, sire de; at Poitiers i. 375.
Chateau-Vilain, Jean de Thil-en-Auxois, sire de; at Poitiers i. 375; ii. 126, 352.
Châtelain de Beauvais. *See* Beauvais.
Chatellerault, taken by the French; ii. 328.
Chatellerault, Louis d'Harcourt, vicomte de; i. 345, 354, 392; ii. 189, 209, 254, 277-8, 293, 312, 323, 329, 350, 367, 374, 383, 401, 412.
Châtillon, Jean, sire de; i. 151; at Poitiers 364; ii. 12.
Died 1362.
Châtillon, Hugues de; ii. 124, 259, 315-18, 447—; iii. 364, 446.
Master of the crossbows. Son of Jean de Châtillon.
Châtillon, Jacques; divorced from daughter of Bureau de la Rivière; vi. 85.
Son of Hugues de Châtillon.
Châtillon, Gautier de; ii. 458.
Died 1377. Son of Jean de Châtillon.
Châtillon, Charles de; ii. 449.
Son of Gautier de Châtillon, above.
Châtillon, Gautier de; v. 401.
Châtillon, Louis de. *See* Blois, Louis de.
Chaucer, Geoffrey; ii. 459.
See *Life Records of Chaucer*, published by the Chaucer Society, p. 203—.
Chaudouvrier, Jean, mayor of Rochelle; ii. 388, 407—.
Chauffour, Thibaut de; ii. 8.
Chauffour, Jean de; ii. 8, 122.
Chaumont. *See* Caumont.
Chauvigny, sire de, vicomte de Brosse; ii. 277.
Chauvigny, the bastard of; v. 265.
Chavency, Gérard de; ii. 18.
Cherbourg; taken by the English i. 279; siege of ii. 467; iii. 28—; 59—.
Cheyne, sir Robert; ii. 123, 169, 177, 189, 209, 227, 262, 361; iv. 158, 480.
Cheyne, sir Thomas; ii. 461—.
Chin, Gilles de; ii. 437; v. 401, 414; vi. 216.
Chizé, siege and battle of; ii. 418—.
Cholet, sire de; iii. 171—, 369.
Christopher, the; taken by the French i. 124; retaken at Sluys 147.
Chrystead, sir Henry; vi. 147—.
Ciffreval, Jean de; v. 412—.
Clanvowe, sir Louis; v. 150.
Clanvowe, sir John; ii. 322; v. 273; vi. 20.
Clarence, Lionel, earl of Ulster and duke of; ii. 37, 73; marriage 226, 227; death 240; vi. 150.
Clarins, bastard of; iii. 179—.
Clary, le sire de; ii. 449; iii. 137, 433; iv. 38; v. 300-7.
Clement VI., VII. *See under* Popes.
Cleremont. *See* Clermont.
Clères, Georges, sire de; ii. 74, 423.
Clerk, James; ii. 416, 473; iii. 9.
Clerke. *See* De Clerck.
Clermont-en-Auvergne, skirmish between men of town and companions; v. 131-4.
Clermont, Jean de; i. 357; at Poitiers, 364, 368, 372.
Clermont, Robert de; i. 401.
Clermont, Robert de; ii. 482; iii. 297.
Clermont. *See* Auvergne.
Clermont, the cardinal of. *See* Popes, Innocent VI.
Clesquy. *See* Guesclin.
Clifford, Roger de, ninth lord; v. 149.
Died 1389.
Clifford, Thomas, tenth lord; v. 226.
Eldest son of Roger, lord Clifford. Fought at Otterburn. Died 1391.

INDEX

Clifford, Louis de; iv. 60, 405; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 345, 437—; vi. 145.
Son of Roger de Clifford.
Clifford, Louis; ii. 434.
Clifford, sir Thomas; at Crécy i. 294.
Clifford, sir Edward; ii. 322.
Clifford, Nicolas; iii. 188—.
Clifton, sir Nicholas; iii. 429; jousts at St. Inglevert (Sir Willyam Clyfton) v. 342—.
Clinperoie, Winant de; iii. 101.
Clinton, William of. *See* Huntingdon, William of Clinton, earl of.
Clinton. *See* Clynton.
Clisson, Olivier de; i. 177, 221-7; execution, 232.
Clisson, Olivier de, constable of France; i. 232; on English side at battle of Auray ii. 129—; reconciled to king of France 149; 188-9, 208-14, 228, 291, 347, 352, 360-2, 396—, 407-9, 416-17, 423, 427-9, 441, 447, 450—, 464—; iii. 9, 20, 126, 190—, 360—, 410—; iv. 110—, 358, 382—, 441—; v. 203, 238, 457—; attempt on his life by Pierre de Craon vi. 44-56, 60—, 102; fall of vi. 78—, 102; 105—; peace with the duke of Brittany 170-6.
Clisson, Amauri de; i. 197.
Clisson, Amauri de; iii. 171—.
Son of above.
Clisson, Garnier de; i. 173.
Clisson, le capitaine de; iii. 164—.
Clugny, Androuin de la Roche, abbé de; ii. 57.
Clynton, William. *See* Huntingdon, William Clinton, earl of.
Clynton, sir William; iii. 131, 136, 155, 179; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 342—.
Clynton, sir Peter; iv. 401; vi. 138.
Coarasse, Raymond de; iv. 170.
Coarasse, Raymond de, and the spirit Orthon; iv. 204—.
Cobham, Reginald de; i. 77, 99, 119, 148, 226; in France (campaign of 1346) 277—, 327; at Poitiers 369—; ii. 38, 165—.
Cobham, Reginald; v. 13.
Died 1403. Son of Reginald Cobham, above.
Cobham, John de, third lord Cobham; ii. 458.
Died 1408.
Cocherel, battle of; ii. 110—.
Cock, sir Thomas; v. 150.
Codun, Antoine de; i. 136; ii. 2.
Coelho (Toille, *Berners*), Egas; iv. 409.
Coet, taken by sir Walter Manny; i. 210.
Coleville. *See* Colville.
Colleme, Robert the elder, Robert the younger, John, and David; at Otterburn v. 208, 222, 223.
Cologne, Waleran de Juliers, archbishop of (1332-49); i. 93, 106.
'The archebysshope of Colayne, and Waleran his brother' (i. 93) is a mistranslation of '*li markis de Jullers pour lui et pour l'arcevesque de Coulongne, Walerant, son frère.*'
Cologne, Frederic of Saarweerden, archbishop of (1370-1414); v. 205-6, 235.
Coloyne, Roger de. *See* Coulogne.
Colville, sir John; iii. 144; vi. 213.
Colville, sir Thomas; vi. 386.
Combourg, Guichard, sire de; iii. 13, 26, 369; iv. 290.
Commaleix, castle of; taken by Espagnolet iv. 211—; besieged by French 219—; and taken 221.
Comminges (Comygine, *Berners*), Pierre Raymond, comte de; i. 236, 247; ii. 164, 189, 209, 229, 230, 240, 253—, 267-70, 276, 339, 442.
Second of the name. Died after October 1375.
Compostella, John of Gaunt at; iv. 345—; v. 61.
Comygnes. *See* Gommegnies.
Condom, le sire de; at Poitiers i. 369; ii. 190, 209.
Conflans, Jean, sire de, marshal of Champagne; i. 401.
Congne. *See* Cunha.
Connaught, O'Conor, king of; vi. 153.
Conquêt, castle of; i. 204-5.
Consaut. *See* Gonsaut.

Consant. *See* Cousan.
Conversan, Louis d'Enghien, comte de; iii. 361—, 484—; iv. 16.
Cook, Thomas; i. 258, 268.
Copane. *See* Caupene.
Coplande, sir John; i. 314—; iii. 31, 59.
Copledyke, sir Thomas; v. 213; at Otterburn 224.
Coq. *See* (1) Le Cocq; (2) Cock.
Coraisse, Guillaume de; ii. 52.
Some MSS. of Froissart read Toraise.
Corbet, sir Thomas; vi. 302.
Corbet, sir Fulk; iii. 133.
Corbie, Arnaud de (Reynolde, *Berners*); vi. 111, 158.
Cormici, castle of, taken by the English; ii. 48.
Corne de Cerf, Janequin; v. 265.
Cornwall, John of Eltham, earl of; i. 67; death 74 (where Berners has by error 'John a Gaunt').
Brother of Edward III.
Cornwall, earl of; i. 223; in France (campaign of 1346) 276.
Cornwall, sir John; ii. 423, 445, 450; vi. 213.
Corton. *See* Courton.
Corunna, John of Gaunt at; iv. 294—.
Cosington, sir Stephen; at Poitiers i. 369; ii. 188, 197, 208, 217, 280, 299, 351, 434; iii. 228.
Cotterebbe, Gilles de; i. 118.
Coucy, Enguerrand, sire de; i. 134, 156, 267-9.
Fifth of the name. Died 1344.
Coucy, Enguerrand, sire de; i. 407; ii. 74, 251, 273, 326, 345, 455—, 459—, 481—; iii. 5, 9—, 126—, 135—, 142, 264—, 361—, 410, 449, 484; iv. 15, 441, 455; v. 157-63, 176, 197, 198, 200, 238, 252, 273, 288-90, 293, 360, 401—, 430; vi. 52, 81, 130, 180—, 194-208; taken prisoner at Nicopolis 233—, 247; death 275.
Died 1396. Son of Enguerrand de Coucy, above.
Coucy, Isabelle, dame de; vi. 255.
Second wife of Enguerrand VI., de Coucy; daughter of John, duke of Lorraine.
Coucy, Raoul de; i. 362; ii. 19, 55, 347, 352, 425—, 438, 456; iii. 361—.
In i. 438 Berners and some of the French texts refer to him as Jean.
Coudune, sir Antony of. *See* Codun, Antoine de.
Coulogne, Roger de; ii. 39, 309.
Coulogne, Perceval de; ii. 312, 350, 367, 373, 401, 412; iii. 47.
Coulonges, Jourdain de; ii. 372, 374.
Coulongne. *See* Corunna.
Courant, Bernard; iii. 45—.
Courcy, Guillaume de; iv. 289.
Courcy, François Paynel, dame de; vi. 370.
Courson, sir John; ii. 301.
Courtney, sir Hugh; ii. 196, 211, 223.
Courtney, William, bishop of London and archbishop of Canterbury. *See* Canterbury.
Fourth son of Hugh de Courtney, second earl of Devon.
Courtney, sir Philip; ii. 196, 211, 362, 425.
Sixth son of Hugh de Courtney, second earl of Devon.
Courtney, sir Peter; ii. 196; iii. 461; v. 300-5; at St. Inglevert 342—.
Died 1409. Seventh son of Hugh de Courtney, second earl of Devon.
Courton, Petiton de. *See* Curton, Petiton de.
Courtray, sack of; iii. 399, 405.
Courtray, Sohier de, execution of; i. 96.
Cousan (Consant, *Berners*), le sire de; i. 357.
Couson. *See* Courson.
Coutances, battle of; i. 391.
Couvé, siege of; ii. 125—.
Coygne, Lawrence of. *See* Cunha, Lopo Vasquez da.
Crainhem, Louis de; i. 105, 110.
Cramelles, le sire de; i. 135.
Crane, le sire de; iii. 99.
Craon, Amauri, sire de; i. 134, 137, 167, 358, 362; ii. 147.
Fourth of the name. Died 1371.

INDEX

Craon, Pierre de; v. 456—; attempts life of Olivier de Clisson vi. 44-56; 63, 176, 187-9, 192, 230, 358—.
Craon, Jean de. *See* Reims, Jean de Craon, archbishop of.
Craonne, ii. 9—.
Crécy, battle of; i. 294-301.
Credon, sir Richard; vi. 147, 163.
Crenon, Baudouin; ii. 476, 478.
Crésèques, Eustache, sire de; i. 339; ii. 12, 124, 352.
Cresswell, John, chief of 'companions'; ii. 79, 85, 122, 154, 169, 189, 209, 227, 262, 276, 374, 397—, 405-21; iv. 158.
Crestkes. *See* Crésèques.
Croenenburg, Guillaume, sire de; vi. 214, 218, 222.
Croix, Wauflart de la; i. 132-3; death 158-60.
Croke, sir William; iii. 34.
Croquart, a free lance; i. 335-6.
Croquet. *See* Croke.
Crupegnac, Guillaume de; ii. 367, 373, 401, 412.
Cunha (Coygne, *Berners*), João Lourenço da; iv. 244—, 254-62.
Cunha, Lopo Vasquez da; iv. 404, 470; v. 46.
Cunha, Vasco Martins da; iv. 325, 470.
Curton, Petiton or Pierre de; i. 358; ii. 55, 106—, 164, 190, 209, 406, 414; iii. 25.
Cuyck, Jean, sire de; v. 151.
Cuyk, Othon, sire de; i. 113 (Lens, *Berners*); at Buironfosse 118 (Kusse, *Berners*).
Cyprus, Pierre de Lusignan, king of; at Avignon ii. 90, 93; visits the Empire 95; England 96; the Prince of Wales 100—; 108, 121; death iv. 227.
Cyprus, Jacques de Lusignan, king of; iv. 227-8; vi. 276—.

DAGWORTH, sir Thomas; i. 236, 322—; death 342.
Surprised and slain in 1350 by Raoul de Cahors.
Dagworth, sir Thomas; ii. 20.
There are frequent references in Froissart to a Thomas Dagworth between 1350 and 1370. He is confused in Kervyn de Lettenhove's index with sir Thomas Dagworth who was killed in 1350.
Dagworth, sir Nicholas; jousts with Bertrand de Guesclin i. 395; v. 273.
Son of sir Thomas Dagworth.
Dainville, Jean de; ii. 99.
Dalawarr, the lorde. *See* Delaware.
Dalbert. *See* Albret.
Dalby, Thomas; iv. 288.
Dalby, William; ii. 207, 320.
Dambegny. *See* Aubigny.
Dambreticourt. *See* Aubrecicourt.
Dammartyn, Charles de Trie, comte de; i. 119, 156, 267-9; at Poitiers 364; ii. 90, 94, 99, 121; iii. 363; vi. 86.
Taken prisoner at Poitiers by Reginald Cobham: not slain, as Berners says (i. 379). '*La fu pris li contes de Dammartyn de monsigneur R. de Gobehen.*'
Damme, surprised by Ackermann and besieged by French; iv. 36—.
Dammery, sir Thomas; ii. 196, 209.
Dampelen, sir Loys. *See* Juppeleu, Louis de.
Dampeter. *See* Castile, Peter IV. (the Cruel), king of.
Dampmare (i. 375), for Poyanne (*q.v.*).
Dampmartyn. *See* Dammartin.
Danbier, sir Loys. *See* Aubière, Louis d'.
Dandrehen, Andrewe. *See* Audrehem, Arnoul d'.
Danghynen. *See* Enghien.
Dangle, Guissard. *See* Huntingdon, Guichard d'Angle, earl of.
Dangousse. *See* Aghorisses.
Dannequyn, Colen. *See* Zannenqui, Nicolas.
Darcy, sir Philip; iii. 130.
Dartvell. *See* Artevelde.
Dasto, sir Rorrant; Dastra, sir Courrat. *See* Esch, Conrad von.
Daugymont, Loys. *See* Agimont, Louis d'.
Dauphin, Hugues, Robert. *See* Auvergne, Hugues d', Robert d'.

Dauphin, Guichard ; iv. 157.
Dausemont. *See* Offemont.
Dausymont, Loys. *See* Agimont, Louis.
Dayre, John. *See* Aire, Jean d'.
De Clerck, Arnould ; iii. 193—.
De Grave, Jean ; v. 105.
De Grutere, Gilbert ; iii. 120, 208 ; death 260—.
Delabarde, the lord. *See* Barthe, sire de la.
Delaware, John, second baron ; i. 119 ; at Sluys 148 ; 226 ; in France (1346) 277 (the lord of Labey).
Died after 1346. Son of Roger Delaware, first baron.
Delaware, Roger, third baron ; i. 339, 358, 369 ; ii. 164.
Died 1370. Grandson of John Delaware, above.
Delaware, John, fourth baron ; ii. 292, 414.
Died 1398. Son of Roger Delaware, above.
Delawar (Delawall, *Berners*) ; gloss. i. 395, read '*de Laval*' (*q.v.*).
Denghyen. *See* Enghien, Gauthier d'.
Denneval. *See* Esneval.
Denys, master. *See* Portugal, John, king of.
Derby, Henry of Lancaster, earl of, created (1351) first Duke of Lancaster ; i. 77, 98-9, 118, 148, 234 ; expedition to Gascony 235-59, 268—, 308—, 319 ; before Calais 326—, 344, 355-6, 388 ; before Rennes 395 ; ii. 33, 57, 71 ; death 89.
Derby, Henry, earl of. *See* England, Henry IV., king of.
Derby, John ; vi. 374.
Derian, Yves ; v. 157, 196-204.
Derval, siege of ; ii. 429— ; iv. 109.
Desar, Johan Radighes. *See* Sa, João Rodriguez de.
Descouvenort, sir Raynolde. *See* Schoonvorst.
Despenser. *See* Spenser.
Devereux, sir John ; ii. 169, 213, 279, 290, 330-3, 351, 375, 391—, 403-21, 447—, 453— ; iii. 342, 421 ; v. 303-4.
Devereux, sir Walter ; iv. 308.
Nephew of sir John Devereux, above.
Devonshire, Edward Courtney, earl of ; iii. 130, 171 ; iv. 52, 390 ; v. 20, 149 ; vi. 128, 400.
Died 1419.
De Wilde, Goswin ; iii. 100.
De Wintere, Pierre ; iii. 193—, 217—, 435.
Diest, Thomas de ; iii. 445.
Dignen. *See* Dinan.
Dinan ; i. 205.
Dinan, Roland, sire de ; i. 395 ; ii. 129—.
Died 1364. By a mistake of Froissart referred to as Charles (sir Charles de Dignen, i. 395).
Dinan, Charles, sire de ; ii. 423 ; iii. 178 ; vi. 107—, 171—.
Died 1418. Son of Roland de Dinan, above.
Dion. *See* Dyon.
Dixmude, Thierri de ; iii. 203, 211, 402.
Doaire, madame du. *See* Saint Pol, Jeanne de Luxembourg, wife of Gui de Chatillon, comte de.
Dodale, Simekin, ii. 321.
Dolphyn, sir Hugh, sir Robert. *See* Auvergne, Hugues, Robert d' (Dauphin).
Dommart, the lord of ; v. 372. *See* Domwast, le sire de.
Domme, siege of ; ii. 284.
Domme, Robert de ; ii. 283.
Domwast, le sire de (Dommart, *Berners*) ; v. 372.
Donnée, le sire de ; v. 372.
Donstienne, Alard de ; ii. 331 ; iv. 158.
Donstienne, Jean, l'Ardennois de ; iii. 492.
Nephew of Alard de Donstienne.
Doria, Antonio ; i. 182, 206, 219, 228.
Dormans, Guillaume de ; ii. 255-6, 269, 337, 459 ; iii. 5.
Died 1373.
Dormans, Miles de. *See* Bayeux, bishop of.
Son of Guillaume de Domrans.
Dortingue. *See* Ortingue.

INDEX

Doubles, Olyver. *See* Bleville, Colinet de.

Douglas, sir James, lord of; i. 50; death 67-70; v. 233.
The 'Black Douglas.' Died 1330. By a mistake of Froissart's always spoken of as William.

Douglas, William, first earl of; i. 86; fights at Poitiers 375; hostage for David Bruce 394; ii. 492, 499—; iii. 245—; v. 218, 232.
Created earl of Douglas, 1358. Died 1384. Son of Archibald, younger brother of James, lord of Douglas.

Douglas, William, earl of; i. 50, 67-70; v. 223.
A mistake for James, lord of Douglas, *q.v.*

Douglas, James, second earl of; ii. 502; iii. 474; iv. 49; at Otterburn v. 207-33.
Slain at Otterburn, 1388.

Douglas, sir Archibald, third earl of; ii. 492, 495—; v. 207-32, 272.
Warden of the Marches. Natural son of James, lord of Douglas. Became third earl of Douglas after the death of earl William at Otterburn. Died *c.* 1400.

Douglas, sir William, knight of Liddesdale; i. 153-155, 190, 195; at Neville's Cross 314.
The reference to sir William (i. 153) as nephew of James, lord Douglas, is due to confusion with William, first earl Douglas, son of Archibald, younger brother of James. The knight of Liddesdale was killed by his namesake (perhaps godson) in Ettrick forest, in 1353. The relationship was distant, both being descended from the same great-great-grandfather.

Douglas, John, earl of; i. 313.
A mistake of Berners' for John of Douglas, slain at Neville's Cross.

Dowaire. *See* Doaire.

Drayton, sir John, iii. 422, 429; at St. Inglevert v. 342—.
The reference (v. 342) is apparently due to confusion with a sir Peter Drayton.

Drayton, sir William; iii. 173, 429; vi. 386.

Drayton (Traicton, *Berners*), sir Nicholas; iii. 452, 461.

Dreux, Pierre, comte de; i. 119.

Dreux, Louis de Thouars, comte de; i. 286.

Drummond, sir Malcolm; v. 207; at Otterburn, 223.

Dublin, Robert Waldeby, archbishop of, subsequently archbishop of York. *See* York.

Dufay, Godemar. *See* Fay, Godemar du.

Duffle, Henri Berthout, sire de; i. 118.

Du Fort, Thomas; ii. 193.

Dulnestre, therle (i. 236), for the county of Devonshire.
A mistranslation of *Encores ordonna il monsigneur G. de M. conte de Sallebrin à aler en le conté de Dulnestre, car li Irois et Escos estoient durement revelé contre lui.*

Dunbar, earls of, also sir George and sir Patrick. *See* March.

Dunkirk, battle of, and capture of the town by sir Hugh Spenser; iii. 431-3.

Dunort, William of. *See* Duvenvoorre, Guillaume de.

Duras, taken by the duke of Anjou; ii. 487—.

Duras, Robert de; at Poitiers i. 364; death 373.
Third son of John of Sicily, duke of Duras.

Duras, Aimeri de Durfort, sire de; i. 236, 242; death 247.

Duras, Gaillard, sire de; ii. 414, 477—, 483—; iii. 25.
Son of Aimeri de Durfort.

Duravel, siege of; ii. 281—.

Durham, sack of; i. 189.

Durham, Richard de Bury, bishop of (1333-45); i. 118, 170.

Durham, Thomas Hatfield, bishop of (1345-82); i. 276, 313.

Durham, Walter Skirlawe, bishop of (1388-1406); v. 216, 225-31, 273.
Dury, Rabigot de; i. 415; ii. 3.
Duvenvoorre, Guillaume de; i. 113, 150.
Dymoke, Thomas; vi. 333, 335; challenger 382.
Dynant (Dinan), châtelain de, a mistake for Guingamp, le chatelain de (*q.v.*).
Dyon, Philippe and Ernoul de; i. 240-2.
Dyscouvenort. *See* Schoonvorst.

EDINBURGH, taken by the English; iv. 58—.
Edward I., II., III., kings of England. *See* England.
Eertbuer, Jacques van; iv. 70—.
Elmham, sir William (Helman, *Berners*); iii. 48, 222, 288, 291, 420—; iv. 308; v. 16—, 150.
Eltham, John of. *See* Cornwall, John of Eltham, earl of.
Eltham, Robert; i. 236.
Ely, Thomas Arundel, bishop of (1374-88), afterwards archbishop of York and Canterbury. *See* Canterbury.
Enghien, Gauthier d'; i. 46, 111, 143.
Enghien, Gauthier d'; iii. 99, 124, 195, 199—, 210, 256; death 258.
Son of Sohier d'Enghien, executed in 1380, and grandson of Gauthier d'Enghien, above.
Enghien, le bâtard d'; iii. 203, 257.
England, Edward I., king of; i. 20-1, 88.
England, Edward II., king of; i. 21—, 34—, 65.
England, Isabella of France, wife of Edward II, king of; i. 21, 24—, 64—, 75; death ii. 91.
England, Edward III., king of; i. 24—; coronation 40—; campaign against Scots 45—; marriage 64—; execution of Mortimer 74-5; does homage to Philip of Valois 77—; claims homage of Scotland 83—; takes Berwick 87; in Flanders 100—; at Flamengerie 116; at Sluys 146—; siege of Tournay and truce of Esplechin 151—; invades Scotland 185—; Edward and the countess of Salisbury 193-5, 216-18; invades Brittany 225—; founds Order of Garter 232—; invades France (campaign of Crécy) 276—; takes Calais 328-32; at battle before Calais 337—; again invades France 350; receives king John of France, 393; invasion of France and treaty of Bretigny ii. 34—; receives king John in England 99; defied by king Charles 258-9; 269, 291-2, 307-8, 384-5, 413-14, 451; death 459.
England, Philippa of Hainault, wife of Edward III., king of; i. 18, 30; marriage 64; at Neville's Cross 312—; intercedes for the six burgesses of Calais, 331-2; birth of a daughter 333; death ii. 307-8.
England, Isabella, daughter of Edward III., king of, betrothed to Louis of Flanders; i. 319—.
For other children of Edward III. *see under* Wales, Ulster, Lancaster, York, Gloucester.
England, Richard II., king of; ii. 184, 341, 362, 413, 458; coronation 460; marriage iii. 108; Wat Tyler's rebellion 226—; 250—; marriage 273—; iv. 52—, 356, 439—; v. 11-43, 419—; vi. 34; expedition to Ireland 125—; sorrow at death of Anne of Bohemia 127; Froissart's visit to, 131—, 147—; expedition to Ireland, 147-55; French marriage 139; 163, 190, 211-13, 224-30, 262—; causes arrest of duke of Gloucester 273-4, 306—, 334—; arrangements for expedition to Ireland 347—; surrender to Henry of Lancaster: deposition and death 363—.
England, Anne of Bohemia, wife of Richard II., king of; iii. 108, 273; vi. 127.
England, Isabella of France, second wife of Richard II., king of; vi. 27, 159, 189-90, 224-30, 370, 388-9, 400.
England, Henry, earl of Derby, afterwards Henry IV., king of; iv. 287; vi. 35, 94, 140, 209-10,

INDEX

224, 301; banished 307—; 332—; invades England at invitation of archbishop of Canterbury 354—; coronation 381; conspiracies against 390—.
England, Henry, prince of Wales, afterwards Henry v., king of; vi. 380, 400 (the prince of Wales).
England, the bourge of. *See* Bourg Anglais.
Ephesus (Altilocus); iv. 231 (Hawlte Lodge); vi. 281 (Longe).
Erpingham, sir Thomas; v. 176.
Erskine, sir Robert; i. 153, 187; taken at Nevile's Cross 314; hostage for David Bruce 394; ii. 492; iii. 474.
Died 1385, and therefore cannot be identical with the Robert de Aversequind (Erskine) at Otterburn (v. 207—).
Erskine, sir Thomas; at Otterburn v. 207 (Thomas of Berry), 223 (sir Thomas Avernesquyn).
Died about 1405. Son of sir Robert Erskine, above.
Esch, Conrad von; i. 157 (Dastra), 165 (Dasto).
Froissart has Asko.
Escornay, Arnould de Gavre, sire d'; iii. 99, 203—, 210, 466, 481.
Escot, Hagré l'. *See* L'Escot.
Esne, Mansart d'; i. 307-8.
Esne, Robert d'; vi. 255, 275.
Son of Mansart d'Esne.
Esneval, le sire d'; ii. 140, 423, 464.
Esneval, le sire d'; v. 401.
Esneval, Perceval d'; ii. 485-90; iii. 9, 58—, 369.
Espagne, Louis de la Cerda, known as Louis d'Espagne; i. 181, 199-228 *passim* (death of his son Alphonse 208); 267.
Slain at Crécy.
Espagne, Charles d'; i. 325, 343; death 344—.
Brother of Louis d'Espagne.
Espagne, Roger d'; iv. 107, 128, 211—; vi. 7—, 21—.
Espagne, Roger d'; killed at Aljubarotta, iv. 191.
Son of Roger d'Espagne, above.
Espagne, Espagnolet d'; iv. 170.
Son of Roger d'Espagne.
Espagne, Ernauton d'; vi. 3.
Espagne, le bourg d'; iv. 118, 121—.
Espaignolet, a 'free lance'; iv. 211-21.
Espaing. *See* Espagne.
Espinasse, Philibert de l'; ii. 458.
Espinefort, Henri d'; i. 174, 198, 200, 208.
Espinefort, Olivier d'; i. 176, 198, 200, 208.
Espiote, chief of 'companions'; ii. 79, 85, 154, 209, 351.
Esplechin, truce of; i. 168—.
Estainbourg, Jean, sire d'; iii. 99, 203.
Estampes, Jean d'; ii. 74.
Estampes, Louis d'Evreux, comte d'; i. 119; at Poitiers 384; v. 137-40; vi. 19.
Estouteville, Robert, sire d'; ii. 74, 445.
Etampes. *See* Estampes.
Eu, le sénéschal d'. *See* Le Sénéschal d'Eu.
Eu, Raoul de Brienne, comte d', constable of France; i. 82, 112, 119, 134, 151, 181, 267.
First of the name. Died 1345.
Eu, Raoul de Brienne, comte d'; i. 151 (erle of Guynes); 181, 230, 267, 278—, 334; executed 343.
Second of the name, son of Raoul de Brienne, above; known as comte de Guines during life of his father. Constable of France. Executed 1350.
Eu, Jean d'Artois, comte d'; i. 81, 353; at Poitiers 375; ii. 90-9, 121, 463; iii. 142, 363, 446.
Sometimes spoken of as comte de Guines (ii. 463).
Eu, Philippe d'Artois, comte de; v. 360, 401—, 415; vi. 103—, 185, 194-208; at Nicopolis, 233—, 247; death 281.
Called Louis by mistake, v. 415: '*le duc Loys* [*de Bourbon*] *et les autres disoient, et par espécial messire Philippe d'Artois*'; in vi. 185 the

constable of France *is* the comte d'Eu.
Eu, Marie de Berry, comtesse de Blois et d'Eu. *See* Berry, Marie de.
Eudin, Enguerrand d'; i. 390; ii. 112—, 122-5, 352; iii. 361—; v. 443.
Eustace, sir Godfrey; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 354.
Everard, sir William; iii. 144.
Everwyn, Roger; iv. 70—.
Évrart. *See* Everard.
Évreux; taken by Guillaume de Gauville, i. 396-8; taken by the French ii. 18; siege of iii. 18—.
Évreux, Robert de Brucourt, bishop of; ii. 424.
Ewe. *See* Eu.

FAGNOLLE, Hugues, sire de; i. 117, 266.
Fagnolle, Jacques, sire de; ii. 482.
Fallesley, sir John; ii. 461—; iii. 34.
Faringdon, sir William; ii. 196, 391, 406-14; iii. 131, 184, 378, 420—; iv. 288.
Faucille, Jean de la; iii. 54, 88, 114, 120—, 213.
Faucon, the herald; ii. 109.
Faulque. *See* Foulque.
Faulquebourc (i. 150), a mistake for Blankebourc, *i.e.* Brandenburg (*q.v.*).
Faulquemount. *See* Fauquemont.
Fauquemont, Thierri de; i. 93, 106—, 118—, 129, 136—, 143, 150-2.
Fay, Godemar du; i. 121, 131, 149, 291, 306.
Fay, Jacques du; vi. 236.
Felton, sir John; v. 13; at Otterburn 213.
Felton, sir Thomas; ii. 160-72, 184-95, 197—, 223, 249, 281-9, 330, 340-41, 350, 368, 414, 474—; death iii. 343.
Brother of sir William Felton.
Felton, sir William; at Sluys i. 148; in France (campaign of 1346) 277—; at Poitiers 369—; ii. 189, 193; death 199.
Fenes. *See* Fiennes.
Fenestranges, Brochart de; ii. 19, 21, 29.
Ferdinand, king of Portugal. *See under* Portugal.
Fère, le sire de; iii. 364, 446.
Ferinton. *See* Faringdon.
Fernando, Martin; ii. 208.
Ferrers, Robert, lord; i. 246.
Died 1347.
Ferrers, sir Robert; iii. 109, 130.
Ferrers, sir Ralph; at Poitiers i. 338; ii. 96.
Ferrol; iv. 472—.
Fiennes, Robert, known as Morel de; i. 267, 339, 364, 408; ii. 4, 19, 50, 126, 275, 315, 343, 352, 358.
Appointed constable of France after the battle of Poitiers.
Fiennes, Jean de; i. 390.
Fife, Duncan, earl of; slain at Neville's Cross i. 313.
An error of Froissart's. He was really taken prisoner.
Fife, William Ramsay, earl of; hostage for David Bruce i. 394 (Fye); v. 210-25.
William Ramsay of Colluthie; became earl of Fife by marriage with Isabel, heiress of Duncan Macduff, earl of Fife.
Fife, sir William; at Otterburn v. 207—.
Filyfre, sir John. *See* Pyliser, Jean.
Fitz Alan, Richard, John, Thomas. *See* Arundel.
Fitz Raoul, William; v. 114.
Fitz Walter, sir John; i. 119; ii. 54.
Died 1361.
Fitz Walter, sir Walter; ii. 343; iii. 130, 167—; v. 51; death 60.
Died 1386. Son of John Fitzwalter.
Fitz Warren, sir William; i. 99 (sir Wyllyam sonne to therle of Warwyke); in France, campaign of 1346, 277—; at Poitiers 369—.
Died 1361.
Fitzwarren, sir Ivon; iii. 131, 136—, 173; iv. 287, 321—; vi. 400.
Son of William Fitz Warren, above.
Flamengerie, Edward III. at; i. 116—.

INDEX

Flanders; Battle of Cassel i. 72; Jacob van Artevelde invites Edward III. to Flanders 95—; rebellion of citizens of Ghent against Louis de Male iii. 73—, 192—, 255—, 299—; expedition of Charles VI. to Flanders 359—; battle of Roosebeke 392—; English 'crusade' in Flanders 419—; conclusion of peace between Ghent and the count of Flanders iv. 69—.

Flanders, Louis de Nevers, called de Crécy, count of; i. 72-3, 94, 119, 134, 156, 170, 281; at Crécy 299-300.
Slain at Crécy, 1346.

Flanders, Louis de Male, count of; betrothed to Isabella of England i. 316-20; ii. 108, 144, 272—, 297; iii. 51—, 64, 73—, 110—, 193—, 256—, 299—; defeated at Beverhoutsveld before Bruges 313—; appeals to king of France 355—; 424—, 449, 465; death and funeral 467—.
Died 1384. Son of Louis de Crécy.

Flanders, Margaret of. *See* Burgundy, duchess of.

Flanders, bastards of:—
Gui; i. 98-9.
Son of Louis de Nevers.
Rifflart de Flandre; iv. 14, 27.
Son of Louis de Nevers.
Louis, known as le Hase de Flandre; iii. 122, 195—, 211, 358, 398, 426—; v. 286; vi. 185, 275.
Son of Louis de Male. Slain at Nicopolis.
Louis of Friesland; vi. 185, 275.
Slain at Nicopolis.
Jean Sans-Terre; iii. 440.
Son of Louis de Male. Slain at Nicopolis.

Flandre, Henri de; i. 112—, 118; at Sluys 148; 166, 170; ii. 34.
Son of Gui de Dampierre. The phrase 'a yong squier' (i. 112) is a mistranslation of Froissart's 'esquiers'; he was an old man at the time.

Flavigny; ii. 51.

Fleming, sir David; v. 208.

Floyon, Gilles, sire de; i. 141.

Floyon, Jean de; v. 286.

Fogaça, Lourenço (Fongasse, *ners*); iv. 250.

Foix, Gaston II., comte de; i. 151.
Died 1343.

Foix, Gaston III., known as Ga Phébus, comte de; i. 406; ii. 164, 171, 185, 443-6; Froiss visit to iv. 87—; Froissart's arr at Orthez, and reception by count 136—; story of the deat Gaston, son of the count 138- the 'state of the earl of Fo 145-209 *passim*; 374—, 415- v. 70, 79, 110, 251-4, 263- 319-24, 443; death vi. 2-10.
Died 1391. Son of Gaston II.

Foix, Agnès de Navarre, comtesse d iv. 127, 138—.
Daughter of Philip III. of N varre: married Gaston Phéb 1348.

Foix, Gaston de; iv. 140—.
Died 1381. Son of Gast Phébus and Agnès de Navar

Foix, Béatrix d'Armagnac, wife Gaston de Foix; iv. 140.
Daughter of Jean II., com d'Armagnac.

Foix, Jean, known as Yvain de Béar iv. 127; v. 323; vi. 3-7, 95; dea 96—.
Bastard son of Gaston Phébus.

Foix, Gratien de (Gasyon, *Berners* iv. 127; v. 323.
Bastard son of Gaston Phébus.

Foix, Matthieu de, vicomte de Caste bon, subsequently comte de Foi vi. 7—, 33, 95.
Son of Roger-Bernard, vicom de Castelbon.

Follie, Raoul de la; iv. 14, 15.

Fondregas. *See* Foudregay.

Fongasse, Laurence. *See* Fogaç Lourenço.

Fontaine, Jean de Condé, sire d iv. 58.

Fontaines, Pérot de, known as I Béarnais; v. 78—, 115-34, 178- 185, 368-9, 374-5.

Fontenelle, le sire de; ii. 423.
Forestes, the earl of. *See* Forez.
Forez (Forestes, *Berners*), Guignes VII., comte de; i. 119, 156, 267-9; ii. 30-1, 80.
Died 1360.
Forez (Forestes, *Berners*), Louis, comte de; ii. 83; death at battle of Brignais 84.
Died 1362. Son of Guignes VII.
Forez (Forestes), Renaud de; ii. 31, 80-4.
Brother of Guignes VII., comte de Forez.
Foudregay, Guillaume; i. 399 (Fondrigas), 415; ii. 4 (Foudegray).
Foulcaut, Guillaume de; v. 266.
Foulque, sir Thomas; ii. 439; iii. 34.
Foulque, Matthew; ii. 403.
Fountayne. *See* Fontaine.
Fourque. *See* Foulque.
France, Philip IV., known as le Bel, king of (1285-1314); i. 22.
France, Charles IV., known as le Bel, king of (1322-28); i. 25—, 71.
France, Jeanne d'Evreux, queen of; ii. 19.
Third wife of Charles le Bel.
France, Philip VI., de Valois, king of (1328-50); i. 23; coronation 72, 73, 75—; undertakes crusade 89-91; at Buironfosse 116—, 143; truce of Esplechin 168; at Crécy 289-301; attempts to raise siege of Calais 324—; second marriage (to Blanche de Navarre) 341; death 342.
France, John, king of (1350-64); i. 119 (duke of Normandy); expedition to Hainault 134—, 181—; in Brittany 229—; in Gascony 267—; raises siege of Aguillon 305; second marriage (to Jeanne d'Auvergne) 342; crowned king of France 342; arrests king of Navarre 353—; campaign of Poitiers 356—; in England 393—; released ii. 73; visits Avignon 90; takes the Cross 93; returns to England 99; death 102; funeral 108.
France, Charles V., king of (1364-80); i. 349; made duke of Normandy 351; at Poitiers 361—, 388—; relations to king of Navarre and Parisians 401-14; ii. 1, 20, 27, 54, 101; succeeds to the throne 102; coronation 121; makes peace with the duke of Brittany and king of Navarre 146—, 230; appealed to by the barons of Gascony 240—; birth of his son Charles 246; summons prince of Wales to appear 246—; 269—, 310, 335-8, 352-63, 382-93, 424, 460-1, 491; iii. 2—, 50—; death 153-7.
France, Jeanne de Bourbon, wife of Charles V. of France, duchess of Normandy; i. 404-6; ii. 463; death 504.
Died 1378.
France, Charles VI., king of (1380-1422); birth ii. 241; coronation iii. 158, 164—; war with Flanders 335—, 439—, 490—; iv. 30—, 67; preparation for invasion of England iv. 306—; 347—, 368, 457—; v. 175, 196; expedition into Guelderland 203-6, 233-45; entry into Paris 275-87; journey to Avignon 291-324; wager with duke of Orleans to ride from Montpellier to Paris 325-6; at St. Inglevert 350, 357, 424—, 434—; treaty with duke of Brittany vi. 24-8; of Amiens, with England 36—; sickness 42; pursuit of Pierre de Craon 50—; madness 59-71, 96—, 111—; second attack of madness 119, 121; peace negotiations with England 157—, 204, 224-30; sends embassy to Bajazet 245—; orders affairs of the church 295—, 303—; receives the earl of Derby 321—, 381.
France, Isabelle de Bavière, wife of Charles VI. of France; iv. 31—; entry into Paris v. 275-87.
France, Blanche de Navarre, wife of Philip de Valois, king of. *See* Navarre.
France, Isabella of, second wife of Richard II. *See* England.
Francs, Bertrand de (Franke, *Berners*); ii. 109, 111—, 391, 475.
Frank, sir William; iii. 131, 179—.

INDEX

Franklin, Richard; i. 415.
Fransures, le sire de; iii. 134—, 148, 365.
Fraser, sir Simon; i. 153-5, 187.
Fraser, sir Stephen; v. 208, 211.
Fraunceys, Adam; iii. 251.
Fredeville, Hugues, sire de; iv. 211—.
Frelays. *See* Frolois.
Frenay, Hubert de; i. 197, 209, 212.
Frennes, the lord of. *See* Fiennes, Morel de.
Fresnell, Pierre; iii. 473—.
Fresnoy, sir Hubert of. *See* Frenay, Hubert de.
Freville, sir Baldwin; ii. 189, 211, 278-80, 301, 318, 351, 368, 373, 391, 445.
Appointed seneschal of Saintonge in 1364. Died 1375.
Freville, le sire de; i. 390; ii. 128—, 423, 464.
Fricamps (Fryquant, *Berners*), Friquet de; i. 354, 399; ii. 4.
Friesland, expedition of the earl of Hainault against; vi. 213—.
Frodvyll, sir Hugh. *See* Fredeville.
Froissart, Jean; preface to the chronicles: a chronicle presented to Philippa of Hainault i. 17-18; visit to court of Gaston Phébus iv. 86—; arrival at Orthez and reception by the court 136—; return to Valenciennes, journey to Middleborough, and conference with Juan Fernandez Pacheco 247—; early travels in Scotland v. 218; return from Orthez in the company of the duchess of Berry 270-5; in Paris at the time of the solemn entry of the queen 278; and of the assault upon Olivier de Clisson vi. 46; at Abbeville during negotiations of Lelinghen 117; visit to the court of Richard II. 129—; clerk of the chamber to Philippa of Hainault 341; in the train of the English royal house at Windsor, Bordeaux, and Berkhamstead 398-9.
Frolois, Jean de; i. 158.
Fryquant, Fryquette de. *See* Fricamps, Friquet de.
Fye, earl of. *See* Fife.
Fynefroyde. *See* Swinford.

GABESTAN, Pierre de; iv. 171; v. 71; vi. 3—.
Gaesbeck, Jean de; i. 118.
Kesterbeke (Luce).
Gaesbeck, Guillaume de Hornes, sire de; i. 118.
Galicia; John of Gaunt's campaign in iv. 294—, 316—; reconquered by Spanish and French v. 140.
Galopez, Ferrand; iv. 91.
Gangelt (Gaulech, *Berners*); v. 81—.
Gardelempos (Gardelopes, *Berners*), Pedro; v. 167.
Garensières, le sire de; i. 103.
Garensières, le sire de; with king Charles VI. at St. Inglevert v. 351-7; vi. 62, 71.
Garilz, don Gomez; ii. 156, 209, 216-17.
Garonne, Henri de la, known as Chevillart (Quevellart); ii. 24, 28.
Gaulech. *See* Gangelt.
Gaunt. *See* Ghent.
Gaunt, John of. *See* Lancaster, John of Gaunt, duke of.
Gaunt, John of (i. 74), a mistake for John of Eltham, earl of Cornwall (*q.v.*).
Gauville, Guillaume de; i. 396-8 (Granvyll); ii. 4, 109—, 122.
Gauville, Gui de; ii. 106-8, 120-2; iii. 5.
Son of Guillaume de Gauville.
Gayle. *See* Jaille.
Geneva, Amé III., count of; i. 119, 139, 156.
Died 1367.
Geneva, Pierre, count of; iii. 19, 281, 442; v. 295-6.
Son of Amé III., and brother of pope Clement VII.
Geneva, Hugh of. *See* Anthon, seigneur de.
Son of Amé II., count of Geneva.
Germany, emperors of:—
Lewis of Bavaria (1314-46); i. 102; vi. 199-200.
Marguerite de Hainault, wife of Lewis of Bavaria; i. 102, 266.
Charles IV. of Luxembourg (1347-

78); i. 281, 299; ii. 95; iii. 64, 108; v. 96—; vi. 199.
Wenceslas of Luxembourg (1378-1400); v. 200-1, 295, 303—; vi. 324, 401.
Called, by an error of Froissart's, 'Charles.' Son of Charles of Luxembourg.
Rupert (1400-10); vi. 401.
Sigismund (1410-37). *See* Hungary, Sigismund, king of.
Géronde, Bernard d'Albret, sire de. *See* Albret.
Ghent; rebellion against count of Flanders iii. 73—, 192—, 255—, 299—; battle of Beverhoutsveld 313; battle of Roosebeke 392; iv. 13—; conclusion of peace 69—.
Ghistelle, Wulfart de; i. 118, 165; among English host, in 1346, 277—.
Died 1360.
Ghistelles, Jean, sire de; at Poitiers i. 362—; ii. 49; iii. 408; iv. 14.
Probably son of Wulfart de Ghistelles; was, like him, in the service of the English king; but returned to France, and was made captain of Bruges after the surrender of the town to the French king. To be distinguished from Jean v., seigneur de Ghistelles, whom Froissart refers to as '*le grant signeur de Ghistelles.*'
Ghistelles, Jean v., sire de; iii. 99.
Died about 1380.
Ghistelles, Guy de; iii. 203, 324; iv. 14.
Died 1417. Brother of Jean v. de Ghistelles.
Ghistelles, Jean vi., sire de; iii. 53, 203, 408; iv. 360.
'The great lord of Ghistelles': son of Jean v. Died 1416.
Giac, Louis de; iv. 370; taken prisoner in Guelderland v. 235.
Giac, Pierre de, chancellor of France; v. 120.
Gifford, sir Gilbert; ii. 343, 360-1.
Gilbert, John, bishop of Hereford. *See* Hereford, bishop of.
Gilles, Richard; ii. 399—; iv. 158.
Givry, ii. 79.
Glendinning, sir Adam; v. 208.
Glendinning, sir Simon; slain at Otterburn v. 224.
Glennes, Robert de; i. 165.
Glisuelle, Louis de; v. 372.
Gloucester, Thomas of Woodstock, earl of Buckingham, afterwards duke of Gloucester; ii. 308, 460-1; expedition to France iii. 128—; 219, 230, 464; iv. 355, 363, 439; v. 5-43, 455-6; vi. 93, 111—, 128, 144—; conference with Robert the Hermit 165—, 190, 209-12, 224-30; plots against Richard ii. 257—; arrest and death 274, 296—.
Gloucester, Humphrey, son of Thomas of Woodstock, duke of Gloucester; vi. 299, 361-2.
Born 1381; died 1399.
Gloucester, earl of (i. 112). *See* Northampton, earl of.
Gloucester, Thomas Spenser, created earl of Gloucester in 1397. *See* Spenser, Thomas.
Golofre, sir Peter; v. 8, 14, 32—.
Golofre, sir John; iv. 288; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 342—.
Gomegines, earl of. *See* Comminges, comte de.
Gomegynes. *See* Gommegnies.
Gommegnies, sire de; i. 143.
Gommegnies, Jean de; ii. 34, 46.
Gommegnies, Jean de; ii. 447, 463; iii. 99, 229, 491; v. 424; vi. 130, 216—.
Apparently nephew of Jean de Gommegnies, above.
Gosenton. *See* Cosington.
Goufer, sir Peter. *See* Golofre.
Gouffier, Guion; iii. 141.
Gourdinet, squire of Bourbonnois; iii. 62; v. 238-9.
Gournay, sir Matthew; ii. 131—, 154, 169, 209; iii. 12, 22, 34—, 222, 253, 269, 288; v. 13.
Gournay, Thomas; ii. 403.
Grace, Gobin a (Gobin Agace, *Froissart*); i. 290.
Grailly, Archambaud de; ii. 414; iii. 25.
Uncle of the Captal de Buch.

INDEX

Grailly, Jean de. *See* Buch, Captal de.
Grailly, Jean de; vi. 125, 135, 386.
Bastard of the Captal de Buch.
Gramat, taken by the English; ii. 285.
Grammont, sack of; iii. 256—.
Grancy, Eudes de; ii. 17, 126; v. 94.
Grancy, Philippe de; iv. 15, 16.
Grandison, sir Thomas; ii. 196, 209, 292, 343, 360-1, 452.
Called (ii. 196, 209) sir John Grandison, by a mistake of Berners'.
Grandon, sir John. *See* Grandison, sir Thomas.
Grand Pré, Jean II., comte de; i. 134.
Grand Pré, Édouard I., comte de; iv. 58; v. 204.
Grandson of Jean II.
Grange, Jean de la. *See* Amiens, bishop of.
Granson, Othes de; ii. 385—, 444-6, 470; vi. 2.
Granvill, sir William of. *See* Gauville, Guillaume de.
Grauntson. *See* Granson.
Grave; siege of v. 151—; duke of Guelderland defeats the forces of Brabant near 186-92.
Grave. *See* De Grave.
Gravelines, taken by English; iii. 424.
Graville, Jean Malet, seigneur de; i. 354.
Died 1356.
Graville, Jean de; ii. 12, 423.
Died *c.* 1380. Son of Jean Malet de Graville.
Graystoke, sir Ralph; ii. 495—.
Great Pré, the earl of. *See* Grandpré.
Gregory XI. *See under* Popes.
Grésille, Pierre de la; ii. 372-4.
Greuiers. *See* Gruyères.
Grey, sir Thomas; v. 213; at Otterburn 224.
Grez, Rass de; i. 118.
Griffith (Ruffyn); i. 400.
Grimaldi, Charles; i. 182, 219, 228.
Groslée, Gui, sire de; ii. 83.
Grosset. *See* Grousvelt.
Grousvelt, Jean de; v. 99.
Gruthuse, Jean de la; iii. 305.
Gruyères, Jean de; ii. 390,
Gruyères, Raoul de; iii. 14
Guelderland; v. 81—; exp
Charles VI. to v. 202—.
Guelderland, Renaud, cou
wards duke of; i. 22, 93
at Buironfosse 118—; 14
marriage with Sophie Be
82—; alliance with Engla
Died 1343.
Guelderland, Sophie Berth
wife of Renaud, count of;
Died 1329. Berners c
'Marie': left one d
Isabella.
Guelderland, Eleanor of E
second wife of Renaud, co
v. 87.
Froissart calls her by
'Catherine'; Berners '
She left two sons, Ren
Edward, who both die
out issue, and a d
Marie, called by F
'Jeanne.'
Guelderland, Renaud, duke
87, 90, 'cosyn germayne
prince of Guerles [*i.e.* Wale
Died 1371, without ch
Son of Renaud, co
Guelderland, above, a
second wife Eleanor, si
Edward III.
Guelderland, Edward, duke
270, 377; v. 81, 87—.
Brother of Renaud,
Killed at Bastweiler, 13
Guelderland, Jane of; v. 87, 8
Daughter of Renaud (died
and Eleanor of En
married William, du
Juliers. Froissart cal
'Jeanne,' but her true
appears to have been '
Guelderland, William, duke o
subsequently duke of Julie
460; Bastweiler v. 89-107;
136-7, 150-2, 186-94, 205-6
45, 257-59; vi. 209-10.
Died 1402. Son of W

duke of Juliers, and Marie (Jane, *Berners*), duchess of Guelderland.
Gueldre, Edouard, comte de. *See* Guelderland.
Guérande; i. 206.
Guerles. *See* Guelderland.
Guerles, the prince of (v. 90), a mistake for prince of Wales.
Guernsey, naval battle off; ii. 392.
Guesclin, Bertrand du, constable of France; i. 230; jousts with Nicholas Dagworth 395; ii. 102—; at Cocherel 109—; 122; at Auray 127—; in Spain 153—; 188, 197; at Najara 203—; taken prisoner 212; 219, 223; ransomed 225, 226; returns to Spain 232—; battle of Montiel 234—; 239, 335, 338—, 347, 349, 350, 354; made constable of France 358-9; 360, 362, 374—, 382, 396—, 410—, 425, 429—, 441-9, 465—, 475—, 505; iii. 20; death 125—; iv. 479—.
Guesclin, Olivier du; ii. 467; iii. 29—, 273, 361—; iv. 430—; v. 46-73.
Brother of the constable.
Guignicourt, Jean de; vi. 121, 123.
Guines, taken by the English; i. 344.
Guines, earl of. *See* Eu.
Guines, Tassart de; i. 322.
Guingamp, châtelain de; i. 198, 200-14.
Guingamp, Raoul de; i. 200, 205.
Guion, Etienne; iii. 159, 166—, 187.
Guisay, Hugonin de; vi. 96.
Gurnay. *See* Gournay.
Guystels. *See* Ghistelles.
Gwinford, in gloss (i. 236), read 'Swinford.'

HAINAULT, invaded by French forces; i. 126—.
Hainault, William, count of; i. 29—, 64-5, 73, 91—; death 96-7.
William I., surnamed 'the Good.' Died 1337.
Hainault, Jean de Valois, wife of William I., count of; i. 168.
Hainault, John of, sire de Beaumont. *See* Beaumont, Jean de Hainault, sire de.
Brother of William I., count of Hainault.
Hainault, William II., count of; i. 97, 110—, 116—, 119, 126—, 141—, 150-3, 160—, 217; death 265-6.
'The erle of Hanyou' (i. 277) is a mistranslation of '*de la conté de Haynau.*'
Died 1345. Son of William I., above; married Jeanne, daughter of duke John of Brabant (i. 97, 266).
Hainault, Margaret of. *See* Germany, Margaret, wife of Lewis of Bavaria, emperor of. Daughter of William I., count of Hainault.
Hainault, Albert of Bavaria, count of; ii. 270; iii. 259, 304, 486—; v. 38, 88—, 420—, 426-7 ('the erle of Haynaulte and duke Aubert of Holande' for '*le conte de Haynnau le duc Aubert en Hollande*'); vi. 129 (same confusion); 183—, 209-10; expedition to Friesland vi. 216—.
Died 1405. Son of Lewis of Bavaria and Margaret of Hainault. Regent of Hainault, during the insanity of his elder brother Count William III., and count upon the latter's death in 1377.
Hainault, Guillaume de. *See* Ostrevant, comte d'.
Eldest son of Albert of Bavaria.
Hainault, Marguerite de. *See* Nevers, Marguerite de Hainaut, comtesse de.
Daughter of Albert of Bavaria.
Hainault, 'li Alemans,' bastard of; i. 165.
Haindebourt, sire de; ii. 435.
Hale, Franck de; in Gascony i. 236—; 268; ii. 34.
Hales, Stephen; iii. 228.
Halewyn, Gauthier, sire d'; i. 118.
Halewyn, Josse d'; iii. 200.
Son of Gauthier, sire d'Halewyn.

INDEX

Halewyn, Jean, known as le ducre d'; i. 97-9.
Halewyn, Jean d'; iii. 99, 203, 473.
Halewyn, Daniel d'; iii. 99, 203, 211, 330, 397-9.
Brother of Jean d'Halewyn, above.
Halewyn, Josse d'; iii. 99, 363—.
Brother of Jean d'Halewyn, above.
Halewyn, Morelet d'; iii. 394.
Halwyn, sir Dutres d'. *See* Halewyn, Jean, known as le ducre d'.
Haliburton, sir John; v. 208; at Otterburn 223.
Hall, Frank de. *See* Hale, Franck de.
Hallayne, the lorde of (i. 118). *See* Halewyn.
Hamayde, sire de la; i. 143.
Hamayde, Michel de la; iii. 211, 257-8.
Hambuye, le sire de; ii. 423, 445; iii. 142.
Handax, André; iii. 34, 41.
Handebourt. *See* Haindebourt.
Hanekyn, Francois, chief of 'companions'; ii. 18, 28, 79.
Hangest, Rogues, sire de; i. 135.
Hangest, Jean, sire de; at Poitiers i. 375.
Son of Rogues de Hangest.
Hangest, Charles de; vi. 333, 387—, 400.
Son of Jean de Hangest, above.
Hangest, Matthieu de; ii. 464; iii. 135—, 369.
Hangest, Robert de; iii. 156.
Hans, Herr; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 355.
Hansagre, sir Simon; ii. 301; death at battle of Rochelle 390.
Harcigny, Guillaume d'; vi. 73—, 120.
Harcourt, Jean IV., comte d'; i. 79, 119, 156, 286; death at Crécy 300.
Harcourt, Godefroi d'; i. 260, 276—, 345, 355, 388; death at battle of Coutances 390-2.
Brother of Jean IV., comte d'Harcourt.
Harcourt, Jean V., comte d'; i. 345, 354—.
Son of Jean IV. Executed at Rouen, 1356.
Harcourt, *Louis*. *See* Chatelle vicomte de.
Brother of Jean V., comte d' court.
Harcourt, *Guillaume* d'; i. 354.
Brother of Jean V.
Harcourt, *Jean* VI., comte d'; ii 21, 74, 251, 450; iii. 364, iv. 18, 21.
Died 1388. Son of Jea Froissart calls him 'Will (iii. 364).
Harcourt, Jean VII., comte d'; v. 402.
Died 1452. Son of Jean VI.
Hardeshull, Huguenin d'; iv. 200.
Hardeshull, sir John; i. 219.
Harduemont, Godefroi de; ii. 34
Harecourt. *See* Harcourt.
Harlebecque, 'the thre breth of.' *See* Helbeke.
Harleston, sir John; ii. 51, 44 463, 469—; iii. 28—, 59, 1 iv. 384—.
Harpeden, sir John; ii. 301, 38 412; iv. 180; v. 143.
Harpeden, Jean d'; v. 413; 173.
Harpyngham, Thomas. *See* Erpi ham.
Harsley. *See* Harcigny.
Harte. *See* Hert.
Hartecelle, sir John; i. 322—.
Hartwell, (i. 322). *See* Hartecelle
Harwich, queen Isabel lands at 33.
Hasquenay, sir William; jousts at Inglevert v. 342—.
Hastings, sir Hugh; i. 119; in G cony 236; 246, 268.
Hastings, sir Hugh; ii. 189, 1 199, 223, 280, 452; iii. 130; 288; vi. 386.
Haulte-loge. *See* Ephesus (Altiloc
Haultepenne, Gauthier de; ii. 34.
Hauret. *See* Havré.
Havefane, Pierre; iv. 170, 197.
Havereth. *See* Havré.
Haveskerke, Louis d'; i. 390; 112—; death 120.
Havré, Gérard, sire de; i. 109, 14 Died 1361.

Havré, Gérard de; iii. 135, 137, 393, 445; v. 400; vi. 216.
Son of Gérard, above.
Havrech. *See* Havré.
Hawkwood, sir John; iii. 70—, 278; v. 447—.
Hay, Henry, seneschal of Angoulême; ii. 405—.
Hay, sir Hopkin; iii. 137.
Haydon, sir Richard. *See* Hebbedon.
Haye, Barat de la; i. 165.
Hebbedon, sir Richard; i. 236, 268.
Hedyn, Ingram. *See* Eudin, Enguerrand.
Heidelberg, Robert of, emperor of Germany. *See* Germany.
Heilly, Jacques de Créquy de; at Poitiers i. 375; ii. 12, 55.
Died *c.* 1362.
Heilly, Jacques de Créquy de; ii. 124; at Nicopolis vi. 236, 242—, 279—.
Son of Jacques de Heilly, above.
Helbeke, les seigneurs de; i. 118.
Heldone, sir Richard. *See* Hebbeden, sir Richard.
Helenes, Jean d'; at Poitiers i. 376-7.
Helly. *See* Heilly.
Helman, sir William. *See* Elmham.
Helme, Ralph; ii. 239.
Helton, sir Thomas; v. 213; at Otterburn 224.
Hennebont; taken by Jean de Montfort i. 175; siege of 198; ii. 427—.
Henry II., of Transtamare, Henry III., kings of Castile. *See* Castile.
Henry IV., king of England. *See* England.
Hepburn, sir Patrick; v. 208, 217.
Hepburn, Patrick; v. 217.
Son of above.
Herbury, squire of the duke of Lancaster's; v. 380—.
Hercy, sir Thomas; iii. 144.
Herde, Gérard de la. *See* Bautersem, Gérard van der Heyden, seigneur de.
Hereford, John de Bohun, earl of; i. 48, 77.
Died 1335. Second son of Humphrey VIII. de Bohun, fourth earl of Hereford.
Hereford, Humphrey IX. de Bohun, earl of; i. 148; in France (campaign of 1346) 276—.
Died 1361. Brother of John de Bohun, earl of Hereford, above.
Hereford, Humphrey X. de Bohun, earl of; ii. 38, 96, 377.
Died 1372. Nephew of Humphrey IX. de Bohun, above.
Hereford, John Gilbert, bishop of; ii. 458-9; iii. 464.
Herimez, Guillaume d'; iii. 305; vi. 216.
Herimez, Pinchart d'; vi. 216.
Hermes. *See* Herimez.
Hermit, Robert the. *See* L'Eremite, Robert.
Herpedan. *See* Harpeden.
Hert, sir Robert; v. 208, 221.
Herzeele, Rasse d'; iii. 96, 100—, 113—, 192—.
Herzeele, Sohier, sire d'; iii. 215, 355, 357, 403, 483.
Heule, Fleurant de; iii. 322—, 455.
Heuse, Baudrin de la; i. 376.
Hewet, sir Walter; ii. 132—, 154, 169, 373-4, 391, 406, 414-6, 434; death at the battle of Ouchy 439.
Hey, sir Latas de la. *See* Haye, Barat de la.
Heyle, Jean de; iv. 70—.
Hildenberg, Gauthier d'; i. 118.
Holand, sir Thomas; i. 219, 284.
Assumed the title of earl of Kent in 1360, and died that year.
Holand, sir Thomas. *See* Kent, Thomas Holand, duke of.
Holand, sir John. *See* Huntingdon, John Holand, earl of.
Holand, Maud. *See* Saint Pol, Maud Holand, comtesse de.
Holegrave, David; ii. 374, 397—, 421; iii. 131; iv. 60, 288.
Holenton, the lord of; ii. 434.
Holme, Richard; ii. 399—, 421; iv. 158.
Holton, sir Thomas; v. 213; at Otterburn, 224.
Honcourt, Gui de; iii. 135, 348; v. 196-204.
Hondbray (*i.e.* Humbie) ii. 449.

INDEX

Honnecourt, monastery of, defended by the abbot; i. 113-14.
Hornes, Arnould de, bishop of Liége. *See* Liége.
Hortingo de la Salle, chief of 'companions'; ii. 79, 85, 123, 190, 290, 329.
Hotebergue. *See* Hildenberg.
Houffalize, Henri de; i. 134, 137.
Houghton, Adam, bishop of St. David's (1361-89). *See* St. David's, bishop of.
House, Baudrin de la. *See* Heuse.
Housey. *See* Houssaye.
Houssaye, Eustache de la; iii. 106, 127, 159, 161, 464.
Houssaye, Alain de la; ii. 367-70, 475, 487, 490; iii. 161—, 187.
Hovarderie, Hovard de la; death iii. 97.
Hovarderie, Hovard de la; iii. 137.
Howel, David; ii. 406.
Hulluc, Eustache de; iii. 203.
Hungary, Ludwig, king of; iii. 67.
Hungary, Sigismund of Luxembourg, king of; vi. 177, 193—, 231—, 245—, 279, 290—.
Son of Charles IV. of Luxembourg, emperor of Germany. Married the daughter and heiress of Ludwig I. of Hungary.
Called by Froissart sometimes 'Henry,' sometimes 'Lewis.'
Huntingdon, William of Clinton, earl of; i. 148; in France (campaign of 1346) 276.
Created earl of Huntingdon 1337. Died 1354, leaving no male issue.
Huntingdon, Guichard d'Angle, earl of; i. 259, 269, 309; at Poitiers 374—; ii. 92, 188, 197, 208-9, 217, 256, 267, 275—, 293, 312—, 350, 367—, 385—, 422, 444-5, 459-60; death iii. 128, 250.
After the treaty of Brétigny, released from his allegiance to king John, does homage to Edward III. Created earl of Huntingdon, 1377. Died 1380.
Huntingdon, John Holand, earl of; iii. 229, 464; iv. 52—, 287—, 399—, 404-5, 419—, 466; v. 54—; at St. Inglevert 342—; 422; vi. 35—, 264—, 300—, 382-3, 390—.
Son of Thomas Holand, earl of Kent.
Hurle, Fleurant of. *See* Heule.
Hurtado, Alphonso; iv. 286, 291; v. 142.
Hussay. *See* Houssaye.

ILARDIA, Pascal d'; iii. 6, 7.
Ingelmunster, Pierre d'; i. 98.
Innocent VI. *See under* Popes.
Ireland: preparations of Richard II. for expedition to; vi. 125, 147—.
Ireland, duke of. *See* Oxford, Robert de Vere, earl of.
Ireland, the lady of. *See* Oxford, Philippe de Coucy, countess of.
Isabella of France. *See* England, Isabella, queen of.
Isle-Jourdain (Laille, *Froissart*), Bertrand, comte de l'; i. 131, 236—.
Isle-Jourdain (Laille, *Froissart*), Jean, comte de l'; ii. 267, 276, 339.
Brother of Bertrand.
Isles, Bernard des; v. 78, 122.
Isles, Henri des; ii. 447—.
Isles, Jean des; ii. 449.
Isles, John, lord of the; i. 311.
Isoré, Jean; ii. 257.
Ivry, Charles, sire d'; iii. 9.

JACOB, squire of the earl of Blois; iii. 480.
Jacquerie, the; i. 403-7.
Jaille, Tristan de la; iii. 173, 369; iv. 289, 295, 434, 475; v. 51.
Janvyll. *See* Joinville.
Jerusalem, Bertrand de Chanac, patriarch of; vi. 333, 400.
Jeumont, Jean de; ii. 482-9; iii. 358, 408, 436; iv. 14, 15, 26—; vi. 215—, 222.
Jewell, sir John; i. 399; ii. 105, 109, 111—; death 120; iv. 153-4.
John I., king of Aragon. *See* Aragon.
John I., king of Castile. *See* Castile.
John, king of France. *See* France.
John, king of Portugal. *See* Portugal.
John of Gaunt. *See* Lancaster, duke of.

Joigny, Jean de Noyers, comte de; i. 206, 362.
Died 1361.
Joigny, Miles de Noyers, comte de; ii. 22, 122, 128—.
Son of Jean de Noyers, above.
Joigny, Jean de Noyers, comte de; vi. 96—.
Died 1393. Son of Miles de Noyers, above.
Joinville; ii. 78.
Joinville, Ansel, comte de; i. 119.
Son of Jean de Joinville the historian.
Joinville, Henri, comte de; at Poitiers i. 376.
Son of Ansel, above.
Joinville, Henri de, comte de Vaudemont. *See* Vaudemont.
Jouel. *See* Jewell.
Jouy, Pierre de; v. 182-4.
Juberoth. *See* Aljubarotta.
Jugon; taken by Charles de Blois i. 215.
Juliers, William, marquis, afterwards count, and then duke of; i. 44-5; made count 102, 104—; 150-2; v. 87, 93.
Died 1361.
Juliers, William, duke of; ii. 270, 377; v. 87, 102, 205-6, 233-45.
Son of the preceding. Died 1397. Married Marie (called by Froissart 'Jeanne'), daughter of Renaud, duke of Guelderland: consequently brother-in-law ('brother,' v. 94) of Edward, duke of Guelderland.
Juliers, William, duke of Juliers and of Guelderland. *See* Guelderland.
Son of the preceding. Died 1402.
Juliers, Isabel de. *See* Kent, Isabelle de Juliers, countess of, subsequently wife of Eustace d'Aubrecicourt.
Jumont. *See* Jeumont.
Juppeleu, Louis de; i. 160.
Juvinga, Yves; vi. 219—.

KENKEREN (Keukren, *Berners*), Henri de; i. 165.
Kent, Edmund, earl of; i. 24—, 66; execution 74.
Son of Edward I.
Kent, John, earl of; i. 276.
Son of the preceding.
Kent, Isabelle de Juliers, wife of John, earl of Kent, and subsequently wife of Eustace d'Aubrecicourt; ii. 18, 28.
Kent, Thomas Holand, second earl of; ii. 196, 211, 452; iii. 229; iv. 52—, 308; vi. 140.
Died 1397. Son of sir Thomas Holand and Joan of Kent.
Kent, Thomas Holand, duke of Surrey and earl of Kent (the young earl of Kent); vi. 267, 391—.
Son of the preceding. Killed 1400.
Kergorlay, sire de; ii. 138—.
Kerimel, Geoffroi de; ii. 418—; iii. 106, 159, 161, 187; iv. 480.
Kerlouet; i. 230; ii. 261-6, 277, 301, 313, 318—, 325—.
Kers, Pierre de; iv. 170, 191, 197.
Knolles, sir Robert; i. 399-400; ii. 12, 30, 123, 131—, 190-3, 279, 284-9, 330-6, 343, 352, 360-2, 376—, 427-33, 440—; iii. 14, 107—, 156, 162—, 234, 243; iv. 109—.
Kouk, a German squire; v. 287.
Kyrrecke, Gui. *See* Quiéret, Gui.

LA BAY. *See* Baie, la.
Labey, the lord of (i. 277), apparently a corruption of le sire de *La Ware*. *See* Delaware.
Labret. *See* Albret.
Laconet, Yon de; ii. 181, 221, 225, 238-9, 407, 418.
Called once by Froissart 'Alains.'
La Grue, Petiton de; v. 265.
La Hogue Saint-Vaast, landing of Edward III. at; i. 277—.
Laille, comte de. *See* Isle-Jourdain, comte de l'.
Lakingeth, sir John; ii. 262; vi. 209, 257—, 297, 302.
Lalaing, le sire de; i. 143.
Lalaing, Simon de; iii. 259, 304.
Lalaing, Nicholas de; vi. 216.

INDEX

Lamb, James; iii. 14—.
Lamb, Roger; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 353, 356.
Lambres, Lambert de; iii. 331.
Lambres, Tristan de; iii. 331.
L'Amit, chief of 'companions'; ii. 79, 85, 154, 190, 276, 336.
Lamorabaquyn, *i.e.* Bajazet, known as Amurath Baquin, Sultan of Turkey. *See* Turkey.
Lancaster, Thomas, earl of; i. 23-4.
Executed at Pontefract in 1322. Son of Edmund, earl of Lancaster, younger son of Henry III.
Lancaster, Henry, earl of; i. 34, 66—.
Died 1345. Brother of Thomas, earl of Lancaster, above.
Lancaster, Henry, duke of. *See* Derby, earl of.
Son of Henry, earl of Lancaster, above.
Lancaster, John of Gaunt, duke of; birth i. 149; ii. 37, 89, 144, 165, 181-8, 196, 201-2; at Najera 207-14; returns to England, 225; 291-2, 296—, 310-11, 314—, 336-8, 348, 350, 357, 362, 367—; second marriage 380—; returns to England 382—, 384, 413-4, 434—, 442—, 449-56; regent of England 460; 468; iii. 11, 48—, 222, 245—, 464, 490; iv. 5—, 62, 167—, 252—, 396—; expedition to Spain iv. 287—; 461—; v. 44-68, 75-6, 140-4; marriage of duke of Lancaster's daughter v. 152-70; 262, 377—; vi. 35—, 93, 110—, 135—, 190, 224-30, 262—, 300—, 333—; death 336.
Lancaster, Blanche of, first wife of John of Gaunt, duke of; ii. 380.
Lancaster, Constance of Castile, second wife of John of Gaunt, duke of; ii. 380—; iv. 287—, 408—; v. 266-8. *See also* Lancaster, John of Gaunt, duke of.
Lancaster, Catharine Swynford (Roet), third wife of John of Gaunt, duke of; vi. 190-1, 271.
Lancaster, Catherine, daughter of John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster and Constance of Castile. *See* Castile, Catherine of Lancaster, queen of.
Lancaster, Philippa, daughter of John of Gaunt, and Blanche, duchess of Lancaster. *See* Portugal, queen of.
Lancaster, Thomas of (a squire); i. 257.
Lancegrove. *See* Landskron.
Lancenuch, Conrad; i. 157.
(Froissart has Lensemach.)
Lanconet. *See* Laconet.
Landas, Jean de; i. 151.
Landas, Jean, sire de; i. 135, 317; at Poitiers 364; death 376.
Lande, Bérard de la; ii. 391, 396.
Landes, the seneschal of; iii. 31.
Landiras, Pierre de; at Poitiers i. 369; ii. 391, 414, 475.
Landernau, Galeran de; i. 198-214.
Landskron, dame de; v. 8, 22.
Lane, Raimond de; iv. 117.
Lane, Enguerrand de; iv. 118.
Son of Raimond de Lane, above.
Laneplane, sire de; v. 122.
Langoiran, sire de; at Poitiers i. 369— (Buger, *Berners*); ii. 351, 367, 414, 477—, 483—, 487—; death iii. 45—.
Langres, Guillaume de Poitiers, bishop of; ii. 126.
Langres, Guillaume de Poitiers known bâtard de; iii. 142, 361—.
Son of Guillaume, bishop of Langres.
Langres, Bernard de Tourd'Auvergne, bishop of; v. 1—.
Langres, Friar Simon of; ii. 57.
Langton, the lord of; i. 119.
Langton, sir John; ii. 389.
Languernon, Langurant. *See* Langoiran.
Laon, Pierre Aycelin de Montaigu, bishop of; iv. 465.
La Personne, Jean de; iv. 30.
Laquyham. *See* Lakingeth.
La Réole, surrenders to the English i. 252-6.
La Roche, sire de; v. 372.
La Roche-sur-Yon. *See* Roche-sur Yon.
Lasceles, William; v. 149.

Latimer, lord; at Crécy i. 294; ii. 148, 449; iii. 130, 166—.
Latrau, le soudic de (Soldyche of Lestrade, *Berners*); at Poitiers i. 369—; ii. 106, 109—, 209, 213, 254, 281, 351, 367, 391, 396, 490-1; iii. 14, 23, 222, 253, 269, 283—, 293; v. 402.
Lauder, sir Robert; v. 208.
Launnoit, Jean de; iii. 192—.
Laval, Gui, sire de; i. 395; ii. 396—, 417, 423, 447, 450—, 464; iii. 9, 178, 369; iv. 447; vi. 173.
Died 1412. Second son of Gui IX., sire de Laval.
In vol. i. p. 395 de la Wall is wrongly glossed as Delawar.
Laval, Gui, known as Braimon de; ii. 106, 122.
Lay, Hustin du; iii. 257-8.
Layle, count of. *See* Isle-Jourdain, comte de l'.
Le Bascle, Pierre; iii. 3, 7—, 12, 36.
Le Baveux, Gui; iii. 148, 361; iv. 289.
Le Bel, Jean; i. 17-18.
Le Boutillier, Guillaume; v. 330-41, 372-80, 395.
Le Cocq, Jean; ii. 467; iii. 29—.
Leeuwerghem, le sire de; iii. 339.
Leeuwerghem, Gilbert de; iii. 408, 452, 482; vi. 278.
Le Gris, Jacques; iv. 364—.
Leincester, Art MacMurrough, king of; vi. 150—, 153—.
Lelinghen (Balyngham, *Berners*); negotiations at iii. 465; truce of v. 272—; negotiations at vi. 92—, 118—, 162—.
Le Maresçal, Robert; iii. 100, 318; iv. 394.
Le Meingre, Jean, known as Boucequaut. *See* Boucequaut.
Le Mercier, Jean; iii. 5; at Lelinghen v. 273, 291—, 323, 435; vi. 71; imprisonment of 81—, 120; released 170.
Le Monadich; v. 340, 388.
Lendall. *See* Levedale.
Lenegre, Antoine; ii. 336.
Lens, the lord of. *See* Cuyk, Othon, sire de.
Lens, le sire de; i. 143.
Lens, Arnould de Gavre, sire de; iii. 99, 211.
Léon, Gui de Leon, bishop of; i. 198, 201-2, 206; ii. 140.
Léon, Hervée or Henri de; i. 172, 177, 184, 200-34 *passim*; death 235.
Léon, Hervée, sire de; ii. 129—; iii. 20; vi. 171.
L'Eremite, Robert; vi. 116, 160—, 211.
Lerny, Robert of (i. 236). *See* Eltham, Robert.
L'Escot, Hagré; ii. 79.
Le Scote, Robyn. *See* Scot, Robin le.
Lescun (Lescute, *Berners*), le sire de; i. 237-8, 243; ii. 164, 443; iii. 7, 31, 36.
Le Seneschal d'Eu, Jean; iii. 58—; v. 401.
This name is omitted in many MSS. and in Kervyn's text.
Lesparre, Senebrun de; i. 235; at Poitiers 369—.
Lesparre, Florimond, sire de; ii. 164, 190, 209, 267, 351, 383, 475, 477; iii. 43.
Lesparre, le bourg de; ii. 79, 85, 154, 169, 209, 227, 262, 276, 351.
Lespès, Raimonnet de; iv. 98, 111—, 158.
Lespontin. *See* Spontin.
Lespres, Jean de; iv. 170, 197.
Lestrad, the Soldyche of. *See* Latrau, le soudic de.
Lestrief. *See* Letrief.
Lestyne. *See* Lescun.
Letrief, Gilles de; i. 97-9.
Levedale, sir Lewis; i. 197, 203.
Levedale, sir John (Lynedall, *Berners*); i. 197, 203, 243—.
Lewis of Bavaria, emperor of Germany. *See* Germany.
Libery, Stephen; v. 149.
Liége; vi. 401.
Liége, Jean d'Arckel, bishop of (1364-78); iii. 301.
Liége, Arnould de Hornes, bishop of (1378-89); iii. 438; v. 205-6, 234.
Lignac. *See* Neilhac.

INDEX

Lignac, le sire de; iv. 170—, 191, 197.
Ligne, Michel de; ii. 270; vi. 216, 222.
Ligne, Nicolas de; ii. 122.
Ligne (Ligny), Jean, sire de; v. 400—; vi. 215—.
Ligny, Jean de Luxembourg, sire de; ii. 74.
Lilburn, sir John; v. 213; at Otterburn 224.
Limoges; surrender to the French ii. 350; sacked by Black Prince 355-7.
Limoges, Jean du Cros, bishop of; ii. 349, 351, 357.
Limousin, sir Richard; i. 142—.
Berners follows Froissart in calling him first 'Richard' and then 'Walter.'
Limousin, Ernoul or Regnaut du Solier, known as Limousin; ii. 221, 225, 235, 407, 418; iv. 93, 173—, 199; v. 110 (gloss).
In v. 110, however, the reading of the French text which Berners followed is probably correct: '*Aux capitaines en garnison d'Auvergne de Gevaudan, de Limosin et des environs.*'
Lincoln, Henry Burghersh, bishop of (1320-42); i. 91—, 109, 118, 170.
Lincoln, Thomas Beake, bishop of (1342-47); i. 218, 276; at Neville's Cross 313.
Lindsay, sir Alexander; v. 207; at Otterburn 223.
Lindsay, sir James; v. 207, 210; at Otterburn 221, 223, 226-9, 275.
Lindsay, sir William; ii. 497, 499—; iii. 474; v. 207; at Otterburn 223; 272-5.
Linières, Jean, sire de; at Poitiers i. 375.
Linières, Philippe de; v. 181, 401.
Son of Jean de Linières, above.
Linières, Mauburni de; ii. 278, 293, 299, 318, 367, 373, 388; iv. 288, 318—, 475; v. 51—; death v. 61.
Lintre, sire de; v. 189, 192.
Lionel, earl of Ulster. *See* Clarence, Lionel, duke of.
Lisbon, siege of; iv. 267.
Lisle, sir John; i. 119, 226, 392.
Lisle, sir William; vi. 132—, 386.
Lisle (Laylle), Bertrand, count of (i. 236—). *See* Isle-Jourdain, Bertrand, comte de l'.
L'isle-Jourdain, comte de. *See* Isle-Jourdain.
Lister, William; iii. 237.
Loheac, Gui de; i. 225; ii. 129—.
London; Wat Tyler before iii. 231—; hostility of Londoners to the duke of Ireland v. 9—; jousts held at London v. 419; lamentations of Londoners upon the departure of the earl of Derby into exile vi. 313; summons sent by the Londoners to the earl 353; entry of the earl of Derby into London 360—.
London, the mayor of; ii. 458.
London, Stephen Gravesend, bishop of (1319-38); i. 76—.
London, Simon of Sudbury, bishop of (1362-75). *See* Canterbury, Simon of Sudbury, archbishop of.
London, William Courtney, bishop of (1375-81). *See* Canterbury, William Courtney, archbishop of.
London, Robert Braybrook, bishop of (1381-1405); vi. 260.
Longin (Longuy), sire de; v. 402.
Longueval, Guillaume de; ii. 367, 370.
Longueval, Jean de; v. 402.
Longvillers, le sire de; i. 339; iii. 130.
Longvilliers, Jean de; ii. 447.
Lopez, Sancho; ii. 111—.
Lor, Jean de; i. 124.
Lor, Gérard de; i. 124, 128.
Lorinch, sir Niel; i. 358; ii. 160, 164, 189, 211, 222, 280, 299.
Lornyche. *See* Lorinch.
Lorraine, Raoul, duke of; i. 77, 119, 156, 281.
Slain at Crécy.
Lorraine, Jean, duke of; iii. 146; v. 203-4, 238.
Died 1390. Son of Raoul, duke of Lorraine.
Lorris, Robert de, seigneur d' Ermenonville; i. 348, 389; ii. 337.
Lorris, Lancelot de; ii. 346; iii. 58.

Louin, rsilerede ; v. 402.
Laré, Gouin d de ; v. 402.
Lourdes ; besieged by the duke of Anjou ii. 443 ; iv. 124—.
Louvain, Nicholas de ; ii. 255-9, 315-16.
Louviers, sack of ; i. 285.
Lucy, sir Stephen ; i. 270.
Lucy, sir Thomas ; in France (campaign of 1346) i. 277—.
Lucy, Sir William ; ii. 428, 495 ; iv. 52, 287 ; v. 226.
Ludwig of Bavaria, emperor of Germany. *See* Germany.
Lumley, sir Ralph ; at Otterburn v. 224.
Luna, the count of ; iv. 429 ; v. 290.
Lurren, the duke of. *See* Lorraine, duke of.
Lusignan, Pierre de, king of Cyprus. *See* Cyprus.
Lussac, battle of ; ii. 322.
Lussey, sir William. *See* Lucy.
Luxembourg, Pierre de, cardinal, bishop of Metz (1383-87) ; v. 106-7.
Luxemburg, Wenceslas of Bohemia, duke of. *See* Brabant, duke of.
Luxembourg, Wenceslas of, emperor of Germany. *See* Germany.
Luxembourg, Charles of, emperor of Germany. *See* Germany.
Lyle, comte de. *See* Laille.
Lymosyn. *See* Limousin.
Lynedall. *See* Levedale.
Lynne, Lewis ; iii. 441.
Lyon, Espang de ; iv. 99—, 413 ; v. 71 ; vi. 2—, 21—.
Lyon, John. *See* Yoens, Jean.
Lyon, lord of. *See* Léon, Hervée de.
Lyons, Edmund ; i. 241.
Lysle. *See* Lisle.

MacMurrough, Art, king of Leincester. *See* Leincester.
Madelyn ; vi. 392—.
Madurant, Géronnet de ; v. 115-34.
Mahieu, Étienne ; iii. 77—.
Mahieu, Gilbert ; iii. 74—, 304.
Maignelais, Jean de, known as Tristan ; ii. 99.
Maillart, Jean and Simon ; i. 408.
Maillé, le sire de ; iv. 479.
Maillezais, Pierre de Thurey, bishop of ; iv. 30.
Mailly, Gilles, sire de ; iii. 369, 464.
Mailly, Louis de ; ii. 367, 370.
Mainemares, Maubué de ; i. 354 (the lord Mauben).
Maisières, Pierre de ; i. 76.
Majorca, James II., king of ; i. 77 ; ii. 181.
Majorca, James III., king of ; ii. 181, 184, 189, 211, 215, 223, 232, 379 ; death 380.
Malain, Gérard de ; i. 201, 206, 209.
Malain, Réné de ; i. 209.
Malemort, Robert de ; i. 240.
Malepue (Malapus, *Berners*), Louis v. 265.
Malestroit, Geoffroi de ; i. 177, 201, 207, 225 ; executed, with his son of the same name 232.
Malestroit, Henri de ; i. 232.
Brother of Geoffroi de Malestroit.
Malestroit, Henri de ; ii. 129— ; iii. 26.
Malestroit, Jean de ; i. 230 ; ii. 369, 379 ; iii. 164, 366 ; iv. 290—.
Malestroit, le sire de ; iv. 210.
Mally. *See* Mailly.
Malvoisin, in Bigorre, taken by the duke of Anjou ; iv. 111—.
Mametz, le sire de ; i. 339.
Manny, Jean de ; i. 253-4.
Father of sir Walter Manny.
Manny, sir Walter ; i. 65, 87, 98-9, 106-7, 111, 118 ; at Sluys 148 ; expedition to Brittany 197-225 *passim* ; in Gascony 236— ; at siege of Aguillon 268— ; 306-8 ; before Calais 327—, 337— ; ii. 34, 38, 54, 96, 165, 292, 311, 312 ; death 383.
Manny, sir Giles ; i. 107 ; death 125.
Manny, sir John ; i. 125, 142 ('bretherne to therle of Namur' by mistake for '*au signeur de Mauny*').
Manny, Thierri de ; i. 125, 142 (Namur).
Manny, Olivier de. *See* Mauny.
Manny, the lord (i. 77, 236). *See* Mohun, lord.
Manrique, don Pedro ; iii. 33.

INDEX

Manrique, Diego Gomez; iv. 92, 189, 198.
Mansel, Philip; ii. 398, 404-9.
Mantes, taken by du Guesclin; ii. 104.
Mar, Thomas, earl of; hostage for David Bruce i. 394; ii. 492; iii. 477; iv. 49—.
Thomas, thirteenth earl of Mar, succeeded 1332, died 1377. Stated, by a mistake of Froissart's, to have been slain at Neville's Cross. *See* Berners, i. 313.
Marbais, le sire de; i. 143.
Marcel, Aimerigot; iii. 60—, 456—; v. 78—, 123, 179; v. 363-96.
Marcel, Etienne; i. 351, 401—.
March, Patrick, tenth earl of Dunbar and March; i. 153-5; taken prisoner at Neville's Cross i. 313.
Sir Patrick Dunbar (1285-1369), tenth earl of Dunbar and March, resigned his earldom to his eldest son George in 1368.
In the account of the battle of Nevilles Cross the name is first given, as 'the erle Patrys' among the slain, and then, as 'earl of March' among the prisoners. The confusion occurs in Froissart's account. The reference to the earl of Morette (Moray), i. 394, must also relate to him, as he held that earldom in right of his wife, Agnes Dunbar.
March, George, eleventh earl of Dunbar and March; at Otterburn v. 207-33.
'Sir Orge erle of Marc and of Donbare' v. 211.
March, sir George of Dunbar and March; v. 211.
March, sir Patrick of Dunbar and March; v. 208; at Otterburn 223.
March, Roger Mortimer, first earl of; i. 24—, 62, 66—; execution 75. Died 1330.
March, Roger Mortimer, second earl of; in France (campaign of 1346) i. 276—; ii. 39 (here called 'John' by a mistake of Froissart's). Died 1360. Grandson of the above.
March, Edmund Mortimer, third earl of; ii. 452.
Died 1381. Son of Roger Mortimer, above.
March, Roger Mortimer, fourth earl of ('Johan, erle of Marche, *Berners*); vi. 260.
Died 1398. Son of Edmund Mortimer, above.
March, John, earl of. *See* March, Roger Mortimer, earl of.
Marche, Jacques de Bourbon, comte de Ponthieu, and after de la Marche (died 1361); i. 181 (Jaques de Burbon); 267-9 (therle of Ponthyeu); 270, 346-7; at Poitiers (therle of Pontheu, the lord Jaques of Burbone), as if two persons 364—; ii. 76; at battle of Brignais against the 'companions,' ii. 82; 84; death 85.
Marche, Pierre de Bourbon, known as de la Marche; ii. 83, 84; death 85.
Slain at the battle of Brignais. Eldest son of Jacques de Bourbon.
Marche, Jean de Bourbon, comte de; ii. 154, 157, 326; iii. 19, 191, 363—, 449, 493; iv. 18; v. 203.
Died 1393. Second son of Jacques de Bourbon.
Marche, Jacques II., comte de la; vi. 185, 194; taken prisoner at Nicopolis 236—, 246.
Died 1438. Son of Jean I. de Bourbon, comte de Marche.
Marche, the earl of (ii. 75), a mistake apparently for '*es lointaines marces*.'
Marchelainville, siege of; ii. 123-4.
Marchi, Antonio; v. 406—.
Mares, Jean des; iii. 413.
Mareuil, le bascle or bascon de; i. 399; ii. 109—.
Mareuil, Guillaume de; ii. 405.
Mareuil, Raimond de, at Poitiers, i. 375; ii. 189, 211, 326, 340, 363—.
Marnell, the bascle of. *See* Mareuil.

Marquillies, Gérard de; iii. 99, 137, 203.
Marsan, Pierre de Castelpor, seigneur de; ii. 444.
Marsan, Raymonnet de; iii. 269, 420—.
Marse, Aymar; iii. 473—.
Marshal, John; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 353.
Marshal, the earl; (i. 21). *See* Norfolk, Thomas, earl of.
Marshal, the earl (vol. vi. *passim*). *See* Nottingham, Thomas Mowbray, earl of.
Marshal. *See* Le Mareschal.
Martel, Guillaume; iii. 58—; vi. 69, 71, 105, 119, 162.
Martin, king of Aragon. *See* Aragon.
Marveyle, Thybalt. *See* Moreuil, Thibaut de.
Maryde, the lord of (i. 236). *See* Terride.
Masmines, le Gallois de; iii. 120, 124, 210.
Masmines, Philippe de; iii. 100, 116, 120, 201.
Masquelée, William; v. 356.
Mastaing, Gérard, sire de; i. 141, 143.
Mastaing, Jean, sire de; i. 141.
Matefelon, le sire de; i. 137; v. 401.
Mathelyn, the lord and lady of. *See* Mytilene.
Maubeu. *See* Mainemares (Maubué de).
Maubisson, le sire de; i. 145.
Mauconseil, siege of; ii. 1.
Maulayne, Gérarde of. *See* Malain, Gérard de.
Maule, the lord of (i. 277), for Maune, *i.e.* Mohun (*q.v.*).
Mauléon, le Bascot de; iv. 111, 150—.
Maulévrier, le sire de; i. 137; ii. 258.
Maulévrier, the 'three brethren'; ii. 423, 450, 455, 464.
Maulyne. *See* Mohun.
Mauny, Courageux de; ii. 22, 24.
Mauny, Olivier de; ii. 140, 157, 193, 239, 358, 407, 444—, 450; iii. 148.
Mauny, Henri de; iii. 366.
Mauny, Gautier de, Thierri de, etc. *See* Manny, sir Walter, etc.
Mauvigmente. *See* Mauvinet.
Mauvinet, Maurice; iii. 281; v. 265.
Mauvoisin, le sire de; iii. 156.
Maxwell, sir John; v. 220, 223.
Meath, O'Neill, king of; vi. 153.
Meaux, relieved by the captal de Buch and the count of Foix; i. 406.
Meaux, Robert de Béthune, vicomte de; ii. 347, 352, 425, 435, 438, 456, 464, 472; iii. 369, 433—, 444; iv. 26—; v. 370-91.
Mechin, the little (Petit-Meschin), chief of 'companions'; ii. 79, 86, 154, 262, 276, 281, 336; iv. 216.
Medina, don Alphonso, count of; iii. 33.
Meingre, Jean le, known as Boucicquaut. *See* Boucicquaut.
Meissen, the marquis of; i. 106, 110; at Buironfosse 118; 150-2.
Melrose, destroyed by the English; iv. 56—.
Melun, siege of; ii. 19—.
Melun, Guillaume de; ii. 347; at Lelinghen v. 273-5.
Melval, Louis de; at Poitiers i. 375; ii. 211, 326, 340, 350.
Memels. *See* Vermeilles.
Mendoça, Pedro Gonzalez de; iii. 33, 296; iv. 189.
Mensterworth, sir John; ii. 360, 377.
Meraude, Servais or Shiffart of, lord of Heymersbach; v. 112-14, 194, 285.
Mercier, sir John. *See* Le Mercier, Jean.
Mercier, Nicolas; ii. 459.
Mercœur, the castle of, taken by Aimerigot Marcel; i. 456—.
Mercœur, le sire de; at Poitiers i. 375.
Merlo, Gonsalves de (Gonse Salvase de Merlo); v. 46.
Merlo, Martin Ferrand de; iv. 325—, 404-5.
Merlo, Vasse Martin de; v. 46.
Mespin, Pierre; v. 314, 317, 334-7, 386.
Messiden, Thomas; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 350.
Meulan, taken by du Guesclin; ii. 105.

INDEX

Meulen, Goswin van der; i. 118.
Meulen, Jean van der; iii. 425—, 440, 482.
Meulence. *See* Meulan.
Meullier, Froissart; iii. 270.
Meurs, Frédéric, comte de; v. 90.
Micaille, Gauvain; iii. 149—.
Milan, John Visconti, lord and archbishop of; vi. 199-200.
Milan, Matteo Visconti, lord of; vi. 200.
Eldest son of Stephen Visconti. Called by Froissart sometimes 'Sanche' and sometimes 'Mauffé,' whence Berners 'Manfres.'
Milan, Galeas Visconti, count of Vertus and lord of; iv. 16—; vi. 200—.
Brother of Matteo, above.
Milan, Barnabo Visconti, lord of; death iv. 16—; vi. 200—.
Brother of Matteo and Galeas, above.
Milan, John Galeas Visconti, lord of, known earlier as Count of Vertus; ii. 455; iv. 16—; v. 442—; vi. 200—, 230, 253, 310.
Son of Galeas Visconti, above.
Millen (Nulle, *Berners*); v. 81—.
Milly, le Borgne de; i. 272.
Miramont, taken by the English; i. 258; retaken 267.
Mirando, Ferrand de; iv. 122, 123.
Mirepoix, Hugues de; i. 238.
Mirepoix, Pierre de, bishop of Cambray (1309-24) and subsequently of Bayeux (1324-34); i. 253-4.
Mirepoix, Jean, sire de; i. 135.
Mitylene, Francisco Gattilusio, lord of; vi. 248, 280—.
Mohun, John, lord, (the lord Manny); i. 77, 236; in France (campaign of 1346) 277—(Maule); at Poitiers 369 (Maulyne); ii. 445, 452.
Moine, Guillaume le. *See* Monk, William.
Moissac, capture of, by Duke of Anjou; ii. 339.
Molin, Guillaume de; v. 402.
Mombray. *See* Mowbray.
Momorency. *See* Montmorency.
Monadich. *See* Le Monadich.
Monceau, Rasse de; i. 159.
Moncontour, taken by sir Thomas Percy, ii. 374; besieged by du Guesclin 397—.
Mondigy, Guillaume de; iv. 185, 191.
Monk (le Moine), William, seneschal of Agenois; ii. 249—, 280.
Monnoie, Nicolas de la; v. 105.
Mons, Adolphus VII., count of; i. 110; at Buironfosse 118, 143, 150-2.
Mons, Thierri de Berg, count of; iii. 99.
Succeeded his brother Adolphus in 1348.
Mons, the earl of (at Poitiers i. 376) for Vaudemont.
'Therle of Vandos, therle of Mons' for '*li contes de Vaudemont.*'
Monstres, Stephen, earl of; at Otterburn v. 207.
Not identified. Menteith has been suggested.
Montagu, sir John; i. 339.
Brother of William Montagu, second earl of Salisbury.
Montagu, William; i. 190-2.
Nephew of William Montagu, first earl of Salisbury.
Montagu, William, John. *See* Salisbury, William, John, earl of.
Montagu (vi. 71). *See* Montaigu, Jean de.
Montague, the lord of (v. 372, 380). *See* Montigny, sire de.
Montaigu, Bernard Aycelin, sire de, known as Griffon; ii. 30, 261, 268, 340, 375.
Montaigu, Pierre Aycelyn de, bishop of Laon. *See* Laon, bishop of.
Brother of the sire de Montaigu, above.
Montaigu, Jean de; vi. 71, 81, 176.
Montaigu, Bridoul de; ii. 442.
Montauban, battle of; ii. 174-9.
Montbéliard, le comte de; i. 156; ii. 125.
Montbouchier, Bertrand de; iii. 159, 166—, 187.
Montberry, sir Peter; v. 150.
Montbrandon, le sire de; i. 240.

Montcavrel, Jean, sire de; v. 248; vi. 145, 185, 206; at Nicopolis 235—.
Montcavrel, le borgne de; vi. 185, 206.
Montclau, le sire de; vi. 328.
Montcontour, Guillaume de; ii. 486, 490.
Mountcountour. *See* Moncontour.
Montélimart, le sire de; ii. 83.
Montendre, Jean de; at Poitiers i. 375.
Montendre, Guillaume de; ii. 278, 299, 367, 383, 401.
Montendre, le sire de; v. 181.
Monteraulewe, the lord of. *See* Montraulieu, le sire de.
Montfaucon, Gérard de; i. 151.
Montfaucon, Pierre de; iv. 373—.
Montferrand, Guillaume de; iv. 378.
Montferrand, Bertrand, sire de; i. 369; ii. 351, 367.
Montferrant, taken by Perrot le Béarnais; v. 115-34.
Montferrat, Jean Paléologue, Marquis de; ii. 88.
Montfort, Jean de. *See* Brittany, Jean de Montfort, duke of.
Montgomery, John de; i. 251.
Montgomery, sir John; v. 208; takes Henry Percy prisoner at Otterburn 223.
Montiel (Nantueyle, *Berners*); Pedro the Cruel slain at ii. 234-9; his body exhumed and reinterred v. 266—.
Montigny-en-Ostrevant, Jean de; i. 136, 143; iii. 433, 443; v. 202.
Once called 'Robert' by Froissart.
Montigny, Jean de; iii. 156.
Montigny-Saint-Christophe, Eustache, sire de; iii. 201—, 211; death 257.
Montigny, Rase de; iii. 99; vi. 217.
Montigny, le sire de; v. 372, 380.
Montigu, Guillaume de; slain at Poitiers i. 375-6.
Montlhéry; ii. 54.
Montmartin, Jean de; ii. 52.
Montmartin, Jacques de; ii. 484.
Montmor, Jacques de; ii. 405-6, 491; iii. 23.
Montmor, Robert, known as Morelet de; ii. 405, 491.
Montmorency, Charles, sire de; i. 165, 267—; at Crécy 301, 409; ii. 74.
Montmorillon, le sire de; ii. 179.
Montmorillon, taken by Bertrand de Guesclin; ii. 396.
Montpaon, Guillaume de; ii. 367—.
Montpellier; iii. 5.
Montpensier, capture of, by the duke of Anjou; ii. 339.
Montpensier, Jean de Berry, comte de. *See* Berry.
Montpont, captured by the Bretons, and recaptured by the English; ii. 367—.
Montquel, Guillaume, known as le borgne de; at Nicopolis vi. 236.
Montraulieu, le sire de; iii. 161.
Montsault, le sire de; at Crécy i. 301; at Poitiers 375; ii. 55, 124.
Montségur, siege and capture of; i. 250, 252.
Moray, Thomas Randolph, first earl of; i. 50.
Moray, John Randolph, third earl of; i. 86; taken prisoner 188; exchanged 196; taken prisoner at Neville's Cross, 314.
Second son of Thomas Randolph, first earl. Slain, not taken prisoner, at Neville's Cross.
Moray, the earl of, hostage for David Bruce i. 394.
The earldom of Moray passed after the death of John Randolph to his sister Agnes Dunbar, wife of Patrick Dunbar, earl of March (*q.v.*). The earl of March was surety for David Bruce; he afterwards transferred the earldom to his younger son.
Moray (Morette), John Dunbar, earl of; ii. 492, 499; iii. 245—, 474; iv. 49—; at Otterburn v. 207-33.
Son of Patrick Dunbar, earl of March.
Morbeke, Denis de; at Poitiers 369; takes king John prisoner 379—.
Morbereth, sir William of. *See* North Berwick.
Moreaulx, Thomas; iv. 287—, 318—, 334, 396, 466; v. 44—, 150.

INDEX

Moret, earl of. *See* Moray.
Moreuil, Thibaut de; i. 108, 135.
Moreuil, Rogues de; iv. 58.
Morfouace, Guillaume Picard, known as; iii. 13, 26; iv. 290, 480.
Moriage (Morianne) le sire de; iv. 170, 197.
Morialmé, Robert de Bailleul, sire de; iii. 57.
Morillon, Thibaut de; i. 232.
Morland, John (Jean Merlen, *Froissart*); jousts at St. Inglevert v. 356.
Morley, Thomas de; iii. 130, 228.
Mornay, Jean de; ii. 476; iii. 138; iv. 157.
Mornay, Pierre de; ii. 476-8.
Moron, the lord of; iii. 33.
Son of Henry of Castile.
Mortagne, siege of; i. 161; ii. 490—; iii. 14—.
Mortain, sir John; ii. 301; death at battle of Rochelle 390.
Morton, sir Robert; ii. 282, 419.
Moten, John. *See* Moulton, John.
Motte, Godefroi de la; i. 304.
Motte, Gaillard de la; ii. 189, 196, 209, 262.
Moulton, lord. *See* Multon, sir Robert.
Moulton, John; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 356.
Mounpenser (Montpensier). *See* Ventadour et Montpensier.
Mount. *See* Mont.
Mountfort, Jean de. *See* Brittany, duke of.
Moustier, Pierre de. *See* Ostia, bishop of.
Mowbray, sir John. *See* Nottingham, John Mowbray, earl of.
Mowbray, sir Ralph; v. 213; at Otterburn 224.
Mucident. *See* Mussidan.
Mule, sir Goswin de la. *See* Meulen, Goswin van der.
Multon, sir Robert; i. 119; at Sluys 148; in France (campaign of 1346, 277— (Myllon, *Berners*).
Multon, Jean de, mayor of Bordeaux; ii. 480.
Murendon, le vicomte de; i. 236.
Musgrave, sir Thomas; ii. 495—; iv. 60.
Musse, the marquis of. *See* Meissen.
Mussidan, Auger de Montault, sire de; i. 235, 358; at Poitiers 374; ii. 45.
Died 1359.
Mussidan, Raymond de Montault, sire de; ii. 164, 190, 209, 288, 351, 371, 383, 414, 477—, 483—, 488, 505; iii. 44—.
Mutterell. *See* Montreuil.
Mutterell, the lord of. *See* Montcavrel.
Myleton. *See* Multon.
Myllon, the lord of (i. 277). *See* Multon, sir Robert.
Myrande, the earl of. *See* Murendon.
Myraude, Gervais de. *See* Merode, Servais de.

NAJARA, battle of; ii. 204—.
Namur, Robert de, seigneur de Beaufort; i. 18.
Namur, John II., count of; i. 81.
Namur, William, count of; i. 111—, 143, 150, 281.
Died 1391. Brother of John II., above.
Namur, William II., count of; iii. 193, 198, 256, 443, 459, 491—; iv. 40.
Died 1418. Son of count William I.
Namur, Robert de, seigneur de Beaufort; ii. 292, 296, 308, 310, 312, 457; iii. 198, 220, 227, 256, 275; patron of Froissart i. 18, 321.
Brother of counts John II. and William I., above. Died 1392.
Nantes; surrenders to Charles of Blois i. 184-5; besieged by the English under the earl of Buckingham iii. 163—.
Nanthorillet. *See* Nantouillet.
Nantouillet, Renaud de; vi. 96.
Nantueyle. *See* Montiel.
Naples, invasion of the duke of Anjou; iii. 280—.
Naples, Robert, king of; i. 120, 149.
Naples, Jane, queen of; ii. 181, 379; iii. 66—.
Naples, Charles de Sicile, known as de la Paix, king of; iii. 68—, 279—; iv. 16; death 29.

Naples, Marguerite de Duras, wife of Charles de la Paix, king of; iv. 239; v. 290.
Naples, Louis I., d'Anjou, king of. *See* Anjou, Louis, duke of.
Naples, Louis II., d'Anjou, king of; iii. 485; iv. 15; v. 138, 173, 288-91.
Crowned king of Naples at Avignon, November 1, 1389. Died 1417.
Naples, Annibal Ceccano, known as Cardinal of Naples; i. 170.
Narbonne, Aimery IX., vicomte de; i. 151.
Died 1342.
Narbonne, Aimery X., vicomte de; ii. 174—, 339, 449.
Nassau, John, count of; at Poitiers i. 366.
Navailles, Pierre or Monaut de; iv. 414; v. 71.
Navarre, Philip III., king of; i. 77; undertakes crusade 89; 119, 156.
Sometimes called 'Louis' by a mistake of Froissart's. Died 1343.
Navarre, Charles II., known as *The Bad*, king of; murders Charles d'Espaing i. 345—; made prisoner by king John 354—; released 402—; relations to the duke of Normandy 402-14; ii. 20, 27, 45, 102, 149, 167, 186—; taken prisoner by Olivier de Mauny 193; 224, 273—, 337, 423-4, 466—, 505; iii. 2—, 32—; iv. 138—; v. 65, 70; death 108-10.
King of Navarre 1350-87. Son of Philip III.
Navarre, Jeanne de France, wife of Charles II., king of; ii. 19, 193; death 504.
Navarre, Blanche de; i. 341-2, 347 ('*the which Jane had been wyfe to kyng Philyppe*'; read 'Blanche'); 414; ii. 19, 149.
Second wife of Philip de Valois. Daughter of Philip III. of Navarre, and sister of Charles the Bad.
Navarre, Philippe de; i. 345, 388, 399, 403; ii. 12, 20.
Second son of Philip III.
Navarre, Louis de; ii. 115, 123-7, 150.
Third son of Philip III.
Navarre, Charles III., king of; ii. 424; iii. 2, 43—; iv. 426—; coronation v. 110; vi. 303-6.
Died 1425. Eldest son of Charles the Bad.
Navarre, Pierre de; ii. 424.
Son of Charles the Bad.
Navarre, the earl of (*i.e.* Nuno Alvarez, constable of Portugal). *See* Novarre.
Neell (i. 364). *See* Nesle.
Neélle, Gui de, sire d'Offemont; i. 269, 326, 343; death 344.
Berners' words do not imply that he died, as is the case. *See* Froissart, ed. Kervyn de Lettenhove, v. 309.
Neélle, Guillaume de; i. 343.
Nefveyle. *See* Neville.
Neilhac, Jean de; ii. 479, 480.
Neilhac, Guillaume de (Lignac, *Berners*); iii. 219, 369; iv. 18, 389, 426—; v. 49, 111, 163-4, 206.
Neilhac, Hélion de (Lignac, *Berners*); v. 163-4, 168, 203, 206, 401—, 413; vi. 71.
Brother of Guillaume de Neilhac, above.
Nesle, Guillaume de; at Poitiers i. 364; death 376.
Nesle, Guillaume de; ii. 449; iii. 434.
Second son of Guillaume de Nesle, above.
Nevele, battle of; iii. 203—.
Nevell. *See* Nevill.
Nevers, Jean, count of, subsequently duke of Burgundy; iii. 488—; vi. 178—, 192-208; at Nicopolis 232—, 248—, 281.
Son of Philip of France, duke of Burgundy.
Nevers, Marguerite de Hainault, wife of Jean de Bourgogne, comte de Nevers; iii. 488—.
Neville, sir Ralph; i. 276; at Neville's Cross 313; ii. 165, 259.
Died 1387.
Neville, sir John; ii. 54, 154, 189, 418, 495; iii. 22—, 31—; iv. 52; v. 207.
Seneschal of Bordeaux. Eldest

son of sir Ralph Neville, above. Died 1388.
The statement (ii. 189) about his having been taken at the battle of Auray should relate to the sire de Retz (Rais, *Berners*), who is omitted by Berners. The confusion goes back to the French MSS.
Neville, sir William; ii. 343-4, 351, 360-1, 425, 428; iv. 60, 313; v. 14.
Third son of sir Ralph Neville.
Neville, sir Robert; i. 268.
Fourth son of sir Ralph Neville.
Neville, sir Ralph; iii. 131, 133.
Son of sir John Neville, above.
Neville, Richard; ii. 421.
Neville, sir John, captain of Newcastle; i. 188-9.
Neville's Cross, battle of; i. 312— (battle of Newcastell-upon-Tyne, *Berners*).
Newcastle-upon-Tyne; i. 312—; skirmish between Henry Percy and Scots at v. 213—.
Newecastell, Johan of. *See* Castelnau, Jean de.
Neydo, earl of. *See* Nidau.
Nicopolis, siege and battle of; vi. 197—.
Nidau, count of; at Poitiers i. 366—.
Nogent-sur-Seine, battle of; ii. 22—.
Norbury, an English squire; iv. 180.
Norfolk, Thomas, earl of, known as the Earl Marshal; i. 21.
Half-brother of Edward II.
Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray, earl of Nottingham, afterwards duke of Norfolk. *See* Nottingham.
Normandy, John and Charles, dukes of. *See* France, John and Charles v., kings of.
North Berwick, sir William of; v. 208 (Morbereth); at Otterburn 221 (Norbernyche).
Northampton, William Bohun, earl of; i. 112, 118, 148; in France (campaign of 1346) 276—, 327.
Froissart calls him the earl of Northampton and Gloucester.
Northumberland, Henry Percy, earl of; ii. 292, 414, 444, 460; reta
Berwick 494—; iii. 222, 251
472; iv. 52; v. 5—, 212—;
128, 140, 309—, 347—, 372
400.
Died 1407.
Norwich, Henry Spencer, bishop
iii. 418—; iv. 308, 312, 390;
20.
Norwich, John of; i. 236, 2
268—.
Nottingham, John Mowbray, earl
i. 48, 77, 119, 226; in Fra
(campaign of 1346) 277—;
Nevilles Cross 313; ii. 55.
Died 1361.
Nottingham, John Mowbray, earl
ii. 460, 497—; iv. 52.
Died 1383. Son of John Mo
bray, above.
Nottingham, Thomas Mowbray, e
of, afterwards duke of Norfol
iii. 472; iv. 390; v. 5, 149;
128, 140, 145, 157; proxy
Richard II. in marriage of Isa
of France 189; 266—; arre
duke of Gloucester 273-4—; 296
accuses earl of Derby 307—; de
401.
Created duke of Norfolk in 13
Died 1399.
Novarre, le comte de, (*i.e.* Nu
Alvares Pereira); iv. 249, 2
288—, 404, 469.
Novayles. *See* Navailles.
Nowalles, Menaunt of. *See* Navaill
Monaut de.
Noyers, le sire de; i. 295.
Noyon, English before; ii. 345—.
Noyon, Gilles de Lorris, bishop
ii. 1.
Nulle. *See* Millen.

OBIES, GÉRARD D'; iii. 21, 57.
O'Brien, king of Thomond;
153.
O'Brien. *See* Brine Costeret.
Obstrate. *See* Strael, Gauthier.
Œuf, Chateau de l'; iii. 68, 279.
Offemont, le sire d'. *See* Neelle, G
de, sire d'Offemont.
Ogle, sir Robert; v. 213; at Ott
burn 224.

Oliferne, Agadinquor d'; v. 402.
O'Neill, king of Meath. *See* Meath.
Ophem (Opeyn, *Berners*), Jean d'; v. 105.
Orense, in Galicia, surrenders to duke of Lancaster; iv. 461—.
Orgessin, Léger de; ii. 108, 110; iii. 5.
Orkney, earl of; i. 188.
Orkney, Henry Saint-Clair, earl of; iii. 474.
Orléans, Philip, duke of; i. 353; at Poitiers 364—, 407; ii. 74, 96, 100.
Died 1375. Fifth son of Philip of Valois.
Orléans, Blanche, wife of Philip, duke of; i. 404-6.
Orléans, Louis, duke of Touraine and subsequently of Orleans; iv. 29, 44, 46; v. 203, 294—; wager with the king 325-6; 458—; vi. 28-32, 59, 97—, 296.
Assassinated 1407. Second son of Charles v.
Orléans, Valentine Visconti, wife of Louis, duke of; v. 283-4, 444, 458—; vi. 102, 203-4, 252-3.
Orléans, Simon d' (called by Berners 'Peter'); i. 76.
Ormiston, sir John; v. 208.
Ormond, the earl of; vi. 128.
Orphen, sir Thomas; vi. 154.
Orthez, Froissart's visit to; iv. 86—.
Orthon; iv. 204—.
Ortingo. *See* Hortingo.
Ortingue, Thomas; iii. 144.
Ostia, Pierre de Moustier, bishop of Arras and cardinal of Ostia; ii. 87; iv. 241.
Ostrevant, William of Bavaria, or William of Hainault, count of; iii. 486—; iv. 39; v. 285, 420; vi. 130, 183—, 209-10, 219, 320.
Died 1417. Eldest son of Albert of Bavaria, regent (afterwards count) of Hainault.
Ostrevant, Margaret of Burgundy, wife of William, count of; iii. 486—.
Otterburn, raid of the Scots, and battle of; v. 207-33.
Ouchy, battle of; ii. 439.
Oudenarde. *See* Audenarde.
Ourri, Albrest, chief of 'companions'; ii. 79.
Out-Isles. *See* Isles, John, lord of the.
Oxendon, sir Robert; i. 236.
Oxford, duke of Ireland defeated near; v. 31—.
Oxford, John de Vere, earl of; i. 219, 222, 226; in Gascony 235—; taken prisoner and exchanged 243, 257-8; in France (campaign of 1346) 276—; 319; at Poitiers 369 (Berners has 'Stafford' for Froissart's 'Askefuforch' = 'Oxford'); ii. 38.
Died 1360.
Oxford, Thomas de Vere, earl of; v. 6—.
Died 1371.
Oxford, Robert de Vere, earl of Oxford and duke of Ireland; iii. 130, 229; iv. 62, 89, 168, 312, 350, 363, 386, 436; v. 7-43, 145, 285, 292-4.
Oxford, Philippe de Coucy, countess of (the lady of Ireland); vi. 35. *See also under* Oxford, Robert de Vere, earl of.

Pacheco, João Fernandes; iv. 248, 269, 270—, 326, 334, 409, 422, 470.
Padilla, Diego Yanez; iv. 283.
Pado, Jonathas and John; vi. 154.
Pailhas, the count of; iii. 36—.
Pailhes, Raimon de; iv. 101.
Paix, Charles de la. *See* Naples, king of.
Pamiers, Bertrand d'Ornezan, bishop of; vi. 8—.
Pampeluna, Pierre de Montirac, cardinal of; ii. 2.
Pampeluna; Prince of Wales passes the Pyrenees by ii. 188—; siege of iii. 31—; death of Charles the Bad of Navarre at v. 108—.
Pans, Ernauton de; ii. 262, 267, 276-8, 281, 336; iv. 418.
Pans, Gui or Guillaume de, chief of 'companions'; ii. 79, 411, 443; iii. 36, 420.

INDEX

Parade, Durandon de; iv. 19.
Paris; walled i. 405—; relations of citizens with the duke of Normandy and the king of Navarre 407—; Edward III. before ii. 52—; sir Robert Knolles before 352—; rebellion of the Parisians against king Charles VI. iii. 264—, 277—, 307—, 380—, 407—; visit of Louis of Naples and the duke of Brittany v. 173—; entry of king Charles VI. and queen Isabel into v. 275-87; negotiations between England and France held at 437—.
Parthenay, Geoffroi de; iv. 170—, 197.
Parthenay, sire de; i. 269; at Poitiers 375; ii. 189, 209, 254, 277-8, 293, 312, 318, 323, 350, 367, 373, 383, 401, 412, 415; iv. 19; v. 181.
Pasele, Daniel; i. 358; at Poitiers 369.
Passac, Gauthier de; iii. 219, 369; iv. 214, 389, 425—; v. 49.
Pasturiel, Jean; i. 413.
Patrick, earl (i. 313). *See* March, Patrick, earl of Dunbar and March.
Pauzauges. *See* Pouzauges.
Paveley, sir Henry; iii. 34.
Paveley, sir John; iii. 133, 144.
Paveley, sir Thomas; iii. 144.
Paveley, sir Walter; iii. 109.
Paveley (Pulle, *Berners*), sir William; v. 150.
Pavia, Aimeri of; i. 333, 336—.
Pedro IV., king of Aragon. *See* Aragon.
Pedro IV., the Cruel, king of Castile. *See* Castile.
Pembridge, sir Richard; in France (campaign of 1346) i. 277—; at Poitiers 369; ii. 96, 99.
Pembroke, Laurence Hastings, earl of; i. 119, 148, 217, 219, 223, 230; expedition to Gascony 235—, 268, 319.
Died 1348.
Pembroke, John, earl of; ii. 263—, 288-9, 292—, 298—, 312, 330—, 348, 357, 365, 383; taken prisoner at battle of La Rochelle 384-39 395, 444; death 445.
Died 1375.
Pembroke, John, earl of; iii. 251; i 52.
Died 1386. Son of John, e of Pembroke, above.
Pennefort. *See* Espinefort.
Pennevort, Richard; i. 257.
Perche, Robert d'Alençon, comte d ii. 127, 340, 375, 425, 429.
Percy, Henry. *See* Northumberlan Henry Percy, earl of.
Percy, sir Henry; i. 77, 119; Sluys 148, 226.
Died 1352.
Percy, sir Henry; i. 276; at Nevill Cross 313; ii. 165.
Died 1368. Son of sir Hen Percy, above.
Percy, sir William; ii. 399—.
Second son of the sir Hen Percy who died 1352.
Percy, sir Thomas, seneschal Rochelle, subsequently gra seneschal of England; ii. 249, 28 293, 299, 301, 312, 318—; ma seneschal of Poictou 325; 33 351, 368, 373—, 391, 396, 403- 414; iii. 130, 162, 464; iv. 28 399, 404, 475; v. 51—, 64, 14 437—; vi. 35—, 128, 131, 27 349, 386.
Son of the sir Henry Percy wl died in 1368.
Percy, sir Henry; dies in Spain v. 6
'Cousin to the earl of Northur berland.'
Percy, sir Henry (Hotspur); iii. 44 v. 207; at Otterburn 212-32; 347—, 400.
Percy, sir Ralph; at Otterburn 212-32.
Percy, Richard de; i. 232.
Pereira, Alvaro (sir Aulve Perrier iv. 473; v. 46.
Périgord, Talleyrand, cardinal de, one time bishop of Auxerr negociations before Poitiers 361—; 373, 387, 393; ii. 20, 9 93.
Called 'Bertrand' by Berne (i. 361).

Périgord, Roger Bernard, comte de; i. 236, 242—; ii. 75, 189, 209, 240, 253—, 265, 267, 276, 339, 349, 429.
Périgord, Roger de; i. 242—.
Uncle of Roger Bernard, comte de P.
Perreer, sir William (vi. 138). *See* Perrière, Jean de la.
Perrier, Aulve. *See* Pereira, Alvaro.
Perrière, Jean de la; vi. 138.
Peschin, Imbert de; ii. 340.
Peter IV., king of Aragon. *See* Aragon.
Peter IV., the Cruel, king of Castile. *See* Castile.
Phasell, sir Daniel. *See* Pasele, Daniel.
Philip, king of France. *See* France.
Physen, sir James. *See* Pipe, Jean de.
Pickworth, sir Philip; ii. 423; iii. 59.
Pickworth, sir Thomas; iii. 31.
Picquigny, Jean de; i. 402, 415; death ii. 25.
Piergourt. *See* Périgord.
Pierre-Buffière, le sire de; at Poitiers i. 375; ii. 189, 326, 363; v. 402.
Pierregourt. *See* Périgord.
Pieterzoon, Jean; ii. 377.
Pin, Gui du, chief of 'companions'; ii. 79, 86, 122.
Pinon, le sire de; ii. 9.
Pion, Ferrand de; ii. 386—.
Pipe, Jean de; i. 399 (Physien, *Berners*); ii. 19.
Pipes, sir Ralph; iii. 133.
Piquegny. *See* Picquigny.
Plassac, Héliot de; iii. 47—.
Playon, Playone, Pierre; vi. 121, 295.
Playsac. *See* Plassac.
Poises, le sire de; ii. 126.
Poitiers; sacked by the English i. 310; battle of 370—; becomes French ii. 401—.
Poitiers Louis I., de. *See* Valentinois, comte de.
Poitiers, Aymar de; i. 151, 247.
Fifth son of Aymar IV. de Poitiers, comte de Valentinois.
Poitiers, Guillaume de, bishop of Langres. *See* Langres.
Sixth son of Aymar IV.
Poitiers, Charles de; ii. 344.
Eighth son of Aymar IV. de Poitiers, comte de Valentinois.
Poitiers, Charles de; i. 241.
A mistake of Froissart's for Louis de Poitiers, comte de Valentinois (*q.v.*).
Poitiers, Guillaume, bâtard de Langres. *See* Langres.
Son of Guillaume de Poitiers, bishop of Langres.
Poitiers, Charles de; vi. 96—.
Poitiers, Louis de; v. 402.
Poitiers, Gui de Maillesec, cardinal de; iii. 65.
Poix, Jean, sire de; his daughters rescued by sir John Chandos i. 288.
Poix, Jean, sire de; ii. 12.
Son of the preceding.
Poix, Jean, sire de; ii. 449.
Son of the preceding.
Pole, John de la; ii. 292, 434, 452.
Pole, Michel de la; ii. 338, 351, 368; iv. 312; v. 14, 20, 32—.
Pommiers, Guillaume, sire de; ii. 367, 474.
Pommiers, Jean de; ii. 164, 189, 209, 254, 281.
Brother of Guillaume, sire de Pommiers.
Pommiers, Elie de; ii. 164, 189, 209, 254; at Poitiers 369 (Prunes, *q.v.*).
Brother of Guillaume and of Jean de Pommiers, above.
Pommiers, Aymenion de; at Poitiers i. 363—, 369 (Prunes); ii. 55, 93, 106, 109—, 120, 122, 189, 209, 326, 474, 482; iii. 361—.
Pompadour, le sire de; at Poitiers i. 376, 379.
Ponchardon. *See* Punchardon.
Pons, Renaud V., sire de; i. 269; at Poitiers 375.
Slain at Poitiers.
Pons, Renaud VI., sire de; ii. 209, 254, 293, 312, 318, 350, 367, 372, 404-9, 429, 490; iv. 19; v. 181.
Son of Renaud V., above. Slain at Nicopolis.
Ponthieu, Jacques de Bourbon, comte de. *See* Marche, Jacques de

INDEX

Bourbon, comte de Ponthieu, and afterwards de la Marche.
Pont, le seigneur de ; i. 230.
Pont, le sire de ; ii. 129—.
Pont, Thibaut du ; ii. 295, 299, 363, 404-6, 476-8 ; death 480.
Pontallier, Gui de ; iii. 103.
Pontchardon. *See* Ponchardon.
Pontevedra, in Galicia, surrenders to duke of Lancaster ; iv. 334.
Pont-Saint-Esprit, sacked by the 'companions' ; ii. 86.
Pont-Saint-Marc, Perducas de ; iii. 433.
Pont Vallain (Bolayne, *Berners*), battle of ; ii. 360—.
Popes :—
Benedict XII. (1334-42 ; Jacques Fournier) ; i. 89.
Clement VI. (1342-52 ; Pierre Roger, bishop of Arras, archbishop of Sens and Rouen) ; i. 133, 231 ; death 344.
Innocent VI. (1352-62 ; Étienne Aubert, bishop of Noyon and Clermont, and cardinal bishop of Ostia) ; i. 170, 231 (cardinal of Cleremount) ; elected pope 345 ; attempts to negotiate peace between England and France 361 ; 399 ; ii. 87 ; death 90.
Urban V. (1362-70 ; Guillaume Grimoard, abbot of Saint Germain d'Auxerre, later of Saint Victor de Marseille) ; ii. 90, 93, 151, 152—, 180, 252, 256, 272, 347, 362, 417—.
Gregory XI. (1370-78 ; Pierre Roger) ; ii. 363, 379, 441, 459, 505—.
Nephew of Clement VI.
Urban VI. (1378-89 ; Bartholomew Prignano, known as des Aigles, formerly archbishop of Bari) ; iii. 1, 62—, 278— ; iv. 238— ; death v. 326.
Boniface IX. (1389-1404 ; Peter Tomacelli, cardinal of Naples) ; v. 329 ; vi. 74, 100, 322—.
Clement VII. ([anti-]pope, 1378-94 ; Robert de Genève, bishop of Térouanne, 1365-68 ; Cambray, 1368-78) ; iii. 63—, 278— ; iv. 238—, 370 ; v. 254 of Charles VI. to 295-6 ; 436, 438—, 444 ; VI. 25 death 121.
Benedict XIII. ([anti-]pope, 1417 ; Peter of Luna, d by the council of Constanc 119, 121, 326—, 401.
Poquières, Jean de ; v. 286.
Porcien, Gaucher de Châtillon, de ; i. 134.
Died 1342.
Porcien, Jean de Châtillon, de ; i. 206 ; ii. 18, 44, 74 260, 331, 375, 425.
Eldest son of Gauche Châtillon, above.
Porcien, Hugues de ; ii. 331, 4
Son of Gaucher de Châ above.
Porteboeuf, Pierre ; i. 201, 206 226, 228.
Portugal ; expedition of the e Cambridge to iii. 220— ; with Spain and battle of Al rotta iv. 186—, 244— ; emba England 249—. *See also* Portugal, kings of.
Portugal, Ferdinand, king of (83) ; ii. 239 ; iii. 218, 239, 268—, 287— ; death 298 ; 89, 244—.
Portugal, John I., king of (1433) ; iii. 298 ; iv. 89—, 1(180 — ; at Aljubarrota 244 negotiations with John of G 329— ; 396— ; marriage 404 45—, 141.
Berners speaks of him as M Denyce, *i.e.* Master of knights of St. Benedic Aviz.
Portugal, Philippa of Lanca wife of John I., king of ; iv. 404.
Daughter of John of Gaunt Blanche of Lancaster.
Potelles, le sire de ; i. 140-1.
Pouns. *See* Pons.
Pountayllers. *See* Pontalliers.
Pountchardon. *See* Ponchardon.
Poursuivant d'Amours, Jean V known as ; ii. 262.

Pouy-Perun, siege of; iv. 216—.
Pouzauges, Renaud de Thouars, sire de; ii. 373, 401, 403, 412; iii. 47, 179—, 369; iv. 19.
Poyanne, Gérard de Sartas, sire de; at Poitiers i. 375 (Dampmare); ii. 189, 254, 277-8, 293, 312, 318, 323, 350, 373, 383, 387—.
Poynings, Richard, lord; iv. 287, 325; death v. 61.
Poys. *See* Poix.
Poytrels. *See* Potelles.
Préaulx, Pierre, sire de; ii. 74.
Preneste, Pierre des Pres, cardinal of; i. 231.
Près, Bertrand des; i. 240.
Prie, Jean, sire de; ii. 128—.
Prior, sir Thomas; ii. 427.
Provost, the, of the merchants of Paris. *See* Marcel, Étienne.
Prunaux. *See* Pruneel.
Pruneel (Prunaux, *Berners*), Jean; iii. 96—, 104—, 113—.
Prunes (i. 369), a corruption of '*le signeur de Pumiers, monsigneur Helye, et monsigneur Aymenion de Pumiers.*'
Puissances. *See* Pouzauges.
Pulle. *See* Paveley.
Punchardoun, Richard de, marshal of Aquitaine; i. 358; ii. 55, 160, 189, 211, 222, 249, 254, 280, 299, 312, 318, 351, 368, 373, 391, 396, 414, 434, 452; vi. 398.
Purcevant d'Amors. *See* Poursuivant d'Amours.
Puy, Ernauton de; iv. 110, 136.
Puycornet, le sire de; i. 236.
Puycornet, Guillaume, sire de; ii. 76, 164, 190, 209, 229, 230, 253, 267, 339; vi. 134.
Pyergourt. *See* Périgord.
Pyliser, Jean; i. 118.
Pynan. *See* Poyanne.
Pyncornet. *See* Puycornet.

QUESNES, GUILLAUME, vicomte des; i. 136.
Quevellart. *See* Garonne, Henri de.
Quieret, Hugues; i. 108, 146—.
Quieret, Gui; i. 402.
Quimper-Corentin, siege of; ii. 145—.
Quintin, sire de; ii. 129—.
Quirich, the two bretherne of; i. 198.
Quyrielle. *See* Quieret, Hugues.

RADCLIFFE, SIR RICHARD; i. 236, 268.
In i. 268 Berners writes, '*Sir Rycharde of Beavayes, sir Philyp Reckeleve*' for 'sir Philip of Beauvais and sir Richard Radcliffe.'
Radcot Bridge, battle of; v. 35—.
Radigo, John; iv. 166.
Rainneval. *See* Ranevall.
Ramsay, Alexander; at Neville's Cross i. 313.
Not killed, but taken prisoner.
Ramsay, Alexander; ii. 492—; v. 208, 210; at Otterburn 223.
Grandson of Alexander Ramsay, above. Slain 1402.
Ramsay, sir John; v. 208.
Brother of the sir Alexander Ramsay who died 1402.
Randenrode, le sire de; i. 164.
Randenrode, Arnould de; i. 164.
Called, by a mistake of Berners', 'John.'
Ranevall, Guillaume, sire de; i. 135; ii. 122.
Ranevall (Renneval, Rayneval), Raoul de; at Poitiers i. 375 (Arnolde of Renewall, *Berners*); 390-1 (Loys of Ravenall); ii. 1, 33, 55, 425, 435, 438, 464; iii. 361.
Eldest son of Guillaume de Ranevall.
Ranevall, Loys of, an error for Raoul de Ranneval (*q.v.*).
Ranevall, Waleran de; iv. 58.
Son of Raoul de Ranevall.
Rapondi, Dino; vi. 254, 276—.
Rausan, le sire de; at Poitiers i. 369; ii. 164, 190, 209, 371, 414, 477—, 483—; iii. 25.
Ravenall. *See* Ranevall.
Ravenna, Pileo de Prata, archbishop of; ii. 441, 449, 457.
Ravestain, battle of; v. 190-3.
Raymond, Bertrand; iii. 32.
Raynevall. *See* Ranevall.
Réalville-en-Quercy, siege of; ii. 268, 275.

INDEX

Reckeleve, sir Philip. *See* Radcliff, Richard de.
Recombes, Louis de; i. 371.
Redman (Redmayne, *Berners*), sir Matthew; iii. 246, 420—; iv. 56; v. 208, 213 (called by mistake 'sir Rafe Redmayne'); 224; at Otterburn 226-9.
Reduryn, sir William. *See* Rothum, sir William.
Regnault, Jean, mayor of Poitiers; ii. 400, 402—.
Reighersvliet, Philippe, sire de; iii. 112.
Reighersvliet, Guillaume de; iii. 210, 305.
Reims; besieged by the English ii. 43—; coronation of Charles v. at 108, 121—; council at, to set in order the affairs of the Church vi. 303—.
Reims, Jean de Craon, archbishop of; ii. 27, 44, 147.
Reims, Gui de Roy, archbishop of; vi. 325.
Rency, Edward of. *See* Renti, Oudart de.
Renewall, Arnold of (i. 375), an error for Raoul de Ranevall (*q.v.*).
Rennes; taken by Jean de Montfort i. 174; retaken by Charles de Blois 198; besieged by duke of Lancaster 395; the English army and earl of Buckingham before iii. 161—.
Rennevall. *See* Ranevall.
Renti, Oudart de; i. 317, 338 (Edward of Rency); at Poitiers 376 (Roucy); 390; ii. 12, 50, 109—, 122, 124, 352.
Réole, La. *See* La Réole.
Responde, sir Dyne of. *See* Rapondi (Dino).
Retz, Gérard Chabot, sire de; ii. 132—, 209, 447.
Revel, le sire de; v. 333, 386.
Reynalt. *See* Regnault.
Rheims. *See* Reims.
Rhodes, Philibert de Neilhac, grand master of; at Nicopolis vi. 235, 255, 286.
Ribadavia; taken by the duke of Lancaster's marshal iv. 395—.
Ribadeo, Roderigo Lopez d'Avalos, count of; iii. 33; iv. 91.
Ribemont, battle of; ii. 436—.
Ribemont, Eustache de; i. 317, 326, 340-1; at Poitiers 364; death 376.
Ribemont, Galehaut de; ii. 39.
Richard II., king of England. *See* England.
Richmond, Robert of Artois, earl of. *See* Artois.
Richmond, John of Gaunt, earl of. *See* Lancaster, John of Gaunt, duke of.
Richon, Geoffroi; ii. 221, 225, 235, 407, 418; iv. 170, 174, 197, 480.
Rieux, Guillaume, sire de; ii. 129—.
Rieux, Jean, sire de; ii. 423, 447; iii. 368, 376.
Rivière, Bureau de la; ii. 459, 465; iv. 478; v. 157-63, 253, 268, 291—, 320-3; vi. 9—, 71; imprisonment 84—; 120; release 170.
Rivière, Jean de la; ii. 122, 124, 352, 464; iii. 5, 9—.
Rivière, Berault de la; v. 372.
Rivière, Bernard de la; v. 380.
Probably identical with Berault, above.
Riville, le sire de; i. 390; ii. 140, 423.
Roales, siege of; iv. 318.
Robaut, Louis; iv. 160—.
Robersart, Thierri, known as le Chanoine de; ii. 10, 46, 262, 434-5, 444; iii. 14, 57, 222, 253, 268—, 284—.
Robersart, Jean de; vi. 391.
Son of Thierri de Robersart.
Robert, the Hermit. *See* L'Eremite, Robert.
Rocamadour; taken by the English ii. 285.
Roche, Androuin de la. *See* Clugny, Androuin de la Roche, abbé de.
Roche, Hugues de la; ii. 350—.
Rochechouart, Jean, vicomte de; at Poitiers i. 375.
Rochechouart, Louis, vicomte de; ii. 189, 277—, 295, 372.
Son of Jean de Rochechouart.
Rochechouart, Aimeri de, sire de Montemart; ii. 189, 196, 209, 262, 401, 421; v. 181.

Rochechouart, Guillaume de ; i. 259.
Rochedarien, siege of ; i. 321-4.
Rochefort, Gérard de ; i. 216.
Rochefort, Odilon, sire de ; at Poitiers i. 375 ; ii. 30, 375.
Of Auvergne.
Rochefort, Gui, sire de ; i. 349 ; ii. 140, 261, 407, 423 ; iii. 9, 178.
Of Brittany.
Rochefort, Gérard de ; i. 222.
Rochefort, Lubinot de ; v. 388.
Rochefoucauld, Gui de ; iv. 378.
Roche-sur-Yon, La (Napoléon Vendée) ; ii. 292—, 429—.
Roche-Tesson, sire de la ; i. 232.
Rochelle, La ; ii. 76, battle of 385— ; turns French 407— ; skirmish at, between French and English v. 182— ; 245-6.
Roche-Taillarde, Jean de la ; iv. 241.
Rochfort ; i. 225. Perhaps a mistake for Pennefort = Pembroke.
Rodemacher, Jean de ; i. 159.
Rodez, the viscount of ; ii. 231, 234-5, 380 ; v. 290.
Rodez, Jean de ; i. 97-9.
Rodez, Jean de ; i. 118.
Rohall, Richard ; vi. 20, 386.
Rohan, Alain, vicomte de ; i. 181, 206.
Killed at battle of Mauron, 1352.
Rohan, Jean, vicomte de ; i. 395 ; ii. 129—, 352, 396—, 407, 409, 416-7, 423, 447, 452— ; iii. 9, 177, 178, 369 ; vi. 171—.
Died 1396.
Roisin, le sire de ; i. 143, 200.
Rojas, Ruy Diaz de ; ii. 386, 407 ; iii. 12, 198.
Rolland, Jacques ; ii. 239.
Rome ; turbulence of the Romans at the election of the Pope ii. 505 ; iii. 1—, 62—.
Romorantin ; taken by the English i. 359-60.
Roodes, the earl of. *See* Rodez, the viscount of.
Roosebeke, battle of ; iii. 392—.
Roquebertin, the viscount of ; ii. 197, 205, 231, 234-5, 238, 380 ; iii. 36, 50.
Roqueserrière (Tarriers, *Berners*) ; captured by Chandos ii. 267.
Ros, William, lord ; i. 119.
Died 1343.
Ros, William, lord ; i. 226 ; in France (campaign of 1346) 277 ; at Nevilles Cross 313.
Died 1352. Son of William, lord Ros, above.
Ros, Thomas, lord ; ii. 292, 338, 351, 368, 414.
Second son of the William, lord Ros, who died in 1343.
Ros, James ; ii. 427.
Rose, Edmond ; ii. 392.
Roselaer, le sire de, at Buironfosse ; i. 118.
Roselle, Radigo de la. *See* Rojas, Ruy Diaz de.
Rosem. *See* Rauzan.
Rosoy, Jean de ; ii. 482—, 488, 489.
Rostan, Ernaudon de ; iv. 97, 123, 373.
Rothum, sir William ; v. 208.
Rotselaer, le sire de ; v. 204.
Roucy, Jean v., comte de ; i. 119, 134.
Killed, 1346, at Crécy.
Roucy, Robert, comte de ; ii. 18.
Died 1364. Second son of Jean v.
Rouen ; Charles, king of Navarre, taken prisoner at i. 353.
Rouen, Philippe d'Alençon, archbishop of ; ii. 337.
Rouen, Guillaume de Lestrange, archbishop of (1376-89), formerly bishop of Carpentras (1375-76) ; ii. 441, 449, 457.
Rouergue, seneschal of. *See* Walkefare, Thomas de.
Rougemont, Thibaud, sire de ; ii. 126, 464 ; iii. 142.
Rouhale, Richard ; v. 273.
Rous, Alain ; v. 256-7, 330-41.
Rous, Pierre ; v. 256-7, 330-41.
Rous, sir Robert ; ii. 286, 338, 466 ; vi. 216.
Roussines, Geoffroi, sire de ; ii. 119, 401.
Rouveroy, le Borgne de ; i. 136 ; ii. 2.
Rowan. *See* Rohan.
Roye. Jean II., sire de ; i. 108.
Roye, Matthieu, sire de ; i. 131

(called 'John' by error), 267, 385, ii. 1, 46, 74, 260, 445-6, 456; iii. 142.
Son of Jean de Roy, above.
Roye, Matthieu de, known as le Flamand; ii. 55, 124.
Master of the Crossbows, 1347. Died 1381.
Roye, Jean de; ii. 314, 346; iii. 135, 141, 219, 366, 433; v. 68, 402.
Eldest son of Matthieu, le Flamand de Roy. Slain at Nicopolis, 1396.
Roye, Gui de. *See* Reims, Gui de Roye, archbishop of.
Son of Matthieu le Flamand de Roy.
Roye, Matthieu, known as Tristan de; ii. 482, 488-9; iii. 135, 219, 296; iv. 433; v. 62 (called, by a mistake of Berners', 'John').
Third son of Matthieu, le Flamand de Roye. Died 1386.
Roye, Renaud de; iv. 419—, 433, 475; v. 68, 287; jousts at St. Inglevert 299-300, 308-9, 342-58; vi. 62, 71, 185, 206—.
Son of Matthieu, le Flamand de Roye.
Roye, sir John of (v. 62), a mistake for Tristan de Roye (*q.v.*).
Roye, John of (ii. 131), a mistake for Matthew de Roye (*q.v.*).
Rozen, the lord of. *See* Rausan.
Rue, Jacques de; ii. 465; iii. 4.
Ruffyn. *See* Griffith.
Rule, the lord of. *See* Revel, le sire de.
Russell, sir John; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 342—; 413.
Rutland, John, earl of; vi. 128, 140, 145, 157, 301—, 309, 364, 371, 391, 400.
Son of Edmund, duke of York. Succeeded to the title 1402. Slain at Agincourt.
Rycons. *See* Richon.
Rye, Jean de; ii. 52; iv. 170—, 197.
Ryver. *See* Rivière, Jean de la.

Sa, João Rodriguez de; iv. 333, 396, 403—, 470; v. 46.
Sahagun, sacked by the French; v. 72—.
Saint Albyne. *See* Saint Aubin.
Saint Ampysse, the lord of. *See* Saint Aupisse, sire de.
Saint Andrews, William Landal, bishop of (1341-85) taken prisoner at Neville's Cross; i. 314.
Saint Andrews, Walter Trail, bishop of (1385-1404); v. 272.
Saint Aubin, le sire de; i. 294.
Saint Aubin, Goswin de; iv. 27, 28.
Saint-Aubin, Thomas de; ii. 301, 395.
Saint Aubin, Louis de; iii. 133.
'Saint Aubin, the lord of'; v. 116.
Saint Aupisse, le sire de; v. 372-80.
Saint David's, Adam Houghton, bishop of (1361-89); ii. 459; iii. 221.
Saint Dizier, Jean de; i. 111.
Saint Dizier, Geoffroi de; at Poitiers i. 375.
Saint Florentin; ii. 50.
Saint Germain, le sire de; v. 402.
Saint Hilaire, Bouchard de; iii. 137; death 259.
Saint-Inglevert, jousts at; v. 308—, 341—.
Saint Jean d'Angely; surrendered to the English i. 309-11; retaken by the French 343.
Saint Jean Pied de Port; passage of the Black Prince ii. 188—.
Saint Julien, Louis de; ii. 261, 265-6, 277, 301, 313, 318—, 325, 328—, 372.
Saint-Lo; taken by the English i. 282.
Saint-Lo, John of; ii. 338.
Saint Macaire; taken by the duke of Anjou ii. 486.
Saint Malo, siege of; iii. 14-28.
Saint Marsan, Raymond de; iii. 140, 461.
Saint Martin, Jacques de; ii. 322—.
Saint Martin, Guillaume de; iii. 151, 443; v. 202.
Saint Pierre, Eustache de; i. 330.
Saint Pol, Jean de Châtillon, comte de; i. 119.
Died before 1344.
Saint Pol, Gui de Châtillon, comte

de; i. 301; ii. 4, 12, 19, 33, 39, 74.
Died 1360. Son of Jean. Erroneously stated by Froissart to have been killed at Crécy (i. 301).
Saint Pol, Jeanne de Luxembourg, comtesse de; ii. 314.
'Madame du Doaire': wife of Gui de Châtillon, comte de Saint Pol.
Saint Pol, Gui de Luxembourg, comte de Ligny et de Saint Pol; ii. 241, 259, 296, 314—, 347, 375; v. 95 (Bastweiler).
Slain at Bastweiler, 1371. Son of Jean de Ligny. Married Mahaut de Châtillon, sister and heir of Gui de Châtillon, above.
Saint Pol, Waleran, comte de; ii. 259, 296, 352; taken prisoner by the English 447—; marries Maud Holand iii. 57—; 166, 364—, 407, 449; iv. 441, 455; at Bastweiler v. 95, 203; at Lelinghen 273-4, 286, 421—; vi. 92, 185, 211—, 216—, 265.
Died 1415. Son of Gui de Luxembourg, above.
Saint Pol, Maud Holand, comtesse de; marriage iii. 57—; v. 300—.
First wife of Waleran, comte de Saint Pol.
Saint Pol, Alain de, chief of 'companions'; ii. 181, 221, 235, 407, 487, 490.
Saint Pol, Robert de; ii. 425.
Saint Powle, lord of. *See* Saint Pol.
Saint Pye. *See* Sempy.
Saint Sauflieu, le sire de; i. 165.
Saint Sauveur, siege of; ii. 450-455.
Saint Séver, l'abbé de; i. 237.
Saint-Sylver, the abbot of. *See* Saint Séver, l'abbé de.
Saint-Valery-sur-Somme, siege of; ii. 6—.
Saint-Venant, Robert de Wavrin, sire de; i. 267.
Slain at Crécy.
Saint-Venant, Robert de Wavrin, sire de; at Poitiers i. 364—; 408; ii. 74.
Died 1367. Son of Robert de Wavrin, above.
Saint-Venant, Alemant de; ii. 154, 205, 210, 212.
Grandson of the sire de Saint Venant slain at Crécy.
Saint Victor de Marseille, l'abbé de. *See* Popes, Urban v.
Saint Wenant. *See* Saint-Venant.
Saint Yrieix; taken by Bertrand de Guesclin ii. 354.
Sainte-Bazeille, le Mongat de; iv. 98, 102, 117-21, 123.
Also known as 'le Mongat de Lourdes.'
Sainte-Colomme, Ernauton de; iv. 97, 118—, 123, 373.
Sainte-Croix, le sire de. *See* Hugues de Vienne, sire de Sainte Croix.
Sainte-Foy, Guillonnet de; v. 80, 246-7.
Sainte Sévère; ii. 399.
In Limousin.
Saintré, Jean, sire de; i. 269; at Poitiers 374, 378.
Salebrière, Pierre de; iv. 170, 191, 197, 281.
Salieu, the lord of (i. 165). *See* Saint-Sauflieu.
Salisbury, William Montagu, or Montacute, first earl of; i. 77, 87-8, 118, 123; taken prisoner 132-3; exchanged 196; 217-23, 230, 236.
Died 1344.
Salisbury, Catharine, countess of, wife of William Montagu, earl of; love of Edward III. for i. 191-5, 216-18.
Named 'Alice' by Froissart, and also in the *Vœu du Héron*.
Salisbury, William Montagu, or Montacute, second earl of; i. 312; at Poitiers 369; ii. 38, 165, 292, 394, 414, 425, 428, 431—, 451, 456, 459, 461; iii. 11, 50, 227, 229; iv. 52, 313; v. 5, 273; vi. 128, 267.
Died 1397. Elder son of William, first earl, above.
Salisbury, John Montagu, or Montacute, third earl of; ii. 287-9, 330, 461; vi. 299—, 342—, 382, 390—.
Died 1400. Nephew of the second earl.

INDEX

Salisbury, sir John; iv. 312; v. 14, 20—, 37—, 39.
Salle, sir Robert; iii. 237.
Salle, Bernard de la, chief of 'companions'; ii. 7, 79, 85, 123, 190, 227, 290, 329; iii. 70; iv. 239; v. 329.
Salle, Hortingo de la. *See* Hortingo.
Sallins, Anceau de; ii. 52.
Salm, Henry v., count of; i. 110—; at Buironfosse 118; 152, 281.
Salm, Henry vi., count of; v. 204.
Salvatierra; surrenders to Don Pedro and the Black Prince ii. 194.
Salx, le sire de; ii. 108, 111—; death 120.
Sancerre, Louis ii., comte de; i. 119.
Slain at Crécy.
Sancerre, Jean iii., comte de; iii. 363; iv. 156; v. 269.
Died about 1402. Son of Louis ii.
Sancerre, the earl of (v. 253, 386), a mistake for the sire de Coucy.
Sancerre, Louis de; ii. 126, 290, 299—, 318, 330—, 396—, 409, 416, 425, 450, 475, 490; iii. 361—; iv. 16, 156; v. 195, 246-7, 263-5, 288, 319; vi. 23, 292, 384.
Died 1403. Second son of Louis i., comte de Sancerre.
Sancerre, Robert de; ii. 301; iv. 156.
Third son of Louis i., comte de Sancerre.
Sancerre, Étienne de; v. 401.
Fourth son of Louis i., comte de Sancerre.
Sancho, Don, count of Albuquerque; ii. 152, 197—, 205—, 209, 216—, 234.
Sandilands, sir John (Sobelans; Saynte de Laux, *Berners*); v. 208; at Otterburn 223.
Santarem, rebellion of; iv. 172—.
Sante, sir John de la (i. 241). *See* Zouche, John de la.
Sanxes, the earl of. *See* Sancho, Don.
Sanxerre. *See* Sancerre.
Saquainville, Pierre de; ii. 109, 111—; beheaded 122.
Saramen, Monnaut de; iv. 170, 197.
Sarmiento, Diego Gomez; iv. 92, 189, 198.
Sarmiento, Pedro Ruiz; iv. 198.
Sarmoises, Pierre de. *See* Sermoise.
Sarrebruck, Jean ii., comte de; i. 281; at Poitiers 364—; ii. 255-6, 337, 352, 424, 456, 458.
Sars, le sire de; i. 143.
Sart, Jacques du; iii. 57.
Sassegnies, Gérard de; i. 139.
Saulx. *See* Salx.
Sauternelle, Henri de la; ii. 134—, 145.
Sauynes, therle of. *See* Salm, Henry, count of.
Savage, John; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 351.
Savoie, Louis de; i. 139, 156, 324, 327.
Savoie, Perrot de; ii. 154, 209, 262, 267, 276, 281, 336.
Savoisy, Philippe de; ii. 55; vi. 105.
Called by Berners 'Peter de Savoisy.'
Savoy, Amadeus vi., count of; i. 156; ii. 256—; iii. 278—, 282, 484; iv. 229.
Died 1383.
Savoy, Amadeus vii., count of; iii. 442; v. 295; marriage to Bonne de Berry and death vi. 2.
Died 1391. Son of Amadeus vi.
Savynes. *See* Salm.
Saynt Basyll, the Mengeant of. *See* Sainte Bazeille, le Mongat de.
Schoonvorst, Rasse, sire de; at Buironfosse i. 118.
Schoonvorst, Renaud de; i. 165.
Schoonvorst, Renaud, sire de; iii. 394; v. 101.
Scot, John; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 352.
Scot, Nicotin or Martin; ii. 419.
Scot, Richard; i. 250.
Scot, sir Robert; v. 150.
Scot, Robin le; ii. 3.
Scotland, Robert Bruce, king of (1306-29); i. 21, 42—; death 67-9, 88; v. 233.
Scotland, David Bruce, king of (1329-70); marries Isabel, daughter

of Edward II. i. 22; 67, 70; refuses to do homage 83—; alliance with France 102-3; 119, 156; returns to Scotland 187; invades England 187—; taken prisoner at Neville's Cross 311—; released 394; ii. 424.
Scotland, Joan, wife of David Bruce, king of; i. 70.
Scotland, Robert II. (Robert Stuart), king of (1370-90); ii. 424, 491; iii. 474—; iv. 26, 48.
Scotland, Robert III., king of (1390-1406); ii. 502.
Scrope, sir William; iii. 22, 31—.
Scrope, Jannekin, an English squire; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 355-6.
Séel, Guiot du; v. 373-89.
Segovia, Gonzalve d'Aguilar, bishop of; v. 167.
Segur, Jean de; i. 415; ii. 7, 26.
Séguin, Apchon; v. 78, 122.
Selle, William de la. *See* Lasceles, William.
Sempy (Saint Pye, *Berners*), sire de; i. 135, 339; ii. 124, 130, 314, 464, 473; iii. 134, 142, 361—, 408; jousts at St. Inglevert 299-300, 308-9, 342-58; vi. 185, 206—.
These references relate to at least two lords of Sempy, of whom the younger was named Jean.
Sendrine. *See* Cendrins.
Sengler, Pierre; ii. 283.
Sens, Philippe de Melun, archbishop of; i. 170.
Sens, Guillaume de Melun, archbishop of; i. 408; ii. 108.
Sens, Regnaut de; vi. 30.
Senzeille, Thierri de; i. 299 (Johan of Fussels, *Berners*).
Senzeille, Jean de (i. 299). *See* Senzeille, Thierri de.
Senzeille, Thierri, sire de; iii. 445; vi. 216.
Senzeilles, Henri de; ii. 309, 310; iii. 229.
Sequaqueton (so Froissart), corruption of the name of English squire jousting at St. Inglevert; v. 350.
Serignac, le sire de; at Poitiers i. 376; ii. 30, 268, 340.
Séris, Guillaume de; ii. 257.
Sermoise (Sarmoises, *Berners*), Pierre de; ii. 55.
Servia, Lazarus, king of; iv. 233.
Seton (the lorde of Sechyn); v. 207.
Seton, sir Geoffrey; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 342—.
Shelley, Benedict; vi. 375.
Shirborne, sir Peter. *See* Swinburn, sir Thomas.
Sicily, kings of. *See* Naples.
Simon, sir Adam; iii. 269.
Simon, sir Thomas; .222, 291—.
Sinclair, sir John; v. 208, 210; at Otterburn 221-3, 272.
Sinclair, sir Walter; at Otterburn v. 221-3.
Sluys; battle of i. 146—; preparations at, for invasion of England iv. 307—, 347-62; plots against French at iv. 39.
Sohier of Malines, servant of the comte de Blois; vi. 31.
Sombernon, Jean de Montaigu, sire de; ii. 126.
Sommaing, Thierri de; i. 134; iii. 137, 173; iv. 318—, 344; v. 51; death v. 62.
Sommaing, Guillaume de; iv. 318—; v. 51, 62, 66.
Sommaing, Oste de; i. 142.
Soria, Ferrand de; v. 167.
Soubise, battle of; ii. 404—.
Soustrée, sir John; iii. 269, 288—; iv. 288, 325, 406.
Southampton; sacked by the French fleet i. 108; Edward III. musters troops at ii. 414.
Spain; expedition of the earl of Cambridge against iii. 220—; of John of Gaunt iv. 287—. *See also under* Castile, Aragon, kings of.
Spaygne, Charles of. *See* Espagne.
Spenser, sir Hugh (Despencer); i. 23—, 34-6.
Hugh Despenser the elder, earl of Winchester. Died 1326.
Spenser, sir Hugh; i. 35-8.
Hugh Despenser the younger. Died 1326.
Spenser, sir Edward; i. 219; death from wounds 224.
Slain at Vannes, 1342. Second

son of sir Hugh Despenser the younger.
Spenser, sir Edward; i. 358; at Poitiers 369; ii. 96, 240, 414, 434, 444, 452; death 463.
Called by Froissart '*li grans sires Despensiers.*' Died 1375. Eldest son of the sir Edward Spenser who died in 1342. One of Froissart's patrons.
Spenser, sir Hugh; iv. 288.
Stated by Froissart to have been brother of Edward '*le grand sire Despensier.*'
Spenser, sir Thomas; ii. 54, 211, 280, 299, 301, 439; iv. 52; vi. 391—.
Younger brother of '*le grand sire Despensier.*' Created earl of Gloucester in 1397. Died 1400.
Spenser, Henry, bishop of Norwich. *See* Norwich, Henry Spencer, bishop of.
Died 1406. Son of Edward, '*le grand sire Despensier.*'
Spenser, sir Hugh; ii. 362; iii. 420—; v. 423; vi. 145.
Son of sir Hugh Spenser, above, and cousin to the bishop of Norwich (iii. 420).
Spontin, Guillaume de; i. 321 (Lespontin); ii. 308.
Sporkin, Jean; iii. 426.
Stafford, Ralph, earl of; at Calais i. 339; ii. 38, 414, 434, 444.
Died 1372.
Stafford, Hugh, earl of; ii. 193; iv. 52—; vi. 264.
Died 1386. Son of Ralph, earl of Stafford, above.
Stafford, sir Ralph; iv. 52—.
Fifth son of Hugh, earl of Stafford.
Stafford, sir Richard, afterwards baron; at Sluys i. 148; 219, 225; taken prisoner 227; 231; in Gascony 235—; at Crécy 303; at Poitiers 369—.
Stafford, sir Richard; ii. 495—.
Son of Richard, baron Stafford, above.
Stafford, therle of (i. 369), a mistake for Oxford ('Askefuforch,' *Froissart*). *See* Oxford, John de Vere, earl of.
Stampes. *See* Etampes.
Stanbourne, Nicolas; ii. 343.
Standish, John; iii. 242-3.
Stapleton, Bernard; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 352.
Stapleton, sir Brian; ii. 263, 428.
Steenhuyse, Pierre de; iii. 124, 210.
Stemert, sir William; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 348—.
Stewart, Robert II., III., kings of Scotland. *See under* Scotland.
Stonacke, sir William. *See* Stuart.
Stonckel, Jankin; iii. 183.
Stonckel, sir John; iii. 144.
Stonckel, sir Nicolas; iii. 144.
Stone, Nicholas; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 352.
Stonnevort, the lord of. *See* Schoonvorst.
Strael, Gauthier; ii. 45, 103, 122.
Straelen (Seaulle, *Berners*); taken by the French v. 115—.
Strates, sir William of (i. 118). *See* Straten, Guillaume de.
Strathern, sir Maurice Moray, earl of; slain at Neville's Cross i. 313.
Strathern, David Stewart, earl of; v. 211.
Son of Robert II.
Straw, Jack; iii. 226—.
Stuart, sir William; v. 208; at Otterburn 223 (Guy for Guillaume).
Stury, Sir Richard; ii. 54, 96, 292, 377, 459; v. 41; vi. 131, 140—.
Sudbury, Simon of. *See* Canterbury, Simon of Sudbury, archbishop of.
Suffolk, Robert Ufford, earl of (1336-69); i. 99, 112, 118, 123; taken prisoner 132-3; 217, 219, 223; in France (campaign of 1346) 276—, 339; at Poitiers 369; ii. 38.
Suffolk, William Ufford, earl of (1369-83); ii. 414, 434, 444.
Son of Robert, earl of Suffolk, above.
Suggeres. *See* Surgères.
Sully, Louis, sire de; at Poitiers i. 364; ii. 340, 375, 409, 416.
Sully, Gui de la Trémoille, sire de. *See* Trémoille, Gui de la.

Surgères, Gui, sire de ; i. 137.
Called 'Jacques' by a mistake of Froissart.
Surgères, Jacques de; at Poitiers (Suggeres) i. 375; ii. 301, 323, 367, 373, 388, 390-1, 401, 412, 490; iii. 47; iv. 289.
Son of Gui de Surgères, above.
Surie, Jean de ; i. 304, 332.
Sutherland, William, earl of; i. 153; taken prisoner at Neville's Cross 313.
Berners incorrectly puts him amongst the slain at Neville's Cross. Froissart's account is confused, one version giving him as a prisoner, the other as slain.
Sutherland, William, earl of; hostage for David Bruce i. 394 ; ii. 492, 499 ; iii. 474 ; iv. 49— ; v. 211.
Son of the above.
Swinburn, sir Robert ; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 356.
Swinburn, sir Thomas; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 342, 347— (sir Peter Shirborne, *Berners*).
Swinford (Fynefroyde, *Berners*), sir Alan ; i. 197, 243—.
Swinford, Norman of; in Gascony i. 236, 268.
Swinton, (the lord of Faulcon, *Berners*), a Scotch knight at Otterburn ; v. 223.
Syrefound. *See* Swinford.

TAILLEBOURG, siege of; iv. 20—.
Taillebourg, sir William ; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 342.
Taillepye, Pierre ; v. 182-4.
Talar, le vicomte de ; ii. 267, 339, 442.
Talay, Alyot de. *See* Tallay.
Talbot, sir Richard ; iii. 222, 269, 287 ; iv. 287, 475 ; death v. 61.
Died 1387.
Tallay, Aliot de ; ii. 221, 235, 299, 476-8 ; death 479.
Tallebardon (Tallabaton, *Berners*), chief of 'companions' ; ii. 79, 122.
Tallebart, chief of 'companions' ; ii. 79, 122.
Tancarville, Jean I., de Melun, seigneur de ; i. 79, 267-9, 278, 283—.
Died about 1350.
Tancarville, Jean II., de Melun, comte de ; i. 354 ; at Poitiers 364— ; ii. 90, 121, 352.
Died 1382. Son of Jean de Melun, sire de Tancarville. Created comte de Tancarville 1352.
Tankerville. *See* Tancarville.
Tannay-Bouton, Gérard, sire de ; at Poitiers i. 375 (Montaboton) ; ii. 189, 254, 278, 293, 318, 323, 350, 373, 388—, 444-6 ; v. 181.
Tanneguy, Guillaume ; iii. 159, 187.
Tanton, sir Richard ; ii. 141, 189, 193, 199, 223, 280, 299.
Taride. *See* Terride.
Tasson. *See* Tesschen.
Tastes, Aimeri de ; at Poitiers i. 374 ; ii. 190, 209, 281, 351, 367, 383 ; death at battle of Rochelle 389.
Tastes, Bertrand de ; ii. 190, 209.
Tello, Don, Count of Biscay ; ii. 152, 194, 197—, 205—, 234.
Called 'therle of Anxell,' by Berners.
Térouanne, Gilles or Guillaume Aycelin de Montaigu, bishop of ; ii. 57.
Died 1378.
Terride, Bertrand, sire de ; i. 236, 247 ; ii. 164, 209, 229, 253—, 267, 339, 442 ; iii. 219.
Terride, Bertrand II., sire de ; vi. 134.
Eldest son of Bertrand I.
Terride, Bernard de ; iv. 154.
Second son of Bertrand I.
Terry (Thury, *Berners*), the castle of, taken by the 'companions' ; v. 158-9.
Tertre, Pierre de ; ii. 465 ; iii. 4.
Tesschen, Przimislas, duke of ; iii. 134, 221, 273.
Tête-d'or, sir John ; iii. 294 ; iv. 93, 166, 266, 405.
Têtenoire, Geoffroi ; iii. 60, 458 ; v. 76—, 111, 128 ; death 254-7.
Thians, Jacquelot de ; i. 165.
Thoresby, sir Stephen ; i. 236, 246, 268.

INDEX

Thors, Renaud de Vivonne, sire de; ii. 373, 412, 490; iii. 47, 369; iv. 19.
Thors, Savary de Vivonne, sire de; v. 401.
Thouars, siege of; ii. 412—.
Thouars. *See* Pouzauges.
Thourotte, sire de; ii. 2.
Thun l'Évêque, siege of; i. 141—.
Thury in Albygois. *See* Terry.
Toledo, siege of; ii. 233—.
Tombey. *See* Thoresby.
Tonnerre, king Edward III. at; ii. 50.
Tonnerre, Louis, comte de; v. 203.
Torcy, le sire de; iii. 58—, 463.
Tornemyne, sires de. *See* Tournemyne.
Tornon. *See* Tournon.
Touchet, sir John; ii. 301; death at battle of Rochelle 390.
Toulouse; the count of Foix does homage to Charles VI. at v. 319—.
Toulouse, le Viguier de; i. 241.
Toulouse, Agot des Baux, seneschal of; i. 240 [*et si se traist li séneschaus de Thoulouse à Montalben*].
Toulouse, the seneschal of. *See* Azay, Gui d'.
Toulouse, Geoffroi de Vayroles, archbishop of; ii. 269.
Tour, Bertrand III., sire de la; at Poitiers i. 375; slain 376.
According to Kervyn de Lettenhove, was not slain at Poitiers, but still living in 1368.
Tour, Bertrand IV., sire de la; v. 367—.
Grandson of Bertrand III., above.
Tour, Bernard de la. *See* Langres, bishop of.
Fifth son of Bertrand III.
Touraine, the earl of (v. 203), a mistake for Tonnerre (*q.v.*).
Touraine, Louis, duke of, cedes the title (vi. 59) and becomes duke of Orléans (*q.v.*).
Touraine, Valentine Visconti, duchess of. *See* Orléans, duchess of.
Touraine, Raymon de; v. 445.
Tournay; besieged by Edward III. i. 151—; negotiations between the earl of Flanders and Ghent held at iii. 305—; letter of Artevelde to citizens negotiations between Burgundy and Ghent iv.
Tournehem, dukes of Bur Lancaster at; ii. 296—,
Tournemine, Geoffroi, sire 225.
Tournemine, Olivier, sire 129—.
Brother of Geoffroi d mine, above. Acc Kervyn de Lettenhov taken prisoner at A slain.
Tournemine, Pierre, sire de 423; iii. 164.
Tournemine, a squire of A betrays Aimerigot Ma 393-4.
Tournon, Guillaume II., sir 83.
Tournon, Guillaume III., sir 260.
Son of Guillaume II.
Tournon, Guillaume IV., s vi. 328.
Second son of Guillaume
Tours, treaty at, between the France and the duke of B vi. 17—.
Tours, the lord of (v. 401 Thors, Savary de Vivonn de.
Tovar, Sancho Fernando; ii. 4
Tramels (i. 135). *See* Cramell
Trasegnies, Othe, sire de; i. 1
Trasegnies, Ansel de; vi. 216,
Trémoille, Gui de la, seign Sully; iii. 103, 142, 165, 361—, 410, 461, 492; iv. 4 203, 234, 238 [called 'Joh mistake of Berners'], 253, 30 412—, 430, 435 [probably a m for 'Rivière,' see Froissart, ed vyn de Lettenhove, xiv. 28 178—; taken prisoner at Nic 236— [Guy de la Ryver, in B text, is a misreading for G la Trémoille], 247; death 28
Omitted by a mistake of B from the list of chie 401.

Trémoille, Guillaume de la; v. 112-14, 194, 269, 401, 412—; vi. 81, 178—; at Nicopolis 235—; 287—.
Brother of Gui de la Trémoille, above.
Tremoyle, John de la (v. 238), for Trémoille, Gui de la, sire de Sully.
Tréséguidi, Yves de; i. 177, 198-222 *passim*.
Berners corrupts the name Yves into Perse and Gyles.
Tréséguidi, Maurice de; ii. 475, 490; iii. 361—; iv. 480.
Tresilian, sir Robert. *See* Trevelyan, sir Robert.
Tressin, Pont à, battle at; i. 158—.
Trevelyan, sir Robert; iv. 312; v. 14; death 25—.
Tribiquedy. *See* Tréséguidi.
Trichastiel, le sire de; ii. 126.
Trie, Matthieu de; marshal of the host; i. 116, 131, 151.
Died 1344.
Trie, Renaud de; vi. 71.
Triguide. *See* Tréséguidi.
Trivet, sir John; ii. 175, 196, 211, 280, 299.
Trivet, sir Thomas; ii. 211, 262, 423, 450, 455; iii. 22, 34—, 48, 109, 130, 136—, 143—, 162—, 420—; death v. 16—.
Troutes (Troy), Bernard; i. 387.
Troy. *See* Troyes.
Troyes, the earl of Buckingham and the English army before; iii. 143—.
Troyes, Henri de Poitiers, bishop of; ii. 19, 21.
Trussell, sir William; ii. 54, 160, 280.
Tueton, Lewis; at Crécy i. 294.
Tupigny (Tupeny, *Berners*), sire de; i. 117.
Turkey, Amurath I., sultan of; iv. 230.
Turkey, Bajazet, known as Amurath-Baquin, sultan of; iv. 230; vi. 40, 178, 231—, 248—, 282—.
Twyford, sir Edward; ii. 452.
Twyford, sir Nicholas; iii. 251.
Twyford, sir Robert; ii. 301, 390.
Tyaulx. *See* Thians.
Tyler, Wat; iii. 225—.
Tyrel, sir Hugh; iii. 172.

Ulster, Lionel, earl of. *See* Clarence, Lionel, duke of.
Urban V., VI. *See under* Popes.
Urgel, Pedro of Aragon, count of; v. 290.
Urgel, Cardinal Nicolas Cappochi, bishop of; i. 361, 393; ii. 20.
Urswick, sir John; ii. 301.
Urswick, sir Walter; ii. 196, 209, 454.
Usson, siege of; ii. 375-6.
Uzès, le vicomte d'; ii. 31, 82-4, 179, 340.
Apparently Bérenger d'Uzès, sénéchal de Périgord.
Uzès, Alzias, vicomte d'; takes part in the crusade in Africa v. 402; in the army of Bouciquaut before Avignon vi. 329.

Vaca, Cabeça de (Cabesse de Vacadent, *Berners*); ii. 386—.
Vagor, Dominge (Donnage Bangher, *Berners*); v. 47.
Valcourt, Thyrre of. *See* Walcourt, Thierri de.
Vale, le sire de la. *See* Laval.
Valence, Louis de Poitiers, comte de (i. 206). *See* Valentinois.
Valencin, le sire de; iv. 228.
Valencin, Étienne de; iv. 170, 191, 197.
Valentinois, Louis I., de Poitiers, comte de; i. 119, 206 ('Loyes of Poycters, therle of Valence,' as if two persons); 236, 241 (Charles of Poyters); 247.
Valois, Louis de, duc d'Orléans. *See* Orléans.
Vandoys, Roche of. *See* Vendat.
Varenne, Jean de; vi. 124.
Vaucelaire. *See* Vorsselaer.
Vaudemont, Henri V., de Joinville, comte de; at Poitiers i. 376 ['the erle of Vandos, the erle of Mons, *Berners*]; ii. 21, 28, 121.
Vaudresen. *See* Bautersem.
Vaux, Henri de; ii. 48.
Velasco, Pedro Fernando de; iii. 12, 33, 189.
Vendat (Roche of Vandois, *Berners*); Aimerigot Marcel besieged in v. 367—.

INDEX

Vendeuil, Jean de Béthune-Locres, sire de ; ii. 22.
Vendôme, Bouchard VI., comte de ; i. 119, 267-9.
Vendôme, Jean VI., comte de ; at Poitiers i. 376.
Eldest son of Bouchard VI.
Vendôme, Bouchard VII., comte de, ii. 375 ; iii. 280—.
Son of Jean VI.
Ventadour ; captured by the 'companions' iii. 60— ; siege of v. 111—, 251—, 330—.
Ventadour et Montpensier, Èbles IX., comte de ; at Poitiers i. 364, 375.
Ventadour, Bernard, comte de ; iii. 60.
Brother of Èbles IX., above.
Verchyn. *See* Werchin.
Verchyne, sir John (i. 159). *See* Wargny, Jean de.
Vergny, John de. *See* Wargny, Jean de.
Vergy, Jean, sire de ; ii. 126, 464 ; iii. 142.
Verme, Jacques de la ; v. 450— ; vi. 204.
Vermeilles, Hustin de ; i. 357 (Hutyn of Memels) ; ii. 472.
Vernier, John (i. 137). *See* Bernier, Jean.
Vers, Jean de ; ii. 476, 478.
Versey. *See* Erskine.
Vertaing, Eustache, sire de ; iii. 57, 131—, 173—, 229, 367 ; vi. 217.
Vertaing, Fierabras de ; iii. 137—, 141, 367 ; v. 424 ; vi. 209-10, 217, 320.
Illegitimate son of Eustache, sire de Vertaing, above.
Vertayne. *See* Werchin.
Verteuil ; taken by duke of Bourbon iv. 47—.
Vertuall, Roger of ; i. 277. *See* Wetenhale, Roger.
Vertus. *See* Milan.
Vervins, Jean de Coucy, sire de Bosmont et de Vervins. *See* Bosmont.
Viefville, le sire de ; v. 248.
Vienne, Jacques de ; ii. 52.
Vienne, Hugues de ; ii. 52, 142 ; iv. 58.
Brother of Jacques de above.
Vienne, Jean de, captain i. 304, 328, 332.
Vienne, Jacques de, sire d' iii. 142 ; iv. 52, 441—.
Vienne, Guillaume de ; iv.
Vienne, Jean de, marshal of ii. 112—, 124, 126, 340, 352, 438, 450, 46 103, 142, 334—, 410, 23—, 478 ; v. 157-63, embassy to Spain 250 ; 2 402, 430 ; vi. 185 ; at 232—.
Vienne, Gautier de ; iii. 14
Vierron (i. 357), for Vierzon
Viesville, the lord of. *See*
Vieuvy, le sire de ; iii. 151, 44
Vigier, sir Gaillard ; ii. 209, 227, 475 ; iii. 420.
Vigo, surrenders to John of iv. 338.
Vigor. *See* Vigier.
Viguyer. *See* Vigier.
Vilain, Hector ; i. 118.
Vilain, Jean ; iii. 203, 21 425—.
Villaines, le Bègue de ; ii. 128—, 154, 197, 205, 21 223, 234, 235— ; iii. 14 361— ; v. 297 ; vi. 71 ; in ment 81 ; release 85.
Villaines, Pierre de ; iii. 2 289, 295, 433 ; v. 51.
Son of the Bègue de Villa
Villalobos, in Galicia, surren John of Gaunt ; iv. 321.
Villalpando (Vyle Arpente, *Be* v. 51—.
Villars, le sire de ; i. 139 [call mistake of Berners' 'The Vyllars'] ; ii. 261, 268, 329,
Villefranche-en-Agenois ; tak the earl of Derby i. 258 ; 268 ; surrenders to the ii. 285-6.
Villemur, Arnaud, vicomte 236, 240, 247.
Villemur, Jean de ; ii. 261, 26 340, 350—, 442.

Villeneuve, le sire de; v. 402.
Villers, Archambaud de; v. 265.
Villers et Hulluc, Eustache, sire de; iii. 99.
Villiers, Adam, known as le Bègue de; ii. 205, 210, 212.
Villiers, Pierre de; ii. 99; iii. 364.
Son of Adam de Villiers, above.
Vilvorde, council of; i. 150.
Violette, Cacquart (Richard, *Berners*) de la; v. 388.
Visconti. *See* Milan.
Vivonne, Hugues de; ii. 367, 373, 401; iii. 47.
Vorsselaer, Gérard de Rotselaer, known as de Vorsselaer; at Buironfosse i. 118.
Voudenay, Thibaut de; at Poitiers i. 366, 374—.
Voudenay, Eustache, sire de; iv. 154; v. 401.
Voulte, Louis d'Anduze, sire de la; iv. 161—; vi. 328.
Vrolant, Robert; iii. 132.
Vucht (Buthe, *Berners*); v. 81—.
Vyllenort. *See* Vilvorde.
Vyle Arpente. *See* Villalpando.

WAKE, SIR THOMAS; i. 36, 77.
Walcot, sir John; iii. 144.
Walcourt, Thierri de; i. 118, 136, 143.
Wales, Edward, prince of; in France (campaign of Crécy) i. 276—; expedition in Languedoc 350; in Berry 356—; battle of Poitiers 370—; courtesy to king John 384—; returns to England 393; ii. 35, 57, 73; in Aquitaine 91—, 97; restores Pedro the Cruel 159—; battle of Najera 204—; Pedro refuses to redeem his promises to the Prince 222—; the Prince taxes Aquitaine 229—; summoned by the French king 246—; 277-9, 284, 289, 292, 295, 312, 330, 333, 340—, 348—; sack of Limoges 355—; death of the Prince's son 365; returns to England 365; 413—; death 457; iv. 95—, 116; his tomb at Canterbury vi. 131.
Wales, Joan of Kent, princess of; ii. 97, 184-5, 220—, 225-6, 229, 235; iv. 95—.
Wales, Yvain or Owen of; ii. 262, 392—, 404—, 425, 475, 478, 490; death iii. 14-17.
Walkefare, sir Thomas, seneschal of Rouergue; ii. 249, 253—, 375.
Walsingham, sir William; at Otterburn 224.
Waltham, Thomas; slain at Otterburn v. 224.
Walworth, sir Nicholas, lord mayor of London; iii. 229—.
Wannes. *See* Vannes.
Waren. *See* Fitzwarren.
Wargny, le sire de; i. 143.
Wargny, Jean de; i. 159.
Wargny, Robert de; i. 282.
Wark Castle, siege of; i. 190-2; iv. 50—.
Warlaing, le Bègue de; ii. 442.
Warneston, an English squire; jousts at St. Inglevert v. 350.
Warwick, Thomas de Beauchamp, earl of; i. 77, 112, 119, 170; in France (campaign of 1346) 276—; at Poitiers 369; ii. 38.
Died 1369.
Warwick, Thomas de Beauchamp, earl of; ii. 292, 314, 414, 434, 444; iii. 229; vi. 261—, 297, 372.
Died 1401. Son of Thomas de Beauchamp, above.
Warwick, William, son to the earl of, a mistake for Fitz Warren, William (*q.v.*).
Warwick, sir John; v. 149.
Wat Tyler. *See* Tyler, Wat.
Waurayne, the lord of. *See* Wavrin.
Wavrin, Robert, sire de; i. 140.
Wavrin, Pierre de; iii. 394.
Son of Robert de Wavrin, above.
Wavrin. *See* Waziers.
Waziers, Nicolas de Wavrin, sire de; i. 140; ii. 55.
Waziers, Gérard de; iii. 445.
Brother of Nicholas de Waziers, above.
Welby, or Willoughby, James; ii. 421.
Welkefare. *See* Walkefare.

INDEX

Welles, Richard; i. 250.
Welles, John, lord; ii. 434, 495.
Wenceslas of Luxembourg, emperor of Germany. *See* Germany.
Werchin, Gérard, sire de; i. 109—, 134 (called Richard by error of Berners'), 143; death 170.
Werchin, Jean de, seneschal of Hainault; i. 170; ii. 6, 270, 275, 473.
Werchin, Jacques de, seneschal of Hainault; iii. 122, 126, 135—; death 203.
Werchin, Jean, sire de; vi. 216.
Slain at Agincourt, 1415. Son of Jacques de Werchin, above.
Werk, castle of. *See* Wark.
Wesmede, sir George; ii. 502.
West, Bernard; ii. 290, 329, 351.
West, sir Thomas; iii. 131.
Westmoreland, Ralph, earl of; vi. 381.
Wetenhale, Roger; in France (campaign of 1346) i. 277.
Wetenhale, Thomas; ii. 276.
Wickham. *See* Wykeham.
Wierre, Pepin de; i. 304, 338.
Willoughby, John, second lord Willoughby de Eresby; in France (campaign of 1346) i. 277—.
Died 1349.
Willoughby, John, third lord Willoughby de Eresby; i. 369; ii. 292, 368, 434, 444.
Died 1372. Son of above.
Willoughby, Robert, fourth lord Willoughby de Eresby; iv. 288.
Died 1396. Son of John, lord Willoughby, above, who died 1372.
Winchester, William of Edington, bishop of (1346-67) chancellor; ii. 252.
Winchester, William of Wykeham, bishop of (1367-1405); ii. 252; v. 11, 13, 21.
Windsor, sir William; ii. 259; iii. 130, 168—, 437; iv. 288; vi. 149-51.
Windsor, sir Miles; iii. 222, 269, 288, 296.
Wisk, Thomas; ii. 377.
Wissant, Jacques and Pierre de; i. 330.
Witthem, le sire de; i. 118.
Wondelghem, castle of; sacked by the men of Ghent iii. 90-1.
Woodstock, Thomas of, duke of Gloucester. *See* Gloucester, Thomas, duke of.
Woodstock, Edmund of, earl of Kent. *See* Kent, Edmund, earl of.
Worseley, William; ii. 421.
Worseley, Geoffrey; ii. 343, 344, 360, 361, 470; iii. 131.
Wykeham, William of. *See* Winchester, bishop of.
Wystusuble, sir Thomas of; ii. 190.
No name corresponding to this occurs in Froissart. The name is probably a corruption of '*li soudis de Lestrade, li bours Camus*,' who are omitted in Berners.
Wyten. *See* Wetthem.

XANCER. *See* Sancerre.

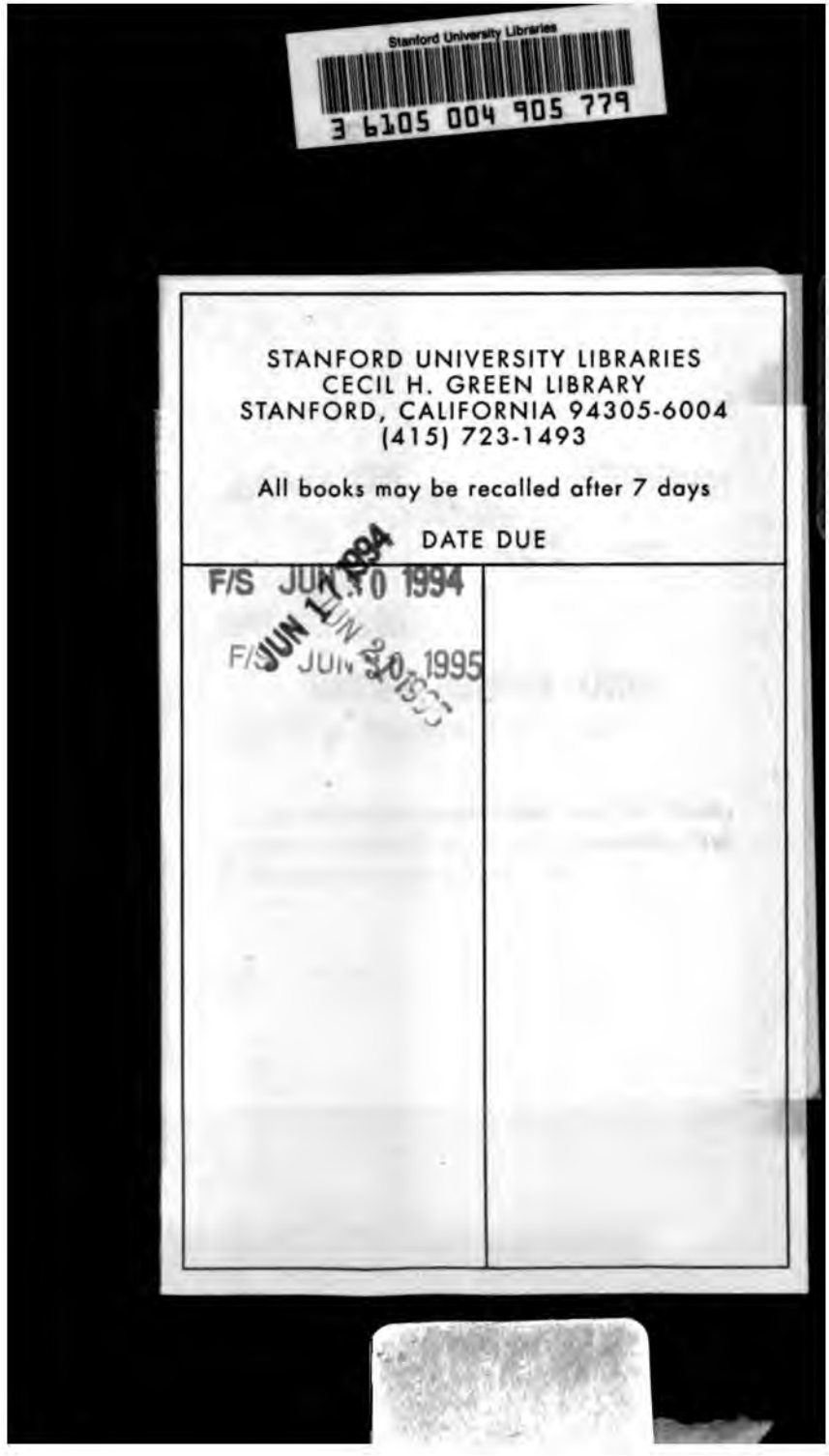
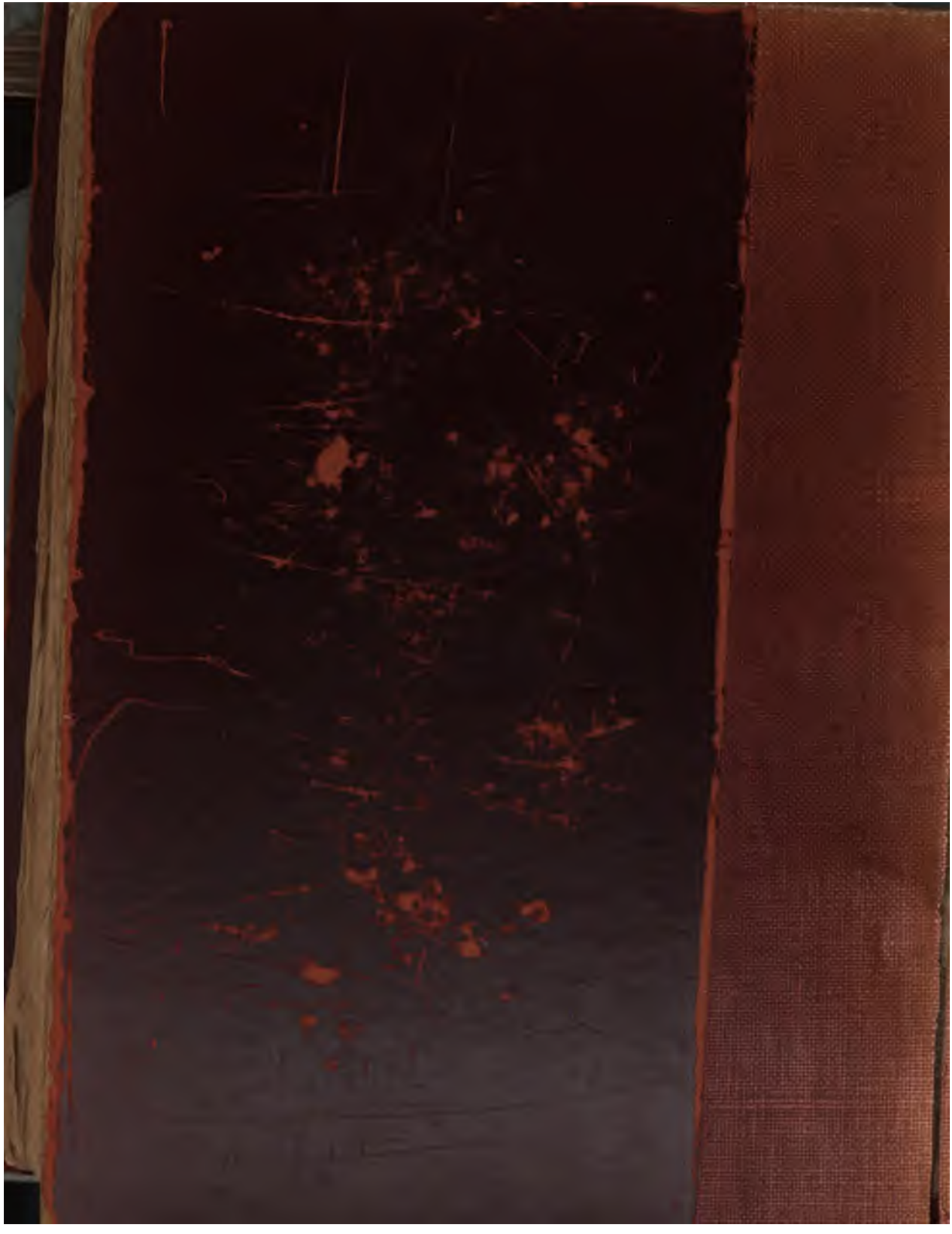
YMET, battle of; ii. 478—.
Yoens, Jean; iii. 73—.
York, William de la Zouch, archbishop of (1342-52), one of the 'wardens of the realm'; i. 276; at Neville's Cross 313.
York, Alexander Neville, archbishop of (1374-88); iv. 436; v. 14, 29, 43, 293; vi. 111—.
York, Robert Waldeby, bishop of Dublin and Chichester, and subsequently archbishop of York (1396-98); vi. 145, 267, 315.
York, Edmund, earl of Cambridge and duke of; ii. 37, 73, 144; 263—, 272, 288-9, 292—, 330—, 341, 348, 350, 357, 365; marriage 381; 384, 414, 452, 461; iii. 20—; expedition to Spain 220—; 252—, 283—; iv. 52, 87, 167, 285, 363, 439; v. 5-43; vi. 35—, 110—, 128; vi. 133, 224, 300—, 371.
York, Isabel of Castile, duchess of; ii. 380—.
Daughter of Pedro the Cruel.
Ypres; defeat of burgesses of by the count of Flanders iii. 193—; surrender of town to the count

197; surrender to French king 379; besieged by sir Hugh Spenser and the men of Ghent 435—.
Ypres, Jean d', bastard of Flanders; vi. 275.
Ypres, Jean d'; ii. 209.
Yvain of Wales. *See* Wales.

ZANDEQUIN, ENGUERRAND; iv. 27, 28.
Zannequin, Nicolas; i. 72.
Froissart has 'Clays Dennequin,' and Berners 'Colen Dannequin.'
Zouche, John de la; i. 241 (John de la Sante); 268 (Touche).
According to Kervyn the Christian name should be William.
Zype, Peter van der; iii. 436; iv. 14.

FINIS

PRINTED BY
T. & A. CONSTABLE
EDINBURGH
1903


Stanford University Libraries
3 6105 004 905 779
STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
CECIL H. GREEN LIBRARY
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004
(415) 723-1493
All books may be recalled after 7 days
DATE DUE
F/S JUN 30 1994
JUN 1994
F/S JUN 30 1995
JUN 1995